

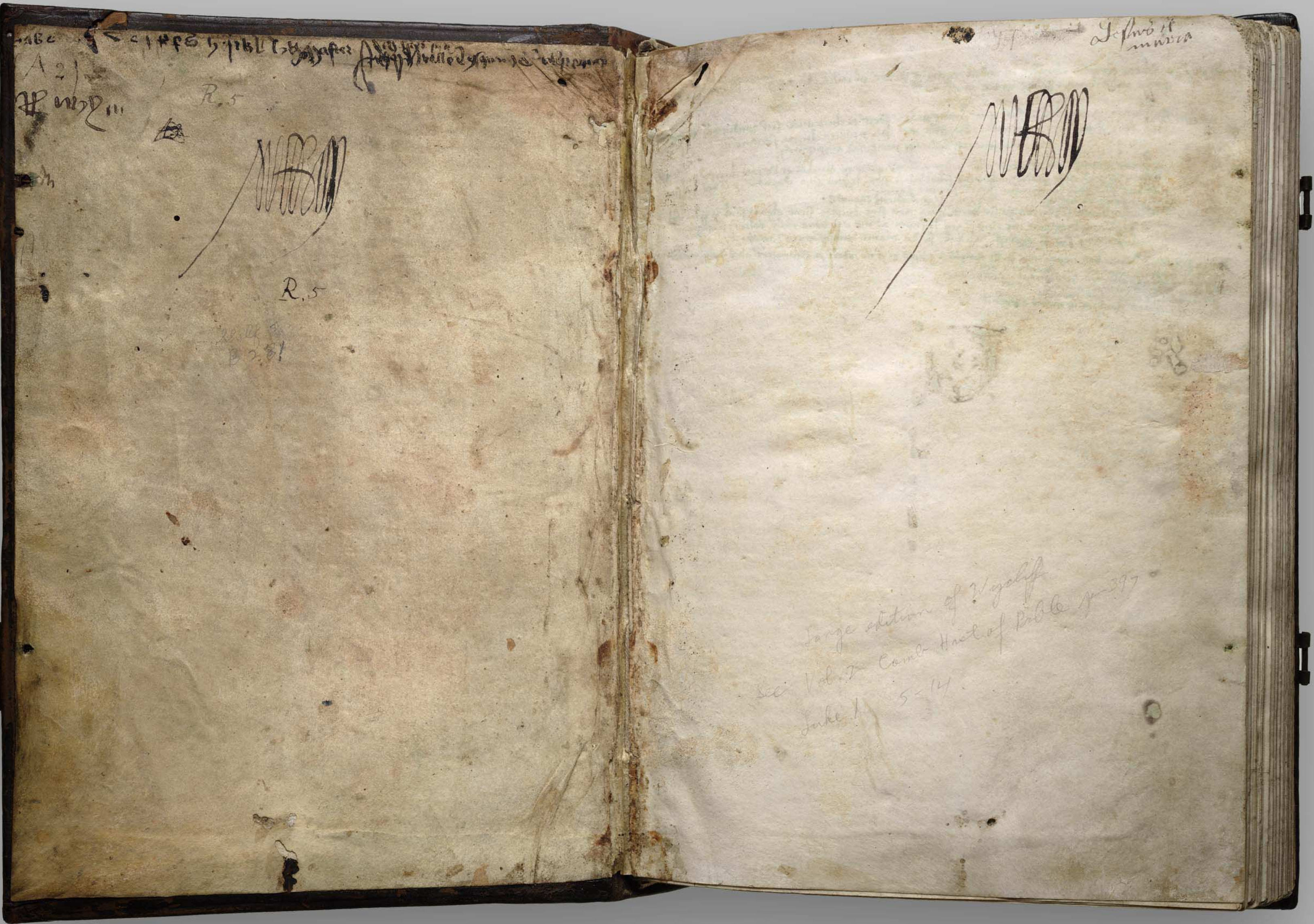


Wycliffite Manuscript. The New Testament. England, 1400–1450.

BRIDWELL LIBRARY

Octavo





Wycliffite Manuscript. The New Testament. England, 1400–1450.  
BRIDWELL LIBRARY

Octavo











ego promitto ille dabit.

I wanthe 3on i watu: into penaunce  
but he pat shal come after me. is ar  
onger: pan /: whos shoon / am not  
woru to be: he shal baptise or etne  
3on in ye hooly goot: & fier: whos w  
newig: doo or tan is i his hond. & he  
shal fully clense his corn floor: & shal  
gader his whete into his berne: but  
chaffis he shal brene wy fier: ynque  
chable or p: neide shal be quenched.

**P**ane ihc cam fro galile into jorda  
to john: for to be etened of hy: sope  
li john forbed hy & seide: / i owe forto  
be etened of pee: & pon comest to  
me: / forlope ihu answeride: & seide  
to hy: suffre now: for so it bitomey  
us to fulfille al ryz fulnesse: pane  
john leet hy or suffrite hi: forlope  
ihc was etened & aen up and fro  
ye watu: and lo heuenes were o  
penid to hy: & he sz ye sprit of god  
comyge dou as a culuer: & comyn  
ge on hy: & lo a woys fro heuenes:  
serpunge: / vis is my lored sone: i whi  
ch i haue plesid to me.

**A**nnie ihc was led of a spi  
rit into desert: p he shul  
de be tēptid of ye demyl: & wha  
ne he hadde fastid forty day  
es: & forty nyghtis: afterward  
he hūgride: & ye tēpter cam nyz:  
& seide to hym: / if pou art godis sone:  
sepe p: res stoonen be maid loines:  
which answeride & seide to hym: it  
is writu: ama hūnep not i breed al  
oone: but in enery wo: pat comen  
for fro ye mony of god: pane pe  
demyl took hi into an hooly citee: &  
sethite hi on ye pyrnade of ye tem  
ple: & seide to hi: / if p art godis so  
ne: leude p: dou: for it is writu: for  
to his angelis he comāditte of ye:  
& per shulen take pee in hondis:

lest perauētan: p hūte vi foot at  
a stoon: etiloonen ihu seide to hy: it is  
writu: p shalt not tēpte p: lōd god:  
etiloonen ye demyl took hi into a hil  
hy hil: & the wide to hym alle ye res  
mes of ye world: & ye glorie of hem:  
& seide to hy: alle res yigis / i shat  
p:ne to pee: if p: falle dou: & worsh  
pe me: pane ihc seide to hi: go: &  
nas: for it is writu: pou shalt wor  
shipe p: lōd god: & to hi gloone p:  
shalt serue: pane ye demyl leste hi  
and lo angelis camen nyz: & lernede  
to hi. **S**orely whāne ihc hadde be  
rd: p: john was takit: he wente into  
galile: & he leste ye citee of nazareth:  
& cam & dwelte in ye citee of cazar  
nā: bihde ye se: in ye endis of sabi  
lon & nephtalim: p: it shulde be  
fulfild pat was seid by: / iape re  
pfete: / ye lōd of sabulon & ye lōd  
of nephtalim: ye were of ye see: on  
jordan: of galile of heven me: ye pe  
ple p: wall: & i der: knelis: hy: greet  
lyt: and while me lanten i ye ciut:  
of nazareth: of deep: lyt roos to he  
fro p:nis for ihc began to preche:  
& sepe: do ze penaunce: for ye kigdo  
of heuenes shal come nyz. **S**orely  
hy ihc walke bihdis ye see of ga  
lile: & hy twey byren. symon pat  
is clepid petre: & andrew his brof:  
pittige nett into ye see: for per he  
re fyllheris: & he seide to hem: co  
me ze after me: & i shal make 3on  
to be maid fyllheris of me: & and  
per forloken her nettis: & hūden  
hym: & he zede for fro p: place: &  
sz tweyne ope byren. james of  
sebede: & john his brof: in ye shup  
wy sebede her cadn: makige aen  
or beetige hor nettis: & he clepid he  
loph: and per forloken ye nettis

depl vocati sūt pmo & simplice noticiā / John: demyl  
hūgrate lucth: deuo & apatit: h: 2 me

cause air dūm curba scdm finit

**E** pe sadu: & hūde hi: and ihc euy  
roynede al galilee: techige in ye  
synagogis of hem: & prechige ye  
gospel of kyngdom & heilige al  
soons or ahe: & al sykenesse i ye  
peple: & his opnyon or fame: wen  
te into al lūrie: & per bronzte to hi  
alle me hūyge yuel takit wy  
dynerte loyris & turmetis: & he  
pat hadde deuclis: & lūnatyk me  
& me in palasie: & he heelde he  
and p: hūden hi many cūpames  
of galile & of tetrāpoly: & of ierū.  
& of iudee & of byzoude jordan:

**H**elus forlope sz cū: **C**an  
panyes: & wente up: ito an hil:  
and whāne he hadde sete: hūde disti  
plis camē nyz to hym: & he openide  
his mony: & tawte hem: & seide: bles  
sid be ye pōre in spūit: for ye kig  
dom of heuenes is hern: blesid be  
imple me: for per shulen welde ye  
erpe: blesid be per pat mochen for  
per shulen be confortid: blesid be  
per pat hūgren & yrden ryz wy  
nelle: for per shule be fulfild: bles  
sid be merciful me: for per shule  
ge te nyz: blesid be per pat be of  
clene herte: for per shule se god:  
blesid be petible me: for per shū  
len be clepid ye sones of god: bles  
sid be per pat suffren perlecution  
for ryz fulnesse: for ye kigdom of he  
uenes is hern: & shule be blesid  
whāne me shulen carle 3on: & shū  
len purhie 3on: & shule sepe al yuel  
azens 3on: & he for me: / ioye ze wir  
me: & glate ze wyoute for: for 3on  
re mede is plenteuous in heuenes  
for so per han purhied allo p:etis  
pat weren bifore 3on: **T**e ben lāt of  
ye erpe: / if ye lāt vānyche auep:  
wher me shal it be saltid: to no pig

it is wo: quier: no but p: it be cast  
out: & be de fould of me: he ben lāt  
of ye world: a citee put ou an hil:  
may not be hid: nep me tenden a  
lant ne: & putte it vnder a bullhel:  
but on a candilstake: pat it zyne lāt  
to alle pat ben i ye hous: so shyne  
3on: lāt bifore me: / p: rei se 3onre  
goode werkis: & glorie 3onre fadn:  
which is in heuenes. **M**ple ze geile  
or deme p: i cam to vndo or distupe  
ye lāt or profetis: i cam not to vū  
do ye lāt: but to fulfille: forlope  
i seie to 3on treyue: til heuene & er  
pe passe: oon / i is ye leste lētre:  
or o tril: shal not palle fro ye lāt:  
til alle yigis be don: p: fore he pat vū  
dop or beky oon of ye leste mai:  
demētis: & techy yus me: shal be  
clepid ye leste in ye rell me of he  
nenes: forlope vis pat dow: & techy:  
shal be clepid greet i ye kyngdom of  
heuenes. **F**orlope i seie to 3on: /  
no but 3onre ryz fulnesse be more  
plenteuous: p: of dūbris & farisee:  
ze shūlen not entu: into kigdom of  
heuenes: ze han herd p: it was seid  
to elde me: pou shalt not sle: forso  
pe he p: sleep: shal be gity of dom:  
but i seie to 3on: for ech mā pat is  
wo: to his brof: shal be gity of  
dom: forlope he pat leu: to his brof:  
vāra p: is a wo: of storn: shal be  
gity of conceit: sope he pat leu: fool:  
shal be gity of ye fzer: of helle: /  
fore if pou offrit pi zitte at ye aut:  
& per byenbit: p: pi broper hap lū  
what azen: pee: loef: pee: pi zitte bi  
fore ye auter: & go turt for to be  
reconcild to pi brof: or acordid: &  
pane pou shalt come: & shalt of  
fre pi zitte: / be pon consentige to  
pi aduerlārie soone ye while pou

Greg: iudiciū & dūctio eae qn culpa & occulta. Cōsiliū & dūctio sine qn culpa & nota  
māria: Gehēna: & exēcutio sine qn ea culpa & pēna nota















ma is worpi his mete / ito what  
euer citee or castel ze shulen en-  
tre: are ze whop me is worpi. &  
per diueller ze til ze go out / for lo  
pe ze entrige into an hous. gree-  
te or salute ze it & seye. pees to  
his hous / & sopeh if yllke hous  
be worpi: zoure pees shal come  
on it / for loye if pat hous be not  
worpi: zoure pees shal turne a-  
zen to zou / & who euer resseyner  
not zou. ney heery zom wordis:  
ze goynge for fro hous or citee  
fuyte awaye pe dust fro zour feet  
treuly / I seye to zou. it shal be mo-  
ze susteable to ye lond of me of  
sodom & gomoz. in ye day of iuge-  
ment: van to yllke citee. **¶** lo I sen-  
de zou as sheep in ye myddel of wol-  
ues / & fore ze ze war or wps bifoze  
as serpentis: & symple as doukis  
but be ze war of me / for pei shule  
take zou in coucehs: & pei shulen  
bete zou in her synagogis: & to mey-  
ris or prelatentis: & to kyngis ze sh-  
ulen be led for me: into witne sig-  
to hem / & hepen men / but whane  
pei shulen bitake or bitape zou.  
nyle ze penke how or what pig ze  
shulen speke / for it ben not ze pat  
speken: but pe spyt of zoure fa-  
dir pat speky in zou / sopeh pe bro-  
ur shal take pe hopy into deep: &  
pe fadir pe lone / & lones shulen  
ryle azens fadir & modur: & shu-  
len turnete hem bi deep: & ze sh-  
ulen be in hate to alle me for my  
name / for loye he pat shal diueller  
shille til into ye ende: shal be last  
sopeh whane pei shule pursue  
zou in pis citee: fle ze into anoy /  
treuly / I seye to zou. ze shule not  
ende ye citees of yrael: til man

for it shal be zoun to zou in pat  
our: what ze shulen speke

some come / ye disciple is not a  
boue ye maistr: ne ye seruait  
aboue his lord / it is ynow to ye  
disciple: pat he be as his maistr  
tr: & ye seruait as his lord / &  
pei han clepid ye hofebonde ma-  
or ye fadir of meyne besebub:  
hou moche moze his houshold me-  
ne / & fore drede ze not hem / for  
no pig is feuerid or ind: pat  
shal not be shewid: & no ping  
is pryng: pat shal not be wit-  
pat ping pat I seye to zou in tere-  
nellis: seye ze in ye tzt / And sh-  
ze on housis pat pig: pat ze heere  
in ye eere / And nyle ze drede hem  
pat steen ye body: treuly pei mou-  
not ste ye soule / but rapere drede  
ze hym pat may leese bope soule &  
body into helle / wher twey sparo-  
wis ben not seeld for an halpeny:  
& oon of hem shal not falle on ye  
erpe wy oute zour fadir: for loye  
alle ye heeris of zour heed ben woi-  
brid / & fore nyle ze drede: ze ben be-  
ret van many sparowis / & fore  
euy man pat shal knowleche  
me bifoze me: & I shal knowleche  
hym bifoze my fadir pat is in he-  
neces / sopeh he pat shal denye  
me bifoze me: & I shal denye hy  
bifoze my fadir which is in he-  
neces / & fore ze deme pat I cam to se-  
de pees into erpe / I cam not to sen-  
de pees: but swerd / for I cam to  
departe a ma azens his fadir: &  
ye dougtr azens hyr modur: & ye  
lones wyf azens ye hofebondis  
modur: & ye enemyes of amā: be  
his homely meyne. **¶** he pat louey  
fadir or modur moze pa me: is not  
worpi of me / and he pat louey so-  
ne or dougtr ouer me is not wor-

pi of me / and he pat taky not his  
croul & shak not me: is not wor-  
pi of me / he pat fyndy not his  
soule pat is tēporal lpf: shal lee-  
se it / and he pat lesey his soule  
pat is lpf for me: shal fynde it /  
be pat resseyner zou: resseyner  
me / and he pat resseyner me: re-  
seyner hy pat sente me / he pat  
resseyner a profete in ye name  
of a profete: shal take kynde of  
a profete / and he pat resseyner a  
ma in ye name of a ma: shal  
shal take ye mete of a iust man /  
& who enzyner drynke to oon of ye  
leeste: a cuppe of cold wat oonly  
in ye name of a disciple: treuly  
I seye to zou. he shal not leese  
his meede. **¶** **A**nd it was don whane ihc  
hadde endid: he comaūdite  
to his twelue discipulis. & passide  
fro yerus for to techē & preche i ye  
cites of hem / for loye whane ioh-  
in boondishadde herd ye werkis  
of crist: he sente tweyne of his  
discipulis & seyd to hym art pou he  
pat art to comyge: or we abiden  
anoyr: & ihc answerde & seide  
to hem go ze & telle azen to ioh-  
po pingis pat ze han herd & seyn  
blynde me seen: croked me wan-  
dren: mekels ben maad cleue: deef  
me heeren: deed me rylen azen  
pore me ben takū to prechyng of  
ye gospel: or ben maad keperis  
of ye gospel / and he is blethid pat  
shal not be standrid in me / soye  
hy whane pei were gon awaye:  
ihc bigan for to seye of iohā to  
ye cūpanyes / what pig wente  
ze out into deslert for to se: / whe-  
a reed wairid wy pe wynd:

but what pig wente ze out for  
to se: / wher amā clopid wy  
sotte pigs: lo pei pat ben clopid  
wy sotte pigs: ben in housis of  
kyngis / but what pig wente ze  
out for to se: / wher a profete:  
the I seie to I: & moze van a pro-  
fete / for pis is he of whom it  
is writū / lo I sente my aūgel  
bifoze vi face: pat shal make  
redy vi weye bifoze pee / treuly  
I seye to zou: & roos noo moze van  
iohā baptist among ye children  
of wyme / but he pat is lesse i ye  
kyngdom of heuenes: is moze pa  
he / sopeh fro ye daies of iohā bap-  
tist til now: ye kyngdom of heue-  
nes suffryt arengye or violence:  
& violent me ranyshen it / for  
alle profetis & ye law til to iohā  
baptist pfectiden: & if ze wole res-  
seyne: he is elye pat is to comy-  
ge / he pat hap eerris of heerige:  
heere he / but to whom shal I  
gelle pis genaciōn kynd: / it is  
hichy to children sittige in chepi-  
ge: whiche cryen to her peeris  
& seyen / we han songū to zou: & ze  
han not dauid / we han mozemid  
to zou: & ze han not weylid / for iohā  
cam. ney etige ne drynkige: & pei  
sepen. he hap a deucl / ye lone of  
mā. cam etige & drūke: & pei  
seiden / lo amā denourer or gloton:  
& drynker of wyne. & frend of pry-  
phicans & lyful me: & wisdom is  
iustified of her lones. **¶** whane ihc  
bigan for to seye repret to citees  
in whiche ful many vertues of  
hy weren don: for pei diden not  
penaūce / wo to pee corosaym:  
wo to pee bethsaida / for if pe d-  
tues pat ben don in zou. hadde



be don in ture & sydon. su tyme pei  
hadde do penaunce in here & aridh  
nepeles / seie to zoi. it shal be  
more softere. or lesse peyne. to ty  
re & sydon. in re day of dom pa to  
zoi. And you casarnai. wher til  
into heuene you shalt be rerid  
up. / p' shalt go don til into hel  
le for if ye vertues. pat ben do  
in pee. hadde be don in sodom. p'  
auentur. pei shulden haue diuel  
lid til into visday. nepeles / seie  
to zoi. for to peloud of sodom it  
shal be softere or lesse peyne in  
re day of dom. pan to pee. **I**n  
pille tyme ihc answeride & seyde  
de / i knowleche to pee fadir lord  
of heuene & erpe. for p' hast hid  
res p'gis fro wyle men & war  
or slez me. & hast shewid hem  
to meke me. so fadir. for whi. lo  
it was pleshyge to fore pee. alle  
p'gis ben zoiu to me of my fa  
dir. & no ma knew ye sone. no  
but ye fadir. ney ony ma knew  
ye fadir. no but ye sone. & to wh  
om ye sone wolde shewe. alle  
ze pat trauеле & ben chargid.  
come to me. & i shal refreulhe.  
or fulfille zoi. take ze my zok  
on zoi. & lerne ze of me for i am  
mylde & meek in herte. & ze shu  
len fynde reste to zoi. soulis  
for my zok is swete & my charge

**I**n pat tyme ihc wente  
by cornes in ye sabot day  
forlope hile discipulis hūgringe.  
bigimen to plucke eeris of corn  
& to ete. sovely farisees seynge.  
seiden to hym. lo pi discipulis doe  
pat yng pat is not leetful to he  
for to do in sabotis. And he seide

to hem. wher ze han not redd.  
what damp dide. whane he hi  
gride. & pei pat weren wy hū  
how he entride into ye hous of  
god. & eet loones of aposticion. wh  
che loones it was not leetful  
to hym to ete. ney to hem pat  
weren wy hū. no but to prestis  
aloone. or wher ze han not rad  
in ye laipe. for in sabotis. prestis  
in ye temple de foulen ye sabo  
tis. & pei ben wy outh greet sy  
ne. / sovely / seie to zoi. for here  
is more pan ye temple. forlope if ze  
wisten what it is. i wole merce  
not sacrifice. ze shulden neuere  
haue condempnd innocentis. for  
mans sone is lord. zhe of ye sa  
bot. and whue he passide fro pen.  
he cam into ye synagoge of hem.  
& lo ama haunge a drye hond. &  
pei aride hy & seiden. wher it is  
leetful to heele in ye sabot. pat pei  
shulde acule hym. sovely he seide  
to he. who shal be ama of zoi. pat  
havo o sheep. & if it falle down into  
a dich in ye sabotis. wher he shal  
not holde. & lyfte it up. how mo  
che more is ama bette. pa a she  
ep. / ver fore it is leetful to do go  
od in ye sabotis. pane he seide to  
ye uia. / treache for ym hond. &  
he straupte forp. & it was retho  
rid to heelp as yetour. forlope  
farisees goynge out made a cou  
cel azens hym. how pei shulden  
leeste hym. sovely ihc wryte. we  
te away fro pen. and mane su  
weden hym. & he hechde hem alle  
and he comāidide to hem. pat pei  
shulden not make hym knowu  
pat pat yis shulde be fulfild.  
pat was seid by ihsaie ye pfece

seynge. / lo my child whom i ha  
ue chosi. my derlyng in whom  
it har wel plesid to my soule. / i  
shal putte my spirit on hym.  
& he shal telle dom to hepe men.  
he shal not stryue ne crye. ney  
ony man shal hee. his voys in  
streetis. he shal not breke to gi  
de. a shakū rehed. & he shal  
not quenche smokige flex. til  
he cante out dom to victorie. & he  
yen me shulen hope in his na  
me. pane a blynd ma. & doub ha  
uynge a deuyl. was bryngt to hy.  
& he hechde hym. so pat he spak  
de. / and alle ciupanyes wondri  
den & seide. wher yis be ye sone  
of damp. / but ye farisees heer  
ge. seiden. he yis castip not out  
fendis. no but in bellebub pnce  
of fendis. sovely ihc wryte. her  
pouztis. seide to hem. ech kyngdo  
departid azens it self. shal be  
desolatid. and ech citee or hous  
departid azens it self. shal not  
stoute. & if sathanas castip out  
sathanas. he is departid azens  
hi self. / pfore how shal his kyng  
dom stonde. & if i in bellebub  
cande out deuylis. in whom zoi  
re lones casten out. / pfore pei  
shulen be zoi. domelme. / forlop  
if i in ye spirit of god cande out fe  
dis. / ver fore ye kyngdom of god  
is comē into zoi. / epr how may  
ony ma entree into ye hous. of  
a strong ma. & take away hile  
velles. no but first he bynde  
ye strong ma. & rane he shal  
ranyllhe his hous. **T**he pat is  
not wy me. is azens me. & he  
pat gaderip not to gidre wy

me. / staterip a brood. / pfore i seie  
to zoi. al syne & blasfemye shal  
be forzoiu to me. but blasfemye  
of ye spirit. shal not be forzoiu.  
and who eu seiy a word azens ma  
is sone. it shal be forzoiu. &  
who eu seiy a word azens ma  
is sone. it shal be forzoiu to  
hym. forlope if ama shal seye a  
word azens ye hooky gost. it shal  
not be forzoiu to hym. ney i yis  
world ne in ye toyr. / epr make  
ze ye tre good & his fruyt good.  
epr make ze ye tre yuel & his  
fruyt yuel. forlope a tre is kno  
we of ye fruyt. / ze generacion  
of eddis. how moyn ze speke  
goode yigis. whne ze ben yuele.  
for ye moyn speky of ye greet  
plente of herte. / a good ma bry  
gy forp goode yigis of good tre  
sour. and an yuel ma brygy forp  
yuele yigis of yuel tresour. for  
lope i sepe to zoi. forwhi. of eury  
yuel word pat me spoken. pei shu  
len zelde resoi. pof in ye day of dom.  
for of pi wordis you shalt be iusti  
fied. & of pi wordis you shalt be  
dampned. pane sūme of ye tribis  
& farisees. answeride to hym & sei  
den. / ozant we wolen se a tokene  
of pee. / which answeryge. seide to  
hem. an yuel generacion & auoutriel  
se. seky a tokene. And a tokene  
shal not be zoiu to it. no but ye  
tokene of jonas ye profete. for  
as jonas was in ye wombe of a  
whal. ye dayes & ye nyztis. so  
mans sone shal be in ye herte  
of ye erpe. ye dayes & ye nyztis.  
ozen of nyntye shulen ryse in  
dom wy yis generacion. & shule



condempne it. for þei didnen penaunce  
in þe prechynge of jonas. and so her  
is moze þā jonas. þe queene of þe  
lowy. ȝhal ryle in dom wy þis ge  
neracion. ȝhal cōdempne it. for  
she cam fro þe eendis of þe erpe  
for to heere þe wysdom of salomon.  
and lo her is moze þā salomon.  
forsope whāne an vnclene spirit  
hay gon out from amā. he goy bi  
dye placis. ȝ sek þe rest. ȝ fyndy  
not. þāne he sey. ȝ ȝhal turne a  
ȝen into myn hous. fro whēms ȝ  
wente out. and he comey ȝ fyndy  
it. vopde. cleusid wy þe lines. ȝ  
maad farr. þāne he goy ȝ tak y  
wy hym senene ower spiritis  
worle þān hym self. ȝ þei entre  
ȝ dwellessen þe. and þe laste pigis  
of pat mā. ben maad. worle þān  
þe former. so it ȝhal be ȝ to þis  
worlde generacion. ȝit while he  
spak to þe cūpanyes of peple.  
lo his modir ȝ his byperen stode  
wyoute for ȝ sekige for to speke  
to hym. sovelly sū mā seide to hy.  
lo þi modir ȝ þi byperen stonden  
wyouten for. sekige þee. and  
he answerige to þe mā seynge  
to hym. seide. who is my modir.  
ȝ who ben my byperen. and he  
holdige for his hond into his  
discyplis. seide. lo my modir ȝ  
my byperen. for who enere don  
þe wille of my fadir. þat is in he  
neues. he is my broþer ȝ sūt ȝ modir.  
ȝ þat day ihc goyn. **C. xij.**  
ge out of þe hous. sat bysydis  
þe see. and many cūpanyes of pe  
ple werē gadrid to hym. so þat  
he stizunge up into aboot. sat. ȝ  
al þe cūpany stode in þe byrke.

and he spak to hem many wises  
in parabis seynge. lo he þat to  
wy ȝede out to sow þis seed. ȝ  
þe while he sowy. sūme seedis  
felde bysydis þe weye. ȝ bysydis of  
þe eyr. camen. ȝ eeten hem. for  
h ower. **ȝadris** felten into doorn  
placis. where þei hadden not moche  
erpe. ȝ anoon þei sprūgen up. for  
þei hadden not depnesse of erpe. so  
þei whāne þe sūne was risi. þei  
swalūde ȝ brent for heete. and  
for þei hadden not roote. þei drey  
eden up. forsope ower. **ȝadris** felde  
amōg. pornes. ȝ pornes woxen  
up ȝ stranghten hem. but ower. **ȝadris**  
felten into good lond. ȝ ȝamen  
fruyt. sū an hūdrid fold. anōf þe  
ty fold. anōf þe tyti fold. he þat  
eerns of heerig. heere. he. and dyl  
phs comyge nyz. seiden to hy. whā  
spokst þou in parabis to hem. ȝ  
ich answerige seide to he. for to.  
it is þoum for to knowe þe prync  
tees of þe kyngdom of heuenes.  
but it is not þoum to hem. for it  
ȝhal be þoum to hym. ȝ þat he  
ȝhal haue plente. treuly if amā  
hay not. alþo þat þis þat he hay  
ȝhal be takē away fro hym. þer  
fore ȝ speke to hem in parabis. for  
þei seynge sen not. ȝ þei heerige  
heeren not. ney vnderstonde.  
þat þe profete of flaye seynge  
be fulfilled in he. wy heerig. ȝ  
ȝhulen heere. ȝ ȝe ȝhulen not vnder  
stonde. ȝ ȝe seynge ȝhulē se.  
ȝ ȝe ȝhulen not se. for þe herte  
of þis peple is greetly fatted.  
ȝ þei herden grenouly wy am.  
ȝ þei han closid her ȝzen. lest sū  
tyme þei seen wy men. ȝ wy

cerns heeren. ȝ vnderstonde. ȝ her  
to. ȝ þei be comitid ey to gidre tur  
nyd. ȝ heele hem. forsope þoune  
þien þat seen ben blestid. ȝ þoune  
cerns þat heeren. forsope ȝ seie tren  
þe to þou. for many pphetis ȝ iust  
me cometide to se þo visis þat  
ȝe seen. ȝ þei spen not. and to hee  
re þo pngis þat ȝe heere. ȝ þei her  
den not. þerfore heere ȝe þe para  
ble of þe tower. ȝ þat heere þe  
word of reuēne. ȝ vnderstonde. not.  
þe fūel spirit comey. ȝ anōf þe  
þat ȝ is sowū in his herte. ȝ is it ȝ is  
sowū bysydis þe weye. sovelly he þat  
is sowū on doorn lond. ȝ is it ȝ is þat  
heere þe word of god. ȝ anōf wy  
dye tak y it. forsope he hay not ro  
ote in hym self. but he is tēpōral.  
þat is it lasty. no but alþe tyme.  
but whāne tribulacion ȝ persecu  
cion is maad for þe word. anōf he  
is stāndrid. sovelly he þat is sowū  
in pornes. is þis þat heere þe wo  
rd. ȝ þe bysynesse of þis word. ȝ  
þe falluēse of richeliss. strangly  
þe word. ȝ it is maad wyoute fr  
uyt. but he þat is sowū into go  
od lond. is þis þat heere þe word  
ȝ vnderstonde. ȝ byngy for  
fruyt. and sovelly sū mak y an  
hūdrid fold. treuly anōf þe ty  
fold. forsope anōf þe tyti fold.  
**C. xij.** Anōf parable ihc putte for  
to hem. ȝ seide. þe kyngdom of he  
neues is maad lych to amā þat  
sew good seed in his feeld. forsope  
whāne men slepen. his enemy  
cam ȝ sew aboue. darnel ȝ coc  
kil in þe myddil of whete. ȝ we  
te away. sovelly whāne þe eerbe  
hadde growid ȝ maad fruyt. þā  
ne þe cockis ȝ darnels apern

den. forsope þe seruantis of þe ho  
sebonde man comyge nyz. seide to  
hym. lord wher þou hast not sowū  
good seed in þi feeld. wherof þfore  
hay it darnel ȝ cockil. ȝ he seide  
to he. þe mā enemy. hay do þis pig.  
treuly þe seruantis seiden to hy.  
wolt þou we go. ȝ gederē hem. ȝ  
he seide. nay. lest þauenture ȝe ga  
drynge darnels ȝ cockis. drinke  
up þy þe roote to gydre wy he  
also þe whete. sūfre ȝ hem bove  
were til to ryppē corn. ȝ in tyme of  
ryppē corn. ȝ ȝhal seye to reapers.  
first gadre ȝe to gidre darnels ȝ  
cockis. and bynde hem to gidre i  
byndis ȝ smallē byndis. for to  
be brent. but gadre ȝe whete into  
my berne. anōf parable ihc put  
te for to hem. ȝ seide. þe kyng  
dom of heuenes is lyk to acorn  
of seneney. which amā took ȝ  
sew in his feeld. which treuly is  
þe leste of alle seedis. but whā  
ne it hay woxe. it is þe mooste  
of alle woxis. ȝ is maad a tree.  
so ȝ bysydis of þe eyr comē ȝ dwel  
len i bovis ȝ brāuchis þerof. **ȝ**  
anōf parable ihc spak to hem. þe  
kyngdom of heuenes is lyk to soue  
dour. which a wōmā took ȝ hude in  
þe meluris of mele. til it were  
al sūdowid. ȝ he spak alle þes  
piges in parabis to þe cūpanyes  
of peple. ȝ he spak not to hem  
wyoute parabis. þat it ȝhulde be  
fulfilled þat is seid by þe profete  
seynge. ȝ ȝhal opyne my mouy  
in parabis. ȝ ȝhal telle out hy  
piges. fro makng of þe word.  
þāne he leste þe cūpanyes. ȝ he  
cam into an hous. ȝ hile discyplis  
camē nyz to hym. ȝ seide. ȝ þou



ne to us þe parable of daniel. or  
cockles of þe feeld. which answere  
de & seide. he þat sowþ good seed.  
is man's sone. soþer þe feeld. is  
þe world. but þe good seed. þes be  
sones of þe kyngdom. for soþe dar  
nels or cockles. þes beu yuele so  
nes. but þe enemy þat sowþ hem.  
is þe fend. but þe ryþe to. is þe  
endig. of þe world. soþer þe repe  
ris. ben angelis. þfore as daniel  
ben gadrid to gidre & ben hent  
in fier. so it shal be mending  
of þe world. or am's sone shal sen  
de his angelis. & þei shulen gadre  
fro his reuine alle islandis. &  
hem þat don wickidnesse. & þei  
shulen sende he into þe chyme  
neye of fyer. þer shal be wepyn  
& betyng. to gidre of teer. þane  
mit me shulen shyne as þe son  
ne. in þe reuine of her fadir. he  
þat þar ceis of heering. heer he  
þe kyngdom of heuenes is lyk  
to tresour hid. in a feeld. which  
aman þat fyndir. hydyr. & for ioye  
of it. he goyþ & silley alle pigis  
þat he þar. & þey wilke feeld. est  
ibnes þe kyngdom of heuenes  
is lyk to aman marthant. sek  
ge goode margaritis. soþer wha  
ne he þar foude oþrecious marga  
rite. he wente & selde alle pigis þ  
he hadde. & bouyte it. est þe kyngd  
of heuenes is lyk to anett sent i  
to þe see. & gadryng of alle kyn  
de of fischis. which me ledde out.  
whane it was fulfild. & þei sitti  
ge bishpis þe bynke. chelide þe  
goode into her vessels. but þei sen  
ten out þe yuele. so it shal be i  
þe endyng. of þe world. angelis  
shulen gon out. & shulen depar

te yuele me. fro þe myddil of w  
men. & þei shulen sende hem to  
þe chymeneye of fyer. þer shal  
be wepyn. & betyng. to gidre  
of teer. þan ze vudr stonde alle  
þes pigis. þei seyen to hym. þe  
he seip to hem. þerfore euery w  
ter. taut in þe kyngdom of heu  
nes is lyk to an hofeboude man.  
þat byngir for of his tresour.  
newe yngis & elde. & it was dou  
whane ihc hadde endid þes para  
blis. he passide fro þeims. and he  
comynge into his cunt. taut he  
in her synagogis. so þat þei won  
driden & seyden. wher of to hy þis  
wyldom & vertues. wher is  
not þis þe sone of a lynn. or car  
penter. wher his modir be not led  
marie. & hile briden james & jos  
eph. & symon & judas. and his sis  
tris wher þei alle ben not at us.  
þerfore wher of to hym alle þes  
pigis. and so þei weren staidrid  
in hy. for soþe ihc seyde to hem. app  
fete is not wyoute woithip. no  
but in his owne citre. & in his  
owne hous. and he dide not þer  
many vertues for þe vublene  
of hem. = C. xiii. =

**I**n þat tyme eroude þ  
ce of þe fourþe part. her  
de þe fame of ihu. & seyde to his ch  
ildren. þis is john baptist. he þar  
rili fro deed me. & þerfore v  
es woichyn in hym. for eroude  
heeld john. & boond hym & putti  
de hym into prilon. for erodias  
þe wyf of his broþ. for john seide  
to hym. it is not leetful to þe.  
for to haue hy. and he willige  
to sle hym dreed þe people. for  
þei hadden hym as a pfofete. for

soþe in þe day of erodias þir þe  
þe dontr of erodias dailide in  
þe myddil. & pleide to eroude. wh  
erfore wy an op he bishpe for to  
zyne to hyr. what eney þing. he  
hadde auid of hym. & she bifore  
monettid or warned of hyr modir.  
seide. zyne you to me hidur. þe  
heed of john baptist in a dyth.  
& þe þing was sozeifful. but  
for þe oop. & for hem þat laten  
to gidre at þe mete. he coman  
dite to be zoun. and he sente. & bi  
heedide john. & þis heed  
was bouyt in a dyth. & it was zo  
nii to þe wenche. & she bar it to hyr  
modir. & his discipulis came nyz.  
& token his body. & buried it. &  
þei camen & tolden to ihu. & wha  
ne ihc hadde herd þis þing. he  
wente fro þeims in a boot into  
desert place bishpis. & whie þe  
cipanyes of peple hadde herd.  
þei folowide hy. on her feet fro  
cetes. & ihc goynge out syz a gr  
eet cipanye & hadde reupe on  
hem. & heelde þe speke me of þe  
soþer whane þe euentid was  
maid. hile discipulis came nyz to  
hym & seiden. þe place is desert.  
& þe our þar now pallid. leene  
you þe cipanyes of peple. þat  
þei go into castels & bye metis  
to hem. for soþe ihc seide to hem.  
þei han not nede to go. zyne ze  
to hem for to ete. þei answere  
we han not her. no but fyne loo  
nes & twey fischis. which seide  
to hem. bynge ze hem hidur to  
me. And whane he hadde coman  
did þe cipanye for to sitte to  
mete on þe þey. he took fyne loo  
nes & twey fischis. and he bihol

dige into þe enene. blestide þat & þat  
to hile discipulis. soþer þe discipulis  
zauen to þe cipanyes. and alle  
eeten & were fulfild. & þei toke  
þe rehfs of brok. & gobatis. twey  
coffyns ful. for soþe þe noubre of  
men etynge. was fyne þousand  
of me. out taku wyman & lytle  
children. And anoo ihc compel  
lide þe discipulis. for to go up into  
aboot. & go bifore hym on þe see.  
til he leste þe cipanyes. & whane  
þe cipany was leste. he stude al  
oone. into an hil for to prey. soþe  
ly whane þe euentyge was maad.  
he was þere aloone. soþer þe bo  
ot in þe myddil of þe see. was þo  
wii wy. & wavis. for soþe þe wynd  
was contrarie to hem. but in þe  
fourþe wakig. of þe nyxt. he cam  
to hem walkig. aboue þe see. &  
þei seynge hym walkig aboue  
þe see. weren disturbid seynge  
for it is a fantu. & for drede þei cri  
eden. & anoo ihc spak to he. & sei  
de. haue ze trist. i am. uyle ze d  
de. soþer þe petre answerege. sei  
de. lord if you art. comande me  
for to come to þe. on þe watris.  
and he seide. come you. and þe  
goynge dou fro þe boot. walkid  
on þe watris. for to come to ihu.  
treuly he seynge a strong wynd.  
was a feerd. & whie he bigan for  
to be drenchid. he cryede seynge  
lord make me saaf. & anoo ihc  
holdige for þe hond. taut he  
& seide to hy. þou of lytl fery. wh  
hast þ donrid. & whane he hadde  
stuzed into þe boot. þe wynd ce  
side. soþer þei þat were in þe bo  
ot. camen & woithpede hy & sei  
den. verily. þ art godis sone. =



whiche þei hadden passid ou þe see:  
þei came into þe lond of genezar/  
and whāne mē of þat place hadde  
knowe hȝ. þei sente unto al þat  
cūtre. & þei brouȝte to hȝ alle ha  
uȝge yuele. & þei p̄ceden hȝ in  
þat þei iħhulde touche þe hēme  
of his cloȝig. And who enī touch  
den. weren maad sark. **¶**

**A**nde scribis & farisees  
camen up to hȝm fro  
iħm. & seȝden. whi breke  
þi diltiphs þe tradicions of eldre  
mē. for þei wānthe not hondis.  
whāne þei eten breed. soȝeli he  
answerige seide to hem. whi & ze  
breken þe comādemēt of god. for  
zou. tradiciō. for whi god seide.  
honoure þi fadir & þi modir. & he  
pat cursly fadir. or modir. dȝe by  
deȝ. but ze seȝen. who euer seȝ  
to fadir. or modir. what enī zifre  
is of me. it iħhal profite to þee.  
and he iħhal not worlthipe his fa  
dir. or his modir. & ze han maad þe  
comādemēt of god voyde. for  
zou. tradiciō. ꝑpocritis. flaye  
þe profete. profetiede wel of zou.  
& seȝde. vis peple honourip me  
wip lypis. forloȝe her herte is  
fer fro me. treuþi þei worlthipe  
me wipoute cause. & techen þe  
doctryns & maūdemētis of mē.  
& whāne þe cūpanȝes of peple we  
ren cleȝid to gidre to hȝ. he seide  
to hem. heere ze & vnderstonde. not  
þat þiȝ. þat entrip into þe monȝ.  
defoulyp aman. but þat þiȝ. þat  
comeȝ forȝ fro þe monȝ. foulyp  
ama. þāne hīle diltiphs camen  
up. & seiden to hȝm. woot þou  
for bi þis word herd. farisees bē  
staūdzid. & he answerige seide.

eiȝ plaitig. which my fadir of  
heue. hay not plaitid. iħhal be  
draȝn up bi þe roote. & iħfze  
hem. þei ben blynde & leders of  
blynde mē. soȝeli if a blynd mā  
zyneȝ ledȝng to a blynd mā. to  
þe fallen dou into þe dȝch. forso  
þe petre answerde. & seide to hȝ.  
exponne to us þis parable. & he  
seide. zit & ze ben wipoute vnder  
stonȝ. wher ze vnderstonen  
not for al þis. þat entrip into þe  
monȝ. goȝ into þe wombe. & is  
sent out into þe goȝng. amey. but  
þo þiȝis. þat comen forȝ fro þe  
monȝ. goen out of þe herte. &  
þo þiȝis defoulen ama. for of  
þe herte goen out. yuele pouȝtis.  
maclȝyngis. auontȝis. forȝ  
caciōis. pestis. fall wicȝelȝis  
blasfemyes. þes þiȝis. it ben. þat  
defoulen aman. soȝeli forto ete.  
wip hondis not wānthe. defou  
lyp not ama. **¶** And iħf ze de out  
fro þe mē. & wente into þe par  
tis of tyre & sidon. and lo a wom  
mā of canane zede out of þo coos  
tis. & crieȝe seȝyng to hȝm. lord  
þe sone of dany. haue mercy on  
me. orȝ douȝt. is yuele traȝelid  
of a deuē. which answeride not  
to hȝ. a word. and hīle diltiphs co  
men up. & p̄ceden hȝm & seide.  
leeȝe þou hȝ. for she cȝeȝyast  
us. forloȝe he answeride. & seide.  
I am not sent. no but to þe iħhe  
ep of þe hous of israhel. þat per  
iħheden. and she cam. & worlthi  
pide hȝm. & seide. lord help me.  
which answeride & seide. zit is not  
good forto take þe breed of sones.  
& seide to hōndis. and she seide.  
þhe lord. for whi & hīle welȝis c

ten of þe crīmes. þat fallen doȝn  
fro þe bord of her lordis. þāne iħf  
answeride. & seide to hȝ. Al þou  
wōman. vi feȝ is greet. be it  
don to þee. as þou wolt. And hȝ  
douȝt. was heeȝid fro þat our  
And whāne iħf hadde passid fro  
þe mē. he cam biȝȝdis þe see of  
galilee. & he aȝede into an hīl. &  
sat þere. & many cūpanȝes ca  
men up to hȝm. & hadden wip  
hem. douȝ mē. & crokȝ. feble & bly  
de. & many oȝer. & þei castȝe dou  
hem at his feet. & he heeȝide hem.  
so þat þe cūpanȝes wōndȝ. se  
yngȝe douȝ mē lȝeȝige. & crokȝ  
goȝngȝ. blynde mē seȝyngȝ. & þei  
magnȝfieden god of israhel. **¶** Soȝe  
hȝ iħf seide to his diltiphs. cleȝid  
to gidre. I haue reȝeȝ of þe cū  
panȝe of peple. for nou þe ȝid  
de. þat þei dwelȝen stille wip me.  
& þei han not þiȝ. which þei iħhu  
len ete. and I wole not leeȝe he  
fastige. lest þei faȝlen in þe weȝe.  
& þe diltiphs seȝen to hȝ. þfore  
wherof so many loones to us i  
desert. & we fulȝille so greet a  
cūpanȝe of peple. & iħf seide to  
hem. hōȝ many loones han ze.  
& þei seiden. seȝene. & aȝeȝe sma  
le fulȝis. and he comāȝide. to  
þe cūpanȝe. & þei iħhulden litte  
to mete on þe erȝ. And he takȝ  
ge seȝene loones & fȝne fulȝis.  
& doȝyngȝe panȝis. brak & ȝaf to  
his diltiphs. & diltiphs ȝaȝe to  
þe peple. & alle eete & werē ful  
fullid. And þei toȝken þat þat  
was lest of reħis. seȝene leeȝi  
fulle. forloȝe þei þat eeten. we  
ren fouȝ pouȝend of mē. wip  
oute lȝtle children & wȝmē. &

whāne þe cūpanȝe of peple was  
lest. he aȝede into a boot & cam  
to þe coostis of magadan. **¶** **¶**  
**A**nd farisees & saducees  
teȝtȝyngȝe camē up to  
hȝm. & p̄ceden hȝm for  
to iħheȝe to hem. a tokene fro he  
ue. & he answeride. & seide to hȝ.  
whiȝe þe euentȝ is maad. ze seȝ  
en. it iħhal be cleȝ. for þe heue  
is roȝȝ. & þe moȝne. to dȝȝ tem  
pest. for heue. iħhȝneȝ hȝuȝly  
or forȝful. þfore ze han knowe to de  
me wȝtȝly þe face of heue. but  
ze mōȝu not wite þe tokenes of  
tȝmes. þe ȝuel generaciō. & auou  
trellȝe seȝȝ a tokene. and a toke  
ne iħhal not be ȝouȝ to it. nobut  
þe tokene of jonas þe profete. &  
whiȝe he hadde forȝake hem. he wē  
te amey. and whiȝe hīle diltiphs  
camē ouer þe see. þei forȝate for  
to take loones. which seide to hem.  
biȝholde ze & be war. of þe sounȝouȝ  
of farisees & saducees. & þei pouȝ  
ten amōȝ hem. & seiden. for we  
han not take loones. forloȝe iħf  
wȝȝȝe. seide to hem. what ȝeȝe ze  
among ȝou of lȝtȝl feȝ. for ze  
han not loones. zit vnderstonȝden  
not ze. neȝ han mȝȝde of fȝne  
loones into fȝne pouȝend of mē.  
& hōȝ many coȝȝis ze toȝken. treu  
ly neȝ of seȝene loones to some  
pouȝend of mē. & hōȝ many leeȝis  
ze toȝken. whȝ vnderstonȝde ze  
not. for I seide not to ȝou of breed.  
be ze war of þe sounȝouȝ of farise  
es & saducees. þāne þei vndersto  
den. & he seide not to be war of þe  
sounȝouȝ of loones. but of þe te  
chȝȝ. of farisees & saducees. soȝe  
hȝ iħf cam into þe parties of cȝla



rie of philip. & axide hile diltuphs  
f leide / who sepen nie to be māns  
sone. & pei seide / sinne john bap  
tist. ope forsoye elpe: soveli ope  
jeremye. or oon of ye profetis / ihc  
seide to hem / but who sepen ze me  
to be: symon petir answerige.  
seide / you art cit ye sone of god  
lynge / forsoye ihc answerige.  
seide to hym / blessed art you sy  
mon bariona: pat is sone of  
culhe: for fleish & blood ihc wite  
not to see. but my fadir pat is  
in heuenes / and i seye to see. for  
you art petre. & on ris stoon. i  
shal bilde my churche / & ze zatis  
of helle shulen not hane myrt  
azens it / and to see i shal zyne  
ye keyes of ye kyngdom of heue  
nes: & what eu you shal bynde  
on erpe: shal be bound also in  
heuenes / and what eu ye shal  
vnbunde on erpe: shal be vnbou  
d also in heuenes. prane he co  
mandide to hile diltuphs. & pei  
shulde seie to no mā. pat he wa  
shu cit / fro pat tyne ihc biga  
for to shewe to hile diltuphs.  
it bihofte hy go to ierlm. &  
suffre many pigis / of ye eldis  
& strybis. & princes of prestis.  
& be slayn. & pe vride day ryle  
azen / and petre takinge hym.  
bigan for to blame hym & seide /  
fer be it fro pee lord: ris ying  
shal be not to see / which turne  
de & seide to petre / sathanas go  
astir me / you art blandre to me.  
for you sanoxist not. or vndersto  
dilt not vo pigis pat ben of god:  
but vo pigis pat ben of me. prane  
ihc seide to hile diltuphs / if  
ony mā wole come astir me: de

uyp he hym self: & take his cross  
& synke me / for he pat wole make  
his soule last pat is his lyf. shal  
leese it / forsoye he pat shal leese  
his soule is lyf for me: shal sy  
de it / for what profit it to amā.  
if he wyne al ye world: treuly he  
suffre peyrig of his soule: or  
what chaunging shal amā zyne  
for his soule: for māns sone shal  
al come in glorie of his fadir: wy  
his angels: & pāne he shal zelde  
to enery man astir his werhs.  
treuly i seye to you. & ben sūme  
of men stoungie her: which shul  
ulen not taste deye. til ver seen  
māns sone comyge i his kyngdom.  
**A**d astir hye. James. & john his broper:  
& ledde hem a hydis into an hy  
hil. & was tiffigured. or turned  
into anof lykenesse bifoze hem.  
& his face shoon as ye sūme: for  
soye his cloris weren maid whi  
te a snow: & hnd to moyses & elpe  
apperiden to hem: & spaken wy  
hym / soveli petre answerige.  
seide to ihu / lord it is good. us to  
be her / if you wolt: make we  
here pre tabernacles. to see  
oon. to moyses oon. & oon to elpe  
zit ye while he spak: lo a bunt  
cloude shadewide he / and lo a  
vois of ye cloude. seyinge / is  
my dereworpe sone in who  
i hane wel plesid to me: here  
ze hym / and ye diltuphs heeri  
ge: falleten don on her faces.  
& dzedde greetly / and ihc cam  
ny: & touchide hem: & seide to  
hem: ryle up. & ryle ze dzedde  
forsoye pei rerige her zyen.

syzen no mā no but ihc aloone /  
and while pei came don fro ye  
moiteyn: ihc comandide to he  
& seide / seye ze to no mā ye visioi.  
til māns sone ryle azen fro de  
me. And hile diltuphs axide hy.  
seiden / what perfore sepen str  
bis. & it bihoney elpe first come  
& he answeride & seide to hem / for  
soye elpe shal come. & shal retto  
ze alle pigis / treuly i seye to you.  
pat elpe is now comi: & pei fue  
wen hym not: but pei dide i hy  
what eu pigis pei wolden / so &  
māns sone shal suffre of hye / pā  
ne diltuphs vnderstoden: & ef.  
of john baptist he hadde seid to  
hem / And whāne he cam to ye  
ciupany of peple: amā cam to  
hym foldid on knees bifoze hym  
& seide / lord hane merci on my  
sone. for he is lmatyk. & suffry  
puele / for why ofte tymes he sal  
hy into ye fyer: & ofte tymes  
into watir / and i brouzte hym  
to y diltuphs: & pei myzten not  
heele hy / ihc answeride & seide /  
A you generacioi vnbileeful.  
or out of ye fery & weyward: hou  
longe shal i be wy zyou. hou  
longe shal i suffre you: bryn  
ge ze hym hndir to me / & ihc bla  
myde hym: & pe denel wente out  
fro hym / & ye child was heeld  
fro pat our vāne diltuphs ca  
me ny: to ihu pūph: & seiden  
to hy / why myzten not we caste  
hym out: ihc serp to hem / for  
you vnbileue / treuly i seye to  
you. if ze han fery: as a corn of  
synenepe: ze shulen sepe to  
ris hyl. passe you hem: & it  
shal passe. & no pig shal be

ympossible to you / forsoye ris  
kynde is not cast out: no but by  
preuuge & fastige. And whā  
ne pei lnyeten to gidre in gali  
le: ihc seide to hem / māns sone  
shal be bitrayed into ye hondis  
of me. & pei shulen sle hy: & pe  
vride day he shal ryle azen: &  
pei weren maid ful soyr / and  
whāne pei came to cafaruāi.  
pei pat tooken tribute: came to  
petre & seiden to hym / zoure man  
tir payey not tribute: & he sey  
de / zhe / and whāne he hadde en  
trid into an hous: ihc cam bifo  
ze hy & seide / symon: what se  
mey to see / of which taken ye  
kingis of erpe tribute or rēte  
of her owne sones: ey of ahens.  
or oyr mēms sones: and he sey  
de / of oyr mēms sones / ihc seide  
to hym / & fore sones ben fre / but  
pat we blandre not hem: go you  
to ye see. & seute an hook. & take  
vilke fyllthe pat first comey up  
& whāne his mouy shal be openyd.  
shal fynde wāter. pat is a cer  
teyn of money / you takinge it.  
zyne to hem for me & for see.

**I**n pat our. ye. prane. prane. prane. prane.  
diltuphs camen ny to  
ihu. & seiden / who geist  
you is more in ye kyngdom of he  
neues: / and ihc depige a lytil  
child: puttide hy in ye myddil  
of hem & seide / i seye treupe to  
you. no but ze be turnyd. & maid  
as lytle children: ze shule not  
entre into ye kyngdom of heue  
nes: & fore who enei mekyt hy  
as ris lytle child: he is more in ye  
kyngdom of heuenes: & he p res  
seyner o such lytil i my name.



relepyer forsove who so clauder  
oon of res finale pat bileren i me  
it spedip to hi. p a myline stoon of  
allis. be hangid in his necke. & be  
drencid into pe depnesse of pe see  
who to pe world for clauder. for it  
is nede. pat clauder come nere  
les wo to pilke man. by whom a  
clauder comer. forsove if ym hond  
or y foot clauder y pee. kine it of  
f caste a wey fro pee. it is betre  
to pee to entre to hif. feble epur  
crokid. pa hange tweyne hondis.  
or tweyne feet. to be sent into eu  
lastige fier. and if ym yze clau  
dry pee. pulle it out. & caste a w  
ey fro pee. it is betre to pee wy  
oon yze to entre into hif. pan ha  
nyge tweyne yzen to be sent ito  
pe fyer of helle. se ze pat ze dispi  
se not oon of res lytle. for i sepe  
to zoi. p re angels of hem in heu  
nes. teen enner more pe face of my  
fadir pat is in heuenes. for man  
sone cam for to saue pat pig. p  
perillhite. **W**hat semer to zoi.  
if per weren to su man an hi  
drid idheep. & oon of hem hap er  
rid. wher he shal not leene nyne  
ty & nyne in hylis. & shal go for  
to seke pat perride. & if it fal  
le p he fynde it. trenly i sepe to  
zoi. p he shal haue ioye perone.  
more pan on nyne ty & nyne pat  
errete not. so it is not wille bfore  
zoi. fadir p is in heuenes. pat  
oon of res lytle perillhite. **F**or  
sove if y brof dory syne azens  
pee. go pon & reproue hym or  
synbbe by the we pee & hi aloone.  
if he heerip pee. you haft wonen  
y broper. trenly if he heerip pee  
not. take wy pee oon or tweyne.

every word stonde in pe mowp of  
tweyne or pre wtnessis. p f he  
heere not hem. sepe you to pe ch  
che. forsove if he heere not pe ch  
irthe. be he as an hepen & pynpli  
can to pee. i sepe to zoi trenly.  
what enie pigis ze bynde on erpe.  
vo thulen be boude also in heue  
ne. and what enie pigis ze vubyn  
den on erpe. vo thulen be vubon  
de also in heuene. est done i sepe  
to zoi. p if tweyne of zoi colen  
ten on pe erpe. of eny pig. what  
enier per aren. it shal be don to  
he. of my fadir pat is in heuenes.  
for wher tweyne or pre ben ge  
drid in my name. pere i am i  
re maddil of hem. pane petre  
comygge ny. to hi. seide. lord hom  
ofte shal my broper syne azens  
me. & i shal foryue to hym. whe  
pir til leuene tymes. ihe sepe to  
hym. i sepe not to pee til leuene  
pis. but til leuenty lris. senen  
lris. **F**ore pe kygdom of heuene  
is lckned to ania kyng. pat wolde  
putte resou wy his seruants. &  
whane he bigan forto putte resou.  
oon pat ouzte ten pound talen  
tis. was brouzt to hi. trenly wha  
ne he hadde nouzt. to zelde his lord  
comandite hym to be seeld. & his  
wyf & his sones. & alle pigis pat  
he hadde. & to be payed. forsove  
pilke seruait fallige don. pperide  
hy & seide. haue patience in me.  
& i shal zelde to pee alle pigis. &  
rely pe lord hadde mercy of pat  
seruait. & leet hym or synbbe  
hi. & forzaf to hym pe dette. tren  
ly pilke seruait zede out. & bo  
nd oon of his euene seruaitis.  
pat ouzte hi anhyndid pens. &

he holdige hy. stranglede hym &  
seide. zelde pat y pon ouzt. & his  
euene seruait fallige don. pper  
ide hi & seide. haue patience in me.  
& i shal quyte alle pigis to pee.  
forsove he wolde not. but wente  
f seide hy into pldu. til he payede  
al pe dette. lopeli his euene serua  
itis seynge pe pigis pat were don.  
greetly hadden loawe. & rei came  
& telden to her lord. alle pe pigis  
pat were don. pane his lord clep  
de hi. & seide to hym. weyward  
seruait. i forzaf to pee al pe det  
te. for pon pperidit me. p fore  
wher it bihouete not also pee. to  
haue mercy on pi enie seruait.  
as & i hadde mercy on pee. & and  
his lord was wy. & took hy to  
tunmetow. til he payde al pe  
dette. so i my fadir of heuene  
shal do to zoi. if ze foryue not.  
enier ma to his broper of zoi.  
**A** hertis. **W**hat it was don. whan  
ne ihe hadde endid res  
wordis. he passide fro galile &  
cam into re eendis of iudee on  
jordan. and many ciuities in  
weten hym. & he heelde hem per  
and farlers came ny. to hym. te  
ptige hym & sepyge. wher it be le  
estul to a man for to leue or for  
ake his wyf for eay cause. whid  
auliueride & seide to he. han not  
ze radd. for he y made me at pe  
biggynng. made hem male & fe  
male. & he seide. for pis pig ama  
shal leue fadir & modir. & shal  
cleue or drawe to his wyf. & rei  
thulen be tweyne in o fleulth. p  
fore rei ben not now tweyne.  
but o fleulth. p fore ama depar

te not pat pig. p god ioynete or pnt  
tede to gidre. rei sepen to hy. wht  
per fore comandite moyses to z  
ne a lytil book of forsakig. & to  
leue of. & he seide to hem. for mo  
yles for pe hardnesse of zoi. her  
te. suffre zoi forlake zoi. wy  
ues. forsove at pe biggynng. it  
was not so. trenly i sepe to zoi.  
for who enie seemp his wyf. no  
but for fornytraciou. & weddyg auoy.  
dory auoutrpe. & he pat weddyg  
ye forlakit wyf. dory auoutrie. hi  
se distiplis seien to hym. if pe cau  
se of ama wyf auoyt is so. it spedip  
not to be weddid. whid seide to he.  
not alle me taken pis word. but  
to whiche it is zoi. lopeli y ben  
geldigis. whiche ben pus born of  
pe modris wombe. and per ben gel  
digis. p be maid of me. & p be gel  
dyngis. p han gelbid he self for  
pe kygdom of heuenes. he y may  
take. take he. **T**ane lytle chl  
dren were brouzt to hym. p he sh  
ulde putte hondis to hem & preie.  
and pe distiplis blamyde he. but  
he seide to hem. suffre ze p lytle  
children come to me. & nyle ze  
forbede hem for to come to me. for  
of liche is pe kygdom of heuenes.  
& whane he hadde put to hondis.  
he wente fro pems. **A**nd lo oon  
comygge ny. seide to hi. goode ma  
tir. what good pig. shal i do. p  
i haue enier lastige hyf. whid sepe  
to hy. what aryt p me of good  
pyng. p is o good god forsove if  
pon wolt entr to hif. sepe pe coman  
demetis. he sepe to hy. whiche.  
trenly ihe seide. pon shalt not do  
malleyng. p shalt not do auon  
trie. p shalt not do pestre. p shalt



not seye fals witnesse. Worstepe  
pi fadir & pi modir. & pou schalt  
loue pi neyboze as pi self. & pou  
ma seip to hi. I haue kept alle res  
pitis fro my zowpe. What zit  
faily to me. I he seip to hy. if I  
wolt be parfyt. go & selle alle pi  
gis & pou haue. & zyne to poue me.  
& pou schalt haue trelour theue  
ne. & come. sue me. forsope whne  
ye zonge ma hadde herd res wor  
dis. he weite a wey soze wylful.  
for he hadde many posselions.  
forsope he seide to his discipulis.  
I seie to zow treuwe. for a riche  
man of hard schal entre to ye  
kingdom of heuene. & eftsoone.  
seie to zow. it is later. or effier a  
camele for to passe throu a ned  
lis yze. ran a ryche ma to entre  
in to ye kingdom of heuene. tren  
li whane res pitis were herd.  
discipulis wondreden gretly. seinge  
who yfzore may be lat. forsope  
he biholdige. seide to he. anetis  
me pis pig is possible. but ane  
tis god alle pitis ben possible.  
¶ **P**ane petre answerege. seide to  
hy. lo we han forlake alle pi  
gis. & we han sued yee. what y  
fzore schal be to us. I he forsope  
seide to hem. treuly I seie to zow.  
ye y han forlake alle pitis &  
han suued me. in regeneraciou  
or gendrig. azen whane mannis  
sone schal sitte. in ye seete of his  
maiestte. ze schulen sitte on twel  
ue seetis or segis. demyge ye th  
elue kynnedis of israel. & euery  
ma y forlaky hous or byperre.  
or distren. or fadir. or modir. or  
wyf & sones. or feeldis for my  
name. schal take an hundredfold.

and schal welte enlantege hy. for  
sope manye schulen be ye firste.  
ye laste. & ye laste. ye firste.  
¶ **T**he kingdom of heuene is  
lyk to an holebonde ma. & he  
weite out first. or bi ye mo  
we. to hyre werkmen. to his  
vynyard. forsope whane ye  
couenait was maid wip werk  
me. of a peny for ye day. he sente  
hem to his vynyard. and he se  
de out aboute ye prydde our. & he  
opere stondige ydel in ye chespy.  
& he seide to hem. go ze also to  
my vynyard. & pat y schal  
be rythful. I schal zyne to zow.  
sopeh pei wente for. forsope  
eft soones he weite out aboute ye  
fyrte our. & ye nyne. & dide i  
maner. but aboute ye eulenepe  
our. he weite out. & foud opere  
stondige. & he seide to he. what  
stonden ze her ydel al day. pei se  
en to hi. for no ma hay hyr idis  
he seip to hem. go ze also into my  
vynyard. forsope whane euery  
was maid. ye lord of ye vyn  
yard seip to his procurator. de  
pe ye werkme. & zelte to hem  
her hyre. & bygyne pou at ye las  
te til to ye firste. y for whane  
pei were comi. pat came abou  
te ye eulenepe our. also pei too  
ken sigulerly pens. y is euery  
ma o peny. treuly & ye firste co  
nyge. demete y pei schuld ta  
ke moze. treuly & pei tooken  
echone by hi gylt a peny. & pei to  
kyngge gruachete azen ye hole  
bonde ma. & seiden. res laste di  
den oon our. & pou haue maid  
he euene to us. pat han born ye  
charge of ye day & heete. & he

answerege to oon of he. seide. fird  
I do yee no wrong. wher y haue  
not acordid wip me for a peny.  
take y pat y is y go. forsope I  
wolt zyne also to pis laste man.  
as & to yee. wher it is not leessful  
to me. forto do pat y wolt. wh  
er ym yze is wylful. for I am  
good. so ye laste me. schulen be.  
ye firste. & ye firste me. ye laste.  
for manye ben depid. but fewe  
ben chosin. ¶ And he stonde to ie  
rhu. & took his twelue discipulis  
in pryncipe. & seide to he. lo we goe  
up to ierlm. & mannis sone schal  
be bitakn to prices of prestis &  
scribis. & pei schulen condepyne hi  
bi depe. and pei schulen bitake hy  
to hepen me. forto be stoned &  
scourgid. & crucified. & ye prydde  
day he schal ryse azen. ¶ **P**ane ye  
modir of ye sones of sebede. cam  
nyz to hy. wip hir sones. honou  
rige. & arpyge su pig of hy. whad  
seide to hy. what wolt pou. she  
seide to hy. seie pat res twelue  
my sones litte. oon at pi rythful.  
& oon at pi lechalf. in pi kingdom.  
forsope he answerege seide. ze wi  
ten. not what ze azen. monn ze  
drynke ye cuppe. which I schal  
drynke. pei seipen to hy. we mon  
he seip to hem. forsope ze schulen  
drynke my cuppe. but to litte at  
my rythful. or lechalf. is not my  
to zyne to zow. but to whiche it is  
maid redy of my fadir. and ye ten  
heeryge. hadden idignaciou of  
ye twelue byperre. sopeh he de  
pide hem to hi. & seide. ze wnt y  
prices of hepere me. ben lordis  
of hem. & pei pat be moze. han  
en powber on he. it schal not be

so among zow. but who eue wolt  
be maid moze amog zow. be he zow  
re nyntre. and who eue amog  
zow wolt be ye firste. he schal be  
zow seruant. as mannis sone cam  
not for to be serued. but forto ser  
ue. & forto zyne his hyf. redēci  
on for manye. ¶ And whane pei  
zede out of ierico. many ciuyp  
es of peple suued hy. & lo tiber  
blynde men sittige by hydis ye weie.  
herde y. Ihu passide. & pei cryede  
seunge. lord ye sone of dauid. ha  
ue mercy on us. forsope ye ciu  
ype blamyde he. for to be stille.  
& pei cryede moze. seunge. lord ye  
sone of dauid. haue mercy on us.  
& he stood. & depide he. & seide. wh  
wolen ze pat I do to zow. pei seie  
to hy. lord yom. yzen be openyd.  
forsope he haunge me on he. tou  
chide her yzen. and anon pei sayen.  
& suued hy. ¶ **C.** ¶ **M.** ¶ **11.** ¶ **11.** ¶ **A.**  
¶ **A**t ye mount of oluete. pa  
ne he seide his twelue discipulis.  
& seide to hem. go ze into ye castel  
y is azen zow. & anon ze schulen  
fynde a she alle tyed. & a colt wip  
hyr. vubryde ze. & byryge ze to me.  
& it ony ma schal seie to zow ony  
ymg. seye ze y ye lord har ned to  
hem. & anon he schal leue hem.  
treuly al yis was don. y y pig sch  
ulde be fulld. y was seyd by ye pro  
fete. seunge. seye ze to ye douztur  
of syon. lo pi kyng comey to yee  
homely. or meke sittige on a she  
alle. & a sole ye sone of a beest. vn  
der job. forsope discipulis goyng. &  
diden as he comandise hem. and  
pei broukten a she alle & ye sole.



148  
¶ putte her clois on he. & maden  
him sitte alone forsope ful moche  
cūpany. streitwite her clois i pe  
weye. sopeh opev kūtūe biam  
che of trees. & streitwite i pe we  
ye. but pe cūpanyes pat wente  
bifore. & pat sweten. criede seyn  
ge. olāna. ¶ is i weye lāne to  
pe lone of damp. bledd is he y  
comer in pe name of pe lord. o  
lāna in hyste pigis. ¶ And whā  
ne he hadde entrid into ierlm. al  
pe cite was sturid seynge. who  
is pis. treuli pe pepis seide. ¶ is  
ihc pe pfete of nasareth of gali  
le. & ihc entrid into pe temple  
of god. & castid out of pe tēple.  
alle sillige & byge. & he turne  
de vplodū pe boordis of change  
ris. & pe chaperis of mē sillige  
culueris. & he seip to hē. it is wri  
tū. in yū hous. ihc al be depid an  
hous of preier. forsope ze han  
mad it a dēne of peenis and  
blynde. & crolid camē nyz to hī  
in pe tēple. & he heelde hē. for  
lope pe pñces of prestis & scrip  
bis. seynge pe merueplouē pi  
gis pat he dide. & dylidē crūge  
in pe temple & seynge olāna to  
pe lone of damp. dedepnede & ley  
den to hī. heerist pou what pes sei  
en. sopeh ihc seide to hē. the wher  
ze han neuer rad. for of pe mour  
of children. pat kūnen not speke.  
it of soulige mylk. pou hast mīd  
parfit preysing. & whā he had  
de forsake hem. he wente forp  
out of pe citee into betanpe. &  
per he dwelte. & tanzte hē of pe  
kingdom of god. ¶ Forsope ou  
pe morwe. he turunge azen in  
to pe citee. hūgride. & he seynge

o fhyge tre bysidis pe weye. cam to  
it. & foond no pig. per pñe. no but  
leuys oonly. and he seide to it. neue  
fruyt come forp of pee. into wip  
oiten ende. & anoon pe figetre  
was dyped vp. & dylupis seige. wōnd  
den seynge. hōis anoo it dūede. sopeh ihc  
seide to hem. treuli. i seie to zōu.  
if ze shulen haue seip. & shulen  
not doute. not oonly ze shule do  
of pe figetre. but also if ze shu  
len seie to pis hī. take aney pee.  
& caste pee into pe see. it shal be  
don. & alle pigis what eue ze bilee  
myge. shule are in preier. ze shu  
len take. ¶ And whā he cam ito  
pe tēple. pe pñces of prestis. & el  
dre mē of pe peple. camē nyz to  
hym techige & seide. in what po  
wer dost pou pes pigis. & who  
zaf to pee pis power. ihc answere  
rige. seide to hē. and i shal are zōu  
o word. which if ze shule seie to  
mē. & i shal seie to zōu. i what po  
wer. i do pes pigis of whēns. whē  
pe baptim of john. of heuene. or  
of men. and pei pōnten wip iue  
hē silt seynge. if we shule seie  
of heuene. he shal seie to us. whā  
pfore bileue ze not to hī. sopeh  
if we shulen seie of mē. we dre  
den pe cūpany of peple. for alle  
hadde iohu as a pfete. & pei an  
swerige to ihū seiden. we wite  
not. and he seide to hē. ney. i seie  
to zōu. in what power. i do pes  
pigis. ¶ Forsope what seney to  
zōu. ¶ Sū mā hadde twepe sonēs.  
& he comyge nyz to pe fūste. seip  
de lone go for to worche pis day  
in my vynezard. sopeh he answere  
ride & seide. i wile. forsope after  
ward he sturid by penance. or for

149  
rmyg. wente. forsope he cam  
nyz to petrop. & seide on lye man.  
& he answere. & seide. lord. i go.  
and he wente not. who of pe twep  
ne dūe pe sadis wille. & pei sepen  
to hym. pe fūste. ihc seip to hē. treu  
li. i seie to zōu. for pigpñans &  
hoons. shule go bifore zōu ito pe  
kyngdō of god. forsope john cam to  
zōu in pe weye of ryte. wipfuelle. & ze  
byleuēden not to hym. but pigpñans  
& hoons. bileuēden to hī. sopeh zee  
seynge. hadden not penance after  
ward. & ze bileuēden to hym. ¶ He  
re ze anoy parable. per was a hōse  
bonde man. pat plantide a vynezard.  
& heggide it aboute. & dalt a prestow  
pñe. & bilde a tour. & hpride it to  
erpetihers. & wente fer i pigl  
mage. forsope whā pe tyme of  
fruytis nezete. he sente his ser  
uāntis to pe erpetihers. & pei  
shule take fruyt of it. and pe  
erpetihers token his seruāntis.  
& beetē yetoou. pei slowen anoy.  
and pei bonede anoy. eftsoone he  
sente ope seruāntis. mo pan pe  
fūste. & in lye maner pei dide to  
hem. forsope at pe lasse he sente  
his lone to hē. & seide. pei shule  
dredē my lone. sopeh pe erpeti  
heris seynge pe lone. seide. wip  
iue hem lise. pis is pe eyr. come  
ze. slee we hym. & we shule haue  
his eritage. and pei token hym  
& castiden out of pe vynezard. &  
slowen. verfore whā pe lord of  
pe vynezard shal come. what sh  
al he do to yllke erpetihers. & pei  
sepen to hym. he shal leese pñele  
pe pñel mē. & he shal sette to hī  
re his vynezard to ope erpetike  
ris. whā he shule zelde to hym

150  
fruyt in her tymes. ihc seip to  
hem. radde ze neue in scriptu  
ris. pe stoon which. bileris rep  
uede. pis is maid into pe heed of  
pe corner. of pe lord pis pñg is  
maid. & it is merueplous bifore  
our yzen. pfore. i seie to zōu. & pe  
kyngdō of god shal be takū fro  
zōu. & shal be zōuū to a folk. do  
ynge fruytis of it. & he pat shal  
falle on pis stoon. shal be brotū in  
to gūde. forsope on whō it shal  
falle. it shal al to powne hī. &  
whā pe pñces of prestis. & farise  
es hadden herd his parablis. pei  
knewen p he seide of hē. & pei sek  
ge to holde hī. dreddē pe cūpany  
of peple. for pei hadde hī as a pfete.  
¶ And ihc answere. ¶ is ihc.  
rige. seide eft soone i pa  
rablis to hem. & seide. &  
septe. pe kingdom of heuēnes is  
maid lye to a mā kyng. pat made  
weddigis to his lone. and he sente  
his seruāntis for to clepe mē bedū  
to pe weddigis. & pei wolde not  
come. eftsoone he sente ope ser  
uāntis. & septe. seie ze to pe mē bedū  
to pe feete. lo. i hane maid redy  
my mete. my bolis & my volatils  
eyr fatte beestis ben slayn. & alle  
pigis ben redy. come ze to pe wed  
digis. sopeh pei dispūfede. & pei wē  
ten aney. anoy into his tou. for  
sope anoy to his marchāndise. but  
pe ope heelden his seruāntis. &  
sloke hem pōnyshid wip cūtek.  
forsope pe kyng. whā he hadde  
herd. was wrope. & he sente his col  
tis. & he losse or distriede po man  
quelleris. & biente her citee. pñe  
he septe to his seruāntis. sopeh pe  
weddigis ben redy. but pei pat



weren clepid to þe seeke. were not  
worþi. þerfore go ze to þe out go  
yngis of weyes. & whiche enie ze  
shuleu fynde. clepe ze to þe wed  
digis. And his seruantis zede out  
ito weyes. & gadrede to gidre all  
pat þei fouden goode & yuele. And  
þe weddigis of me sittige at mete  
weren fulfilled. forþowe & þe king  
entride to se me sittige at mete.  
& he se. þer amā not doryd wy þu  
de dory. & he seide to hi. friend how  
entridist þou hider. & haddist not  
bride dory. & he was donib. þane þe  
king seide to þe mynistris. bynde ze  
his hondis & feet. & seide ze hi  
into vermere derknessis. þer shal  
be weping. & betyng to gidre of  
teep. forþowe many ben clepid. but  
fewe ben chosin. **¶** Þane farisees.  
goynge away tooken a couceil. þ  
þei shulde take ihu in word. & þei  
seide to hi. her discipulis wy erodi  
ans. þ ben me of erondis. & seien  
manfur. we wite þ þou art forfals.  
& þou techist in treupe þe weye of  
god. & þou chargist not of ony mā  
for þou biholdist not þe ploune of  
me. þfore seie to us. what it semet  
to þee. is it leessul þ reinte or tbut.  
be zoun to cesar. **¶** þe enypour epu  
nary. & forþowe whāne ihu hadde  
knowe þe wickednesse of hem. he  
seide. þpocritis. what tēpten ze me.  
shewe ze to me þe pēnte of þe mo  
ney. and þei brouȝte to hi a peny.  
& ihc seide to hem. whos is þis yma  
ge. & þe wyrtig aboue. þei seien  
to hi. of cesar. þane he seide to þe  
þfore zelde ze to cesar. þo pigis pat  
ben celaris. & to go. þo pigis pat  
ben of god. and þei heerige won  
dide. & þei lesten hi. & weten a

wey. **¶** In þat day saducis þat  
seien þ þer is no ryfing. azen. came  
ny to hi. & arde hi. & seide. maist  
moyses seide. if ony mā is deed. not  
hange a lone. þat his broþr wed  
de his wyf. & reyle seed to his broþ.  
forþowe senene bryen were at w.  
and þe firste weddide awyft. & is  
deed. & he not hange seed. lette  
his wyf to his broþer. also þe se  
cūde & þe ynde til to þe senene  
forþowe þe laste of alle. & þe wōmā  
is deed. þfore in þe ryfing azen.  
whos wyf of þe senene shal she  
be. for alle hadden hir. soþeli ihc  
answerige seide to þe. ze etren &  
ney ze knowe þe scripturis ney  
þe vertu of god. for in þe ryfing a  
zen. ney þei shulde. ney shulen be  
weddid. but þei ben as þe angelis  
of god in heuene. soþeli of þe ryfing  
azen of deede me. ze han not rad.  
þ it is seid of þe lord. seynge to þu.  
I am god of Abrahā. & god of Isaac.  
& god of Jacob. he is not god of de  
de me. but of lynyge me. and þe  
cūpany of peple heerige. wonden  
den in his techig. **¶** Forþowe farise  
es heerige. þat he hadde put silen  
ce to saducees. & came to gidre. &  
oon of þe a techere of þe lawe. ar  
de ihc. & tēptide hi. maist. which  
is a greet mandemēt in þe lawe. ihc  
seide to hi. þ shalt loue þi lord god  
of al þin herte. & in al þi loule. & in  
al þi mynde. þis is þe firste & þe ma  
te mandemēt. & soþe þe secūde is  
lyk to þis. þou shalt loue þi neye  
bore as þi self. in þes twey māde  
mētis. hangy al þe lawe & pfe.  
**¶** Soþeli whāne þe farisees weren  
gedrid to gidre. ihc arde hi. & se  
de. what semet to þou of t. whos

lone is he. þei seyen to hi. of dany.  
he seip to þe. þfore how dany. i spirit  
cleip hi lord. & seip. þe lord seide to  
my lord. sitte ou my rythalf. til i  
pratte þin eneymes. a stool of þi feet.  
þerfore if dany cleip hi lord. how  
is he his lone. & no mā myte answe  
re a word to hi. ney ony mā was  
hardy fro þat day. for to are hi more.  
**¶** Time ihc spak. i. xij.  
to þe cūpanyes of peple.  
& to hile discipulis. & seide. ou  
þe chayer of moyses. scribis &  
farisees latten. þfore kepe ze &  
do ze alle pigis. what enie pigis þei  
seien to þou. but nyle ze do after  
her werkis. for þei seyen & doe not.  
soþeli þe bynde greuouse chargis.  
& vmpoortable. & þat moyn not be  
born. & putten on shuldus of me.  
but wy þer frugur. þei wole not  
moue hem. þerfore þei doe alle her  
werkis. þ þei be leyn of me. forþowe  
þei alargen her filateries. þ ben  
smale strowis. & magnyfie hem  
mes. soþeli þei loue þe firste sit  
ting. places in soperis. & þe first  
te chayeris in synagogis. & salu  
taciōis in chepig. & to be clepid  
of me maistris. but nyle ze be cle  
pid maistur. for oon is zoun maist  
forþowe alle ze ben bryen. and nyle  
ze clepe to þou a sadron erpe.  
for oon is zoun sadron. þat is i he  
uenes. ney be ze clepid maistris.  
for oon is zoun maistur. t. he þat  
is þe more in þou. shal be zoun  
mynistre. forþowe he þat hyȝer hi  
self. shal be mek. & he þat me  
ky hi self. shal be enhauid. **¶** So  
þeli wo to þou scribis & farisees  
þpocritis. þat closen þe kygdom  
of heuenes bfore me. for ze en

tren not. ney sustren me eneyge  
for to entri. **¶** Wo to þou scribis &  
farisees. þpocritis. þat ete þe hou  
lis of widowis. & þrepen bi long  
preier. for þis pig. ze shule take  
more dom. **¶** Wo to þou scribis &  
farisees. þpocritis. þat cūpalleu þe  
see & þe lond. to make o. pēlre. þ  
is comitid to þou. orde. & whāne  
he is maad. ze maken hi a lone of  
helle double more þan ze be. **¶** Wo  
to þou blūde leders. þat seyen.  
who enie swerip bi þe tēple of god.  
no pig is. soþeli he þat swerip i  
þe gold of þe tēple. owry. or is dett.  
ze foolis & blūde. for what is more.  
þe gold. or þe tēple. þat haleu þ  
þe gold. and who eney swerip i þe  
anter. no pig is. but he þat swe  
rip i þe zifte. þat is on þe anter.  
owry. blūde me. for what is more.  
þe zifte. or þe anter. þat haleu þ  
þe zifte. þerfore he þat swerip i  
þe anter. swerip i it. & i alle pigis  
þat ben þou. and he þat swerip in  
þe temple. swerip i it. & in hym  
þat dwelly i þe tēple. & he þat swe  
rip in heuene. swerip in þe trone  
of god. & in hi. þat sitt þou. **¶** Wo  
to þou scribis & farisees. þpocritis.  
þat tēpen mynte. anete & comyn.  
& han lest þo pigis. þ ben greuou  
ser. or of more charge of þe lawe.  
dom & mercy & fey. and it bihoſte  
or nodide for to do þes pigis. & not  
to leue þo. blūde leders. clāige  
a gnatte. but swolwige a camel.  
**¶** Wo to þou scribis & farisees. þpocri  
tis. þat maken clene þat pig of  
þe cupe & plater. þat is wyronte  
forþ. forþowe wyrtne ze ben fulle  
of rauerne & buctenelle. þ blūn  
de farise clene first. þat pig of þe



cuppe & plater. pat is wip me: & ze  
pat pig pat is wipoute for. be ma  
ad cleue. **¶** Mo to zoi stribus & fari  
les ipocritis: pat ben hē to sepul  
cris maid white/whiche wipoute  
for semē fapre to mē: forēly wip  
ine pei ben fulle of boons of deede  
mē & al filpe so & ze forloze wipou  
te for appereu nist to mē: but wip  
ine ze ben fulle of ipocritie & whic  
kidnesse. **¶** Mo to zoi stribus & fari  
les ipocritis. pat blyden sepul  
cris of pofetis. & maken fapre pe  
buriels of nist mē. & sepeu if we  
hadden be in pe dayes of our fadris.  
we shulde not haue be her felows  
in pe blood of pofetis/and so ze be  
in wituellig to zoi silt: for ze be  
pe lones of hem pat slowen pfe  
tis & fulfille ze re mesur of zoi  
fadris/ze serperitis fruytis or  
buriels in gis of eddis yf sleen  
her modris: holi shule ze fle fro  
pe dom of helle: forfore lo y sende  
to zoi. pofetis & wyle mē. & str  
bis or witeris. & of hem ze shu  
len ale. & crucifie. & of hē ze shule  
bete in zoi synagogis. & shule  
purshike fro citee into citee: yf al  
pe nist blood come on zoi. pat  
was shad out on pe erpe fro pe  
blood of nist abel. til to pe blood  
of facarie. pe lone of barachie.  
whom ze slowen bi tūre pe tē  
ple & pe auter/ treuily y seue to  
zoi. alle pes pigis shule come  
on pis generacion. **¶** Terhin ter  
lin pat sleut pfeis. & noone  
hem pat ben sent to pee: holi of te.  
wolde y gadre to gadre in sones.  
as an hen gadre to gadre hir ch  
rons. vnder hir wyngis. & zoi  
woldit not: lo zoi. hous shal

be left to zoi desert or forlakun  
forloze y sepe to zoi. ze shulen  
not se me fro hēms for: til ze  
sepeu. bleid is he pat comeu in  
re name of pe lord. **¶** **¶** **¶**  
**A**ld ihu wente out of  
re temple. & hile dūpl  
to hē re bildigis of re tēple for  
loze he answerte. sende to hem  
seen ze alle pes pigis. & treuily y  
sepe to zoi. A stoon shal not be  
left her on a stoon: which shal  
not be distroied/sopeu whane  
he sat on pe hyl of oluete: hile  
dūplis came nix to hē pūch. &  
sende sepe to us whane pes pigis  
shulen be: & what tokene of pi  
compg. & of endig of pe world.  
and hē answerte. sende to hem  
se ze yf no mā dilleue zoi for ma  
nye shulen come i my name &  
shule seie y am crist: & pe shule  
dilleue manye for ze shule hee  
re batels: & qppropis of batels  
se ze yf ze be not distroied/for it  
bihouep pes pigis for to be don:  
but not it is pe ende/folk shal  
ryse to gadre azens folk. & reuue  
azens reuue. & petilencis & hē  
gris & pe erpe monyngis shulen  
be by placis/forloze alle pes pi  
gis: ben biggungis of sorwis/pe  
ne rei shule btake zoi ito tū  
lacion. & pei shulen ale zoi. &  
ze shule be in hate to alle folkis  
for my name/and pane manye  
shulen be shandrid. & btraye  
to gadre or ashorn: & in hate ha  
ue to gadre/and many false pfe  
tis shule ryle: & dilleue manye  
& for wickidnesse shal be plente  
uous: pe charite of manye shal

wert gold forloze he pat dille  
stale into pe ende: shal be saif  
and pis gospel of kyngdo. shal be  
predid in al pe world. unto wituel  
sing to alle folkis: & pane pe ende  
shal come/ yf ore whane ze shule  
seen pe abhominacion of dūstifort  
pat is seid of daniel pe pfe. don  
dige in pe hooly place. he pat redy  
vndir stonde pane pei pat ben i ju  
dee: fle to pe mounteyns/and he pat  
is in pe hous roof: come not down  
to take omy pig of his hous/ & he  
pat is in pe feeld: turne not agen  
to take his coote/forloze mo to hē  
pat be wip childe & uorultie in po  
dayes/sopeu ppepe ze yf zoi. fle  
yug be not maid in wiptr or saboth  
for pane shal be greet tribulacion:  
what mā was not fro ye bigyn  
nyng of pe world til now. uey shal  
be maid/and no but yo dayes had  
den be breiggid: al fleitly y is man  
kynde. shule not be maid last/ but  
yo dayes shule be maid shorte for  
pe choli men. **¶** pane if omy man  
shal sepe to zoi. lo her is crist or  
yer: nyle ze bileue/for false citis &  
false pfeis. shule ryle: & pei shu  
len zine grete tokenes & wondris/  
so yf also pe choleu be lad into erro:  
if it may be don/lo y haue bfore  
seid to zoi. yf ore if pei shule seie  
to zoi. lo he is in desert: nyle ze go  
out/ lo in pūch chasibris or placis:  
nyle ze bileue/for as leit goy out  
fro ye cest. & appery til into ye west:  
so shal also pe compg of māms so  
ne. wher eue pe body shal be: allo  
pe eghis shule be gadrid ydun. **¶** for  
loze anon aft pe tribulacion of yo  
dayes: pe lone shal be maid derk: &  
pe mone shal not zine hir liz. and

sterris shulen falle down fro heue  
ne. & pe vertues of heuenes shule  
be moued/and pane pe tokene of mān  
lone shal apper in heuene: & pane  
alle tūredis or lyngis of erpe sh  
ule weple/and pei shule se māms  
lone comge in pe dondis of heuene.  
wip moche vtu & mageste: & he sh  
al sende his aūgels wip a trūpe &  
greet vons: & pei shule gadre his  
choleu. fro soui coctis. fro ye hyl  
te pigis of heuenes til teerues or  
endis of hē forloze leue ze pe pa  
rable of a figgetre/whiche his bow;  
or bāuche is now tendre. & leuie  
ben tūngū: ze wite yf somer is  
nyz/so & ze shule ze shule se alle  
pes pigis: wite yf it is nyz in pe ja  
tis. **¶** Treuily y sepe to zoi. for pis  
generacion shal not passe: til alle  
pigis be don/heuene & erpe shule  
passe: but my wordis shule not  
passe/forloze of yilke day & our. no  
mā woot. uey aūgels of heuenes:  
no but pe fadir aloone/forloze as  
it was in pe dayes of noe: so shal be  
allope compg of māms lone/for as  
in pe dayes bfore pe greet flood  
pei were etunge & dūnkige. ned  
dige & takige to weddig. til into  
pat day. i which noe entride into  
pe ship. & pei kuenen not til pe  
greet flood cam & took alle mē: so  
shal be pe compg of māms lone.  
**¶** pane tweyne shule be in a feeld: do  
shal be takū & anoy left or forlakū/  
twey wipmen shulen be grūndige  
in o queerne: con shal be takū & pe  
top forlakū/ tweyne in a bed: yeton  
shal be takū. & petop forlakū. **¶** per  
fore wake ze. for ze wite not i what  
om zoi. lord is to come/sopeu wh  
te ze pat pig: for if pe hosebonde mā



Wite. in what our pees were to  
come: trenli he shuld wake. &  
suffre not his hous to be vndur-  
mynded and pfore ze be redy: for  
in what our ze gessen not. manys  
sone is to come. **Who** gessit you  
is a trewe seruant & prudent or  
wat: whom his lord ordeyne on  
his meyne. p he zine he mete in  
tyne: blestid is pat seruant. who  
his lord whane he shal come. shal  
fynde doynge so trenli. I seye to  
you. for on alle his goodis. he shal  
ordeyne hi forsope if yllke puel  
seruant seye in his herte. my lord  
makip dwellig or tarpyng to co-  
me. & bypney to symple his eue  
seruants. soch if he ete & dryn-  
ke. wy drikelene me: pe lord of  
yske seruant. shal come in pe  
day in which he hopip not & in  
our pat he knowip not. & shal de-  
parte hi: & putte his part wy-  
pocritus: per shal be wepyng.  
& betyg to gidre of teer. **¶**  
**T**hane pe kyngdo of heu-  
nes shal be lyk to ten vir-  
gyns: whiche takige her  
laupis wente out. meetige pe  
spoule or hofebonde & pe spouel  
se or wyf forsope fyne of he we-  
ren foolis: & fyne prudent: but  
pe fyne foolis tooken her laupis:  
& tooken not oyle nup he forsope  
pe prudent: tooken oyle in her ves-  
sels nup laupis forsope whiche pe  
spoule or hofebonde made dwellig:  
alle nappid & slepte: soch at mid-  
nygt. a cry was maid: lo pe spou-  
le comip. go ze out meetige wy-  
hi: pane alle vo vngyns risen up:  
& ournede her laupis: soch pe  
foolis seiden to pe wyse: zyne ze

to us of your oyle: for our laupis  
ben quenched: ze prudent answe-  
re. seynge. lest panentur it shal  
fise not to us & to you: go ze & bye  
re to me sillage. & bye ze to you:  
forsope pe while pei wente forto  
bye: pe spoule cam: & po pat we-  
ren redy: entride wy hi to pe wed-  
digis: & ze zate was shet: soch  
at pe laste alle pe oye vngyns  
came seynge. lord lord: opyne  
to us: and he answerige seide. tre-  
nli. I seye to you: I knowe not  
you: perfore wake ze: for ze wi-  
ten not pe day ne pe our. **¶**  
**S**o chel as amys goynge fer in pul-  
mage: depide his seruants. &  
bytook to he his goodis: and to so  
he zat fyne talentis or besantis:  
forsope to anof treyne. but to  
anoyer oon to ech after his othe  
vertu: & wente forw amoon forso-  
pe & he pat hadde take fyne tale-  
tis. wente forw & wrouste in he:  
& wan oye fyne. also & he pat ta-  
ke treyne: & wan oye treyne: so  
chel he pat taku oon. zede forw  
dall into pe erpe: & hidde pe mo-  
ney of his lord: but after moche  
tyne. pe lord of po seruants  
cam: & puttide resou wy he: &  
he pat hadde take fyne talentis  
cam: & brouste oref fyne & sei-  
de. lord you bntokst to me fyne  
talentis or besantis: lo I haue  
ouer getu oref fyne: his lord  
seide to hy. wel be I gode seruant  
& seynful or trewe: for on seue  
yngis you hast be trewe: I shal  
ordeyne pee on many pigis en-  
tre you into pe ioye of ylord:  
forsope & he pat hadde take th-  
er talentis: cam & seide. lord I

bntokst to me trewe talentis: lo  
I haue ouergetu oref trewe: hi  
lord seide to hy. wel be you gode  
seruant & trewe: for on seue pi-  
gis you hast be trewe: I shal or-  
deyne pee on many pigis entre  
you into pe ioye of ylord: forsope  
& he pat hadde taku o talent: cam  
my & seide. lord. I woot p art  
an hard ma: you repit wher you  
hast not lone: & you gadist to  
gidre. wher you hast not spard a  
brood: and I dedige wente: & hidde  
my talent in pe erpe: lo you hast pat  
pat is myn: soch his lord answeri-  
ge seide to hy. puel seruant & sloth-  
withit I p re pe wher I souke  
not: & gadre to gidre wher I sp-  
adde not abroad: perfore it biho-  
ue pee to take my money to change  
ris: & I comysse shuld haue res-  
seyned forsope pat pat is myn  
wheris pfore take ze awei fro hi  
ye talent: & zyne ze to hi pat hap-  
ten talentis: for to euery ma ha-  
upge it shal be zoun: & he shal  
haue pleinte: forsope fro hy pat  
hap not also pat pat he semep to  
haue: shal be taku awei of hy:  
and caste ze out pe seruant on  
profitable: into vtiner: deruel  
his: per shal be wepyng: & be-  
tyng to gidre of teer. **¶**  
**¶** Forsope  
whane manys sone shal come i  
his maure. & alle hile angelis  
wy hi: pane he shal sitte on pe  
sege of his maure: & alle folkis  
shulen be gadrid: bfore hy: & he  
shal departe hem allvne. as a  
sheparde departy schep fro fi-  
dis: and soch he shal sette pe sh-  
cep on his rutchalf: pe kidis for-  
sope on pe lestchalf: pane pe kig-

shal seye to he: pat shuld be on  
his rutchalf: come ze pe blestid of  
my fadir: weelde ze or take I posses-  
cion pe kyngdom maid redi to you  
fro pe makig of pe world: for I  
was hungry: & ze zane to me for to  
ete: and I yustid: & ze zane to me  
for to drynke: I was herbozles: &  
ze herbozede me: nakid: & ze hiled  
me: oyl: & ze visitiden me: I was  
in prilon: & ze came to me: pane  
ust me shuld answer to hi: & shu-  
len seye. lord whane syen we yee  
hungry: & we foddre yee: yustid: &  
we zane to yee drynke: whane for-  
sope syen we yee herbozles: & we  
herbozede yee: or nakid: & we hile-  
den yee: or whiche syen we yee oyl  
or in prilon: & we came to yee: &  
he answerige shal seye to he: tren-  
li. I seye to you: as longe as ze dide  
to oon of yee my leeste byperen:  
ze diden to me: pane ye kig: shal  
seye to hem: pat shuld be on his  
lestchalf: departe fro me. & curtid  
into enlastige fier: which is maid  
redy to ye druel & his angelis: for  
I hungry: & ze zane not to me for  
to ete: I yustid: & ze zane not to  
me for to drynke: I was herboz-  
les: & ze herbozeden not me: nakid:  
& ze keueride not me: oyl: & in pri-  
lon: & ze visitide not me: pane ye  
shulen answer to hi: & shulen  
seye. lord whane syen we yee hu-  
grige: or yustid: or herbozles: or  
nakid: or oyl: or in prilon: & we ser-  
uete not to yee: pane he shal an-  
swer to hem: & shal seye: trenli  
I seye to you: how longe ze diden  
not to oon of yee leste: neper ze  
diden to me: and yee shuld go i  
to enlastige turniet: forsope ye



**A**nd me shulde go to euil thinge. **I**d it was. **I**ohann. xvi. **A**nd alle þes wordis. he seide to his discipulis. þe witen þat after twey dayes. pass schal be made. & mannis sone schal be brenen. & he be crucified. þane þe priues of prestis. & þe eldre me of þe peple were gadrid. into þe halle of þe priue of prestis. þat was seide capitas. & made a conseil. þat þe schuldren holde ihu wip gyle. & se. loþeli þe seide. not in þe holday. lest þa nienture uoyse were maid in þe peple. for soþe while ihu was in betange. i þe hous of symon. leprouse. and ma hangge a box of alabastre of prestous oymemet. cam nix to him. & shedde out ou þe heed of ihu reuige. loþeli þe discipulis seige. hadde seþen. seige. wher to þis lost. for it myste be seel for myche. & be zoun to pore me. loþeli ihu witege. seide to hem. what ben þe heup. or lo ry to þis woma. for she has wro ut in me a good werk. for she ze schulen enmore hane pore me w zoun. but ze schulen not algatis hane me. for soþe þis woman seidge þis oymemet into my body. made for to burre me. treuh. i seie to zoun. wher enie þis gospel schal be prechid in al þe world. also þat þis. þat þis woman dide schal be seid into myde of ihu. þane oon of þe twelue þat was seide judas iscariot. wente for to þe priues of prestis. & seide to he. what wolen þe geue to me. & i schal brenke hi to zoun. & þe ordey nete to hi. þat platis of siluer. and fro þat tyme he sougte coue nablete. for to brenke him. for soþe

in þe firste day of þe loones. **I**s. re. seide of pass. discipulis came to ihu. & seide. wher wolt þou we make redy to þe. for to ete pass. & ihu seide. go ze into þe citee to si man. & seye to hy. þe man schal sen my tyme is nix. at þe i make pass. my discipulis. and discipulis dide. as ihu comande to he. & þe made redy pass. for soþe while enentid was maid. he sat to re mete wip his twelue discipulis. and he seide to hem etynge. treuh. i seie to zoun. þat oon of zoun. schal brenke me. and þe ful soun bigimenne alle i þe rial to seie. lord wher. i am. & he answerige seide. he þat puttyd me. þe hond in þe plater. schal brenke me. for soþe mannis sone go ry. as it is writen. of hi. but wot to þat ma. þat whi mannis sone schal be brenke. it were good to him. if þat ma hadde not be born. for soþe judas þat brenkede hi. and seide seige. man schal wher. i am. ihu seide to hi. þou hadt seide. i seie. loþe while þe soupet. ihu took bread. & bleside. & brak. & gaf to hi. se discipulis. & seide. take ze. & ete. þis is my body. and he takige þe cup. þe dide þankis. & gaf to he. & seide. drynke ze alle herof. þis is my blood of þe newe testamet. whi ch schal be ihu out for manne in to remission of synes. for soþe. i seie to zoun. i schal not drynke fro þis tyme. of þis frucht of þe vyne. til into þat day. while i schal drynke it newe wip zoun. in þe kyngdom of my fadir. and while an ymque. or hering. was seide. þe wenten out into þe mount of oly uete. þane ihu seide to he. alle ze

schulen suffre. stande in me. i þis nix. for it is writen. i schal smyte þe shep. & þe shep of þe floe schulen be scatterid. for soþe. þat i schal rye. & i schal go before zoun into galile. soþe petre answerige. seide to hi. þou. alle ihu. schen be standid in þe. & ihu neide be standid. ihu seide to hi. treuh. i seie to þe. for in þis nix. before þe cof. croise. prius þou schalt denye me. petre seide to him. þe þou. i schal bihoue me to dye wip þe. i schal not denye þe. also. & alle discipulis seide. **A**ne ihu cam wip he. into a town. þat is seide iethusalem. & he seide to his discipulis. sitte ze. he re. þe while. i go ydir. & preie. & while he hadde take petre. & twey sones of seide. he bigan for to be heup. & son in herte. þane he seide to hem. my soule is sorowful. til to þe deay. but þe ze geabide ze here. & wake wip me. & he zede. for al. & seide. doun on his face. þe priue. & seige. my fadir. if it is possible. passe þis cuppe. & passion. fro me. nevels not as i wole. but as þou wolt. and he cam to his discipulis. & fond hem slepi ge. & he seide to petre. so wher ze myste not. our wake wip me. wa ke ze. & preie ze. & ze ent. not to teptacion. for soþe þe spirit is re di. but þe flesch is lyf. or vntable. est. þe secunde tyme. he wente. & þe seige. my fadir. if þis cuppe. may not passe. no but. i drynke it. & þe wille be don. and eft soone he cam. & fond hem slepi ge. for her syn were greid. & he seide. hem. & wente eft soone. & preiede. þe yndre tyme. þe same word. &

seide. þane he cam to his discipulis. & seide to hem. slepe ze now. & re teze. lo þe our hay nered. & man nis sone schal be tak. into þe hondis of syneris. ryle ze go we. lo he þat schal take me. hay nered. zit þe while he spak. lo judas oon of þe twelue cam. & wip hi. a greet cup. wip. & wip. & bottis. sent of þe priues of prestis. & of þe eldre me of þe peple. for soþe he þat brenkede hi. gaf to he. a tokene. & seide. who enere. i schal kille. he it is. holde ze him. & anod he comige nix to ihu. seide. hadt man schal. & he kille hi. & ihu seide to hi. frend wher to art þou coun. þane þe cam. nix. & seide. de hondis on ihu. & heelde hi. and lo oon of he þat were wip ihu. holdige out þe hond. drew out his swerd. and he smyte þe. & he nait of þe priue of prestis. & titide of. his cere. þane ihu seide to hi. turne þe swerd into his place. for alle þat schal take swerd. schal perulhe by swerd. wher gellit þou. i may not preie my fadir. & he schal geue to me now. more þan twelue legionis of an gelis. how. þe schulen þe strit. turis be fulid. for so. it bihoue. to be don. i þat our. ihu seide to þe cup. of peple. as to a prest. ze han gon out. wip swerd. & bottis. for to carche me. day by day. i lat at zoun. & i tanyte i þe temple. & ze heelde not me. for soþe al þis pig was don. & þe sepris of prestis schulen be fullid. þane alle discipulis fledde. & forlofen hi. & þe holdige ihu. leden him to capitas. priue of prestis. where



tribis & pe eldre me of pe peple  
hadde comu to gidre forsope pe  
tre inche hi a fer. til into ye hal  
le of ye prince of prestis and he  
entruce wip yue. & sat wip ye  
seruantis. & he schilde se ye en  
de forsope ye puce of prestis &  
al pe conseil souste fals witness  
fig. & ens ihu. & pei schilde take  
hi to depe and pei soude not. wh  
ane many fals witnessis hadde  
come treuht at ye laste. the pe  
fals witnessis. came & seide. yis  
seide. I may distrope ye temple  
of god. & aken ye ynde day bylte  
it aen and ye puce of prestis ry  
fige. seide to hi. and berist y no  
rig to yo pigis. whiche yes wit  
nessen aens yee. forsope ihu was  
stille. & ye puce of prestis seide to  
hi. I chonize yee by quip god.  
y pon seie to us if y art & c. re to  
ne of god. ihu seide to hi. yon hast  
seid. ne peles. I seie to zon. fro hen  
malford. & schilde se manne lone  
fatige at ye ryghthale of ye vti  
of god. & comye in doudis of he  
uene. pane ye puce of prestis. to  
rente his cloys. & seide. he hay blas  
femyd what. it han we nede to wit  
nessis. lo now. & han herd blasse  
mye. what semer to zon. and pei  
answerige seide. he is gilty of depe  
pane pei spete into his face. & smy  
cede hi wip bussatis. forsope ower  
zane stoke is wip ye pawme of her  
hondis ito his face. & seide. yon ist  
pfete to us. who is he pat smot  
yee. soyehe petre sat wipouten  
I ye halle. & con handmaddu cam  
ny. to hi. & seide. and y wer wip  
ihu of gahle. & he denpede bifoze  
alle men. & seide. I woot not wh

pon seist. forsope whane he zede out  
of ye zate. anoy handmaddu s. &  
hi. & seide to he y were per. & yis  
was wip ihu of nashareth. & etidoo  
ne he denpede wip anoy. for. I knew  
not ye ma. and after. **hand** dhal.  
ye pat stode came up. & seide to  
petre. treuht. & y art of he. for. wh  
I pi speche. makip yee oppy. yue  
he bigan to warie. & to sware. y  
he knetis not ye ma. & and ye of  
crew. and petre byouste on ye  
word of ihu. pat he hadde sed. hi  
foze ye cot. crowe. ynes y. wh  
denpe me. & he zede out. & wepe  
bitterly. **C. viii. vij.**  
**A**fore whane ye mozte  
tyd was maid. alle ye pri  
ces of prestis. & eldre me of pe pe  
ple. taken conseil aens ihu. & pei  
schilde take hi to depe. & yei seide  
hi boundu. & bitoke to pilat of poi  
te meyr. or cheef iustle. pane in  
das pat btrayede hi. & y. he was  
dampyd. & he was led by penance  
or forbyng. & brouste aen pat  
ti platis of siluer. to ye pnces of  
prestis. & to ye eldre me of pe peple  
& seide. I haue spned. btrayige iust  
blood. and yei seide. what to us. se y  
and whane he hadde cast away ye  
platis of siluer. in ye temple. he wen  
te away. and goynge away. he han  
gide hi wip a snare. forsope ye pri  
ces of prestis. taken ye platis of  
siluer. & seide. it is not leetful to  
seide hem ito ye trelere. for. it is  
ye priys of blood. soyehe whane con  
cil was taku. yei bouste wip ye  
ye feeld of a potter. into buryng  
of deed me. for. yis pig. yillre feeld  
is depid achademach. y is afeeld  
of blood til into yis day. pane pat

pus was fulfild. pat was seid  
bi ye pfete jeremie seynge. and  
pei token ynti platis of siluer. ye  
priys of ama prestis. who pei prei  
leden of ye sones of yrael. & pei  
zoue hem into a feeld of a potter.  
as ye lord ordeynede to me. soyehe  
ihu stode bifoze ye meyr. or domes  
ma. and ye president ayde hi. & se  
te art yon king of ieris. ihu seip  
to hi. yon seist. & whane he was ac  
cused of ye pnces of prestis & eldre  
me of pe peple. he answeride no pig.  
pane pilat seip to hi. heereit y not  
hott many witnessis yei seipen a  
zens yee. & he answeride not to hi  
to ony word. so y. ye president won  
dide greetly. forsope by a solepne  
day. ye president was wout. for  
to deliue to ye peple con boundu.  
whom yei wolde. forsope he hadde  
pane o famous ma boundu. pat was  
seid barabas. yfoze pilat seide to  
he gadad to gidre. who wole ze. y  
seene or deliue to zon. wher. barabas  
or ihu. pat is seid. & for. he wille.  
y by enye yei btrayeden hi. forso  
pe whane he sat for iustle. his wif  
seinte to hi. & seide. no pig. to yee. &  
to pat iust ma. for. I haue sufrid  
yis day many pigis. for. hi by a vi  
sion. or liueuene. forsope ye pnces  
of prestis & ye eldre me. trefede or  
concelide to ye pepus. y. yei schil  
den aze barabas. but yei schilden  
lese ihu. forsope ye president anse  
rige. seide to he. who of ye tweyne  
wolen ze to be lest. or deliued to. &  
and yei seide. barabas. pilat seip  
to he. what yfoze schal I do of ihu.  
pat is seid. & alle seyn be he cru  
cified. ye president seip to he. soyehe  
what of yuel hay he don. & yei cry

eden more. seynge. be he crucified  
forsope pilat seynge. y. he pfite  
no pig. but ye more anoyse was  
maid. too watu. & wauhtide ye hon  
dis bifoze ye peple. & seide. I am i  
nocent. or giltyles of ye blood of y  
milt ma. se ze. and al ye peple an  
swerige. seide. his blood be on us.  
& on our soncs. pane he lette to he  
barabas. but he took to hem ihu  
dourgid. y. he schilde be crucified.  
**P**ane knyghts of ye president. tak  
ge ihu in ye moot halle. gadade  
to hi. al ye ciipany of knyghtis. and  
yei vndoyge hi. diten aboute hi  
a reed mantel. and yei foldige a  
croune of porces putide on his  
head. & a reed in his mythond. and  
yei luche bifoze hi. & yei dorned  
hi. & seide. heyl king of ieris. &  
yei spetige on hi. took a reed. &  
smyte his heed. & aken y. yei had  
den dornyd hi. yei vndoyde hi  
of ye mantel. & yei cloide hi wip  
his cloys. & ledde hi. for to crucifie  
hi. soyehe yei goynge out. soude  
ama of surenen comye fro aton.  
spmoit bi name. yei cōstreynede  
hi. y. he schilde take his crou. & yei  
came into a place. pat is depid gal  
gatha. y. is ye place of caluare. &  
yei anien hi. for to drynke wip nuch  
lid wip galle. & whane he hadde tal  
tid. he wolde not drynke. soyehe af  
tir y. yei hadden crucified hi. yei  
depar tide his cloys. & seinte lott.  
y. it schilde be fulfild. pat is seid  
bi ye pfete seynge. yei partiden  
to hem my cloys. & on my doy yei  
seinte lott. and yei sittige bepte  
hi. & yei putide on his heed. ye cau  
le of hi wintu. yis is ihu of nashareth.  
king of ieris. pane twey penes



Weren crucified wip hi. oon on pe rist  
half. & oon on pe lechalf. forsope  
me passige forp. blissefuld hi. mo  
nyge her hedis & leynge. foz to  
pee pat distroyest pe temple of god.  
& in pe pridde day bildest it agen.  
saue pon ri self. if p art pe sone  
of god. come down of pe cross. al  
so & pnces of prestis stornge w  
stribis & eldre me. seide. he made  
ouer me sate. he may not make  
hi self sate. if he is kig of israel.  
come he now down fro pe cross.  
& we bileue to hi. he trustis god.  
delphie he hi now if he wole. for he  
seide. for i am goddis sone. forso  
pe & pe penes pat weren crucified  
wip hi. putte to hi wip reppof  
pe same pig. soreli fro pe lyte  
our. derkneis weren maid on al pe  
erpe. til to pe nymppe our. & abou  
te pe nymppe our. the cryede wip gr  
eet vois & seide. hely. hely. lannala  
batany. this. my god. my god. whi  
hast pou forlake me. sorely hi me  
stondige per & heerige. seide. pis  
depi hely. and anon oon of he  
reynge. took & fillde a spoige  
wip vinegre. & putte on a reede.  
& gaf to hi for to drynke. but ope  
seide. suffre pou. se we wher hely  
come delphynge hi. forsope the est  
soone cryge wip greet vois. sen  
te out pe spirit. & lo pe veil of pe  
temple was lit or to rent into thre  
parties. fro pe hyette til to down.  
and pe erpe was moned. & stoones  
weren clef. & buriels weren opened.  
& many bodies of seyntis pat slep  
ten or weren deed. rylde agen. & rei  
goynge out of her buriels. after  
his resurrection. came into pe hoo  
ly citee. & apperde to manye. tren

ly centurio & rei pat weren wip  
hi kepige ihu. whie re monyng  
of pe erpe was seyn. & ro pign  
pat weren don. rei diede greetly  
seynge. verly pis was goddis  
sone. forsope p weren pere many  
wymen a fer. pat stonde ihu fro ga  
hile. & mynstride to hi among whi  
che was mary magdalen & marie  
modur of james & of joseph. & pe mo  
dur of sebedees sones. forsope whane  
pe euening was maid. p cam a ryde  
nys fro armathia. by name joseph.  
& he was discipule of ihu. he wente to  
pilat. & arde pe body of ihu. p ane  
pilat comaunde pe body to be sold.  
and whane pe body was takn. joseph  
wappide it in a cleue sentel or linen  
clor. & putte it in his newe buriel  
pat he hadde heuill in a stoon. & he  
walewde a greet stoon to pe dore  
of pe buriel. & wente a wey. forsope  
mary magdalen. & anoy marie.  
weren per. stange azens pe sepulchre.  
soreli on petour day pat is after  
pall. euening. pe pnces of prestis  
& pe familes came to gidre to pilat.  
& seide. sir. we han myde p ylle ty  
tour or dilemoure seide at hyngge.  
after pre dages. i shal ryle men. p  
fore comaunde pon pe sepulchre for  
to be kept. til into pe pridde day.  
lest peranetur. his disciples come  
& stelen hi. & sefen to pe peple. he  
hay risu fro deade me. & pe laste er  
roun shal be worle. pa pe former  
pilat seide to hem. ze han pe kepig  
goze. kepe ze as ze bimen. forsope  
rei goynge forp kepte or wardde pe  
sepulchre. markige or seide pe stoon  
wip keperis. **E. xviij.**  
forsope in pe eneynd of pe la  
bat. or haliday. pat stymey

b. in pe firste day of pe wote. mary  
magdalen cam & anoy marie.  
for to se pe sepulchre. and lo p was  
maid a greet erpe monyng. for pe  
angel of pe lord cam down fro he  
uene. & cam nys & turnede awei  
pe stoon. & sat peron. soreli his lo  
kig was as leyt. & his cloris as  
snow. forsope for drede of hi pe  
keperis weren a ferd. & rei weren  
maid as deed me. for pe angel an  
swerige seide to pe wymen. nyle  
ze drede. for i root p ze seken ihu.  
pat was crucified. he is not her.  
for he roos. as he seide. come ze &  
se ze pe place. wher pe lord was  
put. and ze goynge sone. seie to  
hile disciples. p he hay risu. & lo  
he shal go bifoze you into galile.  
vere ze shule se hi. lo i have bifo  
ze leid to you. and rei weten out  
sone fro pe buriels wip drede &  
greet ioye. reynge for to telle to  
hile disciples. and lo the mette he.  
& seide. hely ze. forsope rei nezede  
& heelde his feet. & wondlypede  
him. p ane the seide to he. nyle ze  
drede. go ze. telle ze to my bimen.  
p rei go in to galile. per rei shule  
se me. and whie rei hadde gon.  
lo sime of pe keperis came into  
pe citee. & selde to pe pnces of pl  
tis. alle pigns pat weren don. and  
rei gadrid to gidre wip pe eldre  
men whie a conseil was takn.  
zaunen to pe knyghtis plentuous  
monep. & leiden seie ze p his disci  
ples came by nyht. & han stole hi.  
whie we slepten. and if pis be  
herd of pe prestet or miste. we  
shulen concele hi. & make you sy  
ker. & whie re monep was takn.  
rei dideu as rei weren taryt. and

pis word is purphatid at pe ieris.  
til into pis day. forsope enleuene  
disciples weten into galile. to  
an hil. wher the hadde ordeyned  
to hem. and rei seynge hi. wondly  
peden. soreli sime of hem dowte  
ten. & the comyge nys. spak to he  
& seide. al power in heuene & in er  
pe. is ioni to me. pfore ze goynge  
teche alle folkis. critenynge he in  
pe name of pe fadir & pe sone & of pe  
hooch gost. techige he for to kepe  
alle pigns. what eue pigns i have  
comandid to you. and lo i am wip  
you alle dages. til to pe endyng  
of pe world. **I here endip pe gospel  
of matheu. & bigynne re plog of mark.**  
**M**ark pe euangelist of god. &  
dion. & petris sone in bap  
tism & in goddis word discipule. prest  
hood in israel ledige. after flesch a  
debene. he turned to pe few of cit.  
wroot pe gospel in ytalie. shewige  
pon bope what he orde to his kyn  
rete. & to cit. forwhi pe bigynnyng  
of his pnciple. he ordeynynge i re  
vois of a prestis exlamaciou. the  
wip pe orde of debenis electiou. p  
he pchige pe bifoze ordeyned john  
sacharies sone. send out in vois  
of an angel. tellige not conly god  
dis sone maid man. but pe bodi of  
pe lord. pis is pe churche into alle pni  
gis by pe word of godis vois qd.  
shule shewe in pe bigynnyng of  
his prechig. of pe gospel. p re whi  
che pis redynge shule knowe to  
whom pe bigynnyng of flesch. i pe  
lord & ihu comyge to pe habitade. pe  
flesch shule knowe & in hi self pe  
word pat is cit of pe vois john bap  
tist p in conlonatis. pis is forme fa  
dre he hadde loste. shule fyde.



loþe boþe he þe werk of þe fulfild  
goſpel entriþe. & fro þe baptiſm  
of þe lord. bigynnyng to þe god-  
ne tranelide not to leþe þe naty-  
rite of fleſch. þe which he hadde  
leþe in oþer liſore. but he ex-  
preſſe þe expoſition of al þe deſert.  
þat he wroȝt out þe faſtig of non-  
bre. of þe noumber of faſtig. þe tēp-  
tation of þe fend. þe cōgregation  
of beetiſ. & þe ſeruiſe of angels.  
þe oþerþing us to vnderſtode.  
alle þiſis in ſhort þeiþing to  
gidre. neþ þe antoite of þiſ do-  
uſhulde do awei. & in þat ſortnyng  
ſhulde not deufe. fulneſſe of þe  
werk. forloþe he is ſeid. to haue  
þat a wei þiſ þoimbe. þe  
myſte be had as vnbore to þat  
hood. but ſo myſte myſte elem-  
on biſore oþerþing. acorþige to  
þe ſeiþ. þe neþ ſo in þe werk of  
þe word. he ſhulde leeþe þat ra-  
þer he hadde diſſerued on þiſ  
for of alexandre he was biſhop  
of who by alle þiſis werk of in-  
teuſion was to þiſe. boþe to diſ-  
poſe þe ſeiþing of þe goſpel i þiſ  
ſiſ. & þe diſtuphne of laue to þiſ  
we i þiſ ſiſ. & þe natyrite of god to  
þiſe i þe fleſch oþer i þe mañhood  
of þe lord. þe which þiſis in us  
ſiſ. firſt it bihouey to be requid.  
aſtward we wolen þiſis ſort  
to be þiſe. þat he þat þiſe of  
exortation for he þat þiſe. & he þat  
þiſe entrees is god. **Here endyþ  
þe plog. & bigynnyng þe goſpel.**

**T**he bigynnyng of þe goſpel of ihu crist  
þe ſone of god. as it is  
writun i ſape þe plete

lo þe ſende iþ angel biſore þe ſare.  
þat ſhal make ri weþe redþ bi-  
fore þe. þe vois of a cryere in  
deſert. make þe redþ þe weþe  
of þe lord. make þe þiſis þiſe  
ful. þiſ was in deſert. baptiſ-  
ge. & þe þiſe þe baptiſm of þe  
ualite into remiſſion of ſpues. and  
al þe þiſe of iudee wente out to  
hi. & alle me of ier hi. and þe we-  
ren baptiſd of hi in þe flood iord.  
& knollleþe her ſpues. and þiſ  
was clord wip heere of camel. &  
a gurdil of ſkyn was aboute þiſ  
dis. and he cet locutis & þiſ of þe  
wote. & þe þiſe ſeiþing. a ſtrouge  
þan i ſhal come aſter me. of iſo  
þe þiſe. am not worþi for to  
do oþer vnbore þe lace of þiſ ſhoon.  
I haue baptiſd þiſ in watir. for  
þe he ſhal baptiſe þiſ in þe hoolþ goſt.  
**And it was don i þo dapes. iſe cam**  
fro naſareth of galile. & was bap-  
tiſd of þiſ i iordan. and anon he  
arþinge up of þe watir. þiſe he-  
nes openþ. & þe ſpuit comþe  
down as a culuer. & diſſe i þiſ  
and a vois was maid fro þe uene.  
þat art my ſone loued. in þe þiſe  
pleſid. and anon þe ſpuit þiſe  
out hi into deſert. & he was i de-  
ſert. forty dapes & forty ny-  
tis. & was tēptid of ſathanas.  
and he was wip beetiſ. & angel  
iþ myſtride to þiſ. forloþe aſt-  
þiſe þiſ was takun. iſe cam fro gal-  
le. þe þiſe þe goſpel of þe þiſe  
dom of god. & ſeiþe. for þe tēme  
is fulfild. & þe þiſe of god  
ſhal come nþ. forþiþe þe oþer  
þe penañce. & þiſe þe to þe goſ-  
pel. and he þat þiſe biſpdis þe ſe  
of galile. þiſe þiſe & and þiſe

þe þiſe. þiſe netis to þe ſe  
for þe were fuþheris. and iſe ſe  
to hem. come & aſt me. i ſh  
al make þiſ to be maid fuþheris  
of me. and anon þe forloþen þe  
netis. & þe ſeiþe hi. & he ſeiþe for  
fro þe miſ alþiſ. & þiſe þiſe of  
ſeþe. & þiſe hiſ þiſe. & hem in  
þe boot makþe netis. & anon he  
deþte he. and þe leſen ſeþe  
her ſadri in þe boot. wip þiſe  
ſeruantis. & þe ſeiþe hi. and  
þe entride into caſarnai. & anon  
þe ſabotis he ſeiþe into a ſynago-  
ge. & taũte hem. and þe wondri-  
ſen on þiſe techiþ. for he taũte  
he. as haũge þower. & not as  
ſcribis. and in þe ſynagoge of he  
was ama in an vndene ſpuit.  
& he criede ſeiþing. what to wiſe  
to þe þiſe of naſareth. þiſe þiſe  
come fro to diſtuphne us. i wote. þat  
þiſe þe hoolþ of god. and iſe  
þe þiſe hi. & ſeiþe. were doib  
& go out of þe ma. and þe vndene  
goſt deþe iþe hi. & criþe wip  
greet vois. wente out fro hi. and  
alle me wondride. ſo þe þe ſeiþe  
to gidre anog hem ſeiþing. what  
is þiſe þiſe. what is þiſe weþe te-  
chiþ. for in þiſe he comuñdriþ  
to vndene ſpuitis. & þe oþer  
to þiſe. and þe tale oþer þiſe of hi.  
wente forþe anon into al þe citre  
of galile. & anon þe goþinge out of  
þe ſynagoge. came into þe hous of  
ſymon. & and þiſe. wip þiſe &  
þiſe. loþe þe modri of ſymonit  
weþe. lay aſt in ſeueris. and anon  
þe ſeiþe to þiſe of hi. & he cam nþ.  
& aſeride hi. wip þe hond of hi  
was takun. and anon þe ſeuer  
leſe hi. & þe iþiſtride to he.

forloþe wip þe euenyng. was ma-  
ad. wip þe ſonne wente down. þe  
broute to hi alle haũge þiſe. &  
haũge deſe. and al þe cite was  
gedrid at þe cite. & he hee lide ma-  
þe þat were tranelid wip duple  
þiſe. & he caſtde out many deſe.  
& he aſſeþe he not for to ſpeke.  
for þe þiſe hi. and he rþiþe ful  
erþe. & deþe out & wente into a deſert  
place. & þiſe þe. & ſymon bi-  
wode hi. & þe ſeiþe wip hi. & wip  
þe hadde ſeþe hi. þe ſeiþe to hi  
þe alle me deþe þe. and he ſeiþe to  
he go we into þe neþe to wne  
& cite. þe þe þe alþe þe. for to  
þiſe þiſe. & cam. and he þe i þe  
ſynagoge of he. & in al galile. &  
caſtde out ſeþe. and a leþe  
ma cam to hi. & biſe & knollle  
& ſeiþe. if þiſe wote. þiſe mañ de-  
ſe me. forloþe iſe haũge metriþ  
on hi. ſeiþe out þiſe hond. & iſe  
touchþe hi. ſeiþe to hi. i wote. þe  
þiſe mañ clene. and wip he had  
de ſeþe þiſe. anon þe leþe þiſe  
a weþe fro hi. & he was clene. &  
iſe þe þiſe hi. & anon iſe þiſe  
tite hi out. and iſe ſeiþe to þiſe  
þe þiſe. ſeiþe to no man. but go.  
ſeiþe þe to þe þiſe of þe þiſe.  
& oþer for þiſe deþe. into wip  
hi to he. þe þiſe þat moſes had.  
and he ſeiþe out. & þiſe to þe þe.  
& deþe oþer þiſe þe word. ſo  
þe þiſe he iþe not openly go in  
to þe cite. but be wipout forþe  
i deſert places. & þe came to gidre  
to þiſe. on alle ſeþe. **¶**  
**A**d eft he entride into  
caſarnai. aſt eþe day  
es. and it was herd þat  
he was in an hous. & many came



to gidre: so þe þe hous took not hem.  
neyr at þe rate: & he spak to hem  
anword: and þe came to hi. me þe  
ginge amā opt in palestie: which  
was born of four: and whāne þe  
myrtēn not bringe hy to ihu: for  
þe cūpany of peple: þe made þe  
roof nakid wher he was: & mak-  
ge oppr. þe semt down þe bed: &  
which þe syke mā in palestie lay/  
sopeli whāne ihc hadde seþn þe  
fery of hem: he seide to þe syke mā  
i palestie: sone þi synes ben forzo-  
un to þee: forþore þei weren  
liue of re stribus: sittige & þen-  
kige in her hertis: what speke  
he yus: he blasfemy: who may  
forþyne synes: no but god aloone:  
and whāne ihu hadde knowe þis  
þis: anon bi þe hoold goð: for þe  
pointe so wy þe he self: he seip  
to hem: what penken ze þe ym-  
gis i zow hertis: what is hūtere  
for to sepe to þe syke mā in palestie:  
synes ben forzouni to þee: or for to  
sepe rþle take þi bed & walke: & for-  
ly þat ze wite: þe māns sone hap  
power in erpe to forþyne synes:  
he seide to þe syke mā in palestie: &  
sepe to þe rþle up: take þi bed:  
& go into þi hous: and anon he  
roos up: & whāne þe bed was ta-  
ken up: he wente bi fore alle men:  
so þe alle me wondren & hono-  
reð god & seide: for we spreuen  
so. And he wente out eft soone  
to þe see: & al þe cūpany of peple  
cam to hi: & he taughte he: and whā-  
ne he passide: & he seip of alpher:  
sittige at þe tollbope: & he seide to  
him: synne me: and he roos: & in-  
wede hi: & it was don whāne he  
sat at þe mete i his hous: many

pupplians & hūful mē: satten to  
gidre at þe mete wy ihu: & hū-  
dylphs: for þe were manye rat  
folowiden hi: and stribus & farise-  
es seynge þe eet wy pupplians  
& hūful mē: seide to ihu: discipulis  
whi zow mastir etip & drynke  
wy pupplians & synnes: whāne  
þis þis herd: ihc seide to he: hoole  
me han no nede to a leche: but þe  
þat han þiuele: for: i cam not for to  
clepe iust mē: but synnes. And  
discipulis of iohā & þe farisees we-  
ren fastige: & þe come & sepe to  
hi: whi discipulis of iohā & of farisees  
fasten: but þi discipulis faste not:  
& ihc seide to he: wher þe sones of  
weddigis moūn faste: as longe  
as þe spouse is wy þem: as longe  
tyme as þe han þe spouse wy þe:  
þe moūn not faste: forþore dāres  
shulen come whāne þe spouse shal  
be takū alþes fro hi: & þāne þe  
shulen faste in þe dāres: no man  
seip a pacche of rinde or newe cloy:  
to an old cloy: ellis he takū alþes  
þe newe supplemet or pacche fro þe  
elde: & a more brykig is maid: and  
no mā sendy newe wyne into old  
botels or wyvelles: ellis þe wyne  
shal berste þe wyvelles: & þe wyne  
shal be held out: & þe wyne velle  
shal perithe: but newe wyne shal  
be sent into newe wyne velle: &  
it was don eftsones whāne  
þe lord waitide i þe sabatis  
bi þe cornes: & hūful discipulis  
bigimen to passe for þe þur-  
ke eerns of corn: soþi þe fa-  
risees seiden lo whi þi disci-  
pulis i sabatis þat þe is not  
teefia: & he seide to he: vaden  
ze uenie what daunp dide: whi

ne he hadde uete: and he hūgride &  
þe þat weren wy þim: how he we-  
te into þe hous of god: vnder abia-  
th pnce of prestis: & eet loones of  
posicion: whiche it was not leet  
ful to ete: no but to prestis aloone:  
and he zaf to he þat weren wy þim:  
& he seide to he: þe sabat is maid  
for mā: & not amā for þe sabat: þe  
fore māns sone is lord alld of þe  
sabat. **Ch. m. //**  
**A**nd he entride eftsoone  
into þe synagoge: & þe  
was amā haunþe a drye hond: &  
þe alþes hi: if he heelde in þe sa-  
botis: for to acuse hi: and he seide  
to þe mā haunþe a drye hond: rþle  
into þe myddel: & he seip to he: is it  
leetful to do wel in þe sabotis: wher  
þi þiuele: & for to make a soule laif:  
wher to leet: & þe were stille: &  
he biholdige hem aboute wy þe  
þe haunþe soure on þe blyndnesse  
of her herte: seip to þe man: hold  
forþi þi hond: and he heeld forþi:  
& his hond was restord to hi: soþe  
þe farisees goynge out: anon ma-  
den couceil wy erodians azens  
hi: how þe shulde leet hi: for so  
þe ihc wy hūful discipulis wente to  
þe see: and myche cūpany fro ga-  
lile & iudee synede hi: & fro je-  
rlm & fro þourne: & fro byondis  
jordan: and þe þat weren aboute  
ture & sydon a greet multitude:  
heerige þe rygis þat he dide: camē  
to hi: and ihc seide to hūful discipulis:  
þe heil boot shulde lerne hi: for  
þe cūpany of peple: lest þe oppres-  
sion hi: for he heelde manþe: soþe  
þe felden faste to hi: to tonche  
hi: forþore how manþe enie hadde  
sons or byondis & vndene spuri

ris: whāne þe shen hi felde down  
to hi: & criede seynge: þou art þe so-  
ne of god: & greetly he manamūte  
he: þe þe shulde not make hi opp-  
or knowū. And he aþynge into  
an hū clepe to hi who he wolde:  
& þe came to hi: and he made þe  
were twelue wy þi: & þe shulde  
sende hem for to preche: and he zaf  
to hem power to heele syke nedis &  
to caste out fendis: & to spmōit  
he putte name: petre: and he cle-  
pide james of sebede: & john þe bro-  
þer of james: & he putte to hi na-  
mes boenarges: þe sones of pū-  
dyng: & he clepide andrew & filip:  
& bartilmeu & mattheu: & thomas  
& james alfer & tadde & symon ca-  
nane: & judas scarioth: þat betray-  
ede hi: & þe come to an holis: &  
þe cūpany of peple cam to gidre  
eftsoone: so þe þe myte not ete  
neþ breed: & whāne his synes me  
hadde herd: þe weren out for to  
holde hi: for þe seide: þe is turned  
into woodnesse: and þe stribus þat  
camē down fro ierlm: seide: for he  
hap belieub: & for in þe pnce of de-  
uchis: he casty out fendis: & he cle-  
pide hem to gidre: & he seide to he  
in parabis: how may sathanas  
caste out sathanas: & if a reime  
be departid azens it self: wilke re-  
me may not stonde: and if an holis  
be disparpoled on it self: wilke  
hous may not stonde: & if sathanas  
hap risū azens hi self: he is dispar-  
poled. & he shal not now stonde:  
but hay an ente: no mā gon into  
a strong māns hous may take a  
weþ his velle: no but he bynde  
first þe strong mā: & þāne he shal  
dynersly rānne his hous treuh



1 I seie to you for alle synes & blasse-  
mies. by which ye han blasfemed.  
shul be forzoun to ye sones of me.  
sorely he pat blasfemer aens pe  
hooly gost. hay not remission in  
to wynten ende. but he shal be  
gilty of euylange trespas. for ye  
seide he hay an vndene spirit.

**A**nd his modir & briden come. &  
ye stonde wyponte for. sente  
to hy. & clepe hy. & a cuppys sat  
aboute hy. and ye seien to hy. lo  
ye modir & briden wyponte for.  
seden pec. & he answerege to hem.  
seide. who is my modir & my briden?  
he biholdige he aboute. pat  
saten i ye cuppas of hy. seide. lo my  
modir & my briden. for who pat  
doit ye wille of god. he is my bro-  
der. & my suster & modir.

**A**nd est ihu bigan to te-  
che at pe see. & moche  
cuppys of peple was ga-  
thrid to hym. so ye he saynge to  
a boot. sat in pe see. and al ye cu-  
pys of peple. was aboute ye  
see on ye lond. & he tauhte hem  
i parables. many rygys. and he sei-  
de to he in his tethig. heere ze. lo  
ama lowysse gor out for to lowe  
i ye while he lowys. and seed  
felte aboute ye weye. & briddis  
of heuene eyn of ye en came. &  
eeten it. forsope anoper. felte don  
on stony places. wher it hadde  
not moche erpe. & and it aponys  
up. for it hadde not depnele of er-  
pe. & while ye lone roos up. it  
welewide for heete. & it dyete up.  
for it hadde not roote. and anoper  
felte down i to pomes. & pomes  
steyde up. & strangle it. & it zaf  
not fruyt. and anoper felte down

into good lond. & zaf fruyt. & zaf  
up & weyng. & zaf fruyt. & zaf  
ty foold. & zaf fruyt. & zaf  
huidnd foold. and he seide he pat  
hay eeris of heering. heer. **A**nd  
while he was singuler or be hy. &  
po twelue y. weren wy hy. &  
ten hy for to expone ye parable.  
and he seide to he. to you it is zoun  
for to knowe ye mysterie. & zaf  
unte of ye kyngdome of god. for  
to hem pat ben wyponte for. al  
le rygys ben mand i parables. &  
ye seynge. se. & se not. & ye hee-  
rige heer. & vnderstonde not. &  
en ty me ye be couertid. & synes  
be forzoun to he. and he seide to he.  
wren not ze. ye parable. & zaf  
ze ihu leuoke. alle parables.  
he pat lowys. so wy anwerd. &  
sorely it ben pat ben aboute ye  
weye. wher pe word is lowys. &  
whane ye han herd. and comen  
eathans. & taky anwer pe word.  
pat is lowys in her hertis. and al  
so pes ben pat ben souyn on a ston.  
whiche whane ye han herd pe  
word. and ye taken it wy. &  
ye han not roote. & he seide. but  
ye ben tepsal. & is lastigeal. &  
tyme. afterward while tribula-  
cion ryp. & perlecucion for ye  
word. and ye ben slawnd. &  
ye be ope pat be souyn in pomes.  
yes it ben pat heere ye word. &  
my sette of ye word. & dissent of  
riches. & ope charge of coney.  
le entrige strangle ye word. &  
it is mand wy onte fruyt. and  
yes it ben pat be souyn in good  
lond. whiche heere ye word. & to  
ben & maken fruyt. con pntifol.  
con fruyt. & con an hnd. & fold

**A**nd he seide to he. wher a lache  
come. & it be put vnder abed. &  
not. & it be put on a candil. &  
forsope. & is no ryg. & pat shal  
not be mand ope. & nup. & ryg. &  
pny. & whiche shal not come into  
apert. & if ony ma hay eeris of hee-  
rige. heer. & in what meyn. &  
meten. & it shal be metil to you. &  
be cat to you. for it shal be zoun  
to hy pat hay. & it shal be cat. &  
anwer fro hy pat hay not. also pat  
pat he hay. **A**nd he seide. so ye  
kyngdome of god. & as if ama canse  
seed into ye erpe. & he slepe. & it  
rple up. & day. & bringe for  
seed. & were faste. ye while he wo-  
ot not. for ye erpe bihis ope.  
wochig. maky fruyt. first an  
erbe. & grene corn. afterward  
an ere. afterward ful fruyt. & ye  
er. & whane of it sile. it hay  
brynt for fruyt. and he seide.  
dy a sykil or hook. for rype corn  
comen. **A**nd he seide. to what  
ryg. shulen we lache ye kyngdome  
of god. or to what parable. & while  
ye comparisoun it. & as a corn  
of seneney. whiche whane it is so-  
uyn in pe erpe. is lalle. & alle see-  
dis pat be in erpe. & while it is  
soun. it azye up into a tree.  
& is mand more pan alle wortis  
or erbis. and it maky grete bran-  
chis. & ye briddis of heuene mony  
diuelle vnder ye shadowne yerof.  
and i many sude parables he spak  
to hem a word. & ye nup. & heer.  
sorely he spak not to he. wyponte  
parable. forsope he expounede  
to hile dyspuls alle rygys on sydis  
hond. & by he sile. and he seide  
to he in pat day. while euenyng

was mand. & alle we aenward. &  
ye leuige ye cuppys of peple.  
taken hy. so ye was in a boot. &  
oyer bootis were wy hy. and a  
greet storm of wynd was mand.  
& sente wavis into ye boot. so ye  
ye boot was ful. & he was i ye hy-  
dr part of ye boot. & slepte on a  
pilewe. & ye reysen hy. & seye to  
hy. man. & perceyney it not to pee.  
for we perill. & he rpyge up.  
man. & seide to ye wynd. & seide to  
ye see. & alle. were doub. & ye wynd  
ceeside. & greet peblenele was  
mand. and he seide to he. what dyete  
ze. & not. & ze han fery. & ye dyad  
de wy greet dyete. & seide to ech  
op. who gellit. & is vis. for ye  
wynd. & ye see obeithen to hym.

**A**nd ye camen. **C. V.**  
oner ye wawe. & troublig  
of ye see. into ye curre of  
gergeleis. and after ye zede out  
of ye boot. and ama in an vnde-  
ne hy. & ran out of byrds to hy.  
whiche ma hadde an hous in graues.  
or byrds. & nup wy chaynes. &  
te ony man bynde hy. for ofte tyme  
he was bound in doctis. & chaynes  
hadde broke ye chaynes. & hadde  
broke ye doctis to finale gobatis.  
& no ma myte dante. & make ra-  
me hy. and enmore nup. & day. in  
byrds. & hylis. he was cryge  
& betyge hy. & wy stooness. &  
li he seynge. & after. ran. & wor-  
shipede hy. & he crynge wy greet  
vois seide. what to me. & to pee.  
you ihu ye lone of god. & hyste. &  
conoure pee bi god. & you finente  
me not. forsope. & he seide to hy. &  
vndene spirit go out fro ye ma.  
& ihu arde hy. what name is to



ree: & he lew to hi a legioun is name  
to me for we ben manne. and he pi  
ete ihu moche: & he shulde not put  
te hi out of pe kintre: for sope per  
was pere aboute pe hil: a greet  
flor of hoggis lelewinge: & pe  
spiris preide ihu & leide: leide  
ns into hoggis: & we entre ito  
he: and anon the graunte to he  
& pe vndene spiritis goyng out.  
entrede into pe hoggis: and wip  
greet bre or haue pe flor was  
cast down into pe see: to tweyne  
pouland: & per were strangid i pe  
see: for li per pat kepten he: fled  
den & tolen into pe cite: & into feel  
dis: and per wete out for to se:  
what was don: & per came to ihu:  
& pe spen hi pat was traueld of  
pe fend: sitige doid & of hool m  
de: & peidredde: and per spen hi  
it was don to hi pat hadde a fend:  
& of pe hoggis: twelden to hem: &  
per bigmen for to preie hi: & he  
shulde go awei fro her cootis: &  
whie he stude into aboot: he pat  
was traueld of pe deuel: bigan  
to preie hi: & he shulde be wip hi  
soreli the reserue he not: but  
leide to hi go pou ito pi hous to pi  
ne: & telle to hem how grete pigis  
pe lord hay don to pee: & hadde mer  
cy of pee: and he wente for: & by  
gan for to preche in decapoli: & is  
a kintre of ten citees: how grete  
pigis the hadde don to hi: & alle me  
wondred. And whie the hadde  
stude ito pe boot: estalone on ye  
see: myche ciupany of peple cam  
to gidre to hi: & was aboute pe lee  
& oon of pe pucis of synagogis:  
by name jairus: cam: & he leyge  
him felle down at his feet: & prei

ete hi moche & leide: for my dought  
is in ye laste pigis: come pou put  
te pi hond on hir: & she be sauf  
& lyne: & he wente for wip him:  
& moche ciupany of peple felle  
hi: & oppreside hi: and a wōman  
pat was in ye flur of blood: thel  
ue zeer: & hadde suffrid many pi  
gis: of ful many ledus: & hadde spe  
did alle hir pigis: & no pig: pfitte:  
but more hadde worse: whie the  
hadde herd of ihu: cam i pe ciup  
ny bihynde: & to tuche his cloy:  
for she leide: for if i shal tuche  
the his cloy: i shal be sauf: & anon  
pe well of hir blood was dried up:  
& she felle in body: & she was hee  
ld of pe wōnde of synones: and  
anon the knowige in hi gile: & pe  
tu pat was gon out of hi: turne  
de to pe ciupany & leide: who tol  
chide my cloyis: & hile distuplis  
leide to hi: pou seest pe ciupany pi  
fige pee: & leide who tuche me:  
& the lokide aboute for to se hi: pat  
hadde dou pis pig: for sope pe wōna  
dredige & qualfige: witege & it was  
don in hir: cam & felle down before  
hi: & leide to hi al treupe: for sope  
the leide to hi: donur: in fey: hay  
mand pee sauf: go in pees: & be pou  
hool of pi synelle: & the while he sp  
ak: messangeris came to pe puce  
of a synagoge & leyen: for pi dour  
tis deed: what traueld pou pe  
manstu ferper: for sope whie pe wōn  
was herd pat was leide: the leide to pe  
pince of pe synagoge: uple pou die  
de: oonly bileue pou: and he reserue  
de not ony mā to lue hi: nobut per  
& james: & john pe brop of james:  
and per comen ito pe hous of pe pu  
ce of pe synagoge: & he spz noie:

& men wepige & wepige moche: &  
he zede in: & leide to hem: what ben  
ye troublid & wepen: & pe wende is  
not deed: but slep: & per storned  
hi: for sope whie alle were cast out:  
he taky pe sadir & modir of pe wen  
che: & hem were wip hi: and per  
entren: wher pe wende lay: & he  
holdige pe hond of pe wende: leide  
to hi: tabita cumy: & is interpid  
or expounded: wende to pee & leie:  
rple pou: & anon pe wende roos &  
walkide: sorli she was of twelue ze  
er: and per were abait by gretted  
stonepig: & he comānde to hem  
greete: & no mā shulde wite it:  
& he comānde to zyne to hir for  
to ete: **C. vii.**  
**A**nd the gon out fro pen:  
wente into his owne cite:  
& hile distuplis felle hi: & whie  
pe sabon was maid: the bigan for  
to teche in a synagoge: and manne  
heerige wondred in his techig: &  
leiden: of whens to pis: alle pes  
pigis: & what is pe wisdom pat  
is zoni to hi: & suche vertues whi  
che ben maid by his hondis: wher  
pis is not a smyp or carpenter:  
pe lone of marie: pe brop of james:  
& of joleph: & of judas: & of symon:  
wher his listris be not here: wip  
us: & per weren standid in hi: &  
the leide to he: & a profete is not w  
onte honour: no but i his owne  
citey: & in his syn: & in his holks:  
and he myte not make per: ony  
vertu: no but shide a fewe syte  
me: whie pe hondis were putt to  
& he wondred for pe vnbilene of  
he: and he wente aboute castels  
i euyron: & tanste: & he clepide to  
gidre twelue: & bigan for to sen

de hem by tweyne: & zaf to he po  
wer on vndene spiritis: & comān  
dite he: & per shulde not take ony  
pig: in pe wepe: no but aserd conhi:  
not a stripe: not bzeed: ney money  
in ye girdil: but shod wip sandal  
es: & ben oppin aboue: and per shul  
den not be cloyd wip twey cootis:  
& he leide to he: whidur eu ze shu  
len entre into an hous: dwelle ze  
pere: til ze gon out fro yems: and  
who eue shulde not reserue ne hee  
re zoni: ze goyng out fro yems: sha  
le awei pe poude fro your feet:  
into witnesig to he: & per goyng  
out: prechiden: & men shuldendo  
penance: & per castide out many fe  
dis: & anoynde wip oyle many sy  
ke me: & per were heeld: & kping  
eroude herde: for his name was  
maid oppu: & he leide: & john bap  
tist hay rili: zen fro deede men:  
& perfore: wenes wochen i hi: sope  
li ope leide: & it is hely: but opere  
leiden: & it is a phete as oon of pfe  
tis: & whie pis pig was herd: erou  
de leide: pis john who i haue bihee  
did: hay rili: zen fro deede me: for  
pille eroude sente: & heeld john:  
& boond hi ito pldu for erodias pe  
wif of filip his brop: for he hadde  
weddid hir: for john leide to eroude:  
it is not leestul to pee: for to haue pe  
wif of pi broper: erodias for sope  
leide alpies to hi: & wolde sle him  
& myte not: sope eroude dredde  
john: & knew hi a uist mā & hooly:  
& kepte hi: and eroude herde hi: &  
he dide many pigis: & gladly herde  
hi: & whie a couenable day hadde  
falle: eroude i his burpe day made  
a soup to pe pucis & tribunes: & to  
pe felle or grettede of galile: &



Whiche þe douȝt of pilke erodias had  
de entrid & daniel & pleid to eroud  
& also to me sitte at þe mete: þe  
king seide to þe wenche: are þu of  
me: what þou wolt: & þu shalt ȝue  
to þe: and he smooz to hir: for whiche  
euer þou shalt are: I shal ȝue to  
þee: þouȝt it be þe half of my king  
dom: which whane she hadde gon  
out: seide to hir modur: what shal  
I are: & she seide: þe heed of ioh  
baptist: and whane she hadde etrid  
aȝon wyȝte to þe king: she  
atide seynge: I wole þu aȝon þou  
ȝue to me i adill: þe heed of ioh  
baptist: & þe king was son for þe  
cop: & for me sitte to gide at þe  
mete: he wolte not make hir son:  
but whane amaduell was sent:  
he comaunde þe heed of ioh  
baptist for to be brouȝt in adill: & he  
bihedite hi in þe prison: & brouȝte  
his heed in adill: & ȝaf it to þe  
wenche: & þe wenche ȝaf to hir mo  
dur: and whiche þis ȝis was herd:  
hise discipulis came: & toke his bo  
di: & putte it i abriel. And a  
posthis comȝe to gide to ihu: &  
telde to hi alle ȝis þat þei hadden  
don & taut: & he seide to he: come  
ȝe bizon silf: to a desert place: &  
reste ȝe altil: for þu weren manȝe  
pat came & wente aȝe: & þei hadde  
not spate for to ete: & þei stynge  
to a boot: wente to a desert pla  
ce: by he silf: & þei open he goȝge  
aȝey: & manȝe kneipe: and þei  
goen on feet fro alle citees: & ru  
nen to gide pidur & came bifoze  
he: and he goȝge out: aȝ moche  
cūpany: & hadde mery on he: for  
þei were as sheep: not hanȝe  
a sheparde: & he bigan for to teche

hem: manȝ ȝis: & whane moche  
our was maid non: hise discipulis  
came nȝ seynge: þis place is de  
sert: & now þe our har passid: lee  
ne he: & þei goȝge into þe nexte  
townes & vilagis: bȝe to he me  
tis whiche þei schulen ete: and he  
answerige seide to he: ȝue ȝe to  
hem for to ete: & þei seiden to him:  
go we & bȝe we loones wyȝt  
hūdris pens: & we schule ȝue to  
hem for to ete: and he seide to he: how  
manȝ loones han ȝe: go ȝe & se: &  
whiche þei hadde known: þei seide:  
ȝue & two fūthris: and he comau  
nde to he: & þei schule make alle  
me sitte to mete bi cūpanyes on  
grene heȝ: and þei liden dū bi  
ties: bi hūdris & fiftes: & whiche  
he hadde take þe ȝue loones & the  
fūthris: he biheel into heuene: &  
bleide & braf loones: & ȝaf to hi  
se discipulis: & þei schulen putte  
bifoze he: and he departide aȝey  
fūthris to alle: & alle eete & were  
fūthrid: and þei token þe relis  
of brokū metis: & twelue cōffins ful  
& of þe fūthris: loȝel þei pat eete:  
woren ȝine þousand of me: and  
aȝ he cōfresmede hise discipulis  
for to stye to a boot: & þei schule  
passe bifoze hi ouer þe see to bet  
coȝda: þe while he leste þe peple:  
& whiche he hadde lest hem: he wete  
into an hū for to preie: & whiche eue  
nȝ was: þe boot was in þe mid  
del of see: & he aloone in þe lond: &  
he aȝ he traueȝe & rowȝge  
for þe wynd was cōtrarie to he:  
and aboute þe four þe walȝing  
of þe nȝt: he wandȝe on þe see  
cam to hem: & wolde ȝalle he: & as  
þei open hi wandȝe on þe see:

þei gemde for to be a fantū: & crede  
for alle aȝen hi: & þei were dūm  
blid: and aȝ he spak wyȝ he: & lei  
de to he: triste ȝe: I am: nȝ ȝe dȝe  
te: & he cam vp to he into þe boot: &  
þe wynd ceasde: & þei wondȝe moche  
wyȝ þe hem: for þei vnderstode not  
of þe loones: for her herte was blyn  
did: & whiche þei hadden passid ouer  
þe see: þei came to þe lond of gena  
sareth: & sette to lond: & whiche þei  
hadde gon out of þe boot: aȝ þei  
kneipe hi: and þei reynge þouȝ  
al þe citrei: bigimen to bet aboute  
beddis he pat hadde hem ȝuele: & he  
re þei herde hi be: and whiche eue  
he entrid to vilagis & into townes  
to citees: þei putten aȝe me  
in streitis: and preie hi: & þei sch  
ulen touche nameli þe heme of his  
clou: & how manȝe euer touchden  
hi: were maid saaf. **Chap. vii.**  
**A**nd fariles & sūme of þe  
scribis comȝe fro ierū:  
come to gide to hi: & whiche  
þei hadde seyn sūme of hise discipulis  
ete bȝed wyȝ comȝe hōdis: &  
is not wayȝhi: þei blame: for  
ȝe fariles & alle ierū: eten  
not: no but þei waȝhe ofte her  
hōdis: holdȝe þe tradiciōis of  
patris of eldȝe me: and þei tur  
nȝge aȝen fro dȝepȝ: eten not:  
no but þei be waȝhi: & manȝe  
oper ȝis be: pat ben takū to  
hem for to kepe: waȝhȝis of cū  
pis & of watȝ: vessels: & of ves  
sels of bras & of beddis: & fariles  
& scribis: aȝide hi & seide: waȝi go  
en not þi discipulis: aȝen þe tra  
diciō of eldȝe me: but wyȝ com  
ne hōdis þei ete bȝed: and he  
answerige: seide to hem: I saȝe

pfecede wel of ȝou spocis: as it  
is writū: þis peple waȝhȝe me  
wyȝ lippis: forȝore her herte is  
fer fro me: in vȝn treni þei  
waȝhȝe me: & techen doctȝines  
& heestis of me: for ȝe forȝaȝe  
þe maȝnet of god: holden þe tra  
diciōis of me: waȝhȝis of watȝ  
vessels & of cūpis: & manȝe oper ȝis  
lik to þe ȝe doen: & he seide to he:  
wel ȝe han maid þe maȝnet of  
god voide: & ȝe kepe ȝou tradici  
on: for moȝles seide: waȝhȝe þi la  
dir & þi modur: and he pat cūȝ fa  
dir or modur: dȝe by deȝ: but ȝe seȝ  
en: if amā seȝe to fadir or modur:  
corban: þis is what enȝer is of me:  
it shal profite to þe: and ouȝ ȝe hif  
fren not hi do onȝ ȝis: to fadir or  
modur: & ȝe breken þe word of god  
bi ȝoure tradiciō: pat ȝe haȝ ȝouȝ: &  
ȝe doe manȝe luche ȝis: & he cōfso  
ne deȝȝe þe cūpany of peple: sei  
de to hem: ȝe alle heere me & vnder  
stode: no ȝis is wyȝoutē mā pat  
entȝ into hi: pat maȝ defoule  
hi: but ȝo ȝis pat come forȝ of a  
man: ȝo it ben pat defoule amā:  
if onȝ mā hane eȝis of heerȝ:  
heere he. And whiche he hadde en  
trid into an hōus fro þe cūpany of  
peple: hise discipulis aȝide hi þe pa  
rable: & he seide to hem: so & ȝe be  
unȝudent or unȝȝis: vnderstode  
ȝe not þat ȝis wyȝoutē forȝ en  
trige into amā: maȝ not defoule  
hi: for it haȝ not entrid to his  
herte: but to þe wombe: & by þe  
ȝe it goȝ out: purȝȝe alle me  
tis: loȝi he seide: for þe ȝis pat  
goȝ out of amā: ȝo defoule amā:  
for fro wyȝ me: of þe herte of  
me come forȝ ȝuele þouȝtis: aȝ



tries. fornicaciōis. māleingis. pec-  
tis. auarices or oñ hard kepis of goodi.  
vndidness. gile vndidness. gile vñe.  
blasfemes. pñe. folp. alle yos yuehs.  
comē forp fro wyne. & defoule amā  
**A**nd ihs rishē fro yēms wente to  
ye endis of tyre & sidon. & he zete to  
anhous. & wolde no mā write & he my-  
te not be hīd for a wōman anon as  
she herde of hī. which wōmans do-  
myr hadde an vnclene spyt. & mēte  
to fel down at his feet. & opeli ye wō-  
mā was herē of ye generaciō of  
enrofenpe. and she preiede hī. & he  
wolde caste out a deuēl fro hīr don-  
tir. which seide to hīr. suffre p̄ yē  
sones be fulfild frst. it is not go-  
od to take ye breed of sones. & yue  
to hōūdis. and she answeride & sei-  
de to hī. jhs lord. forwhi lytle whel-  
pis eten vndir ye boord. of ye cri-  
mes of childre. and ihs seide to hīr.  
go p̄. for yis word. ye fend wente  
out of ydoytir. and whāne she  
hadde gon to hīr hous. she fond ye  
wenche liggige on ye bed. & ye de-  
uel gon out fro hīr. **A**nd eftloo-  
ne. ihs goynge out fro ye endis or  
coostis of tyre. cam pur̄ sidon to ye  
see of galile. bi tūre ye nyddil  
of ye endis of decapoleos. and ye  
leden to hī a deef mā & doūb. & prei-  
eden hī p̄ he putte to hī ye hōnd. &  
he takige hī asydis fro ye cūpany  
putte hīs fongris to hīs eeris.  
& he spetige. touche hīs tūge. and  
he biholdige to heuene. forwite w-  
ine & seide. effeta. p̄ is. be p̄ openy.  
& anon hīs eeris werē openy. &  
ye boond of hīs tūge was vndōū-  
dū. & he spak ryzthly. & he comādi-  
de to hem. p̄ rei shulde sepe to no  
mā. forlope hon moche he comā-

dide to hē. so myche more. rei pñe  
de more. & by so myche more rei w-  
dnde seynge. he dide wel alle pñe.  
& he made deef mē to heere. & doūb  
men for to speke. **= C<sup>m</sup> viij.**  
**A**nd yodanes eft whie myche cūpa-  
ny of peple was wip ihs. & hadde  
not what rei shulde ete. whie hī-  
se dūtyphs werē clepēd to gidre. he  
seide to hē. i haue reupe on ye cūpa-  
ny of peple. for lo. now ye yaddo-  
day. rei sufferne or abiden me. &  
han not what rei shulen ete. and  
if y leue hē fastige into her hōns.  
rei shulen faile in ye weye. for lūne  
of hē camē fro fer. and hīle dūtyphs  
answeride to hī. wherof shal amā  
more fille hē wip loones her. i shūl  
durnesse. & he arde hē. hōw many  
loones han ze. whiche seide. seuenē  
and he comāda ye cūpany to sette  
down on ye erpe. and he takige seue-  
ne loones. & dopnge panbrygs. brak  
& zaf to hīle dūtyphs. p̄ rei shullen  
putte forp. & rei seide forp to ye cū-  
pany. and rei hadde a fewe smale  
fyllthys. & he blestide hē. & comādi-  
de for to be put forp. & rei eete & we-  
re fulfild. and rei token up pat-  
pat lesse of rellis. or smale gobans.  
seuene leepis. forlope rei pat eeten.  
werē as foure youtant of mē. & he  
lesse hem. **A**nd anon he seynge  
into aboot wip hīle dūtyphs. cam  
to ye partis of dalmaniytha. and  
fariles wente out. & biginen to  
dispute wip hī. & arde a tokene  
of hī fro heuene. & teptide hī. and  
he forwinge wip ine in spyt. &  
de. what sekis yis gehaciō a to-  
kene. treuli. i seie to zōn. a tokene  
shal not be zōm to yis gehaciō.  
and he leenye hē. wente up eft

toone into a boot. & wente ouer ye  
see. & rei forate to take breed. &  
rei hadde not wip hē no but o loof  
in ye boot. & he comāda to hem  
& seide. se ze & bey war. of ye soun-  
dōb. of fariles & of ye soun-  
dōb. of eroude. & rei poukten. con to ano-  
yir. se yige. for we han not loones.  
and whie yis yis was knowm.  
ihs seide to hē. what penke ze. for  
ze han not loones. & ze knowe  
not. ne vnderstonde. & ze han zōn  
p̄ herte blōnd. ze han yge yien.  
seuē not. & ze han yge eeris. hee-  
re not. ne ze han mynde. whie  
i brak fyne loones. into fyne yon-  
lande. and hōw many coffins ful  
of brokū mete ze token up. rei  
seien to hī. twelue. whie & seuenē  
loones to four youtant of men.  
hōw many leepis of brokū mete  
ze toke up. & rei seien to hī. seue-  
ne. & he seide to hē. hōw vnderston-  
de ze not. **A**nd rei comen  
to bechaida. & rei brigen to hī  
abhad mā. & rei preiede hī. p̄ he  
shulde touche hī. and whie ye  
hōnd of ye blōnd mā was takm.  
he ladde hī out of ye stret. & spet-  
te to hīs yien. whie hīs hōndis  
werē put to. & he arde hī. if he  
shy on yis. & he biholdige seide.  
i se me as trees walkige. afur-  
ward of seloones. he putte hōndis  
on hīle yien. & he bigan for to se.  
& he was restord. so p̄ he hīs de-  
re alle pñis. & he sente hī into  
hīs hous. & seide. go into ym hōns.  
and if pou goist into ye streete.  
seie to no mā. **A**nd ihs entride  
& hīle dūtyphs. into ye castels of  
cesarie of philip. & in ye weye  
he arde hīle dūtyphs. & seide to

hē. whō seyen mē me forto be. whi-  
che answeride to hī. & seide. sū-  
men seyen. iohm baptist. ope seie  
hē. forlope ope seien as oon of  
ye profetis. yāne he seiy to hem.  
but whō seyen ze me for to be. pe-  
tre answerige. seide to hī. p̄ art  
c̄t. & he preteyde hē. p̄ rei shul-  
de not seye of hī to ony mā. & he  
bigan for to teche hem. & it biho-  
uey māns lone to suffre many  
pñis. & to be reprovēd of eldre  
mē. & of ye hyeste pñis & strabis.  
& to be elapn. & afur yre dayes  
for to ryle azen. & he spak pleyth-  
ye word. and petre takige hīm.  
bigan for to blame hī. & seide. lord  
be p̄ merciful to pee. for yis shal  
not be. which turnede & shū hīle  
dūtyphs. & manafide to petre. &  
seide. go afur me. sachanas. for p̄  
saueit not yo pñis pat ben of  
god. but yo pñis pat be of mē.  
**A**nd whāne ye cūpani of peple  
was clepēd to gidre wip hīle dū-  
typhs. he seide to hē. & ony mā  
wole come afur me. demē he  
hī self. & take he hīs crof. & fūwe  
he me. for he pat wole make saf  
hīs soule. p̄ is hīs lyf. shal leese  
it. forlope he p̄ teesip hīs soule. p̄  
is hīs lyf. for me & ye gospel. shal  
make it saf. for what p̄fitit it to  
amā. if he wryne al ye world. & do pei-  
ryng to hīs soule. or what chān-  
ging shal amā yue. for hīs soule.  
forlope whō p̄ shal knowleche me  
& my wordis. in yis gehaciō anon  
trellē & sūnerellē. also māns lo-  
ne shal knowleche hī. whie he  
shal come i ye glorie of hīs fadir  
wip hīle angels. and he seide to hē.  
treuli. i seie to zōn. for p̄ be sum



me of me stondege her. whiche shu  
len not taste depe: til rei seen pe  
rewe of god comyge in vertu  
**A**d after hire *1<sup>st</sup> 1<sup>st</sup>*  
dayes: she took pett &  
james & jolu and ledde  
hem bi he self aloune to an hyt  
& he was tynnyngid bifoze hem  
and his cloys were maid shynny  
ge & whete ful myche as snow:  
and whiche man cloys a fulle  
re oz walker of clor may not ma  
ke wht on erpe and helie wy  
moyses apperide to he: & rei we  
re spekege wy ihu: & pett an  
swerige: seide to ihu: maister  
it is good: us for to be her: &  
make we her pre tabernacles:  
oon to pee: oon to moyses. & oon  
to helie: for he wiste not what  
he shulde seye: for rei were a  
gast bi dede: and p was maid  
a cloude shadenyge he: & a vois  
cam of re cloude & seide: pis is  
my moost dere wyrt sone: heet  
ze hym: & anoon rei biheldige  
aboute syde no more ony man.  
no but ihu couh wy he: & wha  
ne pe came don fro ye hyl: he  
comandide he: p rei shulde not  
telle to ony ma. po pigis p rei  
hadde seyn: no but whie manys  
sone hay risu azen fro dede mo  
and pe heelden ye word. at hem  
salf. selige what shulde be:  
whane he hay risu azen fro de  
de me: & rei arde hi: & seiden  
what yfoze seien farilees & st bi  
for it bihouey hehe for to firt  
whiche answrige. seide to hem  
whie helie comey: he shal first  
restore alle pigis and how it  
is writu on manys sone: y he

sufr many pigis: & be dyspnyd  
but i seie to zoi. for also helie is  
comi: & rei dide to hi. what eue  
pigis rei wolde. as it is writu  
of hi: & he comyge to hile dyl  
phis: spz a greet cypany abou  
te hem & dhis dyspnyge wy he  
& anoon al ye peple seynge ihu:  
was a stoned. & rei dede and rei  
renyngre greet hi: & he arde hem  
what dyspnyge ze among zoi: &  
oon of ye cypany answrige: se  
de maister i hane brougt to pee.  
my sone: hange a doib spirt  
whiche wher ever he taky hym:  
hynch hi down. & he stopy oz  
vomer & betry to gide wy teer.  
& wery dre: and i seide to pi dyl  
phis y rei shulde caste hi out: and  
pei myte not. which answrige  
to hem seide: a y generacion out  
of bileue: hows longe shal i be  
at zoi: bryge ze hym to me: & rei  
brougte hym: & whie he hadde bi  
hym: anoon ye spirt troublde  
hi: and he cast down to ye erpe:  
was walewid fro pyge: and he ge  
ide his fadir: hows moche of tyme  
it is: sye pis pig seide to hi: & he  
seide: fro chldhod: & ofte he hay  
put hi boye into fier: & into wat:  
p he shulde lese hi: but it y ma  
ist ony pig: helpe us: & hane  
ch on us: sopeh ihu seide to hym:  
if you mant bileue: alle pigis  
ben possible to amā bileunge: &  
anoon ye fadir of ye chld cryge  
wy teeris: seide: lord i bileue:  
helpe you my vnbileuefulnesse  
and whie ihu hadde seyn pe ci  
pany of peple renyngre to gide:  
he manafide re vncleme spirt:  
& seide to hi: you deef & doib sp

rit: i comande pee. go out fro hy.  
& entre no more into hy: and he en  
pyge & moche to breidige hy: wete  
out fro hi: & he was maid as deed:  
so p manye seide: p he was deed for  
sove ihu holdige his hond: lifte hy  
up & he roos: & whie he hadde en  
trid into an hous: hile dylphis  
arde hi princely: whi myte not  
we caste hi out: and he seide to  
hem: pis kinde. in no pig may go  
out: no but i preier & fastag. *1<sup>st</sup>*  
pei zeden fro yemus: & weten foz  
into galile: & he wolde no mā wite  
forloze he tauyte hile dylphis: &  
seide to he: for manys sone shal  
be betrayed into ye hondis of me:  
& rei shulen ale hi: and he slayn:  
shal rise azen on ye pydde day:  
& rei knewe not ye word: & dzed  
den for to aze hi: and rei came  
to cazarman: which whie rei  
were in ye hous: arde he: wht  
trotide ze ye weye: & rei were  
fille: sopeh rei dyspnyde amog  
he in ye weye: who of he shulde  
be more: and he sittege clepide  
re twelue: & seide to he: if ony  
mā wole be ye firste amog zoi:  
he shal be ye laste of alle: & ye mi  
nistre of alle: and he takige a  
chld. ordepyede hi in ye mōdel  
of hem: whie whie he hadde bidp  
pid: he seide to he: who eue res  
ceyney con of such chldre in my  
name: he reseyney me: & who  
eue reseyney me: he reseyney  
not me aloune. but hi pat sente  
me: jolu answrige to hi: & seide:  
oynt we syen sū oon castige  
out feudis in yi name. whiche  
suer not vs: & we han forbodū  
hi: sopeh ihu seide: nyle ze for be

de hi: for no mā is pat doy & etu  
i my name: & may loone speke  
puele of me: he pat is not azen  
us: is for vs: sopeh who eue  
shal yne drynke to zoi a cuppe  
of coold watr: i my name. for ze  
ben of et: treuli i seie to zoi:  
he shal not lese his meede: and  
who eue shal standre oon of pes  
lytle bileunge i me: it is good  
more to hi p amilue stoon of al  
his. were don aboute his necke  
& he were cast to ye see: & if pi  
hond standre pee: litte it a wey:  
it is bette to pee. feble to entre  
ito lpf: p hange tweyne hon  
dis: & go to helle. into fier pat ne  
nere shal be quenched: wher pe  
worm of hem drey not: & pe fier  
is not quenched: and if pi foot al  
andre pee: litte it of: it is bette  
to pee for to entre crokid to ei  
lastige lpf: p hange tweyne feet  
to be sent to helle of fier pat ne  
ner shal be quenched: wher pe  
worm of he drey not: & pe fier  
is not quenched: p if ym ye stan  
dre pee: caste it out: it is bette  
to pee. for to entre gogil pyed i  
to ye rewe of god: p hange  
tweyne yzen for to be sent into  
helle of fier: wher pe worm of  
hem drey not: & pe fier is not  
quenched. *1<sup>st</sup>* forloze eueri man  
shal be sakid oz maid lauery:  
wy fier: & eueri slay sacrifice  
shal be laueryd wy salt: salt is  
good pig: p if salt be on lauery:  
in what pig shule ze make it  
lauery: hane ze salt i zoi: & hane  
ze pees amog zoi. *1<sup>st</sup> 1<sup>st</sup>*  
**A**d ihu risige up fro pe  
ms: cam to ye endis of



Jude ouer Jordan: & cefloones pe  
cipanyes of peple came to gide  
to hi: and as he was wout: ceflo  
ne he tauhte he: & farilees comp  
ge up: ariden hi wher it be leet  
ful to a mā: for to leene or forla  
ke his wif: & pei teptiden him  
and he answerege: seide to hem  
What comāde moyses to you: wh  
iche seide: moyses suffide to wy  
te a label of forlakyng: & to forsake  
to whiche ihe answerege: seide: for  
ye harduelle of zorn herte: moyses  
wroot to you his comādemēt: for  
sore fro pe bigynnyng of creature:  
god made he male & female: & he  
seide: for his yung a mā shal leene  
his fadir & modir: & shal cleue to  
his wif: & pei shulen be tweyne  
in o flesch: & so uolpey be not twei  
ne: but o flesch: pfore pat yung  
pat god wynede to gide: no man  
may departe. And cefloone in  
pe hous: hile discipulis aride him  
of pe same pig: & he seide to hem  
Who eue leenev his wif & wedd  
anoy: he dory anoutrie on him: &  
if pe wif leenev him holobonde &  
be weddid to anoy mā: she dory  
anoute. And pei broute to hi  
lytle children: p he shulde touche  
he: sopeh pe discipulis pteuende  
to me byngyge: whiche whāne  
ihe hadde seyn: he bar heupe & sei  
de to he: sūff ze lytle childre for  
to come to me: & forbete ze hem  
not: for of enche is pe kyngdom of  
god: treuli i sepe to you. Who eue  
shal not relleue pe kyngdom of god:  
as a lital chyl: he shal not entre  
into it: and he bidyge hem: &  
puttege hondis on he: blestide hem:  
& whne ihe was gon out i pe weie:

o mā vengge before: Enclide before  
hi: & pteide hi: & seide: goode man  
What shal i do: p i relleue eu  
lastige luf: forlope ihe seide to hi  
What leit you me good: noon is go  
od: no but o god aloone: p i nowit  
pe comādemētis: do p noon anoy  
trie: sle not: stele not: sepe not fals  
wituelig: do no fraude: wortelipe  
pi fadir: & pi modir: and he answ  
rige seide to hi: maistr: i haue kept  
alle res pigis: fro my zongve: sop  
ihe biheeld hi: & louede hi: & he seide  
to hi: o pig: fūly to pee: go you: fill  
you: what eue pigis you haue:  
& zyne to poze me: & you shal ha  
ue tresour in heuene: & come: Gue  
me: whiche maad lornful in pe word:  
wente awey mozmge: for he hadde  
many possessionis: and ihe bihol  
dige abonte: seide to hile discipulis:  
how hard pei pat han richellis: sh  
ulen entre into pe kyngdom of god:  
forlope pe discipulis were a stomped  
i his wordis: & ihe cefloone answ  
rige: seide to he: ze lytle lones how  
hard pig: it is: me tristige in ry  
chellis for to entre into pe ky  
ngdom of god: it is lyter or elier: a  
camel for to passe poris medlis  
pze: p a ryche mā for to entre in  
to pe kyngdom of god: whiche wonda  
de more sepyge at he sūff: & who  
may be maad lart: & ihe biholdige  
he seide: auentis me it is imposs  
ble: but not anetis god: for alle  
pigis ben possibill anetis god: &  
peti: bigan for to sepe to hi: lo we  
han lest alle pigis: & han suet pee:  
ihe answerege seide: treuli i seide  
to you: p is no mā pat leenev hous:  
or bypen or listris: or fadir: or mo  
dir: or lones or feeldis for me: &

for pe gospel: whiche shal not take  
an hindrid sold so moche: now i pis  
tyne: housis: & bypen & listris: &  
modris & lones & feeldis: wy pteu  
cions: & i pe word to conyge eue  
lastige luf: forlope manpe shule  
be pe fūste: pe se. laste: & pe  
laste: pe fūste. Forlope pei we  
re in pe wepe traynge to ierlm:  
& ihe wente before hem: & pei won  
dride & folowge dyedde: and est  
lone ihu takige twelue: bigan to  
seie to he: what pigis were to co  
me to hy: for lo we stizen to ierlm:  
& māns lone shal be betrayed to  
pe pynces of prestis & to scribis  
& to pe eldre me: & pei shule dāp  
ne hy bideep: & pei shulen bitake  
hi to heve men: & pei shule storne  
hi: & bipecte hi: & bete hi: and pei  
shule sle hi: & in pe pydde day he  
shal ryle azen. And James & jo  
sebedes lones: come nyz to him  
& sepen: maistr: we wolen: p wh  
eue we azen: p do to us: & he seide  
to he: what wole ze p: i do to you:  
& pei seide: zyne to us: p we litte  
peton at pi rythalf: & peton at pi  
lest in pi glorie: forlope ihe seide  
to he: ze wite not what ze shule  
aze: morken ze drynke pe cuppe  
whiche i drynke: or be wailthim  
wy pe baptym: i whiche i am bap  
tild: & pei seide to hi: we morken  
sopeli ihe seide to hem: trenli ze  
shule drynke pe cuppe pat i dā  
ke: & ze shule be wailthim wy pe  
baptym: in whiche i am baptild: but  
for to litte at my rythalf or lest  
half: it is not myn to zyne to you:  
but to whiche it is maad redy: &  
pe ten heetige: bigimen to hane  
Idignacion of James & john: sope

li ihe clepide he: & seide to he: ze  
wite p pei pat semē or ben seyn to  
hane pynthood on folkis: ben lordis  
of he: & pe pnces of he: han pōker  
of hem: forlope it is not so in you:  
but who eue wole be maad more:  
shal be zorn mynist: & who eue  
wole be pe fūste in you: shal be  
seruāt of alle: forwhi & māns  
lone cann not: p it shulde be my  
nistrd to hi: but p he shulde  
mynistre: & zyne his luf redēp  
cion or gēnbyng for manpe: &  
pei come to ierico: & whne he zede  
fory fro ierico: i hile discipulis: & a  
ful moche cipany of peple: pe lōne of  
triney bartymeus blind: sat bi sy  
dis pe wepe & beggyde: whiche whā  
ne he hadde herd p it is ihe of na  
sareth: he bigan to crye & seie  
ihū pe lōne of damp: hane mercy  
on me: and manpe pteuende hi:  
p he shulde be stille: & he cryede  
myche more: ihū pe lōne of damp:  
hane mercy on me: and ihe ston  
dige comāde: for to be clepid:  
and pei clepe pe blind mā: & seide  
to hi: be you of bette herte: ryle  
up: he clepy pee: whiche castide  
a wey his cloy: & st upide & cam  
to him: & ihe answerege: seide to  
hy: what wolt p: p i shal do to p:  
forlope pe blind man seide to hy:  
maistr: p i se: sopeli ihe seide to  
hi: go you: pi fery hay maad pee  
sūff: & anoon he sūff: & lūpede hi  
in pe wepe. **A**d whne ihe cam nyz to  
betanīe: & to betanīe to pe  
mout of olynes: he sendy twey  
of hile discipulis: & seiy to hem: go  
ze into pe castel: pat is azens you:  
and anoon ze entrige yidur: ihu



len fynde a colt tyed. on which noo  
of me sat. and on bynde ze & bygger  
hi. and if ony ma shal seie ony  
pig to you what doen ze. seie ze  
p he is nedful to ye lord. & a noo  
he shal leene hi hndur. & pei go  
ynge forp. foriden a colt bound  
bifore ye zate wyoute forp i pe  
meeting of twey weyes. & pei  
vnbunden hi. & sume of me sto  
dige yer. seiden to he. what doen  
ze vnbundyng pe colt. & pei seide  
to he. As ihc comandide he. and  
pei lesten it to he. & pei broukten  
pe colt to ihu. & pei putide on hi  
her clooyis. & ihc sat on hi. forlor  
manye streyde her clooyis i pe  
weye. sovel ope me kytide boke  
or braychis fro trees. & streyde  
i pe weye. and pei pat wente bi  
foze. & pat greden. & dede seynge  
of ana. blethid is he pat comeþ  
in ye name of ye lord. blethid be  
ye kyngdo of oure fadir daup.  
pat comeþ of ana. in hysse rin  
gis. & he entde ito ierlm. into pe  
teple. & whne alle me were sey  
aboute. whne ye our was nou  
eneyg. he wente out to betanpe  
wy elvelue. and anoy day whne  
h wete out of betanpe. he hugri  
de. & whne he hadde seyn a fige  
tre a fer. hangge leenis. he ca  
if happi he shulde fynde ony pig  
p yne. and whne he cam to it. he  
fond no pig out taku leenis. for  
it was not tyme of figis. & ihc  
answerige. seide to it. now no mo  
ze. wyoute ende. ony ma ete fr  
uit of pee. & hse dyliphs herden.  
& pei come to ierlm. & whne he had  
de entrid into pe teple. he bigan  
for to caste out. me sillige & by

ynge in pe teple. & he turnede up  
to dou pe boordis of chaigis. & pe chaw  
of me sillige culuers. and he sufferi  
de not p ony ma shulde ber a ves  
sal yur. & he taunte he. &  
seide. wher it is not writu. p m  
hous shal. & be clepid ye hous  
of preier to alle folkis. but ze ha  
mand it. a dene of pecinis. & whne  
pis pig was herd. pe pnces of ier  
tis & scribis soukten how pei shul  
de leese hi. for pei dreedde hym. for al  
ye cupany of peple. wondride on his  
techyng. & whne eneyg was maad.  
he wente out of ye cite. & whne pei  
passide erly. pei sizen pe fige tree  
maad dny. fro ye rootis. & peti ha  
nyge myde. seide to hi. manfir lo ye  
fige tre. who pou canstedit. hays dri  
ed up. & ihc answerige. seide to hem.  
hane ze ye fey of god. trenu. i seie  
to you. p who eue fey to pis hyl. be  
pou taku. & seud ito ye see. & donny  
not in his herte but bileueþ. p whne  
eue he shal seie shal be don. & ihc  
be maad to hi. pfoze i seie to you. al  
le pigis. what enere pigis ze prey  
ynge shule are. bileue ze p ze shu  
len take. & pei shule come to you. &  
whne ze shule stonde for to prey.  
forzine ze if ze han ony pig azen ony  
man. p & your fadir pat is in heu  
nes. forzine to you your synes. p  
if ze forzine not. nep your fadir  
pat is in heuened. shal forzine to  
you your synes. And eft soone pe  
come to ierlm. and whne he wallde  
i pe teple. pe hysse prestis & scribis  
eldre me come nyz to hi. & seye to  
hi. i what power doist p res pigis.  
or who gaf to pee pis power. p  
do res pigis. forsope ihc answerige  
seide to he. & i shal aze you o word.

& answerige ze to me. & i shal seie to  
you i what power i do res pigis. whe  
p was ye bapty of iohm of heuene  
or of me. answerige ze to me. & pei vo  
wyte wy he sult. semge. if we sey  
en of heuene. he shal seie to us.  
whi pfoze bileue ze not to hy. if we  
seyen of me. we dreedde ye peple. for  
alle me hadde iohm. for he was ve  
rli a pte. & pei answerige. seie  
to ihu. we witen neuie. and ihu an  
swerige. seie to he. nep i seie to i.  
i what power i do res pigis.  
**A**nd ihc bigan. **C. xij.**  
to speke to he in parabis.  
a ma plantide a vyne yerd.  
& putide a boune it an hogge. & dalt  
a lake. & buldide a tour. & hurde it to  
erpetheris. & wente forp i pilgri  
mage. and sente to pe erpetheris.  
i tyme a seruait. p he shulde rel  
seue of ye erpetheris. of ye frut  
of ye vynezerd. whiche toke hym  
& beeten. & leste hi voyde. and eft  
soone he sente to he anoy seruait.  
& pei woude hi in pe heed. & po  
p shulde wy chidgis or reppoy  
gis. & eft soone he sente anoy. &  
pei slowe hi. & ope mo. betige hi  
me. but aleyngge ope. pfoze ze he  
hangge o lone moost dere worpe.  
sente also hi pe laste to he. & seide.  
for bi hap pei shule reuerete my  
lone. forsope ye tenaitis seiden  
to gidre. p is ye epr. come ze tle  
we hi. & pe heritage shal be ouer.  
& pei takige hi lilled. & castiden  
out wyoute pe vynezerd. pfoze  
what shal ye lord of ye vynezerd  
do. he shal come & leese ye tenai  
tis. & zyne ye vynezerd to ope. wh  
ze han not rad pis septur. pe sto  
whiche ye bulderis han dylipid.

pis is maad into ye heed of ye cor  
ner. pis pig is maad of ye lord.  
& is wondride bifore our syn.  
and pei soukten forto holde hym.  
& pei dreedden ye cupany of peple.  
for pei knewe. p to he he seide pis  
parable. and pei lesten hi. & pei  
went a way. & pei seide to hi. hi  
me of ye farilees & erodians. for  
to take hy in word. whiche comy  
ge seyen to hi. manfir we witen  
p you art soyfast. & rekt. it not  
of ony ma. for nep you seest ito  
face of ma. but pou techist ye we  
ye of god i treuþ. is it leestful p  
but be zoun to cesar. or we shu  
le not zyne. whiche writige her p  
up falsnesse. seide to he. what tep  
ten ze me. bage ze to me a peny  
p i se. and pei broukte to hi. & he  
seide to to hem. whos is pis pma  
ge. & ye writigs. pei seyen to hym.  
celaris. forsope & ihc answerige.  
seide to hem. yer foze zelde ze to ce  
sar. po pigis pat ben of cesar. & to  
god. po pigis pat ben of god. & pei  
wondriden on hi. And saducis pat  
seyen no resurreccion to be. came  
to hym. & aze hi. & seiden. manfir  
moyses wroot to us. p if ye broya  
of a ma wer deed. & leste a wyf.  
& leste not lones. his broþ take hi  
wyf. & reyle up seed to his broþ.  
pfoze seuene bapen were. & pe fir  
ste took a wyf. & is deed. & leste no  
seed. & pe secude took hir. & he is  
deed. & nep pis leste seed. & pe ynd  
de also. & in hyl man seuene took  
hir. & leste not seed. and pe wom  
ma ye laste of alle is deed. pfoze  
i pe resurreccion. whne pei shule  
ryse aze. whos wyf of res shal  
she be. for seuene hadde hir to







thil not passe / trenk of pat day  
or our. no mā woot neþ angel i  
hevene. neþ pe lone. no but pe so-  
ner no but pe fadir / se ze. wake ze.  
þ þie ze / for ze wite not. whiē tþ  
me is / for as a mā whiē gow fer  
i pilgimage. leste his hys hous. þ zaf  
to hile seruantis power of euy we  
re / þ comāūde to pe porter. þ he  
wake / þ fore wake ze / for ze wite  
not whiē pe lord of pe hous comeþ.  
in pe euentþ or i mþdmyt. or cock  
crowþ. or moze wþ. leste whiē  
he shal come lidenh. he fynde zon  
slepige / for lope pat þ i seye to þ.  
i seye to alle wake ze. C. xij.

**H**ow þe pass i pe feete of  
perf loones þ is wōte  
londoun. was after twēþ  
dayes / and pe hyste þas i þis  
lont. how þe shulde holde hi w  
gile i sle / soþeþi þe leide / not in  
pe feete day / leste þe pānetur. noþe  
were mad i pe peple. i whiē he  
was at betamþe in pe hous of sy  
mond leprous. i reſtite. and mā  
cam hanþe a box of alabaſtr of  
precious oymēt þikenard. i  
whiē þe box of alabaſtre was bro  
kē. she heelde out on his heed / for lo  
pe þ were lūme berige / on þorþi  
or heuþ. wþ i ne hem lūf. i seyn  
ge / wher to is þis loſt of oymēt  
maad. for þis oymēt myȝte ha  
ue be sold more pā þe hūdrēd pēs.  
i be zoni to poze mē. i þe groþ  
neden or guatide azens hū / soþi  
he leide / suffre ze hū. what be  
ze heuþ to hū. she hāp wronȝt  
good werk i me / for eimozē ze  
thilē hane poze mē wþ zoni. i  
whiē ze wolen. ze moū do wel  
to hem / for lope ze thilen not en

more hane me. she dide rat pat  
she hadde / she biſore cam farto a  
noynte my body into þurȝ / tren  
k. i seie to zoni. wher eue þis gol  
pel shal be þchid i al þe world. i  
pat þ þis wōman hāp don shal  
be told i temple of hū. And iudas  
ſcariorh oon of þe te twelue. wen  
te to þe hyste prestis. þ he thil  
de baraye hi to hē / whiē heeþe  
lopede. i bihtē hē to zoni hū  
neþ. i he loutē how he thilē by  
traye hū couenably / and þe firtē  
day of þerf loones. whiē þe offe  
den þas. þe diſcipulis ſeyen to hū  
whiē wolt þ we gon i make  
redy to þe. þ von ete þas. i he  
ſeundē twelue of hile diſcipulis. i  
ſey to hē / go ze ito þe citee. i mā  
berige a galon of watir. shal mee  
te zoni. lūbe ze hi. i whiē eue he  
entriþ. ſeie ze to þe lord of þe hous.  
þ þe manþir ſey. wher is my ful  
fillig. or etymþ place. wher i shal  
ete þas wþ my diſcipulis. i he shal  
ſheue to zoni a greet ſouþing pla  
ce ſtrewid. i þere make ze redy  
to uſe hile diſcipulis wentē forþ.  
i camē into þe citee. i fonde as he  
hadde ſeid to hē. i þe mātē redy. i  
þas / soþeþi whiē euentþ was mād.  
he cam wþ twelue. i whiē þe  
ſaten at þe mete i eeten. shū ſeide  
trenk i seie to zoni. þ oon of zoni þat  
etiþ wþ me shal bitraye me / and  
þe biȝnen ferto be ſori. i to ſeie  
to hū. eþ bi hūm lūf. wher þ. i whiē  
ſeide to hem / oon of twelue. þat þat  
ty þe hond wþ me in þe plate. i  
i soþeþi māms lone goþ. as it is  
writē of hū / but wo to þat man.  
by whom māms lone shal be by  
trayed / it were good to hū. i þe

mā hadde not be born. i whiē þe  
eeten. shū took breed. i bleſide  
brak. i zaf to hē i seide take ze.  
þis is my body. i whiē þe cupe  
was takē. he dide graces i zaf  
to hē. i alle driken þof / and he  
ſeide to hem. þis is my blood of  
þe newe teſtamēt. whiē shal  
be shed out for manþe / trenk  
i seie to zoni. for now i shal not  
drinke of þis fruyt of wyne.  
til into þat day whiē i shal dþ  
ke it newe in þe rewine of god.  
i whiē þe wyne or heriþe wa  
ſeid. þe wentē out ito þe hū of  
olþnes. i shū ſeide to hē. alle ze thū  
len be ſlandrid i me in þis myȝt.  
for it is writē. i shal smyte þe  
ſhepharde. i þe ſheep of þe ſloc  
thilen be diſparþid / but aftir  
þ i shal ryle azen. i shal go bifo  
ze zoni ito galile. for lope þe ſei  
de to hū. þou alle thilē be ſlan  
drid. but not i. i he ſeide to hū.  
trenk i seie to þe. þ to day bifo  
þ þe for in þis myȝt twelue þine  
vois. þies þ shal denye me.  
and he ſpak more / þou it bihoue  
me to dþe to gode wþ þe. i shū  
al not denye þe / soþeþi in hū ma  
ner. i alle ſeide. i þe come into  
a place. to whom þe name is geth  
ſemany. i he ſeide to hile diſcipulis  
ſitte ze her. þe while i þreþe. i  
he took petre i james i john w  
hi. i biȝan for to drede. i to be a  
noþed. i he ſeide to hē. my ſoule  
is ſorewful til to þe dþe. i ſuffre  
ne ze or abide ze her. i wake ze w  
me. i whiē he hadde gon forþ a  
lūl. he ſelde don on þe erpe i þre  
ete. i þe it myȝte be. þe hūm thil  
te paſſe fro hū. i he ſeide. abba

fadir. alle þis ben poſſible to  
þe. beſ ouer fro me þis cupe.  
but not þat i wole. but þat þe  
þou wolt be don / and he cam.  
i fonde hem ſlepige. i he ſeide  
to petre. ſymon ſlepit þou.  
my teſt þou not wake wþ me  
oon oim. wake ze i þreie ze. þ  
ze entre not ito teptaciou. for  
lope þe ſpirt is redy. but þe  
fleſch is ſyk. and eftſoone he  
gornge. þreie. ſeynþe þe ſa  
me word / and he turned azen  
eftſoone. fonde hem ſlepige / for  
her þzen were greded. i þe þne  
wen not what þe shulde an  
ſwere to hū / and he cam þe þrid  
de tyme. i ſeide to hem. ſlepe  
ze now i reſte ze. i ſuffiþ. þe  
oim is comū. lo māms lone shū  
al be bitrayed into þe hondis of  
synful men. ryle ze. go we. lo  
he þat shal bitraye me. is myȝ.  
And zit þe while he ſpac. iu  
das ſcariorh oon of þe twelue cam.  
i wþ hūm moche cūpany wþ  
ſiberdis i ſanes. ſent fro þe  
hyste prestis i ſcribis. i fro  
þe eldre mē / for lope þis trant  
hadde zoni to hū a tokene. ſei  
ynge. whom euer i shal kille.  
he it is / holde ze hūm. i lede ze  
warh. i whiē he cam. and on  
he comyge to hū ſeide. manþir.  
and he killede hū. i þe leide hon  
dis on hū. i heelden hū / soþeþi oō  
of mē ſondige aboute. drow  
out a ſiberd. i smoot þe ſeruant  
of þe hyste preſt. i ſittede of  
his eere. i shū anſwerige. ſeide  
to hem. as to a þeef ze han gon  
out wþ ſiberdis i ſanes. for  
to take me / day bi day i was



at 3ou & tanste in ye temple: & ze  
heelde not me: but þe scriptu-  
ris be fulfilled: þane alle hile dis-  
ciples forsaige hi: fledden soþe  
h sū iong man clopid wip hnen  
clou on ye bare: swede hym: &  
pei heelde hi and wip ye hnen  
clou was forsaie: he flez nakid  
auey fro he: and pei leden ihu  
to ye hueste preest: & alle ye pre-  
tis & scribis & eldre me: camen  
to gidre: forsoþe petre suete hi  
after til to wip þu: into ye halle  
of ye hueste preest: and he sat  
wip ye mynistis: & warnyde  
hym at ye fier: forsoþe ye hueste  
preestis & al ye coucil: souren  
witnessig azens ihu: þe i shul-  
den 3pue hi to ye deop: ney pei  
souren: for mange seiden fals wit-  
nessig azens hym: & pe witnessig  
weren not conenable: & sūme rþ  
sigte baren fals witnessig azens  
hym & seide: for we han herd hym  
seynge: i shal vndo þis temple  
maad wip hondis: & after ye yud-  
de day i shal bilde anoper not maad  
wip hondis: & pe witnessig of he  
was not conenable: & pe hueste  
preest rlyge up into ye middel-  
aride ihu & seide: answerist þe not  
ouy pig to þe pigis: rat be þe pnt  
azens þe of þe le: soþe he was  
fille: & answeride no pig: eftloo  
ne ye hueste preest. aride hy: &  
seide to hi art þe crist ye sone of  
blessid god: soþe ihu seide to hi  
i am: and ze shulen se mannis so-  
ne sittige on ye rythale of þe d-  
tu of god: & comyge i clondis  
of heuene: forsoþe ye hueste p-  
ceest to reute his cloys & seide  
what it desiren we witnessigis:

ze han herd blasfemy: what se-  
mey to 3ou: whiche also cōdē-  
neden hi: for to be gilti of deoþ-  
& sūme bigimen for to bi petre  
hi & to hyde his face: & sūme hi  
wip bōstatis: & seie to hi & fene  
you and pe mynistis beete hi wip  
stokis or bussatis: & whie pe-  
tre was in ye halle bynepe: con-  
of ye hand maydens of ye hueste  
preest cam: and whie she had  
te seyn petre warnyge hi: she  
biholdige hi seide: & you werst  
ihu of nazareth: and he denpde  
seynge: ney i wort: ney i kno-  
we: what you seist: & he wente  
woutfor byfore ye halle: & auo-  
pe cok crew: eftloo forsoþe whie  
anoy hand mayde hadde seyn hi:  
she bigan for to seye to me ston-  
dige aboute: þe 3is is of he: &  
he eftloo denpde: & after al  
til eftloo pei rat stode wip: se-  
de to petre: verily you art of hem:  
for whi & you art of galile: soþe  
he bigan to curse & swere: for i  
knowe not þis mā whi ze seien  
and anoon eftloones ye cok crew:  
& petre bypoyte on ye word yat  
he hadde seid to hi: byfore ye cok  
crose twyes: ynes you shalt de-  
nye me: & he bigan for to wepe.  
**A**d anoon in // **C. xv.**  
pe monyete pe hueste  
preestis makige coucil  
ye eldre me & scribis & al ye cou-  
cil: boiden ihu & leden & bitoo-  
ken to pilat: & pilat aride hym  
art þe kyng of ierwis: and ihu  
answeride: seide to hi you seist  
& pe hueste preestis aculide hym  
in many pigis: pilat forsoþe eft-  
loo aride hi & seide: answerist

þou not ouy pig: seest þou in  
how many pigis: þe aculiden þe:  
forsoþe he more answeride no  
pig: so þe pilat wōdite: forsoþe  
bi ye fette day he was wōt to  
leue to he of me boundu: whom  
euer þe aride: forsoþe oon was  
yat was seid barabas: rat was  
boundu wip me of dissencio: yat  
hadde don māllangre i seducio:  
þe debate i citee: and whie pe  
cūpany hadde stied: he bigan for  
to preie: as he euer more dide to he  
soþe pilat answeride to he & se-  
de: wolen ze i leue to 3ou þe pig  
of ierwis: for he wiste: þe hueste  
preestis hadde taku hi by enye: for-  
soþe ye biþhopis stude pe cūpa-  
ny of peple: þe more he shulde  
leue to he barabas: forsoþe eftloo  
ne pilat answeride: seide to hem  
what þe fore wolen ze: i shal do to  
ye pig of ierwis: and pe eftloo  
crieden crucifie hi: or put hi on  
ye cross: forsoþe pilat seide to hem  
soþe what of þu el hay he don:  
and pei cryede more: crucifie hi:  
soþe pilat wylige for to do þuot:  
to ye peple: leste to hem barabas  
& bitook to hem ihu betu wip stō-  
gis: þe shulde be crucified: for-  
soþe knyztis ledde hi wip me: i  
to ye porche of ye moothalle: and  
pei clepde to gidre al ye cūpany  
of knyztis: & cloude hi wip purp-  
& pei foldige a crowne of yornes:  
putte on hy: and pei bigimen  
for to greette hi: & seiden: hail þe  
kyng of ierwis: & pei han smyte  
his heed wip a reede: & biþpatten  
hi: and pei knelige: worthypede  
hi: & after þe pei hadde storned hi:  
pei vndoude hi fro þuot: & do

iden hi wip hile cloys: & leden  
out hym: to **shulde** crucifie  
hy: and pei compellide amā yat  
passide ye weye: yat cam fro ye  
toū symonid of iherenen þe fadir  
of alisandre & of rufe to be: his  
cross: and pei leden hy into a place  
golgatha: þe is to seie þe place of cal-  
uerie: & pei zanen to hi to dypke wip  
meddud wip myrt: & he took not: &  
pe pei crucified hi: ad departiden  
his cloys & kessen lott on þe who  
shulde take what: and it was þe  
yudde our: & pei crucified hi: & pe  
tytle of his case was writu: kyng  
of ierwis: & pei crucified wip hym:  
auey þenes: oon at þe rythale: &  
oon at his lefthale: and pe scriptur  
was fulfilled yat seip: & he is ordey-  
ned wip wickid me: and as pei  
passide forþe: pei blasfemyde hym:  
monyge her heedis: & seynge: waie  
þou yat distriet þe temple of god:  
& in þe dayes: buildit it agen: come a-  
down fro þe cross: & make þe self  
sark: also þe hueste preestis: domy-  
den hi ech to opir wip þe scribis  
& seide: he made oþe men sark: he  
may not saue hi self: est pig of  
yrael come don nou fro þe cross:  
þe we seen: & bileue: and pei yat  
weren crucified wip hi: dispiled  
hi: & whie ye fette our was come:  
derfneßis weren maad on al þe er-  
pe: til into þe nymppe our: and in  
ye nymppe our ihc criede wip a  
greet wops: & seide: helop: helop:  
lamarabany: þe is to seye: my god:  
my god: whi hast þou forsaie me:  
and sūme of me yat stode abou-  
te: herten & seide: lo he clepþ he  
þe: & oon ran & filhte a spouge  
wip þe vynesgre & putte it a







be fulfilled wip þe hooly goot. 3it  
of his modir wombe. & he shal co  
uerter many of þe children of y  
rael. to her lord god. & he shal go  
bifore hi in þe spirit & vertu of  
help. & he shal turne þe hertis  
of þe fadris to þe sones. & men  
out of bileue. to þe prudence of  
ust me to make redi a parfyt  
peple to þe lord. And zacarie sei  
de to þe angel. wherof shal þi wi  
te pis. for i am old. & my wyf har  
go fer in hir dapes. and þe angel  
answeride & seiðe to hi. for i am  
gabriel. pat stonde myz bifore  
god. & i am sent to pee. to speke  
& to enyngelise to pee. pese ym  
gis. and lo þou shalt bedonbe. &  
þou shalt not moue speke til i  
to þe day in which pese ygis sh  
ulen be don. for þou hast not bile  
ued to my wordis. whiche shule  
be fulfilled in her tyme. and þe  
peple was abidige zacari. & þe  
wondride þe tariete in þe temple.  
and he zete out & myzte not speke  
to hem. & þe knewen þe hadde  
seyn a vision in þe temple. & he  
bekenyde to hem & he diuelliðe ful  
le doub. And it was don. whne  
þe dapes of his office were fulfil  
lid. he wente into his hous. and  
after þes dapes Elizabeth his  
wyf conceyede. & hidde hir fyue  
monethis & seiðe. for lo þe lord dide  
to me. in þe dapes in whiche he  
biheeld to take away my reprof  
a mög me. But i þe sarte moneth  
þe angel gabriel was sent fro god.  
into a cite of galile. whos name  
was nazareth. to a mayde wed  
did to a ma. whos name was jo  
seph. of þe hous of damp. & þe na

me of þe mayden was marie. &  
þe angel entride to hir. & seiðe.  
heil ful of grace. þe lord be wip þe.  
blessid be þou amög wyemen. and  
whane she hadde herd she was  
troublid in his word. & þouzte wh  
maner saluacion pis was. & þe  
angel seiðe to hir. ne drede not. þe  
marie. for þi hast found grace a  
nentis god. lo þou shalt conceyue  
in wombe. & shalt be a longe. &  
þou shalt clepe his name ihu. pis  
shal be greet. & he shal be clepid  
þe sone of þe hyeste. and þe lord  
god shal zyne to hi. þe seete of da  
uid his fadir. & he shal regne in  
þe hous of jacob wyouten ende.  
and of his reigne. shal be noon  
ende. & marie seiðe to þe angel. on  
what man shal pis yig be don.  
for i knowe not man. & þe an  
gel answeride & seiðe to hir. þe hoo  
ly goot shal come fro aboue to  
pee. & þe vtu of þe hyeste shal  
on shadonbe pee. & þe vtu of þe hooly  
pat shal be born of pee. shal be  
clepid þe sone of god. & lo eliza  
beth in colyn. & she also hap con  
ceyued a sone in hir eelde. & pis  
moneth is þe sarte to hir. & is  
clepid bareyn. for euþ word sh  
al not be impossible amentis god.  
and marie seiðe. lo þe handma  
de of þe lord. be it don to me aft  
er þi word. and þe angel departide  
fro hir. And marie roos up i  
þe dapes & wente wip haste to  
þe moitaynes to a cite of ju  
dee. & she entride into þe hous  
of zacarie. & grette Elizabeth.  
& it was don as Elizabeth her  
de þe saluacion of marie. þe  
zong child in hir wombe gladiðe

and Elizabeth was fulfilled wip  
þe hooly goot. & criede wip a greet  
vois & seide. blessid be þou am  
ong wyemen. & blessid be þe fr  
uit of þi wombe. & wherof is þe  
yig to me. & þe modir of my  
lord come to me. for lo as þe vois  
of þi saluacion was maid in my  
eeris. þe zonge child gladiðe in  
ioye in my wombe. & blessid be  
þou pat hast bileued. for þilke y  
gis pat þe seiðe of þe lord to pee  
shulen be parfyth don. & marie  
seiðe. oþr sone magnifey þe lord.  
& my spirit hap gladið. in god  
my heyl. for he hap biholden þe  
mekenesse of his generacion sh  
len seiðe pat i am blessid. for he  
pat is myzti hap don to me gre  
te ygis. & his name is hooly. &  
his mercy is fro kynrede into  
kynredis. to me pat dreden hym.  
he made myzti in his arm. he sta  
teride proude me wip þe pouzt  
of his herte. he sette don myzti  
men fro seete. & enhauncide meke  
me. he hap fulfilled hugri me w  
goodis. & he hap lest ryche men  
voide. he haunge myzti of his m  
cy. took yrael his child. as he hap  
spokun to our fadris. to abrahim  
& to his seed into worldis. and ma  
rie diuelliðe wip hir as it were  
þe monethis. & turnede agen to  
hir hous. but þe tyme of berige  
child was fulfilled to elizabeth.  
& she bar a sone. & þe nyzeboris &  
colyns of hir herde. & þe lord had  
de magnified his merci wip hir.  
& þe pankide hi. and it was don  
in þe erztey day þe came to cu  
stide þe child. & þe clepid hi

zacarie in þe name of his fadir.  
and his modir answeride & seiðe.  
nay. but he shal be clepid john.  
& þe seiðen to hir. for no ma is i  
þi kynrede. & is clepid þis name.  
& þe bekenede to his fadir. what  
he wolte. & he wet. clepid. & he ar  
yunge a poymet. wroot seynge.  
john is his name. & alle me won  
dride. & anon his mouy was o  
penyd. and his tuge. & he spak.  
& blesside god. & drete was maid  
on alle her nyzeboris. & alle þes  
wordis were pynphillid on alle  
þe moitaynes of judee. & alle men  
pat herden pntiden in her herte.  
& seiðen. what man child shal þis  
be. for þe hond of þe lord was  
wip hi. and zacarie his fadir  
was fulfilled wip þe hooly goot.  
& profeteide & seiðe. blessid be þe  
lord god of yrael. for he hap vili  
ted & maid reuencion of his peple.  
and he hap rerid to us an horn of  
heyl. in þe hous of damp. his ch  
ild. as he spak by þe mouy of his  
hooly profetis. pat were fro þe  
world. heyl. fro our enemyes.  
& fro þe hond of alle me pat hat  
den us. to do mercy wip our fads.  
& to hane myzti of his hooly testa  
ment. þe greet oþr pat he sikooz to  
abrahim our fadir. to zyne hi self  
to us. pat we wyoute drete delin  
ed fro þe hond of oure enemyes.  
serue to hi. in hoolynesse. & ryt  
nesse bifore hym. in alle oure da  
yes. and þou child shalt be clepid  
þe pfete of þe hyeste. for þou sh  
alt go bifore þe face of þe lord to  
make redy his weyes. to zyne sci  
ence of heyl. to his peple. into  
remysion of her fyue. & þe



by pe inwardness of pe merci of  
oure god: in pe which he schyn-  
ge vp fro anhy. hay vyltred vs  
to yme lye to hem pat sitte in dert  
neith: & in shadowe of deap: to  
dresse our feet: into pe weye  
of pees: & pe child werite: and  
was confortid in spirit: & was  
in desert placis. til to pe day of  
his thewng to yrael. **C. ij.**

**A**nd it was don in yd day  
es a maidermet wente  
out fro pe empero: pat  
al pe world schulde be distrued.  
his firste distruing was maid  
of cryn justice of syre: & alle  
me wenten to make pfeffio: i  
ech into his owne cite: & joleph  
wente up fro galile fro pe cite  
nazareth. into judee into a ci-  
te of dauny pat is clepid bethle-  
em. for pat he was of rehouz &  
of pe meyne of dauny: pat he sch-  
ulte knowleche wy marie his  
wyf pat weddid to hy & was gre-  
et wy childe: & it was don while  
pei weren yet: pe dapes weren  
fulfillid y she schulde bere child.  
And she bar hir firste born sone:  
& wlapide hi in clopis: & leyde  
hy in a crache. for y was no pla-  
ce to hy in no chaubir. **¶** And sh-  
cephordis were in pe same cil-  
tre. wakynge & lepyng pe waach  
of pe nygt on her flot: & lo pe an-  
gel of pe lord stood bysdis hem:  
& pe clerenesse of god schynete  
aboute hem. & pei dreden wy  
greet drete: & pe angel seide to  
he: nyle ze drete: for lo y preche  
to jou. a greet ioie. pat schal be  
to al peple: for a lampour is  
born of y. to day to jou: y is ete

pe lord in pe cite of dauny. and  
yis is a tokene to jou: y schyn-  
ten fynde azong child wlapid i  
clopis: & leyde in a crache: & hude  
ly per was maid wy pe angel a  
militude of heuenly knyghtod: he  
ryunge god & leyde glorie be in  
pe hysse ygis to god: & in erpe  
pees be to me of good wille: & it  
was don. as pe angelis passiden  
a wey fro hem in to heuene. pe the-  
pardis spaken to gidre & seiden  
go we ouer to bethlem: & se we  
yis word pat is maid. which pe lord  
hay maid & thewid to us: & pei  
hyrynge came: & fouden marie  
& joleph. & pe zong child leid i a  
crache: & pei leyunge knewen of  
pe word pat was leid to he of yis  
child: and alle me pat herde won-  
dren: & of yis ygis y weren  
leid to hem of pe thepardis: but  
marie kepte alle yis wordis.  
berynge to gidre in hir herte:  
& pe thepardis turneden agen  
glorifyinge & herynge god in  
alle ygis y pei hadden herd &  
seyn: as it was leid to hem. **¶**  
afte y pe eizte dapes were en-  
did. y pe child schulde be circisi-  
did: his name was clepid ihu.  
which was clepid of pe angel:  
bifore y he was cōsepynd i wom-  
be. **¶** And afte y pe dapes of pe  
purgaciōil of marie weren  
fulfillid afte moyses lawe: pei  
tooken hi into ierlm to offere hi  
to pe lord. As it is writen in pe  
lawe of pe lord: for euery male  
fynde apenyge pe wombe. sch-  
al be clepid holy to pe lord: &  
y pei schynen yme an offryng.  
afte y it is leid in pe lawe of pe

lord. a peyre of turturis. or twey  
culie briddis: and lo ama was  
in ierlm. whos name was syme-  
on: & yis ma was nist & vertu-  
ous. & abood re confort of yrael:  
& pe hoolp goft was i hy: & he  
hadde takē an answer of pe hoo-  
ly goft. y he schulde not se deap:  
but he san fyrst pe est of pe  
lord: & he cam in spirit ito pe te-  
ple: and whie his fadir & modir  
ledde pe child ihu to do afte pe  
custom of pe lawe for hy: he took  
hi into his armes. & he bleside  
god & seide: lord now you leenest  
y seruaur: afte y word i pees  
for my yzen han seyn ym heche  
which you hast maid redy: by  
fore pe face of alle pepis: hit  
to pe thewng of heren me: &  
glorie of y peple yrael: & his fa-  
dir & his modir weren wondri-  
ge: on yis ygis y were leid of  
hi: & symeon bleside he: & seide  
to marie his modir: lo yis is sett  
into pe fallig: dou i into pe ry-  
syng azen of many me i yrael:  
& into a tokene to who it schal  
be agenseid: & sberid schal passe  
yng ym oibue soule: y yre yon-  
tis be thewid of many hertis: &  
ama was a pferesse re dougtr of  
faniel of pe lynage of aser: and  
she hadde gon for i many dapes:  
& hadde luyed wy hir hōlebonde.  
seuen yer fro hir maytēhod: &  
yis was a widowke: to fourtē  
yer & four: & she departide not  
fro pe temple: but seruete to god  
nygt & day. in fastigis & preie-  
ris: & yis cam upon he in pilke  
our: & knowlechte to pe lord &  
spak of hi to alle y abide pe re

depcon of yrael: & as pei hadde  
ful don alle ygis. afte pe lawe  
of pe lord: pei turnete agen ito  
galile. into her cite nazareth: &  
pe child was & was confortid ful  
of wysdom: & pe grace of god was  
in hi: & his fadir & modir wenten  
ech yer into ierlm: in pe solepne  
day of pass: & whie ihu was twel-  
ue yer old: pei wente up to ierlm.  
afte pe custo of pe feste day: &  
whie pe dapes were don pei tur-  
nete agen. & pe child abood i ierlm.  
& his fadir & modir knewe it not:  
for pei getlige pat he hadde be  
in pe felonshyp came a dapes  
unnepe & sourenly among his  
cōfyns & his knowleche: and whā  
ne pei fouden hi not: pei turnete  
agen ito ierlm. & souren hi: & it bi-  
fel y afte pe yridde day: pei fou-  
den hi in pe temple: sitte in pe  
myddil of pe doctours. heerige  
hem & arynge he: & alle me pat  
herden hym: wondre on pe pru-  
dence & pe answeris of hym: and  
pei hzen & wondrite: & his modir  
seide to hi: sone what hast you do  
to us yis: lo y fadir & y souwyge:  
han souyt pee: & he seide to hem:  
what is it y se souyte me: wiste  
ze not y in pe ygis. pat ben of  
my fadir: it bihouey me to be:  
and pei vnderstode not pe word:  
which he spak to he: & he cam dou  
wy hem. & cam to nazareth: &  
was siget to he: and his modir  
keptē to gidre alle yese wordis.  
& bar hem i hir herte: & ihu pfi-  
tade in wysdō. age. & grace: ane  
tis god & me. **C. iij.**

**I**n pe fyfteenpe yer of  
pe empire of tyberie



ye empour. whine pilat of poince  
gouernede iudee. & eroude was  
prince of galile. & filip his bro  
pr was prince of iurie & of  
re curre of tracon. & hilaire was  
prnce of abilyn vnder re pnces  
of prestis anas & cayfas. re tho  
rd of re lord was maid on john re  
sone of lacarie in desert. & he cam  
into al pe curre of iordan. and  
prechte baptym of penance i  
to remysion of synes as it  
is writu in pe booke of re wordis  
of ihaie re profete. ye vois of  
a crier in desert make ze redy  
re weye of re lord. make ze his  
papis ryt. ech valey shal be  
fulfillid. & every hil & lytill hil  
shal be maid low. and shrethid  
pigns shule be into drellid pigns.  
& sharpe pigns in to pleyu wey  
es. & every fleeth shal se pe hee  
pe of god. perfore he seide to pe  
peple which wente out to be bap  
tylid of hym. bryndlyngis of ed  
dus. who shewide to you. to  
fle fro pe wyappe to conyge.  
perfore do ze worpi fruntis of  
penance. & bigyne ze not to sepe.  
we han a fadir abraham for y leie  
to you. & god is myty to reyle of  
pes stoues re sones of abraham.  
& now an ar is sett to pe roote  
of pe tre. and yfore every tre  
pat maky no good fruyt shal  
be butt don. & shal be cast into  
pe fier. and pe peple aride hym.  
& seiden. what pame shule we do.  
he answereide. & seide to hem. he  
pat hay twey cootis. zyne to hi  
pat hay noo. & he pat hay metis.  
do in hys maner. & puplicans ca  
me to be baptid. & pei seiden

to hi. man. what shule we do.  
and he seide to hem. do ze no pig  
more pan y. pat is ordeyned to  
you. and fruntis aride hym. & se  
iden. what shulen also we do. &  
he seide to hem. synpte ze wrong  
fully no ma. ney make fall ca  
lunge. & be ze apayed wip your  
soudis. **W**hine al pe peple get  
side. & alle me pouzte in her her  
tis of john. lest panetur he we  
re cft. john answereide & seide  
to alle me. y shal come af  
tir me. of who i am not worpi to  
vubynde pe lace of his shoon. he  
shal baptise you in pe hooky goft  
& fier. whos wynewyng tool in  
his hond. & he shal purge his floz  
of corn. & shal gedre pe where i  
to his berue. but pe thafis he  
shal brene. wip fier vnquench  
able. & many opur pigns also he  
apok & prechte to pe peple. **B**ut  
eroude thetrark. whine he was  
blamyd of iohn for erodias pe  
wyf of his brof. & for alle pe y  
nels pat eroudide. encreside  
pis ouer alle. & shutte iohn i pson.  
& it was don whane al pe peple  
was baptid. & whine ihu was  
baptid & preide. heuene was  
openyd. & pe hooky goft cam don  
in bodily lyknelle. as adouste on  
hi. & a vois was maid fro heuene.  
you art my derelwyge sone. in  
pee it hay plesid to me. & ihu hi  
self was bigynnyng as of wat  
ty zeer. pat he was geslid re so  
ne of ioseph. which was of hely.  
which was of natath. which was  
of leuy. which was of melch. &  
was of ianne. pat was of ioseph.

pat was of natath. & was of a  
mos. & was of naim. & was of  
hely. & was of nagge. & was of  
natath. & was of natath. & was  
of semei. & was of ioseph. & was  
of iuda. pat was of iohana. &  
was of resa. & was of sorobabel.  
& was of salatiel. & was of nery.  
& was of melch. & was of addy.  
& was of colm. & was of euadan.  
& was of her. pat was of ihu.  
& was of clestar. & was of iorzi.  
& was of mathath. & was of leuy.  
& was of symeo. pat was of iuda.  
& was of ioseph. & was of iona.  
& was of elpachym. & was of melca.  
& was of mena. & was of mathatha.  
& was of mena. & was of dany.  
& was of ielle. pat was of obeth.  
& was of boz. & was of salmon.  
& was of nelson. & was of ammadab.  
& was of aram. pat was of elrom.  
& was of iares. pat was of iudas.  
& was of iacob. & was of ianc.  
& was of abraha. & was of iare.  
& was of uator. & was of seruth.  
& was of agam. & was of phaleth.  
& was of heber. & was of tale.  
& was of chaynan. & was of arfarath.  
& was of sem. pat was of noe.  
& was of lameth. & was of matu.  
tale. & was of enok. & was of iareth.  
& was of malahel. & was of caynan.  
& was of enos. & was of lech. pat  
was of adam. & was of god. **C. m.**  
**A**d ihu ful of pe hooky go  
ft. turnede azen fro ior  
dan. and was led bi pe spi  
rit into desert. fourty dapes. &  
was temptid of re denel. & eet  
no pig in vo dapes. & whine vo  
dapes were endid. he higrice  
& re denel seide to hi. if you art

godis sone. seye to pis stoon. y  
it be maid breid. & ihc answereide  
to hy. it is writu. y ama lyuey  
not in breed aloone. but i eiy  
word of god. and re denel ladde  
hym to an hys hil. & shewide to  
hym alle pe reuymes of re wor  
ld in anomet of tyme. & seide to  
hy. i shal zyne to pee al pis po  
wer. & re gloze of hem. for to me  
pei ben zonu. & to whom i wole.  
i zyne he yfore if you falle down  
& worthipe bifoze me. alle yui  
gis shulen be yme. & ihc answere  
ide. & seide to hy. it is writu. y  
shal worthipe pi lord god. & to  
hi aloone you shalt serue. & he  
ledde hy into ierlm. & sette hy on  
pe pyrade of re temple. & seide  
to hy. if you art goddis sone. leu  
te pi self fro heups don. for it is  
writu. for he hay comauidid to  
his aigels of pee. y rei kepe pee  
in alle pi weyes. and y rei shule  
take pee in hondis. lest perane  
tur. you lyte pi foot at a stoon.  
& ihc answereide & seide to hy. it  
is leid. you shalt not tepte pi  
lord god. & whine every teptaci  
on was endid. pe fend wente a  
wey fro hy for a tyme. & ihc tur  
nede azen in pe vertu of pe spi  
rit into galile. & pe fame wente  
for of hy purzal pe curre. & he  
tauzte in pe synagogis of hem.  
& was magnified of alle me. &  
he cam to nazareth. wher he  
was nozlyhd. & entride aftr  
his cust in pe sabat day into a sy  
nagoge. & roos to rede. & pe booke  
of ihaie re pfete was taku to  
hym. & as he turnyde re booke. he  
foud a place where it was writu.



pe spirit of pe lord on me / for  
which pig he anoyntide me: he  
seute me to preche to poze me  
to heele contrit me in herte. & to  
preche remission to psoneris: &  
out to blynde me / & to deliuer  
hu me into remission. to preche pe  
zeer of pe lord pleisur. & pe day of  
zeldyng azen / & whine he hadde clo  
lid pe book: he zaf azen to pe up  
mure. & sat / and pe pzen of alle  
me in pe synagoge: weren bihol  
dige into hy: & he bigan to sepe  
to he / for in pis day pis scriptur  
is fulfild in zoure eeris / & alle  
me zane wutuelig to hy: & won  
driden in pe wordis of grace y  
came forp of his mouy / & pei sei  
den / wheyur pis is not pe sone  
of joseph: & he seide to he / sope  
ze shulen sepe to me pis libuesse  
leche heele pis ille / pe farisees sei  
den to ihu / how grete pigis han  
we herd don in casarnai: do you  
also here in pi citre: & he seide / tr  
culy / I sepe to you. p no pfete is  
resleyued in his owne citre: i tren  
pe / I seie to you pat many wido  
wis were in pe dayes of elye pe  
pfete in wael: whine heuene ws  
clohid pre zeer & hie moneris.  
whine greet hugur was maid in  
al pe erpe: & to noon of hem was  
elpe sent: but to sarepta of sy  
don to a widoibe / & many meles  
were in yrael: vudirelysee pe  
pfete / & noon of he was denlid.  
but naman of sirpe: & alle i pe  
synagoge heerige res pigis.  
weren fulid wip wazappe: & pei  
rise up & drone hy out wipoute  
pe citee: & leden hy to pe top of  
pe hyl on which her citee was

bulid: to caste hi dou: but the par  
side & wente purz pe myddel of  
hem. And cam don into casar  
nai a citre of galile: & pei he  
tanzte he in sabatis: & pei were  
a stouped in his techyng: for his  
word was in pober: and in per  
synagoge was a man hannyge  
an vncleue fend: & he cride wip  
greet vois. & seide / sustre: what  
to us & to pee ihu of nazareth:  
art p' comi to leese us: / I know  
leche y' you art pe hooh of god /  
& ille blampye hi: & seide / were do  
ub: & go out fro hi: & whine pe fed  
hadde cast hi forp into pe myddel:  
he wente away fro hi: & he noy  
ete hym no pig: & drede was maid  
in alle me: & pei spaken to gide  
& seide / what is pis word for i po  
ber & vertu he comandit to vn  
cleue spurtis. & pei goen out:  
& pe fame was pruplyshid of hi:  
into ech place of pe citre: & ille  
roos up fro pe synagoge: & en  
tride into pe hous of symonit:  
& pe modir of symonidis wif:  
was holdu wip grete feueris:  
& pei priede hi for hyr: & ille stod  
ouer hyr: & comandide to pe sei  
& it leste hyr: & anooshe roos  
up & seruede he: & whine pe tu  
ne wente dou: alle y' hadde sylle  
me wip dyuerse langours sette  
hem to hi: & he seite his hondis  
on ech by he self: & heelde hem:  
& sendis wente out fro manye:  
& cryede & seide / for you art pe  
sone of god: & he blampye & out  
fride hem not to speke: for pei  
wiste hy he was ct: and whine  
pe day was come. he yede out &  
wente into a desert place: & pe

pepl souzte hi: & pei came to hy:  
& pei heelden hi y' he shulde not  
go away fro hem: to which he  
he seide / for alls to opur citees. it  
bihoney me to preche pe kngdo  
of god: for perfore I am sent: &  
he prechide in pe synagogs of  
galile. **And it was don whane pe pe  
ple came faster to ihu:**  
to heere pe word of god: he stod  
bifidis pe pool of genareth: &  
syz two bootis stoude bifidis pe  
pool: and pe fyttheris were gon  
don: & waitsheden her nettis:  
& he wente up into a boot  
pat was symonidis: & priede  
de hy to lede it alstet fro pe lond:  
& he sat & tanzte pe peple out  
of pe boot: & as he ceaside to spe  
ke: he seide to symonit / seide you  
into deyye: & slake zour nettis  
to take fytth: & symonit answere  
ride & seide to hy. comandour. we  
tranelide al pe nyzt: & taken no  
pig: but in pi word. I shal leye  
out pe nett: & whine pei hadden  
do pis pig: pei cloude to gide  
a greet mltitude of fytthes: &  
her net was brok: & pei beke  
nyde to felowis pat were in an  
opur boot: y' pei shulden come &  
helpe hem: & pei came & fillide  
bope bootis. so y' pei weren al  
most drenchid: & whane symonit  
petre his pis pig: he seide dou  
to pe fneers of ihu & seide /  
lord: go fro me: for I am a  
synful ma: for he was on ech  
syde a stouped: & alle y' were  
wip hy in pe takyng of fytth:  
whiche pei token / sopeh i lyk  
man james & john pe sones

of zebede: pat were felawis of  
symonit petre: and ille seide to  
symonit / myle you drede: now  
fro pis tyme y' shalt take men  
& whine pe bootis weren ledd up  
to pe lond: pei leste alle pigis: &  
pei sueden hy. **And it was don.**  
whine he was in oon of pe citees /  
lo ama ful of lepre: & seynge ihu  
felte dou on his face: & priede  
hi & seide / lord if you wolt: you  
maist make me cleue: & ille he  
eld forp his hond & touchide hym  
& seide / I wole: be you maid cleue  
and anoos pe lepre passide a wey  
fro hym: & ille comandide to hy:  
y' he shulde sepe to no ma: but  
go thewe y' pee to a preeit: and  
offre for pi cleuyng: as moyses  
bad into wutuelig to he: & pe  
word walkide aboute pe moze  
of hym: & moche peple came to  
gide: to heer: & to be heeld of  
her spueillis: & he wente ito de  
sert: & priede: & it was don in  
oon of pe dayes. he sat & tanzte:  
& y' weren farisees sittige & dor  
tours of pe lawe: pat came of  
ech castel of galile: & of Jude & of  
ierlm: & pe vertu of pe lord was:  
to heele sylle me: & lo me bare  
in a bed ama pat was sylle i pe  
pallie: & pei souzte to ber hy  
yn: & sette bifore hy: & pei fon  
den not in what partie pei sh  
ulden bere hy yn: for pe peple  
wente on pe roof: & by pe stlat  
tis pei lecten hi dou wip pe bed:  
to pe myddel bifore ihu: & whine  
ihu syz pe fery of he: he seide /  
ma: pi synes ben forzouni to  
pee: & pe stribis & farisees bi  
gumen to renke: **on leynge**



who is þis pat spekeþ clafte  
myes. who may forþyne synes.  
but god aloone. / & as ihc þene  
re pouztis of hem. he answereþ  
de & seide to hem. what venken  
ze yuele pigis i 30 me her tis.  
what is hter to seye. synes be  
forzoun to pee. or to seye ryle  
up & walke. but þe wite þ  
mans lone hap pouer. i erpe  
to forþyne synes. he seide to  
pe syl man in paleste. / seie  
to pee ryle up. take y bed &  
go into ym hous. / & anon he ro  
os up bfore he & toke y bed in  
whilch he lay. & wente into his  
hous. & magnified god. & greet  
wondur toke alle. / & þei magni  
fiede god. / & þei weren fulfilled  
wip greet drede. & seide. for we  
han leyn merueilouse pigis to  
day. / And after þes pigis ihc  
wente out & 30 a puppican le  
ny by name. sittige at ye tol bo  
ye. & he seide to hi. sue you me  
i whie he hadde lef alle pigis.  
he roos up & luede hi. & leuy ma  
de to hi a greet feste in his ho.  
i þer was a greet cūpany of  
puppicans & of oþe pat were  
wip he. sittige at ye mete. / &  
farilees & ye tribis of he gr  
uathide. & leiden to hile dūplis  
whi eten ze & drynken wip pup  
picans & syful me. / & ihc an  
sweride & seide to hem. / þei pat  
ben hoole han no nete to a leche.  
but þei pat ben syke. for. / cam  
not to clepe ust me. but syful  
me to penaunce. / & þei leiden to hi  
whi þe dūplis of jon fatte of  
te & maken preieris also & of fa  
rilees. but yme eten & drynke

to whiche he seide. wher ze mou  
make ye lones of ye spoule to  
faste. while ye spoule is wip he.  
but daies shulen come whane  
ye spoule shal be take a wey fro  
hem. & þane þei shulen faste i y  
daies. / & he seide to hem also. alle  
nelle. for no mā takeþ a pese fro  
a newe cloy. & puttyt it into an  
old cloyng. ellis bore he breky  
pe newe. & ye pese of ye newe a  
coudy not to ye elde. and no mā  
puttyt newe wip into olde botels  
elhs ye newe wip shal breke ye  
botels. & ye wip shal be shē fed  
ed out. & ye botetels shu  
len perillhe. but newe wip  
onwy to be putt into newe bo  
tels. & bore ben kept. / & no mā  
drynke ye elde. wole a nō newe  
for he sey ye elde is ye bette.

**A**nd it was do. / & 30 vii.  
in ye secūte furte sabot  
whie he passide by ye co  
nes. hile dūplis pluckeden eers  
of corn. & þei frotyg wip her hondis.  
eeten. and sume of ye farilees.  
seide to hem. what doen ze pat yis  
not leetful in ye sabotis. / & ihc an  
sweride & seide to hem. ze han not  
redd what damp dide. whie he  
hūgride. & þei y weren wip hi  
how he entride into ye hous of  
god & toke lones of pposicion &  
eet. & 30 to hem y were wip hi  
whiche loones it was not leetful  
to ete. but couly to pre. / & ihc  
seide to he. for man. or. / ms  
sone is lord. the of ye sabot. / & it  
was don i anoy sabot. / & he ent  
de into a synagoge & taurt. / &  
ama was pere. & his rythond  
was dze. & ye tribis & farilees

alpete hi. if he wolde heele hym  
in ye sabot. / pat þei shulde fynde  
cause wher of þei shulde acuse  
hi. & he wite ye pouztis of he. &  
he seide to ye man pat hadde a dze  
hond. ryle up & stonde ito ye myd  
del. & he roos. & stood. / & ihc seide  
to hem. / are you if it is leetful to  
do wel in ye sabot or yuele. / to  
make a soule last. or to leese. / &  
whie he hadde biholde alle me a  
boute. he seide to ye mā. hold for  
ym hond. / & he heeld for. / & his ho  
nd was restord to heelp. / & þei  
were fulfilled wip myldom.  
/ & spoken to gude. what þei shul  
den do of ihu. / **A**nd it was don  
i po daies. he wente out ito an  
hil. to preie. & he was al myt  
dwellige in ye preier of god. / &  
whie ye day was come. he clepi  
de hile dūplis. & chees twelue of  
hem whiche he clepide also apost  
hs. / symonid who he clepide pet.  
/ & andren his broyr. / james & jo.  
philip & bartholomeis. matthe  
i thonis. james alsey & symonit  
y is clepid zelotes. / judas of ja  
mes. & judas itariot y was tray  
tour. / and ihc cam don fro ye hil  
wip hem & stood i a feeldy place.  
/ & þe cūpany of hile dūplis &  
a greet mūltitute of peple of al  
iudee & ierlm. / & of ye see coastis  
i of tyre & sydon. / & camē to hee  
re hi. & to be heeld of her sykel  
lis. / & þei pat were trauelid of  
vncleue spiritis. were heeld.  
/ and alle peple souzte to touche  
hi. for werten wente out of hym  
i heelde alle. / & whie hile yzen  
were cast up into hile dūplis.  
he seide bleid be ze pore men.

for ye kyngdom of god is 30 me  
bleid be ze y now hūgre. for ze  
shulen be fulfilled. / bleid be ze  
pat now wepe. for ze shule leze.  
ze shulen be bleid. whie men  
shulen hate you. & departe you  
away. & putte shenidhip to you.  
/ & caste out 30m name as yuel  
for mans lone. / hope ze i pat day  
i be ze glad. for lo 30m mete is  
moche in heuene. / for after yese  
pigis. ye fadris of hem dide to  
pfeis. nepeles mo to 30m rpe  
me. / pat han 30m confort. / wo  
to you y ben fulfilled. for ze shu  
len hūgre. / wo to you y now lez  
en. for ze shulen moze i wepe.  
/ wo to you whie alle me shule  
bleis 30m. / after yese pigis ye fa  
dris of hem diden to pfeis. /  
**B**ut i seie to you y heere lone ze  
30me enemyes. do ze wel to hem  
y hatide you. / bleis ze me y cin se  
30m. / prepeze for me y tetanie 30m.  
/ & to hy pat smyt y pee on o cheke.  
shene also ye to. / & fro hi y taky  
away fro pee a clooy. nyle y for  
bete ye cote. / and yme to ech pat  
stryt y. / & if ama taky away  
ye pigis pat ben yme. are you  
not azen. / and as ze wolen pat  
men do to you. do ze also to hem  
in lyk maner. / & if ze louen hem  
pat louen you. what pawk is to  
you. / for syful me lone me pat  
lone he. / & if ze doen wel to he y  
doen wel to you. what grace is  
to you. / syful me doen yis ying.  
/ & if ze leenen to he of whiche ze  
hopen to take azen. what pawk  
is to you. / for syful me leenen  
to syful me. to take azen as mo  
che. / nepeles lone ze 30m enemye.



do ze wel. and leene ze haryge  
no ring. pot. & zow mede shal  
be moche. & ze shulen be re lone  
of pe herte. for he is benygne  
ou vnkynde me & puel me. **¶** For  
be ze merciful. as zow fadir is  
merciful. nyle ze demer. & ze shu  
len not be demp. nyle ze adempne.  
ze shule not be dempned. for ze  
it shal be forzow to zow. & pue ze.  
it shal be zow to. & ze shule zow to  
zow. bosh a good metyn. & wel fillid.  
ze shak to gidre & ouer flowige  
for bi pe same metyn. bi which  
ze meten. it shal be meten azen to  
zow. & he seide to hem a herte.  
wher pe blynde may lede pe bly  
de. ne fallen rei not bope into pe  
dyche. a disciple is not a boue pe  
maistr. but ech shal be par fyt.  
if he be as his maistr. And what  
seest pou in pi broperis. & ze a mot.  
but pou biholdist not a beem pat  
is in pi owne yze. or how maistr  
pou seie to pi brop. broper enst.  
shale caste out pe mot of pi yze.  
ze pou biholdist not a beem in pi  
owne yze. & pocrute. first take  
out pe beem of pi owne yze. &  
pauze pou shalt se to take pe mot  
of pi broperis. **¶** It is not a  
good tre. & maky puele fruytis  
nef an puel tre. pat maky go  
ode fruytis. for euery tre. is  
knowen of his fruyt. & menga  
derer not fruytis of porres. ney  
men gader a grape of a bonst  
of bzaris. a good ma. of pe good  
tre souer of his herte. byngny  
forz goode vrgis. & an puel man  
man. of pe puel tresour byn  
ger forz puel vrgis. for of pe  
plente of pe herte. pe mouy spe

ky. And what clepen ze me lord.  
lord. & doen not vo pigis pat  
sepe. ech pat comey to me. & hee  
rer my wordis. & doy hem. &  
shal shewe to zow to whom he  
is lyk. he is lyk to aman. & biler  
an hous pat diggete depe. & lete  
re fudamet on a stoon. & whie  
greet flood was maid pe flood  
was hirtid to p hous. & it may  
te not moue it. for it was fou  
did on a sad stoon. but he pat  
heerit & doy not. is lyk to a  
man bildige his hous on erpe  
wyoute fudamet. into which  
pe flood was hirtid. & a noon it  
felle doil. & pe fallig doil of pat  
hous. was maid greet. **¶** And  
whie he hadde fulfild  
alle his wordis into  
re ecris of pe peple. he  
entride into cafaruan. but a ser  
uant of a centurien pat was  
precious to hym was spelt. & dra  
wyng to pe depe. & whie he  
hadde herd of ihu. he sente to  
hym pe eldre men of ieris. &  
preete hi pat he wolde come &  
heele his seruait. & whie pe  
camen to ihu. pei preete hym  
biyli. & seide to hi. for he is wor  
pi. & pou graite to hy. & he bi  
de to us a synagoge. & he wen  
te wy hem. & whie he was not  
fer fro pe hous pe centurie sen  
te to hy frendis. & seide. lord nyle  
pou be travelid. for i am not  
woxy. & pou entre vnder my  
root. for which vrg. & i deme  
de not my self woxy. & i come  
to pee. but seie pou bi word. &  
my chld shal be heeld. for i am

ama ordeyned vnder power. &  
hane knytis vnder me. & i seie  
to vis go. & he goy. & to a noyr  
come. & he comey. & to my seruait  
do vis vrg. & he doy. & whie vis  
vrg was herd. the wondrite &  
seide to pe peple. luyng hi. & treu  
li. i seie to zow. ney in yrael. i  
fond so greet fey. & pei pat we  
re sent tynneten azen hoier. &  
fouiden pe seruait hool which  
was hyl. **¶** And it was don aft  
ward. the wente into a cite. pat  
is clepid naim. & hile discipis &  
ful greet peple weten wy hy.  
ze whie he cam my. to pe cite of  
pe citee. lo pe lone of a woman  
pat hadde no mo children. was  
born out deed. & vis was a wido  
we. & moche peple of pe citee wy  
hy. & whie pe lord ihu hadde seyn  
hy. he hadde reuyr on hy. & seide  
to hy. nyle pou wepe. & he cam  
my. & touchte pe beer. & pei pat  
baren. stode. & he seide. zonge  
ma. i seie to pee. ryse vp. & he  
pat was deed. saut vp azen. &  
bigan to speke. & he zat hy to hi  
modr. And drede took alle men.  
ze pei magnifete god. & seiden.  
for a greet profete is risli amog  
us. & for god hay visited his po  
peple. & vis word wente out of  
hy into al. iudee. & into al pe ci  
tre aboute. And johis disci  
phis tolde hy. of alle ves pigis.  
ze johis clepde tweyne of hile  
discipis. & seide he to ihu. & hie  
art pou he pat is to come. & a  
biden we anoy. & whie pe me  
cam to hi. pei seiden. johis bap  
tist sente us to pee. & seide. art  
pou he pat is to come. & ze we

abyden anoy. and in pat our he  
heelde many me of her spknel  
his & wondis. & puel spurtis. & he  
zat list to many blynde me. & the  
answeride & seide to hem. go ze  
azen. & telle ze to johis. vo pigis  
pat ze han herd. & seyn. blynde me  
seen. crokid me goen. melesis be  
maid cleue. deef men heere. deede  
me rylen azen. poze me ben ta  
bi to prechig of pe gospel. & he  
pat shal not be standid in me.  
is blelid. & whie pe messangers  
of johis. weren go for. he biga  
to seie of johis to pe peple. what  
wente ze out into desert to se.  
a reede wayid wy pe wynd. but  
what wente ze out to se. aman  
clapd wy softe cloris. lo pei p  
ben in pzeious clor. & in despres.  
be in kyngis housis. but what  
wente ze out to se. a pfete. & he  
i seie to zow. & more va appete  
vis is he of whom it is writi. lo  
i sente my angel bfore vi face.  
which shal make pi weye redy  
bfore pee. certis. i seie to zow.  
per is no ma more pfete amog  
children of wyne van is johis.  
but he p is lesse in pe kyngdom  
of heuenes. is more van he.  
**¶** And alle pe peple heerige & puy  
plicans pat hadde be baptid  
wy pe baptyr of johis. iustifi  
eden god. but pe farilees & pe  
wyle me of pe lawe pat were  
not baptid of hi. discipiden pe  
concel of god. asens he sile. & pe  
lord seide. pfore to who shal i  
sepe me of vis generacion. &  
to whom ben pei lyk. & pei ben  
lyk to children satige in chepig  
& spekinge to gidre. & sepe.



We han songu to you wip pipis.  
 & ze han not dailid we han maid  
 moruys. & ze han not wept for  
 johu baptist cam nes etunge  
 breed ne drynkige wip. & ze seie  
 he har a fend. manns sone cam  
 etunge & drynkige. & ze seien  
 to amā deuour. & drynkige wip  
 a frend of puplicans & of syn  
 ful me. & wisdom is iustified  
 of her sones. **B**ut oon of re far  
 sees preiete ihu. y<sup>e</sup> he shulde ete  
 wip hym. And he entride into pe  
 hous of re farisee. & sat at ye me  
 te. & to a synful wōmā y<sup>e</sup> was i pe  
 citee. as she knew y<sup>e</sup> ihu sat at  
 ye mete. in pe hous of re farisee.  
 she brougte an alabast<sup>r</sup> box of  
 oymemet. & she stood bihynde bi  
 hydys his feet. & bigan to moule  
 his feet wip teeris. & wipete  
 wip ye heeris of hir heed. & kiste  
 his feet. & anoyntide wip oym  
 met. & ye farisee seynge wat had  
 de deyd hi. seide wip yne hym  
 silt seynge. if pis were affete.  
 he shulde write. who & what ma  
 ner wōmā it wer. wat touchy  
 hi. for she is a synful wōmā. &  
 she answerte & septe to hi. oym  
 out i haue sū pig to seie to pee.  
 & he seide. manstir seie you. & he  
 answerte. twey detours we  
 ren to oo lenet. & oon oute sy  
 ue hūdrid pens. & ye of fyfty.  
 but whne pei hadde not wher  
 of pei shulde zelle. he for zat to  
 bope. who yāne loney hi more.  
 symonit answerte & seide. i gel  
 se pat he. to whom he forzat mo  
 ze. & he answerte to hy. y<sup>e</sup> hast  
 demyd ryzth. & he turnede to pe  
 wōmā & seide to symonid seest

ron pis wōmā. i entride into y  
 hous. you zat no watir to my  
 feet. but pis har moitid my fe  
 et wip teeris. & wipid wip hir  
 heeris. you hast not zoni to me  
 a colde. but pis liven she entri  
 de ceelide not to kille my feet.  
 you anoyntidest not myn heed  
 wip oyle. but pis anoyntide my  
 feet wip oymemet. for ye which  
 pig i seie to pee. many synes be  
 forzoni to hy. for she har loney  
 moche. & to who is leile forzoni.  
 he loney lesse. & she seide to hy.  
 y<sup>e</sup> synes ben forzoni to pee. &  
 yei pat laten to gidre at ye mete.  
 bigunen to seie wip yne he lile.  
 who is pis pat forzyney synes.  
 but he seide to re wōmā. y<sup>e</sup> fery  
 har maid pee lant. go y<sup>e</sup> in pees.  
**A**nd it was do. **C**viij.  
 Afterward. & ihu made  
 iourney bi citees & cal  
 tels. prechige & euāgelizinge  
 ye reuime of god. & twelue wip  
 hi. & sū wimen pat weren hee  
 lid of wicid spritis & syknessis  
 marie y<sup>e</sup> is clepid marthele of  
 whom seueue denelis wenten  
 out. & joone pe wif of chulpe pe  
 pcurato of eroude. & lūāne.  
 many opey y<sup>e</sup> mymārite to hy  
 of her rycheellis. & whne nyche  
 peple was come to gidre. & me  
 hyeden to hy fro pe citees. he sei  
 de bi a symilitude. he pat sūby  
 zede out to soibe his seed. & whne  
 he lowy. sū fel bi sydis ye were.  
 & was defouled. & hyddis of ye  
 eyr eeten it. and opir fel on a  
 stoon. & it spzong up & dzyede.  
 for it hadde not moitūre. and  
 opir fel amōg yznes. & ye por

nes spzigen up to gidre. & strā  
 ghde it. and opir fel into good et  
 re. & it is spzog up. & made an  
 hūdrid fold fruyt. he seide pes  
 rygis & cryede. he pat eeris of  
 heerting heet. he but hile dis  
 ciplis ayeden hi. wat was pis  
 parable was. & he seide to hem.  
 to you it is grautid to knowe  
 ye prinypce of ye kyngdom of  
 god. but to opere me in para  
 blis. y<sup>e</sup> rei seynge se not. and  
 rei heerige vnder stonde not.  
 & pis is ye parable. ye seed is  
 godis word. & rei pat ben bish  
 dis ye weye. be pes pat hee  
 ren. and afterward ye fend comey  
 & takir away ye word fro rei her  
 te. lest rei bileunge be maid la  
 af. but rei pat fel on a stoon. be  
 pes y<sup>e</sup> whne rei han herd. restey  
 uen ye word wip ioye. & pes han  
 not rootis. for at a tyme rei bile  
 uen. & in tyme of tēptaciō rei  
 goen away. but pat y<sup>e</sup> fel among  
 yznes. ben pes pat herde. & of bi  
 synelles & richellis & lūdis of hif  
 rei goen for. & ben strāghd. & bym  
 gen for no fruyt. but pat pat fel  
 into good et re. ben pes pat in a good  
 herte & bea<sup>r</sup> heere ye word & holde.  
 & byryngen for fruyt in pacience.  
**N**o man litzney a lanterne & hi  
 ley it wip a vessel. or puttyt it on  
 dur a bed. but on a candelstake. y<sup>e</sup>  
 me pat entren se liz. for y<sup>e</sup> is no  
 prinyp rig. which shal not be ope  
 nyd. neyr hūd rig. which shal  
 not be knowū. & come ito opyn

perfore se ze hōk ze heereu. for it  
 shal be zoni to hym y<sup>e</sup> har. & who  
 ener y<sup>e</sup> har not. also pat pat he  
 wener y<sup>e</sup> he hane. shal be takū a  
 wey fro hym. & his modir & byren  
 came to hym. & ye myxten not co  
 me to hy for ye peple. & it was teeld  
 to hym. y<sup>e</sup> modir & y<sup>e</sup> byren ston  
 den wipoute for. willige to se pee.  
 and he answerte & seide to he. my  
 modir & my byre ben yele. pat  
 heeren ye word of god & doen it.  
 And it was don in oon of ye daies.  
 he wente up into aboot. & hile dish  
 phis. & he seide to hem. passe we on  
 ye see. And rei wente up. & while  
 rei roweden. he slepte. and a tem  
 pest of wynd cam down into ye wa  
 tur. & rei weren dzyim hidur & y  
 dur. wip wawes & weren i pel. &  
 rei came nyz. & reileten hi & seide.  
 comāduir we perillthen. & he roos  
 & blampde ye wynd & ye tempest  
 of ye watir. & it ceelide. & petible  
 te was maid. & he seide to hem. whe  
 re is your fery. which dzyedynge  
 wondrū. & seide to gidre. who gel  
 list you is pis. for he comandir to  
 wydis & to ye see. & rei obeyen  
 to hym. & rei rowiden to pe kūttr  
 of gerasen. pat is azens galile.  
 and whne he wente out to ye lond.  
 aman ran to hi pat hadde a denel  
 long tyme. & he was not dloyd  
 wip dlop. neyr diuelliū in hous.  
 but i sepulchris. pis whne he say  
 ihu. fel don bifoze hy. & he crynge  
 wip a greet vois. septe. wat to  
 me & to pee. ihu ye sone of herte  
 god. i bilethe pee y<sup>e</sup> pon timent  
 not me. for he comāduir ye vn  
 dene spūit. y<sup>e</sup> he shulde go out  
 fro ye man. for he took hi ofce ty



mes and he was bound wip charynes & kept in doctis & whine pe hondis weren broken. he was lad of deuels into desert. and ihc aride hi & seide. what name is to pee? & he seide a legio. for many deuels weren entrid into hi. And pei ppyeden hi. p he shulde not coman de he. p pei shulden go into helle. and p was a floc of many sibyn. lesenige in an hil. & pei ppeiden hi. p he shulde suffre hem entrid into he. & he suffre hem. & so pe deuels wenten out fro pe man. & entiden into pe sibyn. & wip a bire pe floc wente heedlige into pe pool. & was drenchid. & whine pe herdis sauen pis pig don. pei flowen & teelden into pe citee. & i to pe towne. and pei zeden out to se pat pig. pat was don. & pei camen to ihu. & pei fouden pe man sittige clopid. fro who pe fendis wente out. & in hool mynde at his feet. & pei dzedden. And pei p syzen toolde to he. how he was maid hool of pe legio. & al pe nistitude of pe citee of gerasen. ppeide hi. p he shulde go fro he. for pei were holdu wip greet drete. he wente up into a boot & turnede azen. & pe ma of who pe deuels were gon out. ppeide hi. p he shulde be wip hi. ihu sette hym & seide. go azen into pin hous. & telle how grete pigns god hay don to pee. & he wente pur al pe cite. & ppechide how grete pigns ihu hadde don to hi. **A**nd it was don whine ihc was gon azen. pe peple ressepye de hym. for alle were abydyge hi. and lo ama to who pe name was ianrus. & he was prince of a sy

nagoge. & he fel down at pe feet of ihu. & ppeide hi. pat he shulde entre into his hous. for he hadde but o donzter almost of twelf. zeer. & she was deed. & it bifel. pe while he wente. he was pringun of pe peple. & a woman p hadde a flur of blood twelf zeer. & had de spendid al hir catel in lechis. & she myzte not be curid of ony. & she cam wip bihynde. & touchide pe heime of his clop. and ando pe flur of hir blood ceaside. & ihc seide. who is p touchide me? & whine alle me denyde. pete seide. & pei p were wip hi. comandou pe peple pristen & daleen pee. & p seide. who touchide me? & ihc seide. su ma hay touchid me. for p vertu zede out of me. & pe woman ley ge p it was not hid fro hi. cam tremlyge & fel down at his feet. & for what cause she hadde touchid hi. she thewde bifore al pe peple. & how ando she was heeld. & he seide to hir. donzter. pi fery hay maid. pee seaf. go pou i pees. & at while he spak. a ma cam to pe pnce of pe synagoge. & seide to hi. pi donzter is deed. nyle pou tranele pe manstir. & whine pis word was herd. ihc answeride to pe fadir of pe damysel. nyle p drete. but bi leue pou onely. & she thal be sauf. and whine he cam to pe hous. he suffre no ma to entre wip hi. but pete. & john & james & pe fadir & pe modir of pe damysel. & alle wepten & bwepten hir. & he seide. nyle ze wepe. for pe damysel is not deed. but slepy. & pei dozneted hy. & witten p she was deed. but he heeld hir hond & cry

ete & seide. damysel. ryse. up. and hir spirit turnede azen. & she roos anon. & he comandise to zyne to hir. to ete. & hir fadir & modir wondred greetly. & he comandise hem pat pei shulde not sepe to ony. pat pig. pat was don. **A**nd whine pe twelue aposthis were clepid to gidre. he zaf to he. & ten. & pow on alle deuels. & pat pei shulden heele sylknessis. and he sente hem for to ppeche pe kyngdom of god. & to heele sylk me. & he seide to hem. no pig take ze in pe wepe ne prerd ne lpe. ne p breed ne money. & ne p hane ze two cootis. & into what hous p ze entreu. dwelle ze pere. & go ze not fro ren. & who enie ressepye not zou. go ze out of pat citee. & shake ze pe poudre of zou feet. to witnesse on he. & pei zeden forp. & wenten aboute bi castels ppechinge & heelinge euw wher. and eroude terrar. herde alle pigis pat were don of hi. & he dounte for pat it was leid of su meu. p john was rise fro deap. & of su me. p elye hadde ap perid. but of ope. p don of pe elte ppetis was risu. and eroude sei de. p hane biheedid john. & who is pis. of who p heere such p p p. & he soupte to se hy. and pe apothis turnede azen. & telden to hi alle pigis pat pei hadde don. and he took he. & wente biydis into a desert place. p is bethsaida. & whine pe peple fuellde pis. pei folowiden hi. & he ressepyede he. & spak to he of pe kyngdom of god. and he heeld he. pat hadde ne de of cure. & pe day bigan to

borne down. and pe twelue came & seiden to hi. leue pe peple. & pei go & turne into castels & tow nes pat ben aboute. & pei fynde mete. for we ben her in a desert place. & he seide to he. zyne ze to he to ete. and pei seiden. per ben not to us. mo ran fyne loones. & twelue fyllis. but ppetur. p we go & bye metis. to alle peple. and pe me were almost fyne youland. & he seide to hile discipulis. make ze hem sitte to mete. by cupany es a fifti to gidre. & pei dide so. & pei made alle me sitte to mete. and whine he hadde take pe frinc loones & twelue fyllis. he bihaeld into heuene. & blestide hem & brak. & white to hile discipulis. pat pei shulde sette forp bifore pe cupanyes. & alle me eeten. & were fyllid. & pat pat sette to he of broken metis was tak u ap. twelue coffyns. and it was don whine he was alone. p pinge. hile discipulis were wip hym. & he aride hem & seide. who sepen pe peple pat p am. & pei answeriden & seiden. john baptist. ope seien. elye. & ope seien. o ppete of pe for mer is risu. & he seide to he. but who sepe ze p am. symond pete. answeride. & seide. pe cat of god. and he blampge hem. comandise pat pei shulde seie to no ma. & sei de pes pigis. for it bihonep man sone. to suffre many pigis. & to be repued of pe eldre me. & of pe pnces of prestis. & of ilbis. & to be slayn. & pe priddre day to ryse a zen. & he seide to alle. p ony wole come after me. denye he hy self. & take he his croll euw day. & lu we he me. for he pat wole make



his hys laif: ſhal leeſe it and he p  
leechy his hys: for me ſhal make it  
ſaaf and what pfitit it to a man  
if he wſne al pe world & leeſe hi ſelf  
& do peyrig of hi ſelf for who ſo  
ſthamey me & my wordis: mānis  
ſone ſhal ſthame hi whiche he co  
mey in his mageſte & of ye fadur  
& of ye hooly angelis. **A**nd ſeie  
to you verily ꝑ ben ſime ſtondige  
her. Whiche ſthulen not taſte deer:  
til rei ſeen ye reſurme of god: & it  
was don aſter pes wordis. Almeſt  
eizte dapes: & he took pett & james  
& john: & he ſtred into an hyl: to  
preie: & while he preiete: ye lpt  
nelle of his cher was chaungid. &  
his clopig was wht ſthynge: & lo  
twey men ſpaken wy hy: & moyleſ  
& elpe weren ſepn i maieſte: & rei  
ſayen his gopug out. which he ſth  
nile fulfille in ierlm: & pett & rei  
pat were wy hy: weren heuy of  
ſleep: and rei wakige ſayen his  
maieſte: & ye twey me ꝑ ſtode wy  
hy: & it was don whāne rei departi  
den fro hy: petre ſeide to ihu: co  
maundoun it is good: ꝑ we be here  
& make we her ꝑre tabernaculis  
oon to pee & oon to moyleſ: & oon to  
elpe: & he wiſte not: what he ſthul  
de ſeie: but while he ſpak pes ꝑi  
gis: a cloude was mand. & on ſtha  
deride he: & rei dzedden: whāne  
rei entride into pe cloude: & a vois  
was mand out of pe cloude: & ſeide  
ꝑis is my dereworpe ſone: heere  
ze hy: & while pe vois was mand:  
ihu was ſolidu aloone: & rei we  
ren ſtille: & to no mā ſenden i po dai  
es out of po ꝑigis. ꝑ rei hadden  
ſepn: but it was don i ye day ſu  
yuge: whāne rei came dou of pe

hil: moche peple mette hem: & lo a  
mā of pe ciupany: cryede & ſeide  
maſter: ꝑ bileche pee. bihold my ſo  
ne: for ꝑ hane no mo: & lo a ſpirit  
takeꝑ hi: & ſudenly he cryer & hur  
tly doſen. & todrauy hy wy ꝑ to  
me: & vneye he gop aſcey alto  
ꝑreſynge hy: and ꝑ preiede ꝑ  
dyluphis: ꝑ rei ſthulden caſte hy  
out: & rei myſte not: & iſc anſwe  
ride: & ſeide to hem: & i vnſerpyl  
geſhaciou & weyward: how longe  
ſthul ꝑ be at you: & ſuffre you: ꝑ  
ge ſthidur ꝑ ſone: and whāne he cam  
my: ꝑe deuſel hurthide hi down: & to  
brayde hi: and iſc blamede ꝑe vn  
cleue ſpirit: & heelde ꝑe chld: &  
zeldide hi to his fadur: & alle men  
wondurde greetly in ye greeneſſe  
of god: and whiche alle me wondri  
den in alle ꝑigis ꝑat he dide: he ſe  
de to hile dyluphis: ꝑutte ze ꝑeſe wo  
dis in your hertis: for it is to co  
me ꝑ mānis ſone be betrayed to  
ꝑe hondis of me: & ꝑe keneſe not  
ꝑis word. & it was hid biſore hy:  
ꝑat rei feelide it not: and ꝑe dzed  
den to are hy ꝑis word. **A**nd a ꝑo  
nt entride into hem: who of hy  
ſthulde be gretteſt: and ihu ſeyge  
ꝑe ꝑontis of ꝑe herte of hy: took  
a chld & ſettide hi biſides hy: & ſe  
de to hem: who eue reſſeyney ꝑis  
chld in my name: reſſeyney me:  
& who eue reſſeyney me: reſſey  
ney hi ꝑ ſente me: for he ꝑat is  
leeſt amog you alle: is ꝑe gretteſt:  
and john anſweride & ſeide: comā  
doun: we ſeyen anā caſtuge out  
ſendis in ꝑi name: & we han for  
bodū hy: for he ſueꝑ not ꝑe wy  
vs: & iſc ſeide to hy: nyle ze forbe  
de: for he ꝑ is not azen vs: is

for us: and it was don whiche ꝑe day  
es of his takig: up weren fulfil  
lid: he ſettide faſte his face to go to  
ierlm: & ſente meſſangeris biſore  
his ſix: and rei ſeden & entride into  
a citee of ſamaritanis: to make  
redy to hi: & rei reſſeyuede not  
hy: for ꝑe face was of hy: gopuge  
into ierlm: & whāne james & john  
hile dyluphis ſeyen: rei ſeide: lord  
wolt ꝑon ꝑat we ſeyen ꝑ fier come  
down fro heuene: & waſte hem:  
and he turnede: & blamede hem & ſeide  
ze witen not: whos ſpiritis ze ben  
for mānis ſone cam not to leeſe me  
nis ſoulis: but to laue: & rei wete  
into anoy caſtel. **A**nd it was don  
whiche ꝑe walſiden in ꝑe weye: and  
ſeide to hy: ſthul ſue ꝑe: whidur  
eue you go: & iſc ſeide to hy: for is  
han denues: & briddis of ꝑe eyr han  
neſtis: but mānis ſone han not whe  
re he reſte his heed: and he ſeide  
to anoy ꝑe ſue ꝑon me: and he ſeide  
lord ſuffre me firſt to go: & brie my  
fadur: & iſc ſeide to hy: ſuffre ꝑe de  
me brie her deede me: but go ꝑon &  
telle ꝑe kingdom of god: and anoy  
ſeide: lord ꝑ ſthul ſue ꝑe: but fi  
rſt ſuffre me to leeſe al ꝑigis ꝑe  
at hoom: & iſc ſeide to hy: no man  
ꝑat ꝑuttyꝑ his hond to ꝑe plou: &  
biholdige bacward: is able to ꝑe  
reſurme of god. **A**nd **A**fter pes ꝑigis: ꝑe lo  
id ihu ordeynede alſo op  
ſenenty & tweyne: & ſente hy bi twey  
ne & tweyne biſore his face: into  
euery cite & place whidur he wſ  
to come: & he ſeide to hem: ꝑ is mo  
che rype corn: & fewe werkmen:  
ꝑore preie ze ꝑe lord of ꝑe rype  
corn: ꝑat he ſende werkme into

his rype corn: go ze lo ꝑ ſende you: as  
lambien among wolues: ꝑore nyle  
ze be: a ſachel ney ꝑe: ney ſthoon:  
& grete ze no mā bi ꝑe weie: into whi  
houſ ze entre: firſt ſeie ze: ꝑeſs to  
ꝑis houſ: & if a ſone of ꝑeſs be ꝑe:  
you ꝑeſs ſthul reſte on hy: but if  
noon: it ſthul tunne azen to you: &  
diuelle ꝑe in ꝑe ſame houſ: etige  
& dꝑnlyge ꝑo ꝑigis ꝑe ben at hem:  
for a werkman is worꝑi his hir: my  
le ze paſſe from houſ into houſ: & i  
to what euer citee ze entren: & rei  
reſſeynen you: ete ze ꝑo ꝑigis ꝑe ben  
ſett to you: & heele ze ꝑe ſyke men  
ꝑat ben in ꝑat citee: & ſeie ze to hy  
ꝑe kingdom of god ſthul neye into  
you: into what citee ze entre: & rei  
reſſeynen you not: go ze out to ꝑe  
ſtreets of it: & ſeie ze: we wyppen  
of azen you ꝑe pollder ꝑat deny  
de to us of your cite: nepeles wite  
ze ꝑis ꝑig: ꝑe reſurme of god ſth  
al come up: & ſeie to you: ꝑ to god  
it ſthul be eſſe: ꝑan to ꝑat citee  
in ꝑat day. **A**nd to ꝑe coroplaꝑm  
wo to ꝑe betlayda: for if in tyre &  
ſidon ꝑe vertues hadde be don: whi  
che han be don i you: hi tyme ꝑe  
wolden ha ſete in hay: & apthas  
& hane don penaunce: nepeles to ty  
re & ſidon it ſthul be eſſe: in ꝑe  
dome: ꝑan to you: & ꝑon caſar na  
art enhaulid til to heuene: ꝑ ſthalt  
be dꝑenchid til into helle: he ꝑat  
heerꝑ you: heerꝑ me: & he ꝑat  
dyluphy you: dyluphy me: & he ꝑat  
dyluphy me: dyluphy hy ꝑat ſente  
me. **A**nd ꝑe twey & ſenenty dyl  
uphis: turnede azen wyrope: & ſe  
den: lord alſo denelis ben ſuget to  
us in ꝑi name: & he ſeide to hem:  
ꝑ ſay ſathanas fallige down fro



hevene as leyt: & lo / I have zoun to  
zou pouer to trede on serpentis  
& scorpionis. & on al ye vertu of ye  
enemys. & no yig shal anoye you  
neveles nyle ze ioye in yis ying  
pat spyr it is ben suget to you / but  
ioye ze y' zour' names ben writen  
in hevenes / In yilke our he gla  
dide in ye hooly goot. & leide / I kno  
wleche to see fadir. lord of hevene  
& of erpe / for you hast hyd pes ym  
gis fro wyle me & prudent. & hast  
shewid he to sinale children / she  
fadir. for lo it pleside bifore pee  
alle yigis ben zoun to me of my  
fadir. & no man woot who is ye lo  
ne. but ye fadir. & who is ye fadir.  
but ye sone. & to whom ye sone wo  
le shewe / and he turnete to hile  
discipulis & leide / blessid ben ye yre.  
pat seen po yigis pat ze seen / for  
I seie to you pat many pletis &  
yigis wolden haue seyn po yigis  
pat ze seen. & pei syzen not / & hee  
re po yigis pat ze heere. & pei her  
den not / & lo awys ma of ye laue  
roos up. tēptinge hi & seyng  
mandir. what yig shal I do to  
haue eulastige lyf. & he seide to  
hi / what is writen in ye lawe. / how  
redist you / he answeride & leide  
you shalt loue y' lord god of al  
ym herte. & of al y' soule. & of all  
y' strengtis & of al y' mynde. &  
y' nezeboze as y' self. & ihc seide  
to hi / you hast answerid rythly / do  
yis yig. & you shalt lyue / but he  
wylge to iustifie hi self. seide to  
ihc / and who is my nezeboze. &  
ihc byheeld & leide / A man cam don  
fro ierlm into ierico. & sel amog  
reues. & pei robbiden hi. & wound  
den hi & wenten away. & lesten

ye man half alyue. & it bifel pat a  
preeft cam don ye same weye. & pat  
side forp whine he hadde seyn hym  
allo a dekeue whine he was blydis  
ye place. & sauh hi. passide forp / but  
a samaritā goyng ye wey. cam  
bilidis hi. & he syz hy. & hadde ren  
ye on hy. & cam to hi & boond to gi  
dre his woundis. & hilde ym oyle &  
wyn. & leide hi on his beest. & lede  
into an ostye. & dide ye cur of hym  
and anoy day he bzougte forp rwey  
pans. & zaf to ye osteler. & leide / ha  
ue ye cur of hi. & what eide y' shalt  
zyne on. / I shal zelde to pee. whane  
I come azen / who of pes yre semer  
to pee. was nezeboze to hym pat  
fel amog yefis. & he seide / he y' dide  
mercy into hi. & ihc seide to hy / go  
you & do y' on lyf maner. & it was  
don while pei wenten. he entride  
to a castel. & awōmā martha bi na  
me. resseyuete hi into hir hous. &  
to pis was a suster. marie by name  
which alld sat by sidis ye feet of  
ye lord. & herde his word / but mar  
tha blyfede aboute ye ofte scruple.  
& she stood & seide / lord takist you  
no kepe. pat my sistr. hay lest me  
aloone to serue. / yfze seie you to  
hir. pat she helpe me. & ye lord  
answeride. & seide to hy / martha  
martha you art blyf. & art trou  
blid aboute ful many yigis / but  
o yig is necessarie / mary hay cho  
si ye beste part. which shal not  
be take away fro hir. **C. 21.**

**A**s it was don whine he  
was preyng in a place.  
As he crellide. con of his  
discipulis seide to hi / lord teche us  
to prey. as iohu tauhte hile disci  
pulis. & he seide to hem / whine ze prayen

seie ze / fadir. halewid be y' name  
y' kyngdom come to / zyne to us to  
day. our etchedayes brood. & forzyne  
to us our lyues. as we forzyuen  
to ech mā pat omyr to us. & lede  
us not into tēptacioū / and he sei  
de to hem / who of you shal haue a  
frend. & shal go to hi at mydnygt.  
& shal seie to hi / frend leene to  
me yre looues / for my frend comey  
to me fro ye weye. & I have not  
what I shal sette bifore hi. & he  
wynteforpy answer. & seie / nyle  
you be heuy to me. ye doze is now  
thatt. & my children ben wy me  
bed. / I may not ryle & zyne to pee.  
and if he shal dwelle stille knoc  
kige. / I seie to you. yon he shal  
not ryle & zyne to hy for pat y' he  
is his frend. neveles for his coti  
miel arpyg. he shal ryle & zyne to  
hy. as name as he hay uede to. &  
I seie to you. are ze. & it shal be  
zoun to you. seke ze. & ze shulen  
fynde / knocke ze. & it shal be ope  
nyd to you. for ech pat arpy. taky  
& he pat sekpy. fyndy. & to amā  
pat knocky. it shal be openyd.  
yfze who of you arpy his fadir  
brood. wher he shal zyne hi a  
stoon. or if he arpy fysth. wher  
he shal zyne hi a serpent for ye  
fysth. or if he arpy an ey. wher  
he shal reche hi a scorpion. / yer  
fore if ze whine ze ben yuel. & i  
nen zyne goode zifis to zour chil  
dren. how moche more zour fa  
dir of hevene. shal zyne agood  
spyr to me pat arpy hi. **C. 22.**  
Ihu was castige out a fend. & he  
was doute. & whine he hadde cast  
out ye fend. ye doute mā spak.  
& ye peple wondride. & sinne of

hem seide / in bellebub pnce of deue  
lis. he casty out deuclis. & ope  
tēptinge. aride of hi a tokene fro  
hevene. & as he sauh ye rowtis  
of hem. he seide to hem / eny reu  
me departid azens it self. shal  
be desolat. & an hous shal falle  
on a hous. & if sathanas be depar  
tid azens hi self. how shal his reu  
me stonde. for ze seien pat I cas  
te out fendis in bellebub. & if  
I in bellebub caste out fendis.  
in whom caste out zour sones.  
yfze pei shulen be zour domes  
me / but if I caste out fendis.  
ye syngur of god. yane ye reu  
me of god. is comit among you.  
**Whine a strong armed mā be**  
pyr his hous. alle yigis y' he wel  
dyr ben in pees / but if a stronger  
yan he come upon hi. & oucome  
hi. he shal take away al his ar  
mer. in which he trustid. & shal  
deele abrood his robbries / he pat  
is not wy me. is azens me. & he  
pat gedry not wy me to gydre.  
natry a brood / whine an vndene  
spyr goy out of amā. he wan  
dry by drie places. & sekpy restte.  
& he fyndige not. seip / I shal tur  
ne azen to myn hous. fro wha  
nes I cam out. & whine he comey.  
he fyndy hit denlid wy befyms.  
& saure arayed. yane he goy &  
takpy wy hi seueue ower spyr  
tis werse pan hi self. & pei en  
tren & dwellen yer. & ye laste y  
gis of pat man. ben moad wor  
se pan ye formere. **C. 23.** And it was  
don whine he hadde seid pes ym  
gis. a woman of ye cupany re  
ride hir vois & seide to hi / blessid  
be ye wombe pat bar pee. and



blemid be ye teetis pat y' haſt ſokij  
⁊ he ſeide / but ſhe blemid be rei  
heere ye word of god ⁊ kepen it  
⁊ And whine ye peple riſen to  
gidre: he bigan to ſeie / yis ge  
naciou is a weyward genaciou  
it ſekij a tokene ⁊ a tokene ſh  
al not be zoni to it: but ye toke  
ne of jonas pe pſete / for as jonas  
was a tokene to me of mynue:  
so manis ſone ſhal be to yis ge  
neraciou: ye queene of ye ſouy ſh  
al riſe in dom wy me of yis ge  
naciou: ⁊ ſhal condepne hem / for  
ſhe cam fro pe endis of ye erpe:  
for to heer ye wiſdom of ſalomo  
⁊ lo her is a gretter pan ſalomo  
men of mynue ſhule riſe i dom  
wy yis genaciou: ⁊ ſhule condep  
ne it / for peiiden penaunce i pe  
prechiſ of jonas / and lo her is a  
gretter pan jonas. **N**o ma ten  
dy alomne: ⁊ putty in hidis ney  
vndir a boyſhel / but on a candil  
ſticke. ⁊ rei pat goen yu. ſe liz  
ye lanterne of y body: is ym yre  
if ym yre be ſymple: al y body  
ſhal be lizt / but if it be weyward.  
al y body ſhal be derkful / pfore  
ſe you: leſt ye lizt pat is in pee  
be derkneſſis / pfore if al y body  
be burt: ⁊ haue no part of derk  
neſſis: it ſhal be al burt: ⁊ as a  
lanterne of bytneſſe: it ſhal y  
ue lizt to pee ⁊ whine he ſpak: a  
farile preide hi y he ſhule etc  
wy hi ⁊ he entride ⁊ ſat to ye  
mete ⁊ ye farile bigan to ſeye  
geſlige wy yne hi ſelf: why  
he was not wantſhi bi fore me  
te: ⁊ ye lord ſeide to hi / now ze fa  
riſees cleulen pat pat is wypon  
teſozp of ye cuppe ⁊ ye plater:

but pat yis y' is wy yne of zoni  
is ful of ranyne ⁊ wickidneſſe  
foolis. **W**hep he pat made pat y'  
is wypon teſozp: made not allo  
pat is wy yne: nepeles pat y'  
is ouerpluſſh yne ze almes:  
⁊ lo alle yis ben dene to zoni  
⁊ But wo to zoni farilees pat ti  
pen myte ⁊ riue ⁊ ech ei be:  
⁊ leuen dom ⁊ ye charite of god  
for it bihoſte to do vele yis: ⁊  
not leue ye wo to zoni farilees  
pat louen ye firtte chaperis i hi  
nagogis: ⁊ ſalutaciou i chepis  
wo to zoni y' ben as ſepulcris y' be  
not ſepn: ⁊ men walkige aboue  
⁊ witen not / but oon of ye wiſe  
me of ye lawe anſweride: ⁊ ſeide  
to hi / maſt pou ſerige yeſ yis:  
allo to vs doſt diſpſt ⁊ he ſeide  
allo wo to zoni wiſe me of lawe  
for ze chargin me wy by yis  
whiche pei mou not ber: ⁊ ze  
zoni ſelf: wy zoni o fyingir wu  
chen not ye heuyneſſis / wo to zoni  
pat bidden toubis of pſetis ⁊  
zoni fadris ſlouken he tren  
ly ze witneſſen: y' ze conſeten to  
ye werkis of zoure fadris / for  
pei ſlouke he: but ze bidden her  
ſepulcris / perfore ye wiſdom of  
god ſeide / y ſhal ſeide to hem p  
fetis ⁊ apontis: ⁊ of hem rei ſh  
ulen ſle ⁊ purliſke / pat ye blo  
od of alle pſetis y' was ſhed fro  
pe makig of ye world: be ſougt  
of yis genaciou / fro pe blood  
of ye niſt abel: to ye blood of a  
charie: y' was ſlapn bi thye rei  
anter ⁊ ye hons / so y' ſeie to zoni  
it ſhal be ſougt of yis genaciou  
wo to zoni wiſe men of ye lawe:  
for ze han takn alwey ye kepe

of kimping ⁊ ze zoni ſelf entriden  
not: ⁊ ze han forbedn hem y' entide  
and whane he ſeide yeſ yis to he  
ye farilees ⁊ wiſe me of lawe: bi  
grimen greuouſly to ſenſonde:  
⁊ ſtoppe his mony of many yis  
ſpyngge hi / and ſekinge to take  
ſu yis of his mony: to acule hi  
⁊ And whine moche. **C. xij.**  
peple ſtood aboute. so y'  
pei treede ech on oyr: he  
bigan to ſeye to hile diſciplis / be ze  
war of ye ſoundoy of ye farile  
es: y' is pſocriſye / for no yis is  
hild: y' ſhal not be ſhewid / ney  
hid: pat ſhal not be wiſt / for whi  
yo yis pat ze han ſeid in derkneſ  
ſis: ſhule be ſeid in lizt: ⁊ pat pat  
ze han ſpokn in eer in couchis: ſh  
al be prechid in rooſes / and y' ſeie  
to zoni my frendis / be ze not a ſeerd  
of hem pat ſleue ye body: ⁊ after  
yeſ yis han no more what pei  
ſhulen do / but y' ſhal ſheue to  
zoni: who ze ſhulen drede / drede ze  
hi: pat after he hay ſlapn: he hay  
poſter to ſende into helle: ⁊ so y'  
ſeie to zoni: drede ze hi / wher fine  
ſparwis ben not ſeld for elbeyue  
halpens: ⁊ oon of hem is not i for  
zetung biſore god: but allo alle  
ye heeris of zoni heed: ben non  
bnd / pfore nyle ze drede: ze ben  
of more pris pan many ſparwi  
trently: y' ſeie to zoni ech ma pat  
knowlechiſ me biſore me: manis  
ſone ſhal knowleche hi biſore ye  
aungels of god / but he y' denier  
me biſore me: ſhal be denped biſore  
ye aungels of god / and ech y' ſer  
arord azeus manis ſone: it ſhal  
be forzoni to hi / but it ſhal not  
be forzoni to hym: pat blaſfemy

azeus ye hooly goſt. **A**nd whine  
pei leden zoni into ſynagogis: ⁊ to  
maieſti aris ⁊ poteſtatis: nyle ze  
be biſy hons or what ze ſhule an  
ſwer: or what ze ſhule ſeie / for ye  
hooly goſt ſhal teche zoni in pat  
our: what it bihouey zoni to ſeie  
and oon of ye peple ſeide to hym  
maſtir ſeie to my broper y' he  
departe wy me ye eritage: ⁊  
he ſeide to hi: man who gidey nete  
me a domeſma or a departer on  
zoni: ⁊ he ſeide to he / ſe ze ⁊ be war  
of al conetile / for ye lizt of aman  
is not in ye abundaunce of yo yis:  
whiche he weldir / and he tolde to he.  
a licneſſe ⁊ ſeide / ye ſeeld of a ry  
che man: byongte fory plente nouſe  
fruytis: ⁊ he pougte wy yne hi  
ſelf: ⁊ ſeide / what ſhal y do for y  
haue not whidur: y ſhal gadre my fruy  
tis: ⁊ he ſer yis yis: y ſhal do  
y ſhal proue dou my bernis: ⁊  
y ſhal make gretter / and yidur  
y ſhal gadre alle yis y' growe  
to me ⁊ my goodis: ⁊ y ſhal ſeie  
to my ſoule / ſoule pou haſt many  
goodis kept into ful many zeeris  
rette y' ete drynke: ⁊ make feette  
and god ſeide to hi / fool in yis myt  
pei ſhulen take y lizt fro pee: ⁊  
whos ſhulen po yis be: pat y'  
haſt arayed: so is he pat trefon  
ry to hi ſelf: ⁊ is not riche in god  
⁊ he ſeide to hile diſciplis / pfore y'  
ſeie to zoni: nyle ze be biſy to zoni  
lizt: what ze ſhule etc / ney to zoe  
body: wy what ze ſhule be clouid  
ye lizt is more pan mete: ⁊ ye body  
more pa clouig / biholde ze cronis:  
for pei ſouen not ney repen / to  
whiche is no celer ne berne: ⁊  
god ſedir he / how moche more ze



ben of more prijs pan pei. & who  
of zoi byenkyng. may pinte  
to co cubite to his stature. pfore  
if ze moten not pat pat is leet.  
What ben ze bijs of opir pigis.  
biholde ze ye hys of ye feeld how  
pei wezen. pei tranele not ney  
spynen. & i seie to zoi. p neyr  
salom in al his gloze was clo  
pid as oon of pyle. And if god do  
pyr rus ye hey pat to day is in  
ye feeld. & to moze is cast into  
an ouen. how myche moze zoi  
of lytil ferp. & nyle ze seke. Whi  
ze shulen ete oz what ze shulen  
drynke. & nyle ze be reikid an hy  
for folkis of ye world. seken alle  
yese pigis. & zoi. fadir woot. p  
ze neten alle yese pigis. nepeles  
seke ze first ye kygdom of god. &  
alle pes pigis shulen be cast to  
zoi. **N**yle ze lytel floc dzele. for  
it pleside to zoi. fadir. to zine. &  
a kyngdom. selle ze po pigis pat  
ze han i possession. & zine almes.  
& make ze to zoi sacheis pat we  
en not olte. trelour pat fadir not  
in heuenes whidur a yeef neyep  
not. neyr monye destruyep.  
for wher is pi trelour. pei. pin  
herte shal be. **W**he zoi. leendis  
gurd abone. & lantnes byenye  
in zoi. hedis. & be ze lyt to men  
pat abyden her lord. whane he  
shal turne azen fro ye weddi  
gis. pat whne he shal come. &  
knoche. anon pei opyne to hy.  
bledd be po seruantis. p whne  
ye lord shal come. he shal fynde  
wakige. treuly. i seye to zoi.  
p he shal gurd hy self. & make  
hem sitte to mete. & he shal  
go & serue he. and if he come i

ye secide wakig. & if he come i  
ye pridde wakig. & fynde so. po  
seruantis ben bledd. & wite ze  
pis pig. for if an halebond ma  
wite i what oir ye yeef wote  
come. soyei he shulde wake. &  
not snuff. his hous to be myned.  
and be ze redy. for in what oir  
ze gessen not. mans lone shal  
come. & peti. seide to hi lord. se  
est p. pis parable to vs. oz to alle.  
and ye lord seide. who gessit you  
is a trewe dispenser. & a pryncer.  
whom ye lord hay ordeyned on his  
meyne to zine hem i tyme. mesu  
re of whete. bledd is pat serua  
nt. pat ye lord whne he comep  
shal fynde so doynge. verily. i  
seye to zoi. p on alle pigis. p he  
weeldur. he shal ordeyne hy. p  
if pat seruant seye in his herte.  
my lord tarrey to come. & bigyn  
ne to smyte chldren & handmay  
dens. & ete & drynke. & be fillid  
ouer meyn. ye lord of pat ser  
uant shal come in ye day pat  
he hapir not. & ye our pat he  
woot not. and shal departe hi.  
& pinte his part wip wufery.  
ful me. **B**ut pilke seruant pat  
kneis ye wille of his lord. & ma  
de not hi redy. & dide not astur  
his wille. shal be betu wip ma  
ny betigis. but he pat kneis not  
& dide wozpi pigis of storkis. sh  
al be betu wip fense. for to ech  
ma to who. moche is zoi. mo  
che shal be azid of hi. and pei  
shulen are moze of hi. to who  
pei bitoken moche. i cam to se  
de fier into erpe. & what wote  
i. but p it be kyndlyd. and i  
haue to be baptyhid wip a bapty

and how am i constreyned. til  
pat it be parfyrtly don. **W**heene  
ze p. i cam to zine pees ito erpe.  
nay. i seye to zoi. but departis  
for fro pis tyme. p shule be fi  
ne departid i oon hous. pze shu  
len be departid azen tweyne.  
& tweyne shule be deptyd azen  
ye. ye fadir azen ye lone. &  
ye lone azen ye fadir. ye modur  
azens ye douzir. & ye douzir a  
zen ye modur. ye halebond is  
modur azen ye lones wyf. & ye  
lones wyf. azen hir halebondis  
modur. and he seide also to ye pe  
ple. whne ze seen a cloude ryft  
ge fro ye sune goyng don. a  
noon ze seyen reyn comep. & lo it  
is don. and whne ze seen ye son  
bloke. ze seyen pat heete sh  
al be. & it is don. **J**ocritis ze  
kunen proue ye face of heuene  
& of erpe. but how prene ze not  
pis tyme. but what. & of zoi  
silt ze demen not pat pat is nist.  
but whne pon goist wip pin ad  
uerlarie in ye weye to ye pnce.  
do bynessle to be deliyed fro  
hi. lest peranetur. he take  
ye to ye domelina. & ye domel  
ma bitake ye to amanit. ful ar  
er. & ye maisturful azer seide  
ye into pson. i seie to yee. you  
shalt not go fro pen. til you  
seide ye laste ferpis. **110. fm.**  
**A**d an men were pre  
sent i pat tyme. pat teel  
den to hi of ye galilees.  
whos blood pilat mynde wip ye  
sacrificas of hem. and he answe  
ride & seide to he. weene ze p. rese  
me of gahle were syneris moze  
pan alle galilees. for pei snuffi

den sucher pigis. & i seie to nay. alle  
ze shulen perillthe in lyk maner.  
but ze haue penance. & as po oz  
tetene. on whiche ye tour in sy  
loa fel don. & slou he. gessen ze  
for pei were detouris moze pan  
alle me. pat dibellen i ierlm. &  
seie to zoi. nay. but also ze alle shu  
len perillthe. if ze doe not penan  
ce. & he seide pis libnelle. aman  
hadde a fige tre plantid in his  
vyne zerd. & he cam sekige fruyt  
in it. & fond noon. and he seide to  
ye tiber. of ye vyne zerd. lo ye zee  
ris be swp. i coom sekende fruyt  
i pis fige tre. & i fynde noon. p  
fore kute it don. wherto occupie  
it ye erpe. & he answeyge. seide  
to hi. lord snuffe it also pis zee.  
ye while i delue aboute it. & i  
shal dinge it. if it shal make fru  
it. if nay. in tyme comyge. you  
shalt kute it don. & he was techi  
ge in her synagoge in ye sabotis.  
shid lo anoman. & hadde a spirit  
of sylkenesse. eixetene zeeis. &  
was crofid. & ney ony man my  
te loke upward. whom whne he  
hadde seyn. he clepide to hi. & sei  
de to hir. woman. you art delyn  
ed of pi sylkenesse. & he lettide on  
hir. his hondis. & anon she stood  
uprit. & glorified god. & ye pn  
ce of ye synagoge answeyde ha  
myge dedeyn. for he hadde heeld  
in ye laboth. & he seide to ye peple.  
p ben fire dages. in whiche it bi  
honey to worche. pfore come ze  
in yese. & be ze heeld. & not i ye  
day of laboth. but ye lord answe  
ride to hi. & seide. **J**ocrite. wher  
ech of zoi vntiey not in ye sa  
both. his are oz alle fro ye crache.



ledy to watn: bihofte it not  
pis dougtr of habrahū. nō sā  
thanas hāp boundū lo erzetene 3e  
ris. to be vnboudū of pis bound  
in ye day of pe laboth: & whne he  
seide pe se pigis: alle hys adūa  
ries weren a shamed/ and al pe  
peple ioyede in alle pigis: pat we  
ren gloriously doen of hi. **¶** fore  
he seide to what pig is ye figdo  
of god lyk: & to what pig shal  
gelle it to be lyk: it is lyk to a cō  
of leuene: which a man took &  
caste into his zerd: & it was: &  
was maid into a greet tre: &  
foulis of pe er restide in ye bān  
chis yof: & eftsoone he seide to  
what pig shal y gelle ye kīng  
dom of god lyk: it is lyk to sour  
doiz: pat a wōman took & hidde  
it into yre meluris of mele: til  
al were sourid. **¶** And he wete  
by citees & castels: teching & ma  
kinge a iourney into ierlm: & a  
man seide to hi lord if per ben se  
we: pat ben laued: & he seide to  
hem stryue ze to entri by pe stre  
it zate for y seie to zōn. manye  
seeken to entri: & pei shūle not  
mōwe for whne ye hōsebonde  
mā is entrid & ye dore is dolid:  
ze shūlen bygynne to stonde wy  
oute fory & kocke at ye dore &  
seye lord opyne to us: & he shal  
answre & seie to zōn: y knowe  
not: of whēms ze ben pāne ze  
shūlen bygynne to seye we han  
etū bifore pee & drūku: & mōu  
re strectis you hast tanyt: & he  
shal seie to zōn: y knowe zōn not:  
of whēms ze ben gop away fro  
me: alle ze worcheris of wickid  
nelle: pere shal be wepyng &

grutyns of teep. whne ze shal se  
abrahū & iac & iacob. & alle pe  
pfetis in ye kīngdom of god: & zōn  
to be putt out: & pei shūle come  
fro pe east & west & fro pe nōw  
& soue: & shūlen sitte at ye mete  
in ye rewme of god: & lo pei pat  
were pe firste: ben pe laste: & pei  
pat were pe laste: ben pe firste.  
**¶** In pat day sūme of farisees ca  
me nry: & seiden to hi go out & go  
out & go fro hems: for eroude wo  
le sle pee: and he seide to hem go  
ze & seye ze to pat for lo y caste  
out fendis: & y make paritly hēd  
pis. to day & to morwe: & ye eud  
de day y am eendid: nepeles it bi  
houep me to day & to morwe: &  
ye day y enuey: to walke: for it  
fallip not a pfete to peritthe out  
of ierlm: ierlm ierlm pat sleet  
pfetis: & stonest hem y be sent  
to pee: how ofte wolde y gadre  
to gadre y sones. as a byrd gadry  
his nest vnder feyris: & you wol  
dist not: lo zōn: how shal be left  
to zōn: desert: & y seie to zōn y  
shūlen not se me: til it come.  
Whne ze shūlen seie blekid  
is he pat comep i ye name of ye  
lord. **¶** **C. xij. ¶**  
**A**nd it was don whne he  
hadde entrid into ye hous  
of a prync of farisees. in ye sa  
both to ete breod: pei alpieten hi  
and lo aman spt in ye draperye:  
was bifore hy: and he ansuwer  
ge spat to ye wyle mē of lāpe  
& to ye farisees & seide: wher  
it is leetful to heele in ye saboth:  
& pei heelden pees: & he took &  
heelde hi: & leet hi go: & he an  
sweride to he & seide: whos alle

or ore of you shal falle into a  
pitte: & he shal not auōd drāwe  
hi out in ye day of laboth: & pei  
myt not ansuwer to hi to pes  
pigis. **¶** He seide also a parable  
to men bedū to a feeste: & biheeld  
how pei chesyn ye firste sittig  
placis: & seide to hem whāne y  
art bedū to bydalis: sitte not  
at ye mete in ye firste place:  
lest pāuenture a wozyer yān  
you be bedū of hi: and lest he co  
me y depide pee & hi: & seie to pee  
zyne place to pis: & pāne you sh  
alt bygynne wy shāne: to holde  
ye loweste place: but whne you  
art bedū to a feeste: go & litte dou  
in ye laste place: & whne he comep  
pat bad pee to ye feeste: he seye  
to pee friend come hyer: pāne wo  
shy shal be to pee bifore me y  
sitten at ye mete: for ech y enuā  
cy hi: shal be lowid: & he y meky  
hym: shal be hyed. **¶** And he se  
ide to hi: pat hadde bedū hi to ye feel  
te: whne you makist a mete or a  
souper: nyle you depe y frendis.  
nepir y byrpen. ney colyus. ney  
neryobus. ne ruche mē: lest pāne  
tur pei bidde pee azen to ye feeste:  
& it be zoldū azen to pee: but wh  
ne you makist a feeste: depe po  
ze men. feble. crokid: & bynde: &  
you shalt be blekid: for pei han  
not wher of: to zelde pee: for it sh  
al be zoldū to pee: in ye rīsyng  
azen of nūst mē: & whne oon of  
hem pat laten to gadre at ye me  
te hadde herd pes pigis: he seide  
to hi blekid is he y shal ete bred  
in ye rewme of god: & he seide to  
hi: Al mā made a greet souper:  
& depide manye: & he sente his

seruant in ye our of soup: to seie  
to mē y were bedū to ye feeste:  
y pei shūlen come: for now alle  
pigis ben redy: and alle bygynen  
to gadre to extule hem: ye firste  
seide: y hanie bouzt a tōm: & y  
hanie nede to go out & se it: y  
pee: hanie me extulid: & petopir  
seide: y hanie bouzt fyne zokis  
of orū: & y go to pue hē: y  
pee: hanie me extulid: & anopir  
seide: y hanie weddid a wyf: & y  
foze y may not come: & ye seruant  
turnede azen: & tolde pes pigis to  
his lord: pāne ye hōsebonde man  
was wozy: & seide to his seruant:  
go out sibype into ye grete stre  
tis & lmale strectis of ye citee: &  
byngge ym hīdū: poze mē & feble.  
blynde & crokid: & ye seruant seide  
lord it is don as you hast comā  
did: & zit y is a wozyde place: and  
ye lord seide to ye seruant: go out  
into weyes & heggis: & constrey  
ne mē to entri: pat my hous be  
fulfilid: for y seye to zōn: y noon  
of yo men pat ben depid: shal  
taste my soper: and moche peple  
wente wy hy: & he turnede & se  
ide to hē: if omy man comep to me  
& haty not his fadr: & modr: &  
wyf & lones: & byrpen & sultris:  
& zit his owne hyf: he may not be  
my dūtple: and he pat berip not  
his cross: & comep after me: may  
not be my dūtple. **¶** For who of  
you willge to bylde a tour: wher  
he firste sitte not: & fōitcey pe  
spenlis y ben nedeful: if he hanie  
to parfoin me: lest after y he hap  
lett ye fundamēt: & mōw not p  
foin me: alle pat seen bygynne  
to storne hi & seye: for pis mā bigā



to bilde: & myzte not make an  
ende: or what kyng pat wole  
go to do a bateile aens anopn  
kyng. wher he sittip not furth  
& bryentip. if he may wry ten  
poulend go aens hy. pat couer  
aen hy wry tibenry poulend.  
elkas zit while he is aferr. he  
lendige a messenger. preier  
yo rigis pat ben of pees: so y  
foze ech of you pat forlaky not  
alle rigis pat he hay. may not  
be my duple. **S**alt is god. but  
if salt vanyshe: in what ryg  
shal it be sauerid: ney i erpe.  
ney in dughille it is profita  
ble. but it shal be cast out: he  
pat hay peris of heerig heer he.  
**A**ld pupph. **C. 26.**  
cans & synful me we  
ren neryuge to hym:  
to heer hi: & pe fariles & str  
bis gruachide: leyunge for vis  
rellepyer synful me: & ety  
wry hem: and he spak to he vis  
parable & seide: what ma of you  
pat hay an hūdrū theep. & if  
he hay lost oon of hem: wher  
he leenep not nyntip & nyne i  
desert. & gory to it pat perulthi  
de: til he fynde it: & whne he  
hay fōuden it. he ioyep & leip it  
on his shuldrys: and he comep  
hoom & clepy to gudre hile fre  
dis & nesebons & leip to hem:  
be ze glade wry me: for i haue  
fōude my theep. pat hadde pe  
rulthid: & i seie to you. so ioye  
shal be in heuene on o synful mā  
doynge penance: more ran on  
nyntip & nyne mīte pat han no  
nete to penance: or what wo  
mā haryge ten belaitis. & if

she hay lost o belait: wher she  
treadip not a lanterne. & tur  
ney uplodon ye hous. & sek  
diligently til pat she fynde it:  
and whne she hay fōuden: she  
clepy to gudre frendis & nese  
bons. & serip: be ze glade wry  
me: for i haue fōude ye belait.  
pat i hadde lost: so i seie to you.  
shal be bifoze angelis of  
god. on o synful mā doynge  
penance. **A**nd he seide a mā  
hadde tibeys sones: & zonger  
of he seide to ye fadir: fadir  
zyue me ye porcion of catel  
pat fallip to me: & he departide  
to he ye catel: & not aferr mā  
ny dayes. whne alle rygis we  
ren gedrud to gudre: & zonger  
sone wente fory in pilgryma  
ge ito a ferr kūtze: and pere  
he wastide hile goodis: in lūp  
ge lecherously: and aferr pat  
pat he hadde endid alle rygis: a  
strong hūgr was maid i pat  
cūtze: & he bigan to haue ned  
& he wente & droug hym to oon  
of ye cutespnes of pat cūtze:  
and he sente hi into his tobb:  
to fede swyn: & he coneytude to  
fille his wombe of ye coddis  
pat ye hoggis eeten: & no mā  
zak to hi: & he tuede aen into  
hi silt: & seide: how many hūdrū  
me in my fadis hous han plen  
te of loones: & i perulthe her  
poris hūgr: i shal ryle up  
& go to my fadir: & i shal seie  
to hi: fadir i haue synned to  
heuene & bifoze pee: & now i  
am not wozpi to be depid y  
sone: make me as oon of ym  
hūdrū me: & he roos up & cam

to his fadir: & whne he was in  
aferr: his fadir sez hi: & was  
aferr by mercy: and he ran &  
fel on his necke: & kyside hym:  
and ye sone seide to hi: fadir i  
haue synned into heuene & bifoze  
ye: & now i am not wozpi to  
be depid y sone: and ye fadir  
seide to his seruantis: libye bri  
ge ze fory ye firtte stoole: & clo  
pe ze hym: & zyue ze a ryg i his  
hond: & shoon on his feet: and  
bryunge ze a fat calf & slee ze:  
& ete we & make we feste: for  
vis my sone was deed: & hay ly  
ued aen: he perulthide: & is  
fōuden: & alle men bigūnen  
to ete: but his eldre sone was  
in ye feeld: & whne he cam &  
neryete to ye hous: he herde a  
symfoupe & a croude: & he de  
pide oon of ye seruantis: & as  
ide what pes rygis were: & ho  
seide to hi: y broyr is comū.  
& y fadir slou: a fat calf: for  
he rellepyede hi sat: & he was  
wzop: & wolde not come yu:  
perfoze his fadir zede out: &  
bigan to preie hi: & he anlybe  
ride to his fadir & seide: lo so  
many zerris i serue pee: & i  
neue brak y comandemēt: &  
you neuere zoue to me a kide:  
pat i wry my frendis shulde  
haue etū: but aferr pat vis y sone  
pat hay deuourid his sub  
stance wry hoozis cam: y hast  
slayn to hym a fat calf: & he  
seide to hi: sone y art ouer mo  
re wry me: & alle my rygis be  
yue: but it bihozte to make fe  
este & to haue ioye: for vis y  
broyr was deed: & lyuede aen:

he perulthide & is fōuden. **C. 27.**  
**A** seide also to hile dūti  
pho: ver was a ryche  
mā pat hadde a baylyf:  
and vis was defamed to hi: as  
he hadde wastid his goodis: & he  
depide hym & seide to hy: what  
heer i vis ryg of pee: & zelde  
rekenunge of y baylyf: for you  
myzt not now be baylyf: & ye  
baylyf seide wry yue hy silt: wry  
shal y do: for my lord taky atsey  
fro me ye baihe: & deue may y  
not: i shame to bege: i woot  
what i shal do: pat whne i  
am remoued fro ye baylyf: yei  
rellepye me into her hous: yei  
foze whne alle ye dettouris of  
his lord were depid to gudre:  
he seide to ye firtte: how moche  
owist you to my lord: and he  
seide: an hūdrū barels of oyle:  
& he seide to hi: take y caucion:  
& sette sone & wryt fyfety af  
turward he seide to anopn: &  
how moche owist you: which  
answeride an hūdrū corys of  
whete: & he seide to hym: take  
y lettris: & wryt foure stoze:  
& ye lord preilede ye baylyf of wic  
kidnesse: for he hadde don prudēt  
ly: for ye sones of vis world. ben  
more prudent in her genacion:  
pan ye sones of lyt: & i seie to  
you: make ze to you frendis of  
ye richesse of wickidnesse: pat  
whne ze shulen fayle: yei rel  
lepye you into euillatige taber  
natis: he p is trewe in ye leeste  
rig: is trewe also in ye moze:  
& he pat is wickid i a lytel ryg:  
is wickid also in ye moze: perfoze  
if ze were not trewe in ye wic



ked ying of richess. who shal bita  
ke to you pat pat is verrey. & if  
ze weren not treike in ope menis  
ying. who shal yme to you pat  
pat is you. **N**o seruant may  
serue to tibe lordis. for ep he  
shal hate peton. & loue petoy.  
epir he shal drabe to petoon &  
shal dispile petoy. ze moir not  
serue to god & to richess. but pe  
farlees pat weren couenoune.  
herde alle pes pigis. & pei doz  
nyden hi. & he seide to he. ze it be  
pat nustien you bifoze me. but  
god hay knowen your hertis.  
for pat pat is hyz to men. is ab  
hominacion bifoze god. ye laue  
& pfetis. til to noon. fro pat ty  
me ye reuine of god is euage  
lid. & ech man doy violence to  
it. forsoy it is lyter heuene & er  
re to palle. pan p'o titil falle fo  
re laue. **E**ueri ma pat forsa  
kip his wyf. & weddy anoper.  
doy lecherie. and he p'weddy  
pe wyf forsa. n of pe hole boude.  
doy auoutrie. **H**er was a ry  
che man & was clopid in purp  
& whit silk. & eet every day sthy  
myt. & p' was a beggere lalarus  
by name. pat lay at his zate ful  
of bplis. & couenide to be fulfil  
lid of pe crumes pat fillen dou  
fro pe ryche man's boord. & uo  
ma zaf to hi. but hoindis came.  
& lufede his bplis. & it was don  
pat pe begger diete. & was born  
of angelis into abrahams bosum.  
and pe ryche man was deed allo.  
& was buried in helle. & he reside  
his yzen whane he was in tur  
mentis. & layz abrahams aferr.  
& lalarus in his bosum. & he cried

& seide. fadir abrahams haue mern  
on me. & seide lalarus p' he dyd  
pe ye ende of his fygur in wat  
to kele my tuge. for i am turme  
tid in pis flambme. and abrahams  
seide to hym. soue haue mynde.  
for you hast resseyned gode p'  
gis in pi lyf. lalarus also yuel  
p'gis. but he is uois conforid.  
& you art turmentid. and i alle  
pes pigis. a greet derk place  
is stablishid bifoze us. & you  
pat pei p' wolen fro heims palle  
to you. moir not. ney fro pe  
nis palle on lydir. & he seide.  
p'ane i p'reye pee fadir. pat p'  
seide hym into pe hous of my  
fadir. for i haue fyne byperen.  
pat he wituelle to he. lest also  
pei come into pis place of tur  
mentis. and abrahams seide to hi.  
pei han moysen & pe pfetis. he  
re pei hem. & he seide. uay fadir  
abrahams. but if ony of deede me  
go to hem. pei shulen do penan  
ce. & he seide to hi. if pei heere  
not moyses & profetis. neyr  
if ony of deede men ryse azen. pei  
shulen beleue to hy. **E**ueri  
**A**nd ihi seide to hys dis  
ciples. it is impossible.  
pat schandis come not.  
but uo to & pat ma. by whom  
pei comen. it is more p'fable  
to hym. if any lue stoon be put  
aboute his necke. & he be cast in  
to pe see. pan pat he stande  
oon of pes hyle. & ze heede you  
silk. & i biopur hay syned azen  
pee. blame hym. & if he do penan  
ce. forgyue hym. and if seueue  
syppis in pe day he do fyne azen  
pee. & seueue syppis in pe day. he

be conitid to pee. & seye it for pi  
fay me. forgyue you hy. and ye  
aposthis seiden to ye lord. encre  
esse to us fery. & ye lord seide.  
if ze han fery as ye corn of seue  
ney. ze shulen seye to pis more  
tre. be you drabn up bi pe roo  
te. & be ouer plantid into ye see.  
& it shal obeye to you. but who  
of you hay a seruant crynge or le  
sewunge oxis. which seip to hym  
whane he turney azen fro ye fe  
ld. anon go & fitte to mete. & a  
seip not to hym. make redy p' i  
soupe. & gude pee & serue me. whi  
le i ete & drynke. & after pis you  
shalt ete & drynke. wher he hay  
grace to pat seruant. for he dide  
pat pat he comandide hym. nay  
i gelle. so ze whane ze han don al  
le pigis pat ben comandid to you.  
seye ze we ben vnprofitable ser  
uants. we han don pat p' we  
ouyten to do. **A**nd it was don pe  
while ihe wente into ierlm. he  
passide p'ny. ye myddel of samar  
rie & galile. and whane he entrid  
into a castel. ten leprouse me ca  
men azen hy. whiche stood afer.  
& reuleden her vois & seiden. ihi  
comandour. haue mercy on us.  
& as he eys hem. he seide go ze lye  
we ze you to prentis. and it was  
don pe while pei wenten. pei we  
ren clenid. & oon of hem as he foz.  
p' he was clenid. wente aze mag  
nistunge god w' a greet vois.  
and he fel don on ye face bifoze  
his feet. & dide p'anktis. & pis  
was a samaritan. & ihe answere  
de & seide. wher ten be not clenid.  
& wher ben pe myne. p' is noon  
foundu p' turmede azen & zaf glorie

to god. but pis alien. and he seide  
to hym. ryse up go you. for pi fery  
hay maid ye laif. **A**nd he was  
ayid of pe farlees. whane pe reu  
me of god comey. & he answere  
de to hem & seide. ye reuine of god  
comey not w' asspyng. neyr  
pei shule seie. lo her. or lo yere.  
for lo ye reuine of god is w' me  
you. & he seide to hys disciphs. day  
es shulen come whane ze shule  
desire to se o day of man's lone.  
& ze shulen not se. & pei shule  
seye to you. lo heere & lo yere. nyle  
ze go. ney sue ze. for as lent sthy  
nyge from vndir heuene. sthyner  
into po pigis pat ben vndir heue  
ne. so shal man's lone be i his  
day. but fir st it byhoney hy to  
suffre many pigis. & to be repro  
ued of pis generacion. & as it was  
don in pe dayes of noe. so it sh  
al be in pe dayes of man's lone.  
pei eeten & drunken. weddide wy  
ues. & weren you to weddiges.  
til into pe day i pe which noe en  
tride into pe sthy. & pe greet flo  
od cam & losse all. als as it was  
don in pe dayes of loth. pei eete  
& drunken. bouzten & selden. plan  
tiden & bildeden. but pe day p' loth  
wente out of sodom. ye lord rey  
nede fyer & bymston fro heue  
ne & losse alle. lyk pis pig. it shal  
be. in what day man's lone sh  
al be stheuid. in pat hour he y  
is in pe roof & his vessels i pe hous.  
come he not don to take hem a  
wey. & he pat shal be in pe feeld.  
also turue not azen bihynde. be  
ze unynde ful of pe wyf of loth. who  
euere seke to make his lyf laif.  
shal lese it. and who euer lese hy



it: that quene it / but / I seie to  
you / in pat myt tveyme shulen  
be in o bed / oon that he tak-  
petop forlakun / tveye wmen sh  
ulen be grynige to gidre / peton  
that be takun / petop forlakun  
tveyme in aford. peton that be  
takun / petop left / rei answere  
I seye to hy / wher lord which  
seide to hem / wher ever ye body  
shal be: vidur shulen be gadrid  
to gidre also ye eghs. **C. xviij.**  
**A**nd he seide also to hem  
a parable / y it bihouer  
to preve ever more. I not  
raile. I seide / yer was a huge in  
a cite: pat dzedde not god. ney  
shamede of me / and a widowe  
was in pat cite: I she cam to  
hy / I seide / veger me of my ad  
ner sarie / and he wolde not long  
tyme but aft / pes pigis he seide  
wip yne hy sul / yon / I dzedde not  
god. I shame not of man: neye  
les for pis widowe is lew to me.  
I that venge hy / left at ye laste  
she coungge condeyne me / I ye  
ye lord seide: heere ze what ye  
domelma of wikkidnesse sey / I  
wher god that not to veriauce  
of pis choline crynge to hi myt  
I day: I that hane pacience in  
hem: sopehy I seie to you: for soo  
ne he that do veriauce of hem.  
**A**nd peles gellit you pat manes  
sone coungge that fynde fery in  
erpe: and he seide also to su men  
pat tristete in hem silt as rei we  
ren rgtful. I dispuliden ope: pis  
parable seyge / tveyme me wen  
ten up into ye temple: to preve  
peton a farisee: I petop a pup  
pican / I ye farile stood I preide

by hi silt pete pigis I seide god  
I do panfigis to pee: for I am not  
as ope men raneymours. **C. xix.**  
anowtrers: as also pis puppi  
can / I faste tveyes in ye wote:  
I zyne types of alle pigis / I ha  
ne in possession / and ye puppica  
stood a fer: I wolde ney reyle his  
pyen to heuene / but smoot his  
brest: I seide / god be merciful to  
me syner / treuly I seie to you:  
pis jete down into his hous I was  
nustified fro ye of / for ech pat en  
hailly hy: that be mad lowz / I he  
pat meky hy: that be enhaulid  
**A**nd rei brousten to hy zonge  
children: pat he shulde touche  
hem / and whne ye dupleis say  
en pis pig: rei blamede he / but  
iht depue to gidre he I seide / out  
fre ze childre to come to me: I  
nole ze forbete hem / for of of eu  
che is ye kygdom of heuene: treu  
ly I seie to you: who eie that not  
take ye I kygdom of god as a ch  
ild: he that not ent: into it / and  
a pnce aride hy I seide / gode maul  
tar in what yng: doynge: that  
I weelde euclastynge lye: I the  
seide to hy / what seist you me go  
od / no man is good but god alon  
ne / you knowit ye commande me  
tis / you that not sle: you that  
not to lecherie: you that not do  
vette: you that not leye fall w  
nestynge: wozthipe yi fadir / I  
modir which seide / I hane kept  
alle pes pigis fro my zongye / I  
whne pis yng was herd iht sei  
de to hy / at o yng failep to pee  
selle you alle yngis pat y last  
I zyne to poze me: I you that  
hane tre four in heuene I come

I have y me / whne pes pigis  
weren herd: he was sorweful:  
for he was ful ryche / and iht se  
yngge hy mead soz: seide / how  
hard rei pat han money: shule  
entre into ye kygdom of god / for  
it is lytel a camel to passe pur:  
a needhis yre: van a ryche man  
to entre into ye kygdom of god /  
I rei I herden pes pigis: seiden  
who may be maid saaf / I he sei  
de to hem / yo yngis pat ben in  
possible anentis me: ben possi  
ble anentis god / but petre sei  
de / lo we han lest alle pigis: I  
han suwed pee / and he seide to hy  
treuly / seye to you / y is no ma  
pat that forlake hous or fadir  
I modir: or byren or wyf or chil  
dren or feoldis for ye rewme of  
god: I that not relleyne many  
mo pigis in pis tyme I in ye wo  
ld to coungge euclastynge lye  
I And iht took his twelue displa  
I seide to he / lo we goen up to  
ierhu: I alle pigis shule be en  
did pat ben wntu by ye profe  
tis of manns sone / for he that  
be bitrayed to heven me: I he  
that be stoned I stongid I bi  
spat / and afur pat rei han sto  
gid: rei shulen sle hy: I ye prid  
de day he that ryle asen / I rei  
vndr stoden no pig: of rese / I  
pis word was hid fro hem: I rei  
vndr stoden not yo pigis pat  
weren leid / but it was don wha  
ne iht cam myt to ierico: a bynd  
man sat byspdis ye weye I beg  
gide / I whne he herte ye peple  
passige: he aride what pis was  
and rei seiden to hy: pat iht of  
nazareth passide / I he cryede I

seide / iht ye sone of dany: hane  
mercy on me / And rei pat wen  
ten bifoze blamyden hym: pat  
he shulde be stille / but he crye  
de moche ye moze / you sone of da  
ny: hane mercy on me / and iht  
stood I comaudide hi to be broust  
forp to hy / and whne he cam myt:  
he aride hym I seide / what wote  
you pat / I that do to pee: I he sei  
de lord pat I se / and iht seide to hy  
bihoold: yi fery hay mead ye saaf  
and anoon he say: I suete hym  
I magnifyede god / and al ye pe  
ple as it say: zat heriyng to god  
**A**nd iht turne **C. xx.**  
de asen I walkide to jeri  
co / and lo ama sache bi  
name: I pis was a pnce of pup  
pican. I he was ryche / I he lous  
te to se iht who he was: I he myt  
te not for ye peple: for he was ly  
til in statut: I he ran bifoze I an  
ede into a spcomour tre: to se hy  
for he was to passe fro yems / and  
iht biheeld up whne he cam to ye  
place: I say hym I seide to hy / sache  
haafte pee I come don: for to day  
I moot dwelle in yin hous / I he  
hyngge cam don: I wryge relley  
uede hy / I whne alle men sayen:  
ye gruathiden seyge: for he hadde  
turned to a synful man / but sache  
stood I seide to ye lord / lo lord I zy  
ne ye half of my good to poze me  
and if I hane ony pig defraudid  
ony man: I zelde foure so moche  
iht lery to hy / for to day heelp  
is mead to pis hous: for pat he is  
abrahams sone / for manns sone  
cam to seke I make saaf pat pig  
pat perithide **A**nd whne rei herde  
pes yngis he addide I seide a pa



U.  
rable for þat he was myȝ ierlm.  
⁊ for þe geſchide þat anon þe kyng  
dom of god ſhulde be ſcheſid. þe  
foze he ſeide. a worpi mā wente  
into aſer cūtre. to take to hym  
a kyngdom ⁊ to turne aȝen. and  
whiȝe his ten ſeruauntis weren  
clepid. he ȝaf to hem ten beſai-  
tis. ⁊ ſeide to hem. chaſſar ȝe. til  
i come. but his cite ſeynes hatide  
hy. ⁊ leuten a meſſanger aſtir  
hym. ⁊ leiden. we wolen not þat  
he regne on vs. and it was douȝt  
he turnede aȝen. whiȝe he hadde ta-  
ke þe kyngdom. and he comaūde  
his ſeruauntis to be clepid. to whi-  
che he hadde ȝyne money. to wi-  
te how moche ech hadde wȝne  
by chaſſar. ⁊ þe fiſte cam ⁊ ſei-  
de. lord. þi beſaiit hay wȝne ten  
beſaiitis. he ſeide to hy. wel be þi  
good ſeruaunt. for in lytel piȝ þi  
haſt be trewe. þou ſhaſt be ha-  
uyȝe power on ten citees. ⁊ þe  
topir cam ⁊ ſeide. lord. þi beſaiit  
hay maad fyue beſaiitis. ⁊ to þis  
he ſeide. ⁊ be þou on fyue citees.  
⁊ þe pridd cam ⁊ ſeide. lord. lo þi  
beſaiit þi hadde putt up in a ſu-  
darie. for i dradde þee. for þou  
art a ſterne mā. þi takit away.  
þat þat þou ſettideſt not. ⁊ þou  
repiſt þat þat þou haſt not. ſo  
wiȝ. he ſey to hy. wickid ſeruaunt  
of þi moȝ. i deme þee. whatiſt  
þou þi. i am a ſterne mā. takige  
away þat piȝ. þat i ſettide not.  
⁊ repiȝe þi ring. þat i ſeiȝ not.  
and whi haſt þou not ȝoniȝ my  
money to þe boord. ⁊ i comiȝe  
ſhulde haue aȝid it wiȝ. whiȝis.  
⁊ he ſeide to men. ſtondige myȝ.  
take ȝe away fro hy. þe beſaiit.

⁊ ȝyne ȝe to hym þat hay ten be-  
ſaiitis. ⁊ þei ſeiden to hym. lord.  
he hay ten beſaiitis. ⁊ þei ſeiden  
to hy. lord. he hay ten beſaiitis.  
and i ſeie to ȝou. to ech mā þi hay.  
it ſhal be ȝoniȝ. ⁊ he ſhal encre-  
ſe. but fro hy þat hay not. alȝ  
þat piȝ. þat he hay ſhal be takit  
of hy. nepeles bȝynȝe ȝe hyȝ.  
þo myȝe enemyes þat wolden  
not þat i regnele on hem. ⁊ ale  
ȝe biſore me. and whiȝe þe pi-  
ȝis weren ſeid. he wente biſore  
⁊ ȝete up to ierlm. and it was  
don whiȝe he cam myȝ to bechſa-  
ge ⁊ betanye at þe moȝ. þat is  
clepid of olyuete. he ſente hile two  
diſciplis ⁊ ſeide. go ȝe into þe caſtel.  
þat is aȝens ȝou. into whiȝ. as ȝe  
entren ȝe ſhulen fynde a colt of  
a alle tyed. on whiȝ. neie man  
ſat. vntiȝe ȝe hy. ⁊ bȝynȝe ȝe  
to me. ⁊ if ony mā aȝe ȝou whiȝ  
ȝe vntiȝen. þis ȝe ſhulen ſey to  
hy. for þe lord deliȝeȝ his weȝ. ⁊ þei  
þat weren ſent. wente forȝ. and  
fonden as he ſeide to he. a colt ſton-  
dige. and whiȝe þei vntiȝeden þe  
colt. þe lordis of it ſeide to he. whiȝ  
vntiȝen ȝe þe colt. ⁊ þei ſeiden for  
þe lord hay uete to hym. ⁊ þei led-  
den it to hy. and þei caſtige her  
cloȝis on þe colt. ⁊ ſetten hy on  
hy. ⁊ whiȝe he wente. þei ſtre-  
widen her cloȝis in þe weȝ. ⁊  
whiȝe he cam myȝ to þe comiȝe.  
doȝ of þe moȝ of olyuete. alle  
þe peple þat cam doȝ biȝimen  
to ioȝe ⁊ to herie god wiȝ greet  
vois. on alle þe uertues þat þei  
hadden ſeyȝ ⁊ ſeide. bleſid be þe  
kyȝ. ⁊ comeȝ in þe name of þe  
lord. þees in heuene. ⁊ glorie in

hize piȝis. ⁊ ſinne of þe ſarile  
es of þe peple. ſeiden to hym.  
maſtir. blame þi diſciplis. ⁊  
he ſeide to hem. i ſeye to ȝou. for  
if þes ben ſille. ſoones ſhule  
crye. and whiȝe he neȝede. he  
ſeyȝ þe citee. ⁊ wepte on it. ⁊ ſei-  
de. for if þou haſdiſt knowȝe. þi  
ſhuldiſt wepe alȝ. for in þis  
day þe piȝis ben in þees to þee.  
but now þei ben hid fro þi ȝen.  
but dayes ſhulen come in þee.  
⁊ ȝyne enemyes ſhulen enȝrow-  
ne þee wiȝ a pale. ⁊ þei ſhulen  
go aboute þee. ⁊ make þe ſtreit  
on alle ſidis. ⁊ caſte þee doȝ to þe  
erpe. ⁊ þi ſones þat ben in þee.  
and þei ſhulen not leene in þee.  
a ſoon on a ſoon. for þou haſt  
not knowȝ. þe tyme of þi viſita-  
cion. and he entride into þe tem-  
ple. ⁊ biȝan to caſte out men  
ſelȝynȝe. þe rine ⁊ bȝynȝe ⁊ ſeide  
to hem. it is writen. þat myȝ hous  
is an hous of preyer. but ȝe han  
mad it a den of peues. ⁊ he was  
techiȝe euȝ day in þe temple. ⁊  
þe pȝnces of þe pȝtis ⁊ þe ſcribis  
⁊ þe pȝnces of þe peple. ſouȝte to  
leeſe hy. ⁊ þei fonden not what  
þei ſhulden do to hym. for al þe  
peple was occupied ⁊ herde hym.  
and it was. **C. xii.**  
don i oon of þe dayes whiȝe  
he taȝte þe peple in þe temple. ⁊  
prechiȝe þe goſpel. þe pȝnces of  
þe pȝtis ⁊ ſcribis camen to gȝdre  
wiȝ þe eldȝe me. ⁊ þei ſeiden to hy.  
ſeie to us in what power þi doſt  
þes piȝis. oz who is he þat ȝaf to  
þee þis power. ⁊ he anſweride  
⁊ ſeide to hem. ⁊ i ſhal aȝe ȝou  
oo word. anſwere ȝe me to was

þe baptym of john. of heuene.  
oz of men. ⁊ þei ȝouȝten wiȝ me  
hem ſilf. ſeiȝnȝe. for if we ſey  
en of heuene. he ſhal ſey. whiȝ  
vane bileuen ȝe not to hy. and  
if we ſeyen of me. al þe peple ſh  
al ſtoone vs. for þei ben certeyȝ.  
þi john is a pȝfete. ⁊ þei anſweri-  
den þi þei knewen not. of whiȝe  
it was. ⁊ he ſeide to he. neȝ. i ſeye  
to ȝou. in what power. i do þes  
piȝis. and he biȝan to ſeie to þe  
peple. þis parable. amȝ. plaȝide  
a vȝne ȝerd. ⁊ hyȝide it to tiliȝis.  
⁊ he was in pilȝrymage long ty-  
me. and in þe tyme of gadȝ. of  
grapis. he ſente a ſeruaunt to þe  
tiliȝis. þat þei ſhulden ȝyne  
to hym of þe fruyt of þe vȝne  
ȝerd. whiȝe beeten hy. ⁊ leete hy  
go. voide. and he ȝouȝte ȝit to ſen-  
de anoy ſeruaunt. ⁊ þei beete þis  
⁊ turnetiden hy ſoon. ⁊ leete hy  
go. and he ȝouȝte ȝit to ſende. þe  
pridd. ⁊ hy alȝ. þei wouȝde ⁊ cal-  
tide hy out. and þe lord of þe vȝ-  
ne ȝerd ſeide. what ſhal i do. i  
ſhal ſende my dereſt ſone.  
þe anetȝur. whiȝe þei ſeen hy. þei  
ſhulen dȝede. and whiȝe þe tili-  
ȝis ſeyȝ hy. þei ȝouȝte wiȝ þe  
he ſilf ⁊ ſeiden. þis is þe eyȝ. ale  
we hy. þat þe eritage be ouȝe.  
⁊ þei caſtide hy out of þe vȝnȝerd.  
⁊ killede hy. whiȝ. ſhal vane þe lord  
of þe vȝnȝerd do to hem. he ſhal  
come ⁊ dȝitȝe þes tiliȝis. ⁊ ȝy-  
ne þe vȝnȝerd to oȝe. and whiȝe  
þis piȝ. was herd. þei ſeide to hy.  
god forbide. but he biȝeld he. ⁊  
ſeyde. what vane is þis þat is  
writen. þe ſoon whiȝ. me biȝdige  
reȝuede. þis is maad to þe heed



of re comen: ech þæt ſhal falle þæt  
ſoon: ſhal be to byþid: but on  
whom it ſhal falle: it ſhal alto  
breke hym: & þe pntes of preſtis  
& tribis ſouȝten to lepe on hym  
hondis in þat our: & þei drede  
þe peple: for þei kneten: þæt to  
hem he ſeide þis liſeneſſe: & þei al  
pȝeden & ſenten alþieris: þat  
feþnele hem miſt: þat þei ſhul  
den take hi in word: & bitake hi  
to þe power of þe pntes: & to þe  
power of þe miſtre: & þei aſide  
hym & ſeiden: maſtir we wite  
þat riȝtly þou ſeist & techiſt: & þæt  
taſt not þe pſone of mā: but  
þou techiſt in treipe þe weye  
of god: is it leſful to us: to ȝiue  
tribut to þe empour or nap: &  
he biheold þe diſſent of hem: and  
ſeide to he: what tēpen ze me:  
ſhewe ze to me a penny: whos  
mage & ſupliripcion haȝ it: þei  
anſweriden & ſeide to hi: þe emp  
ouris: & he ſeide to he: ſeide ze þe  
fore to þe empour: þo pigis þat  
ben þe empouris: & þo pigis þat  
be of god: to god: & þei miȝte not  
reþroue his word: biſore þe pe  
ple: and þei wondre in his an  
wer: & heelden þees: & ſume of  
þe ſaducees þæt wȝeden þe aȝen  
ryſig: fro deȝ to hi: camen &  
ariden hi & ſeide: maſtir moyses  
wȝoot to us: if þe broȝ of ouȝ  
mā haue a wyf & be deed: & he wȝ  
wȝouten eȝres: þat his broȝ  
take his wyf: & reple ſeed to his  
broȝer: & ſo þei were ſeuene bra  
peren: þe fiſte took awyȝ: & is  
deed: wȝouten eȝres: & þe broȝ  
ſynge took hi: & he is deed wȝ  
outen ſone: & þe pȝide took hi:

allo & alle ſeuene: & leſten not  
ſeed: but ben deed: & þe laſte of  
alle þe wȝman is deed: þæt  
þe ryſing aȝen: whos wyf of  
hem ſhal ſhe be: for ſeuene had  
den hi to wyf: and he ſeide to  
hem: ſones of þis world: wedde:  
& ben ȝoum to weddigis: but þei  
þat ſhule be had wȝm of þat  
world: & of þe ryſig aȝen fro deȝ:  
neȝr ben weddid neȝr wedde  
wȝnes: neȝ ſhule moue die  
more: for þei ben euene wȝm  
gels: & ben þe ſones of god: &  
þei be ſones of riſing: aȝe  
fro deȝ: & þat deede men ryſen  
aȝen: alſo moyses ſhewe biſi  
dis þe boȝiſh: as he ſey þe lord  
god of abrahan: & god of ſaac:  
& god of iacob: & god is not of  
deed me: but of lȝunge me: for  
alle me lȝuen to hi: and ſume  
of tribis anſwerige: ſeiden: maſ  
tir þou haſt wel ſeid: & þei durſte  
no more aȝe hi ouȝ pig: but he  
ſeide to hem: how ſeyen me eȝ  
to be þe ſone of dany: & dany  
hi ſilf ſey in þe book of pſalme:  
þe lord ſeide to my lord: ſitte þou  
on my riȝt half: til þat þæt putte  
ȝine enemyes a ſool of þi fe  
et: & þæt dany deȝp hi lord:  
& how is he his ſone: & in heȝng  
of al þe peple: he ſeide to hiſe  
diſcipulis: be ze war of tribis &  
wolen wandre in ſtoochs: & loue  
ſalutacionis in cheȝpȝ: & þe  
fiſte chaueris i ſynagogis: &  
þe fiſte ſittis: placis in feſtis:  
þat tenoure þe houſis of widowis:  
& feȝne long preȝig: þe ſhule  
take þe more danyacion:  
**A**nd he biheold

& ſey þo ryche me þat caſtlen  
her ȝiſtis into þe treſerie: but  
he ſey alſo a lytel þore widowe  
caſtinge ribey ferȝigis: & he  
ſeide: treuli: & ſey to ȝou þæt  
þore widowe: keete more þan  
alle me: for why alle yeſe of pig  
þat was plenteuous to hem: ſet  
ten to þe ȝiſtis of god: but þe  
widowe of þat pig þat ſet  
to hi: keete al hi lyſtode þat  
ſhe hadde: and why ſu me ſeide  
of þe temple: þæt it was aparen  
d wȝ goode ſtoones & ȝiſtis: he ſeide:  
þes pigis þat ze ſeen: dayes ſhule  
come in whiche a ſoon ſhal not  
be leſt on a ſoon: whiche ſhal not  
be diſtȝped: and þei ariden hi &  
ſeide: comādur: why ſhulen  
þes pigis be: & what toke he ſhal  
be whiche þei ſhule biȝȝne to be  
don: & he ſeide: ſe ze þat ze be not  
diſſeyued: for manȝe ſhule come  
in my name: ſeyge for i am: &  
þe tȝime ſhal neȝe: þæt nȝle ze  
go aȝer hem: and whā ze ſhū  
len heet: batelis & arȝnes wȝ  
neȝ nȝle ze be aȝerd: it bihouȝ  
fiſt þes pigis to be don: but not  
ȝit anon is an ende: þāne he ſei  
de to hem: folk ſhal ryſe aȝen folk:  
& reuene aȝen reuene: grete  
monȝis of erpe ſhulen be bi  
placis: & peſtilences & hȝgris:  
& dȝedis fro heuene: & grete to  
kenes ſhulen be: but biſore alle  
þes pigis: þei ſhulen ſette her  
hondis on ȝou: & ſhulen þiue  
bitaȝe into ſynagogis & kepi  
gis: dȝanȝge to eȝpigis: & to  
miſtis for my name: but it ſhal  
ſalle to ȝou into wȝtneſſig: & þæt  
putte ze in ȝoum heȝtis: not to þe

ke biſore: how ze ſhulen anſwere  
for i ſhal ȝȝne to ȝou monȝ &  
wȝldom: to whiche alle ȝoum ad  
uerſaries ſhulen not moue a  
ȝenānde: & aȝen ſey: & ze ſhule  
be takē of ſadur: & modur & biȝen  
& colȝis & frendis: & biȝeȝ þei  
ſhule tȝnȝete of ȝou: & ze ſhule  
be in hate to alle me: for my name:  
and an heer of ȝoum heet: ſhal not  
peruſhe in ȝoum: patience ze ſhū  
le weelde ȝoum ſoulis: but whiche  
ze ſhulen ſe ierlm be eȝȝrouned  
wȝ an ooſt: þāne wite ze þæt þe de  
ſolacion of it ſhal neȝe: þāne þei  
þat ben in iudee: fle to þe moȝteȝ  
and þei þat ben in þe myddel of it:  
go awȝe: and þei þat ben i þe tȝi  
treis: entre not into it: for þeſe  
ben dayes of uēiaȝe: þat alle pi  
gis þat ben wȝm: be fulſillid:  
& wo to hem þat ben wȝ childe:  
& noȝthen in þo dayes: for a gre  
et diſeſe ſhal be on þe erpe: and  
wȝappe to þis peple: & þei ſhule  
ſalle bi þe ſharȝneſſe of ſwērd:  
& þei ſhulen be lad þloneris to al  
le folkis: & ierlm ſhal be deſonlid  
of heȝen me: til þe tȝimes of na  
cionis be fulſillid: **A**nd to kenes  
ſhulen be in þe ſiȝne & þe monȝ  
& in þe ſterri: & i þe erpe ouȝeȝig  
of folkis for confuſion of ſoun of  
þe ſee: & of floodis: for me ſhule  
were dȝye forȝreȝe & abyȝȝȝȝ:  
þat ſhule come to al þe world:  
for vertues of heueneſ ſhulen  
be moued: and þāne þei ſhule ſe  
māns ſone comȝe in a cloude:  
wȝ greet power & maieſte: &  
whiche þes pigis biȝȝnen to be  
maȝd: biholde ze & reple ze ȝoum  
heedis: for ȝoum redeȝcion neȝȝȝ



and he seide to hem a likenesse / so  
ze ye fige tre & alle trees / whanne  
ye byngen forth nois of hem self  
fruyt. ze witen pat somer is nix  
so ze whanne ze seen pes pigis to be  
don: wite ze pat ye kyngdom of god  
is nix / treuly / I seie to you. / y<sup>e</sup> pis  
generacion schal not passe. til  
alle pigis be don / heuene & erpe  
schule passe. but my word is schule  
not passe / but take ze heede to you  
self. lest peruentur<sup>e</sup> your her  
tis be grend wip glotony & dri  
kenesse. & bilyness of pis lyf. &  
vilke day come sudeyn on you /  
for as a snare it schal come on al  
le me pat sitten on pe face of al  
erpe / verfore wake ze preiunge  
in ech tyme: pat ze be had worpi  
to fle alle pes pigis pat ben to co  
me & to stonde bifore mans lone  
& in dages he was techige in pe  
temple / but in mytis he zede out  
& dwelhte in pe moit pat is clepid  
of oluete / & al ye peple roos eer  
ly to come to hi i ye temple & to heer  
his word. **Thy** **Chap. xxiij**  
**A**d ye halp. **Thy** **Chap. xxiij**  
day of perf loones pat is  
leid past neyede: & ye pi  
ces of prestis & ye scribis souzten  
hon per schullen sle ihu / but per  
dredde ye peple / and sathanas  
entride into judas. pat was cle  
pid scarioth. con son of ye twel  
ue / and he wente & spak wip ye  
pnces of prestis & wip ye maiet  
tratis: how he schulde betraye  
hi to hem / and per ioyeden & ma  
den couenaunt: to zyne hym mo  
ney / & he bilyzte / and he souzte  
opoztmyte: to betraye hi wip  
outen peple / but ye dages of perf  
loones camen. in whiche it was

nede y<sup>e</sup> sacrifice of pass. wer  
slayn / and he sente petre & iohn  
& seide: go ze & make ze redy to  
ys ye pass. y<sup>e</sup> we ete / & ye ley  
den / wher wolt you y<sup>e</sup> we make  
redy / and he seide to he / lo whanne  
ze schulen entre into ye citee: a  
man berynge a vessel of warr.  
schal mete you / sime ze hi into pe  
hous. into whiche he entrey: & ze  
schulen seye to ye hostebonde man  
of ye hous / ye maistr seye to ye  
wher is a chaubre: wher I schal ete  
ye pass wip my discipulis: and he  
schal shewe to you a greet loupis  
place strewid: & ye re make ze re  
dy / and per zeden & fouden as he  
seide to he: & per maden redy ye pass  
and whanne ye omr was come: he  
sat to ye mete & ye twelue apost  
lis wip hi / and he leyde to hem  
wip desir / I haue desirid to ete w  
you pis pass: bifore pat I suffre  
for I seye to you. pat fro pis ty  
me I schal not ete it: til it be ful  
fillid in ye reuyme of god / & whanne  
he hadde take ye cuppe: he dide  
gracis & seide: take ze & departe  
ze among you / for I seye to you. y<sup>e</sup>  
I schal not drynke of ye kynde of  
ys wyne: til ye reuyme of god co  
me / and whanne he hadde take brede:  
he dide panctis & brak & zaf to he.  
& leyde / pis is my body: pat schal  
be zoun for you / do ze pis pig: in  
myde of me / he took also ye cuppe  
after pat he hadde loupid: & seide  
pis cuppe is ye newe testament  
in my blood: pat schal be shed for  
you / nepeles lo ye hond of hi pat  
betrayer me: is wip me a yeta  
ble / & mans lone goy: after y<sup>e</sup> it  
is determyned / nepeles we to

pat ma: by whom he schal be bry  
ed / and per bigynen to seke among  
hem. who it was of hem: pat was  
to do pis pig. **And** **stryf** was  
madd among he: which of hem  
schulde be seyn to be grettest / but  
he seide to hem / kyngis of hereue  
me: ben lordis of hem / and per y<sup>e</sup>  
han pouer on hem: ben clepid  
good doeris / but ze not lo / but he  
pat is grettest among you: be ma  
ad as zonger / and he pat is bifore  
goet: as a seruait / for who is gret  
ter: he pat littyt at ye mete. or he  
pat mynestreyt: wher not he y<sup>e</sup>  
sittyt at ye mete: & I am i ye myd  
del of you: as he pat mynestreyt  
and ze ben pat han dwelld wip  
me in my temptacions / and I  
dispoile to you: as my fadir hap dis  
poild to me a reuyme / y<sup>e</sup> ze ete &  
drynke on my boord in my reu  
yme: and sette on trones & deme  
pe twelf kyngedis of isrl / and  
ye lord seide to symon / lo satha  
nas hap arid you: y<sup>e</sup> he schulde ri  
dele as wheete / but I haue preied  
for pee: pat y<sup>e</sup> fery faile not / and  
you schil tyme comitid: confer me  
y<sup>e</sup> bryzen / whiche seide to hi / lord  
I am redy to go. into pson & in  
to deap wip pee / and he seide / I seie  
to per petre: ye tok schal not fro  
we to day: til you yues forsake y<sup>e</sup>  
you knowist me. **And** he seide  
to hem / whanne I sente you wipou  
ten sachel. & strypp & schoon: wher  
om pig faillde to you: & per seide  
no pig / verfore he seide to he / but  
now he pat hap a sachel: take also  
a strypp / and he pat hap noon: sel  
le his coote & bigge a siverd / for I  
seye to you pat it bifouney & pig

pis writu to be fulfilled in me / and  
he is arettid wip wicked me / for  
po pigis pat ben of me: han een  
de / and per seiden / lord lo twelue  
dis here / and he seide to hem / it is  
ynowis & he zede out: & wente afte  
ye custom into pe hyl of olyues: &  
ye discipulis hidden hym / and whanne  
he cam to ye place: he seide to hem  
preie ze lest ze entre into teptaci  
on / & he was takn away fro hem.  
so moche as is a stoon cast: and  
he knelede & preiede & seide / fadir  
if you wolt: do away pis cuppe fro  
me / nepeles not my wille be don:  
but ym / and an angel aperide to  
hi fro heuene: & confortide hi / and  
he was madd in agonye: & preiede  
ye lenger / & his swoot was madd  
as dropis of blood remygge dou in  
to ye erpe / and whanne he was risen  
fro preier: & was comi to hile dis  
cipulis: he fond hem slepige for he  
ynesse / & he seide to hem / what  
slepen ze: wyle ze & preie ze: pat  
ze entre not into teptacion / zit wh  
le he spak: lo a cuppan / and he y<sup>e</sup>  
was clepid judas con of ye twel  
ue: wente bifore he / and he cam  
to ihu: to kille hym / & ihc seide to  
hym / judas betrayest thou mans  
lone wip a coll: and per pat were  
aboute hi & spen pat y<sup>e</sup> was to co  
me: seiden to hym / lord wher we  
smyten wip siverd: & con of he  
smoot ye seruait of ye pnce of  
prestis: & kntide of his ryt eere /  
but ihc answerede & seide / suffre  
ze til hidur / and whanne he hadde tou  
chid his eere: he heclide hi / & ihc  
seide to he pat came to hy: ye pnc  
ces of prestis & magestratis of ye  
temple & eldre men / as to a peef



ze han gon out wip swerdis & sta-  
ues. whiche / was wip you eche day  
in pe temple. ze streiten not out  
hondis into me. but pis is your  
our & pe power of derfulness. and  
pei taken hy & ledde i to pe house of  
pe prynces of prestis. & petre suede  
hi a fer. and whiche a fier was kyn-  
delid in pe myddel of pe greet hois.  
ze pei saten aboute. petre was i  
pe myddel of hem. whom whiche a  
dampsel hadde leyn hym sittige at  
pe hys & hadde biholden hy. she sei-  
de. & pis was wip hym. and he de-  
nyede hym. & seide. woman / I knowe  
hi not. and after a litel. an oþer  
man sayd. & seide. & you art of he  
but petre seide. a man / I am not.  
and whiche a space was maid as  
of an our. an oþer after myde &  
seide. treuly pis was wip hy. for  
also he is of galile. & petre seide.  
man / noot what you seist. And  
anoon zit while he spak. ye col-  
treis. and pe lord turned azen.  
ze biheeld petre. & petre hadde my-  
de on pe word of ihu as he hadde  
seid for bifore pat ye forfrowe.  
yues you shalt denye me. & pe-  
tre zete out. & wepte bitterly. &  
pe me pat heelden hym. stornede  
hi & smyten hym. and pei blind-  
felden hym. & smyten his face.  
ze ariden hi. & seiden. arede you  
crist to us. who is he pat smoot  
pee. also pei blasfemyge seiden  
aens hym many oþe rygis. and  
as pe day was come. pe eldre  
me of pe peple. & pe prynces of  
prestis. & pe scribis came to gi-  
dre. & ledde hi into her conseil. &  
seiden. if you art crist. seie to us.  
and he seide to hem. if / I seie to

you. ze shulen not bilene to me.  
ze if / I seie. ze shulen not answere  
to me. ney ze shulen despyse me.  
but after pis tyme. manye shal  
shal be sitte on pe ritchale of  
pe vertu of god. perfore alle sei-  
den. pane art you pe sone of god.  
and he seide. ze seien par / I am.  
ze seiden. what zit desir we want  
neellig. for we yus self. han herd  
of his moyn. **C. xiii.**  
**A**nd al pe multitude of  
hem arisen & ledde hy to  
pilat. and pei bigynnen to accuse  
hym. & seiden. we han founden pis  
cunynge uplodou our folk. and  
forbedige tributis to be zoun to  
pe empyour. & seynge. yus self  
is crist. & sig. & pilat axide hi. & sei-  
de. art you king of ierusalem. & he  
answeride & seide. you seist. and  
pilat seide to pe prynces of prestis.  
ze to pe peple. / I fynde no ping of  
cause in pis man. & pei wore stre-  
ger. & seiden. he moneye pe peple.  
techege yus al iudee bigynnege  
fro galile til hidur. and pilat  
heerige galile. axide if he wer  
aman of galile. & whiche he knew.  
ze he was of pe power of eron-  
de. he sente hy to eronde. whiche  
was at ierusalem in yodages. and  
whiche eronde sayd ihu. he wyped  
ful moche. for long tyme he co-  
uertide to se hi. for he herd ma-  
ny rygis of hi. & hapide to se hi  
tokene to be do of hy. and he ax-  
ide hym i many wordis. & he an-  
sweride no ryg to hy. and pe pr-  
nces of prestis & pe scribis stoden.  
stode fastly accusige hym. but e-  
ronde wip his oost dispalide hym.  
ze stornede hi & clopide wip a whit

clou. & sente hym azen to pilat.  
and eronde & pilat were maid  
freddis fro pat day. for bifore pei we-  
ren enemyes to gidre. & pilat cle-  
pide to gidre pe prynces of prestis.  
ze pe maiestris of pe peple. &  
seide to hem. ze han brought to me  
pis man. as cunynge awei pe pe-  
ple. & lo / I axynge bifore you. fy-  
nde no cause in pis man. of yes ri-  
gis. in whiche ze accusen hy. ney  
eronde. for he has sent hi azen to  
us. & lo no ryg worpi of depe is  
don to hi. and pfore / I shal ame-  
de hym & delivere hy. but he wol-  
te nede delivre to hem oon bi ye fael-  
te day. and al pe peple criede to  
gidre & seide. do hi awei. & delivre  
to us barabas. which was sent  
into pson. for disturblig maid  
in ye citee. & for manlesse. and  
etelone pilat apak to hem. & wol-  
de delivre ihu. & pei vndercriede  
ze seiden. crucifie crucifie hi. & pe  
prynces tyme he seide to hem. for  
what yuel has pis don. / I fynde  
no cause of depe in hi. pfore / I sh-  
al chastise hi. & / I shal delivre. and  
pei contynueden wip greet vo-  
ces. axynge pat he shulde be cru-  
cified. & ye voices of hem woren  
stronge. and pilat tomede her  
axynge to be don. and he delivrede  
to hem. hi pat for walleping &  
seducion was sent into pson.  
whom pei ariden. but he bitook  
ihu to her wille. and whiche pei  
ledde hym. pei toke aua hym of oure  
nen comynge fro pe tou. & pei ley-  
den on hym ye cross. to bere af-  
ter ihu. and pei shabede hy mo-  
che peple. & wimen pat weple  
den & by morneden hy. & ihu tur-

nede to hem. & seide. douris of ie-  
rusalem. ze wepe on me. but we  
pe ze on you self. & on your lones.  
for lo dayes shulen come. & whi-  
che it shal be seyd. bledd be ba-  
reyn wimen. & wombis y han  
not born children. & ye tectis y  
han not zoun souke. pane pei shu-  
len bigynne to sepe to moirteyns.  
falle ze dou on us. and to finale  
hillis. keie ze us. for if in a gre-  
ne tre pei doen pes rygis. what  
shal be don in a drye. also oþer  
treys wiche me were led wip  
hy. to be slayn. and after pat pei  
cannen ito aplace pat is clepid  
of caluarie. pere ye crucified  
hi. and ye yenes. oon on ye ryg  
half. & yetop on ye lest half. but  
ihu seide. fadur forz yue he. for pei  
witen not what pei doen. & pei  
departide his cloys & kisten lot-  
tis. & ye peple stood abydinge. &  
ye prynces stornede hi wip he. &  
seiden. oþe men he made saif. ma-  
ke he hi self saif. if yis be crist. pe  
choine of god. and ye kisten neze  
den & storneden hym. & pfred to hi  
vynegre. & seiden. if you art crist.  
of ierusalem. make pee saif. and ye  
supplicon was writen ouer hi.  
wip greet lettris. & of latyn. & of  
chrew. yis is pe king of ierusalem.  
oon of pes yenes pat hangiden.  
blasfemyden hi & seide. if you art  
crist. make yis self saif. & vs. but pe  
tof answerige blamede hi & seide.  
ney you dredist god. y art i pe  
same dampnacion. and treuly we  
milly. for we han ressepyed wor-  
pi rygis to werke. but pis dide  
no ryg of yuel. & he seide to ihu.  
lord haue myd of me. whiche



þou comest ito þi kyngdome / & ihu sei-  
de to hy / treuly / seie to þee / þis  
day þou shalt be wyþ me i para-  
dis / and it was almeit þe liete  
our / & derkness were maid in  
al þe erpe into þe nyghte our / &  
þe lyme was madder / & þe veil  
of þe temple was to rent a tye /  
and ihu cnyge wyþ greet vois /  
seide / fadir into þi hondis / bi-  
take my spirit / & he seynge þes  
þyngis 3af wþ þe goft / & þe centu-  
rien seynge þat þis was  
don / glorified god & seide / verily  
þis man was iust / and al þe peple  
of þe pat weren þere to gidre at  
þis spectacle / & lizen þe þyngis þat  
weren don / lymteden her brestis  
& turnden azen / but alle his knowe  
stoden afer / & wyme þat suede  
hy fro galile / seynge þes þyngis /  
& lo aman joleph bi name of ar-  
mathe a citee of judde / was  
a decurion / a good man & a iust /  
þis man consentide not to þe cou-  
teil / & to þe dedis of hem / & he a-  
bood þe kyngdom of god / þis ioleph  
cam to pilat / & aside þe body of ihu  
& took it don / & wraþpide it in a cle-  
ne linnen cloþ / & leyde hi in a gra-  
ue heilun / in which not 3it ony man  
hadde be leid / & þe day was þe euyn  
of þe halidag / & þe saboth bigan  
to lhyne / & þe wyemen luynges  
þat camen wyth fro galile / syen þe  
grau / & how his body was leyd /  
& þe turneden azen & maden re-  
dy swete smellige spices & oyle  
metis / but i þe saboth þe restide  
afor þe comādemēt

**B**ut in oday of þe woke ful  
eerly þe camē to þe gra-  
ue / & bryngten swete smel-

lige spices / þat þe hadden arāid /  
and þe fōiden þe stoon turned a-  
way fro þe graue / and þe zeden  
yn fōiden not þe body of þe  
lord ihu / and it was don þe whi-  
le þe weren a stouped in rouȝt  
of þis þyng / lo twey men stoden  
bihdis hem i lhynges cloþ / and  
whiþe þe diedden / & boweden her  
semlant into þe erpe / þe seide  
to hem / what seken ze hy þat  
lyney wyþ dede me / he is not  
her / but is risen / haue ze myde  
how he spak to 3ou / whiþe he  
was 3it in galile / & seide / for it  
bi hoiey mann / sone to be bry-  
ht into þe hondis of dyful me  
& to be crucified / & þe rydde day  
to ryle azen / & þe biþouȝt on  
his wordis / & þe zeden azen fro  
þe graue / & tolden alle þes þyngis  
to þe enleuene / & to alle opere /  
þere was mary magdalen / & jo-  
ne / & marie of james / & opere  
wyme þat weren wyþ þe / þat  
seiden to aposthis þes þyngis / and  
þes wordis were seyn bifoze þe  
as madnesse / & þe bileuede not  
to þe / but petre roos up / & ran  
to þe graue / & he bowide down  
& 3e þe linnen cloþis luynges al  
oone / & he wente by hi self / &  
driȝt on þat þe was don / & 3id  
lo twyne of hem wenten i þat day  
into a castel / þat was fro ierlm  
þe space of sixty furlongis / bi  
name emāns / & þe spaken to  
gidre of alle þes þyngis þat hadde  
bisalle / & it was don þe while þe  
talkeden & luyte by hem self / &  
hi self neȝete & wete wyþ þe / but  
her 3en were holdū þat þe kene  
wen hym not / & he seide to hem

what ben þes wordis þat ze speke  
to gidre wandrynges / & ze ben  
lokeful / & oon whos name was  
cleofas / answerte & seide / þou  
þi self art a pilgrym i ierlm  
& hadt þou not knowū what þe  
gis ben don in it in þese dayes /  
to whom he seide / what þyngis /  
& þe seide to hi / of ihu of nālaŕeth  
þat was ama pfete myȝti in  
work & word / bifoze god / & al þe  
peple / and how þe hȝette prestis  
of oure þynges broken hy into  
dāpnatiō of deȝ / & crucified  
hi / but we hopiden þe shulde  
haue azenbouȝt isrl / & now on  
alle þes þyngis / þe rydde day is  
to day / þat þese þyngis were don /  
but allo summe wyme of ou-  
ris maden us asceid / whiche  
bifoze day weren at þe graue /  
and whiþe his body was not fōi-  
dū / þe camen & seiden / þe þe fi-  
zen also alyt of angelis / whiche  
seȝen þat he lyney / and summe  
of ouren weten to þe graue / &  
þe fōiden so / as þe wyme sei-  
den / but þe fōiden not hi / and  
he seide to þe / a frohs & slowe of  
herte / to bileue in alle þyngis þat  
þe pfetis han spokū / wher it bi-  
hoite not eit to suffre þes þyngis /  
& so to entre into his gloȝe / & he  
bigan at moyses / & at alle þe pro-  
fetis declaride to hem in alle scrip-  
turis / & iwerē of hi / & þe camen  
wyþ þe castel / whidur þe wente / &  
hemade cūtenānce þat he wolde  
go ferþere / & þe contrēyneden  
hi / & seiden / dwelle wyþ us for it  
driȝt to nyȝt / & þe day is now  
bōuid down / and he entride wyþ  
þe / & it was don while he sat at

þe mete wyþ hem / he took breod  
& blestide & brak & took to þe / &  
þe 3en of hem weren opeyn /  
& þe kene wen hi / and he vanys  
stide fro her 3en / & þe seiden to  
gidre / wher our herte was not  
bryngge in us / while he spak  
to us in þe weȝe / & openȝde to  
us a þyng / & þe risen op i þe  
same our / & wente azen to ie-  
rlm / & fōiden þe enleuene gedȝ  
to gidre / & hem þat were wyþ þe  
seynge / þat þe lord is risen veri-  
ly / & apperte to symon / & þe  
tolden what þyngis were don in  
þe weȝe / & how þe kene wen hi  
in bryng of breod / & þe  
while þe spaken þes þyngis / ihu  
stod in þe myddil of hem / & sei-  
de to hem / pees to 3ou / i am / ny-  
le zedȝe / but þe weren aȝray-  
ed & agast / & geliden þe to se-  
a spirit / & he seide to hem / what  
ben ze tronblid / & þyngis comē  
up into 3oure hertis / & ze nyȝ  
hondis & my feet / for i my self  
am / feele ze & se ze / for a spirit  
hay not flesch & boones / as  
ze seen þat i haue / & whiþe he  
hadde seid þis þyng / he stheride  
hondis & feet to hem / & 3it whi-  
le þe bileuēden not / & 3ondȝ  
den for ioȝe / he seide / han ze her  
ony þyng þat shal be etū / & þe  
pferiden hi a part of a falyth rol-  
tid / & an homȝ combe / & whiþe  
he hadde etū bifoze þe / he took  
þat þat leste & 3af to hem / &  
seide to þe / þes ben þe wordis  
þe i spak to 3ou / whiþe i was  
3it wyþ 3ou / for it is nede þe alle  
þyngis be fulfilled / þat ben wri-  
tū i þe lawe of moyses / & in þe







cuplis herden hym spekege: & sole  
widen ihu: and ihu turnede & spak he  
sniwige hi: & seip to hem: what seek  
ze: And sei leiden to hi: rabi: p is  
to sepe maistr: wher dwelst p:  
& he seip to hem: come ze & se: and  
pei came & spen wther he dwelli  
de: & dwelten wip hi pat day: & it  
was as ye tempe our: and andren  
pe brof of symonit petre was con  
of ye tweyne pat herde of john:  
& hadden sinved hi: p is soond first  
his broyr symonit: & he seide to hi:  
we han soude messias: p is to seie  
et: and he ledde hi to ihu: & ihu bi  
heeld hi: & seide: pon art symonit  
pe sone of whana: pon shalt be  
clepid cefas p is to seie petri: &  
on ye moxwe he wolde go out in  
to galile: & he soond filip: and he  
seip to hi: one pon me: filip was  
of bethsaida ye citee of andrew  
& of petre: filip soond nathanael:  
& seide to hi: we han soude ihu  
pe sone of joseph of nazareth:  
whom moyses woot in ye lawe  
& p etis: & nathanael seide to hi:  
of nazareth may sigood pig be:  
filip seide to hi: come & se: ihu sez  
nathanael comyge to hi: and  
seide to hi: lo verily a man of ihu:  
in who is no gyle: nathanael sei  
de to hym: wher of hast pon kno  
wit me: ihu answeride: & seide  
to hi: bifore p filip clepide pee  
whne pon wei vndir ye fyge tre:  
I sez pee: nathanael answeride  
to hi: & seide: rabi pon art ye  
sone of god: pon art kyng of isrl:  
ihu answeride & seide to hi: for I  
seide to pee: I sez pee vndir ye  
fyge tre: pon bileuest: p: thalt  
se moze pan pes pigis: and he

seide to hem: treuli treuli I seie  
to you: ze shal se heuene openyd:  
& ye angelis of god: sturunge up  
& comyge dou on mans sone:  
**A**nd ye radde: **A**nd ye weddigis weren  
maad in ye cane of gali  
lee: & ye modir of ihu was per  
and ihu was clepid & hile disti  
plis to ye weddigis: & whne wy  
faulde: ye modir of ihu seide to hi:  
pei han not wyn: and ihu seip to  
hi: what to me & to pee woma:  
my our cam not it: his modir  
seip to ye mynistis: what eue  
pig he seye to you: do ze & yere  
weren sett fixe stoonen canes  
astur ye densig of ye rewis: hol  
dige ech: tweyne erir ye metre  
tis: & ihu seip to hi: fille ze ye pot  
tis wip wat: & pei fillede he up  
to ye mouy: & ihu seide to hem:  
drawe ze now: & bere ze to ye ar  
chitrid: & And pei bareu: & whne  
ye architryn ladede tadd pe wat  
maad wyn: & wiste not wer of it  
was: but ye mynistis witten  
pat dzowen ye watir: ye archi  
trichyn clepy ye sponle & seip to  
hi: ech man settir first good wip:  
& whne me ben fulfild: pane pat  
pat is worle: but pon hast kept  
ye good wyn ito vis tyme: ihu  
dide pis ye bigynig of signes  
in ye cane of galile: & therside  
his glozie: and hile distiplis bile  
ueden ihu: astur pes pigis he cam  
dou to cazaruau: & his modir &  
hile brysen & hile distiplis: & pei  
dwelten pere not many daies:  
& ihu wente up to ierlm: and  
he soond in ye temple men sal

hge ori: & sheep & culuers: &  
changeris sitige: and whne he  
hadde maad as it wei: a stourge  
of suale cordis: he droof out alle  
of ye temple: & ori: & sheep: &  
he thadde ye money of change  
ris: & turnede upldou ye booz  
dis: and he seide to hem: pat seel  
den culuers take away fro hen  
nis pes pigis: & nyle ze make  
ye hous of my fadir: an hous  
of marchandise: & hile distiplis  
hadden mynde for it was wntu:  
ye feruēt loue of ym hous hap  
eti me: p fore ye rewis answe  
riden & seiden to hi: what took  
me thewist pon to us: p: you  
doist pes pigis: ihu answeride  
& seide to hi: vndo ze vis temple:  
& in yre dayes: I thal reile it:  
p fore ye rewis seiden to hi: I four  
ty & sire jcer vis temple was  
bildid: & thalt p in yre dayes rei  
le it: but he seide of ye temple  
of his body: p fore whne he was  
rili fro deyr: hile distiplis had  
den mynde: p he seide pes pigis  
of his body: & rei bileueden to ye  
scriptur: & to ye word pat ihu  
seide: and whne ihu was at ie  
rlm in pall: i ye feeste day: ma  
nye bileueden in his name: se  
yunge his signes pat he dide: but  
ihu trowide not hi self to hem:  
for he knew alle me: & for it wes  
not nede to hi: p ony ma shuld  
ber witnessig: for he wiste wh  
was in man: **A**nd per was aman of  
ye farilees: nicodeme  
by name a pnce of ye rewis: &  
he cam to ihu by nyte: & seide to hi:  
rabi: we witten pat pon art co

mun fro god maistr: for no ma  
may do pes signes pat p doist:  
but god be wip hi: ihu answeride:  
& seide to hi: treuli treuli I seie  
to pee: but ana be born azen: he  
may not se ye figdom of god:  
nycoteme seide to hi: how may  
ana be born: ihu whne he is  
eld: wher he may entre azen i  
to his modis wombe: & be born  
azen: ihu answeride: treuli treu  
li I seie to pee: but ana be born a  
zen of watir: & of ye body goft: he  
may not entre into ye figdom of  
god: pat pat is born of ye flesch:  
is flesch: and pat pat is born of  
ye spirit: is spirit: wondre p not:  
for I seide to pee: it bihouep you  
to be born azen: & ye spirit bre  
pir wher he wole: & pon heerst  
his vois: but pon woot not fro  
whems he come: ne whidur he  
goir: so is ech man pat is born of  
ye spirit: nycoteme answeride  
& seide to hi: how mayn pe se pigis  
be don: ihu answeride: & seide to hi:  
pon art a maistr: i ihu: & kno  
wist not pes pigis: treuli treu  
li I seie to pee: for we speken pat  
pat we witten: & we witnessen p  
pat we han seyn: & ze taken not  
our witnessig: if I hane seid to  
you erpely pigis: & ze bileue not:  
how if I seie to you heuenly pigis  
shulen ze bileue: & no ma strey  
into heuene: but he pat cam dou  
fro heuene: mans sone pat is i  
heuene: and as moyses aweride  
a serpent i desert: so it bihouep  
mans sone to be reild: p ech ma  
pat bileuep in hi perill he not:  
but hane etelastige hie: for god  
lonede so ye world: p he zaf his



don bigetū sone / p'ech mā pat bile  
ney in hī peritthe not: but haue  
euerlastige lyf / for god sente not  
his sone into ye world: p' he iuge  
ye world: but pat ye world be sa  
ued by hī / he pat bileney in hym  
is not demyd / but he pat bileney  
not: is now demed: for he bileney  
not in ye name of pe don bigetū  
sone of god: & pis is ye doom: for  
lyt cam ito ye world: & men lo  
ueten more derknessis vā lyt  
for her werkis werē yuele: for  
ech man pat doy yuele harme  
lyt / and he comey not to pe lyt  
pat hile werkis be not reponed  
but he pat doy treupe: comey  
to pe lyt: p' hile werkis be sthe  
wid: pat pei be don i god. **A**lle  
pes pigis ihe cam i hile distyph  
into ye lond of iudee: & per he  
diuellihe wy hem & baptiside  
& john was baptiside men non  
bi hydus salym: for many watr  
weren yere: & pei camē & werē  
baptisid / and iohu was not zit  
sent ito p'son. **F**ore a questi  
on was maid of iohu's distyphs  
wy pe ierwis of ye purificaci  
on / and pei camē to iohu: & sei  
den to hī / maist: he pat was w  
pee byonde jordan to whom y  
hast bozn witneissig: lo he bap  
tisey & alle mē comen to hī / iohu  
answeryde: & seide / amā may  
not take ony pig: but it be zo  
mi to hī fro heuene: ze you silt  
berē witneissig to me: p' y ley  
de / i am not cit: but p' i am lēt  
bifore hī / he pat hay a wyf: is  
ye holebonde / but ye frend of ye  
spoule: p' stondy & heery hī:  
ioyer wy ioye for ye vois of ye

spoule / p'fore in pis pig my ioye  
is fulfilled: it bihouey hī to ioye:  
but me to be maid laile / he pat  
cam fro aboue: is aboue alle /  
he pat is of ye erpe: apely of ye  
erpe / he pat comey fro heuene:  
is a bone alle / and he witneissig  
pat pig pat he hay seyn & herd: &  
no man taky his witneissig: but  
he pat taky his witneissig:  
hay confermed pat god is s'p'st  
but he whom god hay sent: spe  
kyt pe wordis of god: for not to  
melin: god zyne pe sp'rit: ye  
fadir louey ye sone: & he hay zo  
mi alle pigis in his hond / he pat  
bileney in pe sone: hay euēlasti  
ge lyf / but he pat is vnbileful  
to ye sone: shal not se euēlastige  
lyf: but ye wyppye of god diel  
ley in hym. **T**herfore as ihu krys  
pat ye farilees herde: p'  
ihū makey & baptisid modistylis  
van iohu: pouz ihe baptiside not:  
but hile distyphs: he leste iudee:  
& wente azen ito galilee: & bihof  
te hī to passe by samarie: p'fore  
ihe cam into a citee of samarie:  
pat is leid licar: bi hydus ye place  
pat jacob zaf to jolep his sone:  
& ye welle of jacob was yer: &  
ihe was wery of ye iourney: &  
sat pus vpon ye welle: & ye ow  
was as it wer ye lyte: & a wo  
mā cam fro samarie: to drayn  
watur: & ihe sey to hir / zyne me  
drynk: & hile distyphs weren  
gon into ye citee: to bye mete  
p'fore pille woman of samarie  
sey to hī / how pou whie p' art  
a ierw: auzt of me drynk: pat  
am a womā of samarie: for

ierwis vside not to dele wyf sama  
ritans: ihe answeride: & seide to  
hir / if you wistit ye auzt of god:  
& who he is pat sey to pee zyne  
me drynke: you parauētir wol  
dist haue auzt of hī: & he schilde  
haue you to pee: quyl watur  
ye wōman sey to hī / sir: p' hast  
not wher yne to drayne: & ye put  
is deep: wher of pāne hast you  
quyl watur: **A**nd wher p' art  
grett van our fadir jacob: pat  
zaf to us ye pitt: & he drank  
of: & hile sones & hile beettis  
ihe answeride & seide to hir / ech  
mā pat drynk of pis watur:  
shal purite est sone: but he p'  
drynke of ye watur pat i shal  
zyne hī: shal not purite wypon  
ten ende: but ye watur p' i shal  
zyne hī: shal be maid in hym  
a welle of watur spryngyge up  
into euēlastige lyf: ye wōman  
sey to hī / sir: zyne me pis wat  
pat i yatte not: ney come hi  
dir to drayne: ihe sey to hir / go  
depe y holebonde: & come hdir  
ye wōman answeride: & seide  
i haue noon holebonde: ihe sey  
to hir / you seidist wel: p' i haue  
noon holebonde: for you hast had  
fynne holebondis: & he pat you  
hast: is not ym holebonde: pis  
pig you seidist sorely: ye wō  
man sey to hī / lord: i se: p' you  
art a p'fete: oure fadris wor  
shypte in pis hil: & ze seyen  
at ierlm is a place: wher it  
bihouey to worshypte: ihe sey  
to hir / wōman bileue pou to  
me: for ye our shal come: whā  
ne ney in pis hil: ney i ierlm ze  
shulen worshypte ye fadir: ze

worshypte pat ze knouen not:  
we worshypte pat pat we kno  
uen: for heelre is of ye ierwis:  
but ye tyme is comē & now it  
is: whāne trewe worshypters  
shulen worshypte ye fadir i sp'i  
rit & treupe: for also ye fadir se  
kyt suchē: pat worshypte hym:  
god is a sp'rit: & it bihouey hē  
pat worshypte hī: to worshy  
pe in sp'rit & treupe: ye wōman  
sey to hī / i woot pat melias  
is comū: p' is leid crist: p'fore  
whie he comey: he shal telle us  
alle pigis: ihe sey to hir / i am  
he pat spekyt wy p' & anon hile  
distyphs camē: & wondriden p'  
he spak wy ye wōman: nepeles  
no mā seide: to hī what seekit  
you: or what spekit you wy hir:  
p'fore ye wōman leste hir watur  
pot: & wente into ye citee & seide  
to po mē: come ze & se ze aman  
pat seide to me alle pigis: pat  
i haue don: wher he be cit: and  
yei wenten out of ye citee: & ca  
men to hī: yu pe meene while  
hile distyphs preieten hī & seide  
maistur ete: but he seide to hem  
i haue mete to ete: pat ze kno  
uen not: p'fore distyphs seiden  
to gidze: wher ony mā haue bz  
ouzt hī mete to ete: ihe sey to  
hem / my mete is: p' i do ye wille  
of hī pat sente me: p' i pat four  
me ye werk of hī: wher ze leyē  
not: p' zit four monepis ben:  
& rype corn comey: lo i seie to  
you: littey x'p you yzen & se ze  
ye feeldis: for now pei ben whē  
te to repe: & he pat repy: ta  
kyt hyre: & gadyit fruyt into  
euerlastige lyf: pat bore he pat



sony & he pat repy: hane ioye  
to gidze in pis pig is pe word  
trewe. for auopir is pat soly.  
f anof pat repy: f sente zoi to  
repe. pat pat ze han not traue  
hd: f ze han entrid into her tra  
uehs and of pat ctee many  
samaritanus bileneden in hy.  
for pe word of pe wōman pat  
bar witneſſig: f he seide to me  
alle pigis pat f hane done: f  
foze whine samaritans came  
to hi: pei prieden hi to dwelle  
pere and he dwelte pere twey  
dayes: f manpe mo bilenede  
for his word: f seide to pe wō  
man: f now not for pi speche  
we bilenen: for we han herd  
f we witen. f pis is verily pe  
saiyoir of pe world: and af  
tir twe dayes he wente out  
fro penus f wente into galile  
f he bar witneſſig: f a plete  
in his owne citre hap noon ho  
nom: f foze whine he cam ito ga  
lile: me of galile ressededen hi.  
whine pei hadden seyn alle pigis  
pat he hadde don i ierlm i pe feel  
te day. for also pei hadde come to  
pe feelte day: f foze he cam eft  
doone into pe cane of galile.  
where he made pe watir wyn.  
f had a litil big was: whos so  
ne was hē at castarnan: whine  
pis hadde herd f ihu shulde come  
fro iudee into galilee: he wete  
to hi f priede hi: f he shulde  
come don: f heele his sone: for  
he bigan to dye: f foze ihc seide  
to hi: but ze se tokenes f gre  
te woundris: ze bilene not: pe  
litel big seip to hi: lord come  
don: bifore p my sone dye: ihc

seip to hi: go: in sone hūer: pe  
mā bilenede to pe word pat ihc  
seide to hi: f he wente: f now  
whane he cam don: pe seruan  
tis camen azens hy. f telden  
to hi f seiden: f his sone lūede  
and he aride of he pe our: f wh  
ich he was amendid: f pei seide  
to hy: for iusterday in pe seuē pe  
our: pe feuer leste hy: f foze pe  
fadir knewe pat pilke our it was:  
in which ihc seide to hi: in sone  
hūer: f he bilenede: f al his how  
ihc dide eft pis secide tokene:  
whine he cam fro iude into galile.  
f ses pm. **A**GIS p was a feelte day  
of ierlm: f ihc wente  
op to ierlm: f in ierlm is a wa  
shing place pat in chreis is na  
med bethsaida. f hap fyne por  
chis in pise lay a greet multitu  
de of sike mē: blynde crokē f  
dye: abidige pe monyng of pe  
watir: for pe angel of pe lord  
cam don certeyne tymes into  
pe water: f pe watir was mo  
ued: and he pat first cam don  
into pe cisterne aft pe monyng  
of pe watir: was maad hool of  
what eu sike nelle he was hol  
du: f anna was pere hanngē  
eize f pratty zeer in his syf nel  
le: f whine ihc hadde seyn hy m  
luggyge f hadde knowū f he had  
de moche tyme: he seip to hy m  
wolt you be maad hool: f pe syf  
mā answerte to hi: lord f ha  
ne no mā f whine pe watir is  
moued: to putte me into pe sil  
terne: for pe while f come: an  
op goy don bifore me: ihc seip  
to hy: rise up: take pi bed f go

and andon pe mā was maad ho  
ol: f took vp his bed f wente for  
and it was sabat: in pat day: f  
foze pe ierlm seide to hi: pat was  
maad hool: it is sabat: it is not  
leefful to pee: to take away pi  
bed: he answerte to he: he pat  
made me hool: seide to me: take  
pi bed f go: f foze pei aride hy m  
what mā is pat: pat seide to p:  
take vp pi bed f go: but he pat  
was maad hool: wiste not why  
it was: and ihc boude a wey fo  
pe peple pat was sett in pe pla  
ce: after ward ihc found hi in pe  
temple: f seide to hy: lo pou art  
maad hool: now nyle pou do syn  
ne: lest ony woyle pig: bifalle to  
pee: pilke mā wente f telde to pe  
ierlm: f it was ihu f made hi hool.  
f foze pe ierlm pursinkede ihu:  
for he dide pis pig in pe sabat:  
f ihc answerte to he: my fadir  
worchip til now: f worche  
perfoze pe ierlm soure moze  
to sle hi: for not oonly he brake  
pe sabat: but he seide pat god was  
his fadir: f made hy euene to  
god: f foze ihc answerte: f seide  
to hem: treuly treuly f sepe to  
zoi: pe sone may not of hy self  
do ony pig: but pat pig: f he le  
ey pe fadir doynge: for what  
euer pigis he don: pe sone dony  
in lyk maner: vo pigis: for pe fa  
dir louey pe sone: f ihc wip to hi  
alle pigis pat he dony: and he sth  
al sthewe to hy m gretter werki  
pan pelse: f ze wondren: for as  
pe fadir reish deed me f quike  
ney: so pe sone qteney who he  
wolt: for ney pe fadir higer o  
my man: but hap zoi m ech don

to pe sone: f alle mē honoum: pe  
sone: as pei honoum pe fadir:  
he pat honoum not pe sone.  
honoum not pe fadir: pat seide  
hi: treuli treuli f seie to zoi: pat  
he pat heery my word f bileney  
to hi pat seide me: hap euilati  
ge lyf: and he comey not into dom:  
but passy fro deer into lyf: treu  
ly treuli f seie to zoi: for pe our  
comey f now it is: whine deed  
me shulen heer: pe vois of god  
dis sone: f pei pat heere: shule  
hyue: for as pe fadir hap lyf in  
hi self: so he zaf to pe sone to ha  
ue lyf in hi self: he zaf to hi polker:  
to make dom: for he is manis lo  
ne: nyle ze wondre pis: for pe our  
comey: in which alle mē pat be  
in biriel: shule heer: pe vois  
of godis sone: f pei pat hando  
goode pigis: shulen go into a  
zeu rylig of lyf: but pei pat han  
don yuel pigis: into azen rylig  
of dom: f may no pig do of my  
self: but as f heer: f deme: f my  
dom is nyl: for f seke not my  
wille: but pe wille of pe fadir: f  
seide me: if f bere witneſſig  
of my self: my witneſſig is not  
trewe: anof is pat berry wit  
neſſig of me: f f woot pat his  
witneſſig is trewe: pat he berry  
of me: ze senten to iohu: f he  
bar witneſſig to trewe: but f  
take not witneſſig of mā: but  
f sepe pes pigis: pat ze be saif:  
he was a braterne breynge: f  
shynge: but ze wolt not gla  
den at an our in his lizt: but f  
hane moze witneſſig pan iohu:  
for pe ierlm pat my fadir zaf  
to me to parfourme he: pilke



werkis pat / do beren wætnessig  
of me. pat pe fadir sente me / &  
pe fadir pat sente me: he bar  
wætnessig of me / neþ ze herden  
euer his vois: neþ ze syzen his  
liknesse / & ze han not his word  
dibelligē in zōn: for ze bilenen  
not to hi whom he sente / seke ze  
scripturis: in pe which ze ges  
sen to haue euilastige lyf / & po  
it ben pat beren wætnessig of  
me / & ze wolen not come to me:  
pat ze haue lyf / I take not cle  
renesse of me: but I haue kno  
wū zōn þe han not pe loue of  
god in zōn / I cam i pe name of  
my fadir: & ze tooken not me /  
if anow come in his owne name:  
ze ihūle resseyue hi / how moū  
ze bilene pat resseyue glorie ech  
of opir: & ze seken not pe glorie  
pat is of god aloone: nyle ze ges  
se þe / I am to acuse zōn anentis  
pe fadir: it is moyses pat acu  
sip zōn: in wihō ze hope / for if ze  
bilene to moyses: þanētne ze  
ihūlen bilene also to me / for he  
wzoot of me / but if ze bilene not  
to his letris: how ihūle ze bi  
lene to my wordis. // **c. vi.**

**A**far pes pigis ihc wen  
te ouer pe see of galile:  
pat is tiberias: & a gre  
et mēitide sinwede hi: for pei  
syzen pe tokenes þe he dide on  
hem pat werē sylke / þfore ihc  
wente into an hyl: & lat per wip  
hile dyluphis / & pe past was ful  
nyz: a feette day of pe ierwis /  
þfore wāne ihc hadde list vp his  
þzen: & hadde seyn pat a greet  
mēitide cam to hi: he seip to  
filip / wherof ihūlen we bpe

loones: þe pes me etc: but he sei  
de pis pig: tēptige hi / for he wā  
te what he was to do / filip an  
sweride to hi / pe loones of twē  
tyhid pens: ihūlen not to he:  
y ech man take a litil what / oon  
of hile dyluphis andren pe hro  
pīr of symon petre: seip to hi /  
a child is here pat hay fyne bar  
ly loones & twēty fyllthys / but  
what ben yese among so manie  
þfore ihc seip / make hem sitte to  
pe mete: & þwas moche hep in  
pe place / and so men saten to  
pe mete as fyne poulend in nū  
bre / and ihc took fyne loones:  
& whie he hadde do þankigis:  
he departide to me pat saten  
to pe mete: & also of pe fyllthys:  
as moche as pei wolden: & whie  
pei weren fillid: he seide to hile  
dyluphis / gadre ze pe rehys pat  
ben lest: y pei peristhe not: & lo  
pei gadre & filliden twelf cof  
fyns of rehse of pe fyne barly  
loones & twēty fyllthys: pat lete  
to hem pat hadde etū / þfore pe  
me whie pei hadden seyn pe sig  
ne pat he hadde don: seide / for pe  
is verily pe pfete pat is to co  
me in to pe world / and whie ihc  
hadde knowū: y pei were to co  
me to take hi & make hi kyng:  
he flez aloone eft into an hyl: &  
whie euentyd was comū: hile  
dyluphis wente don to pe see: &  
pei wente vp into a boot: & pei  
cannē oū pe see to cāfarnan: &  
derfneßis weren mad þane:  
& ihc was not come to he: & for  
a greet wynd blew: pe see roos  
vp / þfore whāne pei hadden ro  
wid as fyne & twēty synlon

gis or ynty: pei seen ihū wāte  
ge on pe see: & to be nyz pe boot  
and pei dreed: & he seide to hem  
I am: nyle ze dreed: þfore pei  
wolde take hi to pe boot: & anow  
pe boot was at pe lond: to which  
pei wenten. **¶** On petop day pe  
peple stood oū pe see: & y  
was noon opir boot pe but con  
and pat ihū entride not wip hi  
se dyluphis into pe boot: but hi  
se dyluphis aloone wente / but  
oper bootis camē fro tiberias:  
bilidys pe place wher pei hadde  
etū brood: & diden þankigis to  
god þfore whie pe peple hadde  
seyn: þ ihū was not per: neþ  
hile dyluphis: pei wenten up in  
to bootis: & camē to cāfarnan  
seþige ihū / and whie pei hadde  
fōndū hi ouer pe see: pei seiden  
to hi / rabby how come þou hadst  
ihc answeride to hem & seide / tren  
h treuli / I seide to zōn: ze seke me  
not for ze syzen pe myraculis: but  
for þe eten of loones & were fil  
led / worche not mete pat per  
chyp: but pat dibellay into euilast  
rige lyf / which mete mānis lone  
ihc zyne to zōn: for god pe fadir  
hay markid hi / þfore pei seide  
to hi / what ihūlen we do: þ we  
worche pe werkis of god: ihc an  
sweride: & seide to he / pis is pe werk  
of god: y ze bilene to hi: wihō he  
seute / þfore pei seide to hi / what  
tokene þane dost þou: pat we  
seen & bilene to pee: what worcht  
þou / ou fadris eten mānis in  
desert: as it is writū: he zaf to  
hem brood: fro heuene to ete / þ  
fore ihc seip to he / treuli treuli  
I seye to zōn: moyses zaf zōn not

brood fro heuene: but my fadir  
zyney zōn ouer brood fro heuene  
for it is ouer brood pat comey  
don fro heuene: & zyne lyf to pe  
world / þfore pei seiden to him / lord  
eue zyne us pis brood: & ihc seide  
to he / I am brood of lyf: he pat  
comey to me: ihc not hūgre:  
he pat bilene in me: ihc neue  
þū he: but I seide to zōn: y ze han  
seyn me: & ze bilene not. **¶** All  
yng pat pe fadir zyne to me:  
ihc come to me: & I ihc not cal  
te hi out: pat comey to me / for I  
cam don fro heuene: not y I do  
my wille: but pe wille of hi pat  
seute me: & pis is pe wille of pe  
fadir pat sente me / pat al yng  
þe fadir zaf me: I lese nouzt  
of it: but azen reile it in pe latte  
day: & pis is pe wille of my fadir:  
pat sente me / y ech mā pat seip pe  
lone & bilene in hi: haue euilast  
rige lyf: & I ihc azen reile him  
in pe latte day: þfore ierwis grue  
chit of hi: for he hadde seid: I am  
brood pat cam don fro heuene:  
& pei seide / wher pis is not: ihc pe  
lone of ioseph: whos fadir: & mod  
we han knowū: how þane seip pis:  
y I cam don fro heuene: þfore  
ihc answeride: & seide to hem / nyle  
ze gruche to godre. **¶** No mā may  
come to me: but if pe fadir pat  
sente me drawe him: & I ihc: I a  
zen reile hi in pe latte day: it is  
writū in pfetis: and alle mē ihū  
len be able for to be tanzt of god:  
ech mā þ herte of pe fadir: & hay  
lerned: comey to me / not for any  
mā hay seyn pe fadir: but pis pat  
is of god hay seyn pe fadir: soþeli  
lopeh: I seye to zōn: he pat bilene



in me. haue enelastige hif. I am  
breed of ihs. zom fadris eeten  
mana in desert. & ben deed. vis  
is breed comyge dou fro heuene.  
if ony ma ete of: he die not.  
I am hynge breed. pat cam dou  
fro heuene. if ony man ete of  
of vis breed. he shal lyue wypon  
ten ende. And ye breed pat y shal  
zome. is my fleish. for ye hif  
of ye world. yefore ye ieris  
chiden to gidre & seiden. how may  
vis zome to us his fleish to ete.  
yefore ihs seip to he. treuly treu  
ly. I seie to you. but ye ete ye fleish  
of manns sone & drynken his blo  
od. & shulen not haue hif i you.  
he pat ety my fleish & drynke  
my blood. haue enelastige hif. & I  
shal azen veyse hi in ye laste day.  
for my fleish is verrey mete. &  
my blood is verrey drynk. he pat  
ety my fleish & drynke my blo  
od. dwelle in me & I in hi. as my  
fadir hynge sente me. & I lyue  
for ye fadir. and he pat ety me.  
he shal lyue for me. vis is breed  
pat cam dou fro heuene. not as  
zom fadris eeten mana. & ben  
deed. he pat ety vis breed. shal  
lyue wypon ten ende. he seide pes  
ygis i ye synagoge. techige  
in casarnai. yefore manye of  
hile dyluplis heerige seide. vis  
word is hard. who may heere  
it. but ihs writte at hi sylf. y  
hile dyluplis grachiden of vis  
yig. seide to hem. vis yig. I shal  
dryp you. yefore if ye seen manns  
sone anynge wher he was bibe  
re. it is ye spirit pat quykneye  
ye fleish. pntey no yig. ye wor  
dis pat y haue spokn to you. be

spirit & hif. but y ben sume of  
you. pat bileue not. for ihs writte  
fro ye bigynnyng. whiche weren  
bileunge. & who was to bityrre  
hif. and he seide. yefore I seide to.  
pat no ma may come to me. but  
it were zom to hif of my fadir.  
fro vis tyme many of hile dyl  
phs wente abar. & wente not  
now wy hi. yefore ihs seide to  
ye twelue. wher ye wolen also  
go asey. & symon petri answe  
ride to hi. lord to whom shule  
we go. you haue wordis of eu  
lastige hif. & we bileue & han  
known. y you art cit ye sone  
of god. yefore ihs answeide  
to he. wher y chees not you th  
elue. & oon of you is a fend. &  
he seide vis of iudas of symon  
darioth. for vis was to bityrre  
hif. whiche he was oon of ye twelue.

**A**fter pes ygis. ihs wold  
go into galilee. for he wold not walke  
to iudee. for ye ieris souyte to  
sle hym. and y was wy a feete  
day of ieris. senofegia & hile  
bryen seiden to hif. passe fro hen  
& go to iudee. y also y dyluplis  
seen y werkis y you doist. for  
no man doy ony ying in iudis.  
& hi sylf sekyp to be oppn. if y  
doist pes ygis. shewe y sylf  
to ye world. for neyr his bryen  
bileueten in hif. yefore ihs seip  
to hem. my tyme cam not yet.  
but zom tyme is eimozore redy.  
ye world may not hate you. so  
peli it haty me. for y bere wit  
nellig of. pat ye werkis of  
it ben yuele. go ye vp to pis  
feete day. but y shal not go up

to pis feete day. for my tyme  
is not yet fulfilled. whiche he had  
seid pes ygis. he dwelte in  
galilee. **A**nd after y his brye  
weren gon up. pane he zede  
up to ye feete day. not opeh.  
but as in pyrynte. yefore ye ie  
wis souzten hi in ye feete day.  
& seiden. wher is he. & moche  
gruachig was of hif among ye  
peple. for sume seiden y he is  
good. & ope seide nay. but he dis  
ceyney ye peple. neyeres no  
ma spak openly of hif. for drede  
of ye ieris. but whiche ye myd  
dil feete day cam. ihs wente  
up into ye temple & tauzte. &  
ye ieris wondred & seide. hou  
can vis ma lettris. hyen he has  
not lerned. ihs answeide to he.  
& seide. my doctryn is not myn.  
but his pat sente me. if ony ma  
wole do his wille. he shal knowe  
of ye techig. wher it be of  
god. or y speke of my sylf. he  
pat speky of hi sylf sekyp his  
owne glorie. but he pat sekyp  
ye glorie of hi pat sente hi. is  
lofsat. & myrztwysnesse is not  
in hi. wher moyses zaf not to  
you a lawe. & noon of you doy  
ye lawe. what seken ye to sle  
me. & ye peple answeide & sei  
de. you haue a denel. who sekyp  
to sle pee. ihs answeide & seide  
to he. y haue don ouer. & alle  
ye wondren yefore moyses zaf  
to you circucision. not for it is  
of moyses. but of ye fadris. & i  
ye sabat ye circucidit ama. if  
ama take circucision in ye sa  
bat. pat ye lawe of moyses be  
not brokn. han ye indignacion

to me. for y made al ama hool i  
ye sabat. **A**yle ye deme after  
ye face. but deme ye anreful  
dom. yefore sume of ierim seide.  
wher vis is not he. whiche ye ieris  
seken to sle. & lo he speky openly.  
& ye seien no yig to hi. wher ye  
pnces kuiken vlyp. y vis is cit.  
but we knowen vis ma of whiche  
ma he is. but whiche cit shal co  
me. no ma woot of whiche he  
is. yefore ihs cryede in ye temple  
techige & seide. ye knowen me. &  
ye knowen of whiche y am. & y  
cam not of my sylf. but he is  
trewe pat sente me. whiche ye know  
en not. y know hi. & if y seie  
y knowe hi not. y shal be hif  
to you a here. but y know hym  
for of hi y am. & he sente me. yef  
ore ye souzten to take hi. & no  
ma sette on hi hondis. for his our  
cam not yet. and manye of ye pe  
ple bileueten in hif. & seiden. wha  
ne cit shal come. wher he shal  
do mo tokenes. pan yo pat vis doy.  
farisees herden ye peple mulige  
of hi pes ygis. & ye pnces & fari  
sees senten mynistris. to take  
hi. yefore ihs seide to he. yet a litil  
tyme y am wypon. & y go to  
ye fadir. pat sente me. & shule  
seke me. & ye shulen not fynde.  
and wher y am ye mon not co  
me. yefore ye ieris seiden to he  
sylf. whidur shal vis go. for we  
shulen not fynde hif. wher he wole  
go into statrig of hepen me. &  
wole techye ye herene. what is  
vis word whiche he seide. & ye shu  
len seke me. & ye shulen not fynde.  
& wher y am ye mon not co  
me. but in ye laste day of ye greet



feeste. ihs. ffood. i. c. p. e. d. f. l. e. i. d. e. / if  
om. man. p. u. r. s. t. y. / come. he. to. me.  
i. d. y. n. k. e. / he. pat. b. i. l. e. u. e. r. i. m. e. a. s.  
p. e. d. r. i. p. t. u. r. e. l. e. y. / f. l. o. o. d. i. s. o. f. q. u. i. t. e.  
w. a. t. e. r. i. t. h. u. l. e. n. f. l. o. w. e. f. r. o. h. i. s. w. o. m. e.  
b. e. / b. u. t. h. e. l. e. i. d. e. p. i. s. p. i. g. o. f. y. e. l. p. i.  
r. y. t. / w. h. o. m. e. p. a. t. b. i. l. e. u. e. d. e. i. n. h. i.  
i. t. h. u. l. d. e. n. t. a. k. e. / f. o. r. y. e. l. p. i. t. u. r. e. w. a. s.  
n. o. t. z. i. t. z. o. u. m. / f. o. r. i. h. s. w. a. s. n. o. t. z. i. t.  
g. l. o. r. i. f. i. e. d. / p. f. o. r. e. o. f. p. a. t. c. i. t. y. a. n. w. e.  
w. h. i. e. p. e. i. h. a. d. d. e. n. h. e. r. d. p. e. s. w. o. r. d.  
d. i. s. o. f. h. i. / p. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. n. / p. i. s. i. s. v. i. l. y.  
a. p. f. e. t. e. / o. f. e. l. e. i. d. e. n. / p. i. s. i. s. c. r. i. t.  
b. u. t. l. i. m. e. l. e. i. d. e. n. / w. h. e. r. e. i. t. c. o. m. e. y.  
f. r. o. g. a. l. i. l. e. e. / w. h. e. y. p. e. l. e. p. t. u. r. e.  
l. e. y. n. o. t. / p. a. t. o. f. y. e. s. e. e. d. o. f. d. a. m. p.  
f. o. f. y. e. c. a. s. t. e. l. o. f. b. e. t. h. l. e. e. m. w. h. e. r.  
d. a. m. p. w. a. s. / e. i. t. c. o. m. e. y. / p. e. r. f. o. r. e.  
d. i. l. l. e. c. t. i. o. n. w. a. s. m. a. d. a. m. o. g. y. e. p. e.  
p. l. e. f. o. r. h. i. / f. o. r. l. i. m. e. o. f. h. e. i. n. w. o. l. d. e.  
h. a. n. e. t. a. k. i. n. h. i. / b. u. t. n. o. m. a. s. e. t. t. e.  
h. o. n. d. i. s. o. n. h. y. / p. f. o. r. e. p. e. i. m. p. u. t. a.  
c. a. m. e. t. o. b. i. l. l. i. p. i. s. f. a. r. i. l. e. s. / a.  
p. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. e. / w. h. i. b. r. o. u. g. h. t. e. z. e. n. o. t.  
h. i. / p. e. i. m. p. u. t. a. a. n. s. w. e. r. i. d. e. n. / n. e.  
i. t. e. m. a. n. s. p. a. k. s. o. / a. s. p. i. s. u. a. s. p. e.  
b. y. / p. e. r. f. o. r. e. p. e. f. a. r. i. l. e. s. a. n. s. w. e. r. i.  
d. e. n. t. o. h. e. m. / w. h. e. r. z. e. b. e. n. d. i. l. l. e. y. n. e. d.  
a. l. l. o. / w. h. e. r. o. n. y. e. o. f. y. e. p. u. c. e. s. o. f.  
y. e. f. a. r. i. l. e. s. b. i. l. e. u. e. d. e. n. i. n. h. i. / b. u. t.  
p. i. s. p. e. p. l. e. p. a. t. k. n. o. w. i. p. n. o. t. y. e. l. a.  
w. e. / b. e. n. c. i. r. c. u. i. d. n. y. c. o. d. e. m. e. l. e. y. t. o.  
h. e. m. / h. e. p. a. t. c. a. m. t. o. h. i. b. y. n. y. t. / p.  
w. a. s. o. o. n. o. f. h. e. m. / w. h. e. r. o. u. r. l. a. n. p.  
d. e. m. e. y. a. g. a. i. n. / b. u. t. i. t. h. a. n. e. f. u. t.  
h. e. r. d. o. f. h. i. / i. k. n. o. w. e. w. h. a. t. h. e. d. o.  
y. e. / p. e. i. a. n. s. w. e. r. i. d. e. / f. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. i.  
w. h. e. r. p. a. r. t. a. m. a. o. f. g. a. l. i. l. e. e. a. l. l. o.  
s. e. k. e. p. a. p. t. u. r. i. s. / f. e. p. p. a. p. t. e. t. e.  
p. e. l. y. n. o. t. o. f. g. a. l. i. l. e. e. / a. p. e. i. t. u. e. d. e. n.  
a. s. e. n. e. c. h. a. d. h. i. s. h. o. u. s. /

**B**ut ihs wete. i. c. v. m. /  
into ye mount of olivete.

f. e. e. r. l. y. e. s. t. h. e. c. a. m. i. n. t. o. y. e. t. e. p. l. e.  
a. n. d. a. l. y. e. p. e. p. l. e. c. a. n. n. t. o. h. y. / f. e. h. e.  
s. a. t. f. t. a. n. g. t. e. h. e. / f. i. l. i. b. i. s. f. e. a. r. i.  
l. e. e. s. b. y. g. e. n. a. n. w. o. m. a. n. t. a. k. i. n. m. a.  
v. o. u. t. r. i. e. / a. p. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. n. h. y. i. n. y. e.  
i. m. p. d. e. l. / a. s. e. i. d. e. n. t. o. h. i. m. a. n. i. s. p. i. s.  
w. o. m. a. i. s. n. o. w. t. a. k. i. n. a. n. o. u. n. t. e. /  
f. i. n. y. e. l. a. n. p. e. m. o. y. s. e. s. c. o. m. a. n. d. i. d. e.  
u. s. / t. o. a. d. o. o. n. e. s. u. c. h. e. / p. f. o. r. e. w. h. a. t.  
l. e. i. d. e. p. o. u. / a. n. d. p. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. n. p. i. s. p. i. g.  
t. e. m. p. t. i. g. e. h. i. / p. e. i. m. y. t. e. n. a. c.  
c. u. s. e. h. i. / f. e. i. h. s. b. o. u. i. d. e. h. i. s. i. l. f. d. o. n.  
f. i. w. o. o. t. w. y. h. i. s. f. i. g. u. r. i. n. y. e. e. r. p. e. /  
a. n. d. w. h. i. e. p. e. i. a. b. i. d. e. n. a. r. y. n. g. e. h. i. /  
h. e. r. e. i. l. i. d. e. h. i. s. i. l. f. f. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. e. m. /  
h. e. o. f. z. o. u. p. a. t. i. s. w. y. p. o. u. n. t. e. s. y. n. e. /  
f. u. t. c. a. s. t. e. a. d. o. u. i. n. t. o. h. y. / a. s. t. e. f. t.  
h. e. b. o. u. i. d. e. h. i. s. i. l. f. / f. i. w. o. o. t. i. n. y. e.  
e. r. p. e. / f. e. i. h. e. e. r. i. g. e. p. e. s. p. i. g. i. s. w. e.  
t. e. n. a. l. w. e. y. / c. o. u. a. f. t. e. r. a. n. o. t. / f. e. i.  
b. i. g. i. n. i. e. n. f. r. o. y. e. e. l. d. r. e. m. e. / f. e. i. h. s.  
d. i. r. e. k. t. e. a. l. o. o. n. e. / f. e. y. e. w. o. m. a. n. a. d. o.  
d. i. g. e. i. n. y. e. i. m. p. d. e. l. / f. e. i. h. s. r. e. i. l. i. d. e. h. i.  
s. i. l. f. / f. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. y. / w. o. m. a. n. w. h. e. r.  
b. e. n. p. e. i. p. a. t. a. c. u. s. e. d. e. n. p. e. e. / n. o.  
m. a. h. a. p. d. a. p. n. e. d. p. e. e. / s. h. e. l. e. i. d. e. n. o.  
m. a. n. l. o. z. d. / i. h. s. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. y. / n. e. y. p. u.  
f. i. t. h. a. l. d. a. p. n. e. p. e. e. / g. o. p. o. n. f. n. o. t.  
a. f. t. a. r. w. a. r. d. n. y. l. e. p. s. y. n. e. m. o. z. e. / p.  
f. o. r. e. e. s. t. i. h. s. l. p. a. k. t. o. h. e. m. / f. e. p. t. e.  
f. a. m. p. e. l. y. t. o. f. y. e. w. o. r. l. d. / h. e. p. a. t.  
s. u. e. y. m. e. / w. a. l. k. i. p. n. o. t. i. d. e. r. k. u. e. l.  
l. i. s. / b. u. t. i. t. h. a. l. h. a. n. e. y. e. l. y. t. o. f. h. e.  
p. f. o. r. e. y. e. f. a. r. i. l. e. s. l. e. i. d. e. / p. o. n. b. e. r. i. t.  
w. i. t. n. e. s. s. i. g. o. f. p. i. s. i. l. f. / p. i. w. a. n. e. s. s. i. g.  
i. s. n. o. t. t. r. e. w. e. / i. h. s. a. n. s. w. e. r. i. d. e. /  
l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. e. / a. n. d. i. f. i. b. e. r. e. w. i. t. n. e. s.  
s. i. g. o. f. m. y. s. i. l. f. / m. y. w. i. t. n. e. s. s. i. g. i. s.  
t. r. e. w. e. / f. o. r. i. w. o. o. t. f. r. o. w. h. e. m. i. s.  
f. a. m. / f. e. w. h. i. d. i. n. / f. o. r. b. u. t. z. e. w. i.  
t. e. n. o. t. f. r. o. w. h. e. m. i. s. / f. a. m. / n. e. w. i.  
d. i. n. / f. o. r. z. e. d. e. m. e. a. f. t. e. r. y. e. f. l. e.  
i. t. h. i. b. u. t. i. d. e. m. e. n. o. m. a. / f. i. i. f. i. d. e.

me. my dom is trewe. for i am  
not aloone. but i f. e. f. a. d. i. r. p. a. t.  
l. e. i. d. e. m. e. / a. n. d. i. n. z. o. u. m. l. a. n. p. e. i. t.  
i. s. w. r. i. t. i. n. / y. e. w. a. t. n. e. s. s. i. g. o. f. t. i. b. e. y.  
m. e. i. s. t. r. e. w. e. / f. a. m. p. a. t. b. e. r. e. w. a. t.  
n. e. s. s. i. g. o. f. m. y. s. i. l. f. / f. e. f. a. d. i. n.  
p. a. t. s. e. n. t. e. m. e. / b. e. r. y. w. i. t. n. e. s. s. i. g.  
o. f. m. e. / p. f. o. r. e. p. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. n. t. o. h. y. / w. h. e.  
r. e. i. s. p. i. f. a. d. i. n. / i. h. s. a. n. s. w. e. r. i. d. e. m. e.  
p. i. r. z. e. k. o. u. b. e. m. e. / n. e. z. e. k. n. o. w. e.  
m. y. f. a. d. i. n. / i. f. z. e. k. n. e. w. e. m. e. / p. a.  
u. e. n. t. u. r. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. d. e. k. n. o. w. e. a. l. l. o.  
m. y. f. a. d. i. n. / i. h. s. l. p. a. k. p. e. s. w. o. r. d. i. s.  
i. n. y. e. t. r. e. l. e. r. i. e. / t. e. c. h. i. g. e. i. n. y. e. t. e.  
p. l. o. / a. n. o. m. a. w. o. l. h. y. / f. o. r. h. i. s. o. u. r.  
c. a. m. n. o. t. z. i. t. / p. f. o. r. e. e. s. t. i. h. s. l. e. i. d. e.  
t. o. h. e. m. / l. o. i. g. o. / z. e. i. t. h. u. l. e. n. s. e. k. e.  
m. e. / z. e. i. t. h. u. l. e. n. d. y. e. i. n. z. o. u. m. / f. i.  
n. e. / w. h. i. d. i. n. / f. o. r. z. e. m. o. u. n. n. o. t.  
c. o. m. e. / p. f. o. r. e. y. e. i. e. w. i. s. l. e. i. d. e. n.  
w. h. e. y. h. e. i. t. h. a. l. s. l. e. h. i. s. i. l. f. / f. o. r. h. e.  
l. e. y. / w. h. i. d. i. n. / f. o. r. z. e. m. o. u. n. n. o. t.  
c. o. m. e. / a. n. d. h. e. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. e. / z. e. b. e. n. o. f. b. y.  
n. e. y. e. / f. a. m. o. f. a. b. o. n. e. / z. e. b. e. n. o. f.  
p. i. s. w. o. r. l. d. / f. a. m. n. o. t. o. f. p. i. s. w. o. r.  
l. d. / p. f. o. r. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. z. o. u. / p. a. t. z. e. i. t. h.  
u. l. e. n. d. i. e. i. n. z. o. u. m. / s. y. n. e. / f. o. r. i. f. z. e.  
b. i. l. e. u. e. n. n. o. t. p. a. t. / f. a. m. / z. e. i. t. h. u.  
l. e. n. d. i. e. i. n. z. o. u. m. / s. y. n. e. / p. f. o. r. e. p. e. i.  
l. e. i. d. e. n. t. o. h. i. / w. h. o. a. r. t. y. o. u. / i. h. s.  
l. e. i. d. e. t. o. h. e. / y. e. b. i. g. y. n. y. g. w. h. i. c. h.  
a. l. l. o. l. p. e. k. e. t. o. z. o. u. / f. a. m. e. m. a. n. y.  
p. i. g. i. s. t. o. l. p. e. k. e. f. t. o. d. e. m. e. o. f. z. o. u. /  
b. u. t. h. e. p. a. t. l. e. i. d. e. m. e. i. s. l. o. y. f. a. s. t. /  
f. a. p. e. k. e. i. n. y. e. w. o. r. l. d. p. e. s. p. i. g. i. s.  
p. a. t. / f. e. r. d. e. o. f. h. i. / a. n. d. p. e. i. k. n. e. i. t.  
n. o. t. / p. h. e. d. e. p. u. t. h. i. s. f. a. d. i. n. g. o. d. / p.  
f. o. r. e. i. h. s. l. e. y. t. o. h. e. m. / w. h. i. e. z. e. h. a. n.  
r. e. i. l. i. d. m. a. n. i. s. l. o. n. e. / p. a. n. e. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. e.  
k. n. o. w. e. / f. a. m. / f. o. r. m. y. s. i. l. f. / f. o. r.  
n. o. p. i. g. / b. u. t. a. s. m. y. f. a. d. i. n. t. a. u. g. t. e.  
m. e. / f. l. p. e. k. e. p. e. s. p. i. g. i. s. / a. n. d. h. e. p. a. t.  
s. e. n. t. e. m. e. i. s. w. y. m. e. / f. l. e. f. t. e. m. e.

not aloone. for i do enmore po  
p. i. g. i. s. p. a. t. b. e. n. p. l. e. s. y. n. g. e. t. o. h. y. m. /  
w. h. a. n. e. h. e. l. p. a. k. p. e. s. p. i. g. i. s. / m. a. n. y. e.  
b. i. l. e. u. e. d. e. i. n. h. i. / p. f. o. r. e. i. h. s. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. p. e.  
i. e. w. i. s. / p. a. t. b. i. l. e. u. e. d. e. i. n. h. i. / i. f. z. e. d. i. s.  
e. l. l. e. n. i. n. m. y. w. o. r. d. / w. e. r. i. l. y. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. e.  
b. e. m. y. d. i. l. l. i. p. l. i. s. / f. e. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. e. n. k. n. o. w. e.  
p. e. t. r. e. u. p. e. / f. e. t. r. e. u. p. e. i. t. h. a. l. m. a.  
k. e. z. o. u. f. r. e. / p. f. o. r. e. y. e. i. e. w. i. s. a. n. s. w. e.  
r. i. d. e. n. t. o. h. i. / w. e. b. e. n. y. e. s. e. e. d. o. f. a. b. r. a.  
h. a. m. / f. e. w. e. s. e. r. u. e. d. e. n. e. n. e. t. o. m. a. n.  
h. o. u. l. e. i. t. r. o. u. / p. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. d. e. b. e. f. r. e.  
i. h. s. a. n. s. w. e. r. i. d. e. t. o. h. e. / t. r. e. n. h. t. r. e. n. h.  
f. l. e. i. d. e. t. o. z. o. u. / e. c. h. m. a. p. a. t. d. o. u. p. s. y. n. e.  
i. s. s. e. r. u. a. n. t. o. f. h. y. n. e. / f. e. s. e. r. u. a. n. t.  
d. i. w. e. l. l. i. p. n. o. t. i. n. y. e. h. o. u. s. w. y. p. o. u. n. t. e. n.  
e. n. d. e. / b. u. t. y. e. s. o. n. e. d. i. w. e. l. l. y. w. y. p. o. u. n. t. e.  
e. n. d. e. / p. f. o. r. e. i. f. y. e. s. o. n. e. m. a. k. e. z. o. u. f. r. e.  
w. e. r. i. l. y. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. e. n. b. e. f. r. e. / f. i. w. o. o. t.  
p. z. e. b. e. n. a. b. r. a. h. a. m. i. s. s. o. n. e. s. / b. u. t. z. e.  
s. e. k. e. n. t. o. s. l. e. m. e. / f. o. r. m. y. w. o. r. d. t. a.  
k. y. n. o. t. i. n. z. o. u. / f. a. p. e. k. e. p. o. p. i. g. i. s.  
p. a. t. / f. l. e. y. a. t. m. y. f. a. d. i. n. / f. e. z. e. d. o. e. n.  
p. o. p. i. g. i. s. / p. z. e. s. y. z. e. n. a. t. z. o. u. m. / f. a. d.  
p. e. i. a. n. s. w. e. r. i. d. e. / f. l. e. i. d. e. n. t. o. h. i. / a. b. r. a.  
h. a. m. i. s. o. u. r. f. a. d. i. n. / i. h. s. l. e. y. t. o. h. e. m.  
i. f. z. e. b. e. n. y. e. s. o. n. e. s. o. f. a. b. r. a. h. a. m. / d. o.  
z. e. y. e. w. e. r. k. i. s. o. f. a. b. r. a. h. a. m. / b. u. t. n. o. w.  
z. e. l. e. k. e. n. t. o. s. l. e. m. e. a. m. a. / p. a. t. h. a.  
n. e. l. p. o. k. e. t. o. z. o. u. t. r. e. u. p. e. p. a. t. / f. e. r.  
d. e. o. f. g. o. d. / a. b. r. a. h. a. m. d. i. d. e. n. o. t. p. i. s.  
p. i. g. / z. e. d. o. e. n. y. e. w. e. r. k. i. s. o. f. z. o. u. r. e.  
f. a. d. i. n. / p. f. o. r. e. p. e. i. l. e. i. d. e. n. t. o. h. y. m. /  
w. e. b. e. n. n. o. t. b. o. r. n. o. f. f. o. r. n. y. c. a. t. i. o. n. /  
w. e. h. a. n. o. f. a. d. i. n. g. o. d. / b. u. t. i. h. s. l. e. y.  
t. o. h. e. m. / i. f. g. o. d. w. e. r. z. o. u. m. f. a. d. i. n. / l. o.  
p. e. h. z. e. i. t. h. u. l. d. e. n. l. o. n. e. m. e. / f. o. r. f. p. a. t.  
l. i. d. e. f. o. r. y. o. f. g. o. d. / f. a. m. / f. o. r. n. e. y. p. u.  
f. a. m. o. f. m. y. s. i. l. f. / b. u. t. h. e. l. e. i. d. e. m. e.  
w. h. i. k. n. o. w. e. z. e. n. o. t. m. y. l. p. e. c. h. e. /  
f. o. r. z. e. m. o. u. n. n. o. t. h. e. e. r. e. m. y. w. o. r. d.  
z. e. b. e. n. o. f. y. e. f. a. d. i. n. y. e. d. e. n. e. l. / f. e. z. e.  
w. o. l. e. n. d. o. y. e. d. e. l. i. r. i. s. o. f. z. o. u. r. f. a. d. i. n.



he was a malleer fro re biggynge  
and he stood not in trewe: for tre  
we is not in hyr whiche he speketh  
a lesyng: he speketh of his owne  
for he is a lyer & fadir of it: but  
for he seide trewe: & bileue not  
to me: who of you shal repreue  
me of synne: if he seide trewe: &  
whi bileuen ze not to me & he is  
is of god: heer yf we wordis of  
god: perfore ze heeren not: for  
ze ben not of god: perfore ye ierwis  
answereide & seiden: wher we seie  
not wel: yf you art a samaritay: &  
hast a deuyl: ihc answeride & sei  
de: yf I haue not a deuyl: but yf ho  
noure my fadir: & ze han vnyho  
nourid me: for yf seke not my  
glorie: yis he yat seketh & demer  
treuli treuli: yf seie to you: if ony  
man kepe my word: he shal not  
taste depe wipoune ende: perfor  
ye ierwis seiden: now we han kno  
wun: yat you hast a deuyl: abra  
ham is deed: & ye psetis: & you  
seist if ony man kepe my word:  
he shal not taste depe wipoune  
ende: wher you art greter pa  
ouir fadir abraham: yat is deed:  
& ye psetis ben deed: whom ma  
kist you yf self: ihc answeride  
if yf glorie my self: my glorie  
is nouit: my fadir is yat glori  
fiep me: who ze sepen yf he is you  
re god: & ze han not knowun hyr  
but yf haue knowun hyr: & if yf seie  
yf yf knowe hi not: yf shal be a ly  
ere lichy to you: but yf knowe hi:  
& yf kepe his word: abraham your  
fadir: gladide to se my day: & he  
syf & ioyede: yane ye ierwis seide  
to hi: you hast not yet fyttyr zeir:  
& hast you seyn abraham: perfore

ihc seide to he: treuli treuli: I seie  
to you: bifore yf abraham sh  
uld be: yf am: perfore yei token  
stones to caste to hi: but ihc had  
de hyr: & wente out of re temple  
Id ihc passige  
**A**braham blind fro ye bur  
ye: and hile dylupis aride  
hi: maistr: what synede: yis ma  
or his eldus: yf he shuld be born  
blind: ihc answeride: ney yis ma  
synede ney his eldus: but yf re  
werkis of god be stherid in hyr:  
it byhoney me to worche ye wer  
kis of hi yat sente me: as louge  
as ye day is: ye nyzt shal come:  
nshine no ma may worche: as louge as  
y am i yeword: yf am ye lyt of ye world:  
whiche he hadde seid: yis psetis: he seide  
to ye erpe: & made clep of ye spo  
tile: & anoyntide ye clep on his  
yzen: & seide to hi: go & be pou wa  
ithu in ye watir of siloe: yat is  
to seie sent: yane he wente & was  
shide: & cam seynge: and so ney  
elozis & yei rat hadde seyn hyr  
bifore: for he was abegger: seide  
wher yis is not he yat sat & beg  
gide: oyer me seiden yf yis it is oyer  
me seide nay: but he is lyt hyr:  
but he seide: yf yf am: yf fore yei sei  
den to hi: how ben ym yzen ope  
nyd: he answeride: pulke ma yat  
is seid ihc: made clep & anoyntide  
my yzen: & seide to me: go you to  
ye watir of siloe: & wanthe: &  
yf wente & wanthe: & syf: and  
yei seide to hyr: wher is he: he sei  
de: yf woot not: yei leden hi yat  
was blind to ye farisees: and it  
was sabat: whiche ihc made clep:  
& openide hile yzen: eft ye farise  
es ariden hyr: how he hadde seyn

and he seide to he: he seide to me  
clep on ye yzen: & yf wanthe: &  
yf se: yf fore sume of ye farisees  
seiden: yis ma is not of god: yat  
kepyr not ye sabat: oyer men  
septen: how may a syful man  
do yis hignes: & ar yf was amog  
hem: yf fore yei seyen eftloone to  
ye blind man: what sent you of  
hyr: yat openide ym yzen: & he  
seide yf he is a psete: perfore ie  
wis bileueden not of hyr: yf he  
was blind & hadde seyn: til yei  
depiden his fadir: & modir: yf had  
de seyn: & yei aride he & seide: is  
yis zome sone: which ze seyen we  
born blind: how yane seep he now:  
his fadir & modir answeride to  
hem: & seide: we wite yf yis is  
our sone: & yf he was born blind:  
but how he seep now we witen  
ney: or who opynede his yze: we  
witen nere: are ze hi: he hay age:  
speke he hi self: his fadir & mo  
dir seiden: yis psetis: for yei ded  
den ye ierwis: for yane ye ierwis  
had den colprind: yf ony ma kno  
wlechte hyr eit: he shuld be  
don out of ye synagoge: yf fore his  
fadir & modir seiden: yf he hay a  
ge: are ze hyr: yf fore eftloone yei  
depiden ye ma yat was blind:  
& seiden to hi: zyne pou glorie  
to god: we witen yf yis ma is a  
synere: yane he seide: if he is a  
synere: yf woot ney: o yf yf woot  
yf whiche yf was blind: now yf se  
perfore yei seiden to hi: what dide  
he to yee: how openide he ym  
yzen: he answeride to hi: yf sei  
de to you now: & ze herde: what  
wolen ze eftloone heer: wher  
ze wolen be maid hile dylupis:

yf fore yei curside hi & seide: be yf  
his dylupis: we ben dylupis of  
moyses: we wite yf god spak to  
moyses: but we knowen not yis  
of whems he is: pulke ma answere  
ride & seide to hem: for in yis is a  
woundir ful yf: & ze witen not  
of whems he is: & he hay openid  
myne yzen: and we wite yf god  
heer yf not syful me: but if ony  
ma is worthiper of god: & dou  
his wille: he heer yf hi: fro ye it  
world it is not herd: yf ony ma  
openide ye yzen of a blind born  
ma: but yis wer of god: he may  
te not do ony yf: yei answeride:  
& seiden to hi: you art al born in  
synes: & techit you us: & yei  
putten hi out: ihc herde yf yei had  
den put hi out: & whane he hadde  
fonde hi: he seide to hi: bileuest yf  
in ye sone of god: he answeride  
& seide: lord who is he: yf yf bileue  
in hyr: & ihc seide to hi: and you  
hast seyn hi: & he it is yat speketh  
wyf yee: & he seide: lord yf bileue:  
& he fel don & worthipide hyr  
yf fore ihc seide to hi: yf cam ito yis  
world into dom: yf yei yat seen  
not: se: and yei yat seen be maid  
blind: & sume of ye farisees her  
den yat were wyf hyr: & yei seide  
to hyr: wher we ben blynde: ihc  
seide to he: if ze were blynde: ze  
shuld not haue syne: but now  
ze seye yf we seen: zome syne  
dwellhy stille  
**T**reuli treuli: yf seie to yf:  
he yat comen not i bi pe  
dore into ye foold of itheep: but  
stiep by anoyr weye: is a nyzt ye  
ef & a day yee: but he yat en  
try bi pe dore: is ye itheparde



of ye sheep to vis ye power openy:  
 & ye sheep heere his vois: & he  
 clepþ his oune sheep by name:  
 & lediþ hem out: & whiþe he hay  
 don out his oune sheep. he goiþ  
 bifore hem: & ye sheep suen hym.  
 for þei knowen his vois: but þei  
 suen not an aþen. but fleen fro  
 hi: for þei han not knowe þe vois  
 of aþenis: ihs seide to hem þis pro  
 uerbe: but þei knewen not: whiþ  
 he spak to hem: þe fore ihs seide to  
 he etidone: trenh trenh: i seye  
 to 3on: þe am þe doze of þe shee  
 p: as manye as han come: we  
 ren nýt peenes & day peenes: but  
 ye sheep herden not he: & am  
 þe doze of ony mā ihaleuþe by  
 me: he ihal be saued: & he ihal  
 go yn & ihal go out: & he ihal syn  
 de leseyis: amýt peef comep not:  
 but þe stele. sle. & leese: & i cam  
 þe þei haue lyf: & haue more ple  
 renouly. **I** am a good shepar  
 de: a good sheparde synep his  
 lyf for his sheep: but an hyrd  
 hyne & þat is not ye sheparde.  
 whos ben not ye sheep his ou  
 ne: seep a wolf comyge. & he  
 leuey þe sheep & fleep. for he  
 is an hyrd hyne: & it per teyner  
 not to hi of þe sheep: i am a go  
 od sheparde: & i knowe my shee  
 p: & my sheep knowen me: as  
 þe fadir hay knowen me: & i knowe  
 þe fadir: & i putte my lyf  
 for my sheep: i haue ower shee  
 p: þat ben not of þis folde: &  
 it bihoney me to byge hem to  
 gader: & þei shulen heer my  
 vois: & it ihal be maad o fold:  
 & o sheparde: þe fore þe fadir  
 louep me: for i putte my lyf.

þe wolf rany  
 shep. & dyspar  
 pley þe sheep  
 & þe hyrd hyne  
 fleep.

pat etidone i take it: no mā  
 taky it fro me: but i putte it  
 of my self: i haue power to put  
 it: & i haue power to take  
 it azen: vis maudemet: i haue  
 taku of my fadir. **I** felle  
 cion was maad a mong þe  
 is: for þes wordis: & manye of  
 he seiden: he hay a deuyl: & mad  
 dy: what heeren ze hy: ower me  
 seiden: þes wordis ben not of a  
 man: þat hay a feind: wher þe  
 deuyl may opene þe vien of bly  
 de me. **W**it þe frentis of þe  
 halewys of þe temple were  
 maad in ierlm: & it was wynter:  
 & ihs walkide in þe temple: & þe  
 porche of salomo: þe fore þe ierlm  
 camen aboute hym: & seiden to  
 hy: how longe takst þou a wey  
 oure soule: if þou art crist:  
 seie þou to us openly: ihs an  
 swerde to hem: i speke to 3on:  
 & ze bilenen not: þe werdis þat  
 i do in þe name of my fadir: be  
 ren witnessig of me: but ze bi  
 lenen not: for ze ben not of my  
 sheep: my sheep heere my vois:  
 & i knowe hem: & þei suen  
 me: and i synne to he enlastige  
 lyf: & þei shulen not perillhe  
 wynter ende: & noon ihal ra  
 nyllhe he fro my hond: þat þis  
 þat my fadir zaf to me: is more  
 þa alle rygis: & no mā may ra  
 nyllhe fro my fadris hond: &  
 i þe fadir ben con: þe ierlm  
 tooken up stoonis: to stoonen hi:  
 ihs answerde to he: i haue an  
 swer to 3on many gode werdis  
 of my fadir: for whiþ werdis  
 of hem stoonen ze me: þe ierlm  
 answerde to hi: we stoonen ze

not of good werk: but blasse  
 mye: and for þou synest þat  
 aman: makist þi self god: ihs  
 answerde to he: wher it is not  
 writu in 3onne lawe: þe seide  
 ze ben goddis: if he seide þe  
 werdis goddis: to whiche þe wo  
 rd of god was maad: & i seide  
 may not be vndon: wilke þe  
 fadir hay haleuþ & haplet to þe  
 world: ze seyen þe þou blassest  
 for i seide i am godis sone:  
 if i do not þe werdis of my fadir:  
 nyle ze bilene to me: but if i do:  
 þou ze wolen not bilene to me:  
 bilene ze to þe werdis: þe knowe  
 & bilene: þe fadir is i me & i  
 in þe fadir: þe fore þei soute to  
 take hi: & he wente out of her ho  
 dis: and he wente etidone ouer  
 iordan: into þat place wher iohu  
 was first baptisge: & he dwelle  
 þe: & manye camen to hi & lei  
 den: for iohu dide no myracle:  
 & alle rygis whar eue iohu seide  
 of þis: were soye: & manye bi  
 leneden in hy. **I** am  
 a lalarus of betanaye of þe  
 castell of marye & martha hile  
 sistris: & it was marie which  
 auoyntede þe lord wy opneuet.  
 & wipte his feet wy hyr heeris:  
 whos broþ lalarus was sylk: &  
 þe hile sistris senten to hi: &  
 seiden: lord lo he who þou louest:  
 is sylk: & ihs herde & seide to hem:  
 þis lyfenele is not to þe deyr:  
 but for þe glorie of god: þe man  
 nis lone be glorified by hi: & ihs  
 louede martha: & hyr syster ma  
 rye & lalarus: þe fore whiþe ihs  
 herde þe he was sylk: rane he

dwellede in þe same place twey  
 dayes: & astur þes rygis: he lei  
 de to hile distyphs: go we est in  
 to iudee: þe distyphs seyen to hi:  
 maistur now þe ierlm souren  
 for to stoonen þe: & est goist þe  
 yidur: ihs answerde: wher þe  
 ben not etelue ouris of þe day:  
 if ony mā wandre in þe day: he  
 hytup not: for he seep þe list of  
 þis world: but if he wandre i þe  
 nýt: he stomblyþ. for list is not  
 in hi: & he lery þes rygis: and af  
 tur þes rygis he lery to hem: la  
 larius oure frend slepy: but  
 i go to reule hy fro sleep: þe fore  
 hile distyphs seide: lord if he sle  
 py: he ihal be sauf: but ihs had  
 de seid of his deyr: but þe gelli  
 den þe he seide of slepy: of sleep  
 rane þe fore ihs seide to hem opy  
 ly: lalarus is deed: & i haue wope  
 for 3on: þat ze bilene: for i was  
 not þe: but go we to hi: þe fore  
 thonis þat is seid didun: seide  
 to enene distyphs: go we also:  
 þe we oþen wy hy: & go ihs cam:  
 & fond hi hanpyge rane foure  
 dayes in þe graue: & beþanwe  
 was bishdis ierlm as it were  
 fiftene hir longis: & maye of  
 þe ierlm camen to marye &  
 martha: to conforte hem of  
 her broþ: þe fore as martha her  
 de þat ihs cam: she ran to hy  
 but marie sat at home: þe fore  
 martha seide to ihs: lord if þou  
 haddist be here: my broþ had  
 de not be deed: but now i woot:  
 þat what eue rygis þou ihalt  
 are of god: god ihal zyne to þe  
 ihs lery to hy: þe broþ ihal ryle  
 azen: martha lery to hi: i woot



**J**he ſhal riſe azen in þe arylig  
azen i þe laſte day. ihe ſey to hir  
I am azen riſing. & he ſat  
bileney i me. the þou; he be deed.  
he ſhal lyne. & ech rat lyney & bi  
leney i me. ſhal not dye wip  
ourten ende. bileneſt þou piſ pig.  
ſhe ſey to hi. the lord. I haue bde  
ned þ' þon art cit þe ſone of þe  
lynyge god. þat haſt come to  
piſ worlð. and whine ſhe hadde  
ſeid piſ pig. ſhe wente & clep  
de marie hir ſiſtir in clyence. &  
ſeide. ye maſtir comen. & clep  
þee. ſhe aſ the herde aroos and  
cam to hi. & ihe cam not 3it in  
to þe caſtel. but he was 3it i þat  
place. where martha hadde co  
mū azen hi. þ'fore þe ieiſis  
weren wip hir in þe hous & cou  
fortiden hir. whine þei open ma  
rye. ſhe roos ſurpe & wente  
out. þei ſilbeden hir & ſeiden. for  
ſhe goy to þe graue. to wepe  
þer. but whine marie was come  
wher. ihe was. ſhe ſeynge hym  
felde don to hiſe feet & ſeide to hi.  
lord if þou haſt be he. my  
broþ' hadde not be deed. & þ'fore  
whine ihu ſay hir wepyge. & þe iei  
ſis wepynge þat weren wip hir.  
he made noyle in ſpirit. & troubl  
de hi ſilf & ſeide. wher haue þe leid  
hi. þei ſeiden to hi. lord come & ſe.  
ihe wepte. þ'fore þe ieiſis ſeiden.  
lo how he lonede hi. & ſime of he  
ſeiden. wher piſ man þat openy  
de þe þzen of þe bozi blind mā.  
myzte not make þ' piſ ſchilde  
not die. þ'fore ihe eſt makige  
noyle in hiſe ſilf. cam to þe gra  
ue. & þer was a dene. & a ſoon  
was leid þ'one. & ihe ſey. take

þe awer þe ſoon. martha þe ſu  
ter of hi þat was deed. ſey to hi.  
lord he ſynkeþ now. for he hap  
leve ſom. dayes. ihe ſey to hir.  
haue I not ſeid to þee. þ' & þ'  
bileney þou ſhalt ſe þe glorie of  
god. þ'fore þei token awer þe ſoon.  
& ihe liſte vp hile þzen. & ſeide.  
ſadir. I do þankigis to þee. for  
þou haſt herd me. & ihe wite þ'  
ei more heerit me. but for þe  
peple þat ſtondy a bome. I ſeide.  
þat þei bilene þ' þou haſt ſent  
me. whine he hadde ſeid þe pi  
gis. he criede wip a greet. vois  
laſarus come þou forþ. & anon  
he þat was deed. cam out boi  
dū þe hondis & feet wip bondis.  
& hiſ face bound wip a ſudarie.  
& ihe ſey to hem. vmbryte þe hi.  
& enſire þe hi to go forþ. þ'fore  
manpe of þe ieiſis þat came  
to marie & martha. & þzen  
what pigis ihu bide. bileneþu  
in hi. but ſime of he wenten  
to þe farilees. & ſeide to he. what  
pigis ihe hadde don. þ'fore þe bi  
thops & þe farilees gadreþ a cū  
cil azen ihu & ſeiden. what do we.  
for piſ mā don many myradis.  
if we leue hi þuſ. alle mē ſchulen  
bilene i hi. and romayn ſchulen  
come & ſchulen take our place. &  
oure folk. but oon of hem capta  
by name. whine he was biſhop of  
þat 3eer. ſeide to he. þe wite no pig  
ne þenken. þ'it ſpedy to 3ou þo  
mā dye for þe peple. & þ'at þe folk  
þerlithe not. but he ſeide. uo pig  
pig of hi ſilf. but whine he was  
biſhop of þat 3eer. he pſeide. þ'  
ihu was to dye for þe folk. & not oon  
ly for þe folk. but þat he ſchulle

gader. ito oon þe ſones of god. þat  
weren ſaterid. þ'fore fro þat day  
þei þouzten. for to ſle hi. þ'fore  
ihe walkide not þane openly amog  
þe ieiſis. but he wente into a citrei  
biſydis deſert. into a citee þat is  
ſeid eſſren. & þer he dwelleþ wip hi  
ſe diſciples. and þe paſt of þe ieiſis  
was up. & manpe of þe citrei  
wenten up to ierlm biſore þe paſt  
to halewe hem ſilf. þ'fore þei ſon  
ten ihu. & ſpaken to gidre ſtondige  
in þe teple. what geilen þe. for he  
comen not to þe feete day. for þe  
biſhop & farilees hadde 3oum a  
maſtemet. þ'if omy mā kuowe  
wher he is. þ' he ſchewe þ' þei ta  
ke hym. **C. xii. 42**  
**T**he ſon of paſt cam to betanpe  
wher laſarus hadde be deed. whi  
he reſide. & þei made to hi a loup  
þere. & martha wipynſtride to hi.  
& laſarus was oon of men þat ſa  
teu at þe mete wip hi. þ'fore ma  
rie took a poum of oymenēt of  
trewe uarde preciouſ. & anon  
tū þe feet of ihu. & wipte hiſ  
feet wip hir heeris. & þe hous wa  
ſulſillid of þe ſanour of þe oymē  
mēt. þ'fore iudas ſcarioth oon of  
hiſe diſciples. þat was to btraie  
hi. ſeide. whine not piſ oymenēt  
ſeeld for þre hūndid pens. & is 3oum  
to nedþ me. but he ſeide piſ pig.  
not for it þer teynede to hi of ne  
dþ mē. but for he was a þeeſ. &  
he hadde þe þurhiſ & bar þo pig  
þat weren ſent. þ'fore ihe ſeide.  
ſuffre þe hir. þ' in to þe day of  
my þirying. ſhe ſepe þat. for  
þe ſchulen ei more haue þore  
mē wip 3ou. but þe ſchule not

ei more haue me. þ'fore moche  
peple of ieiſis knew. þ' ihe was  
þere. & þei came not oonly for  
ihu. but to ſe laſarus. whom  
he hadde reſid fro deþ. but þe  
þnces of preſtis þouzte to ſle  
laſarus. for manpe of þe ieiſis  
wenten awer for hi. & bileneþen  
in ihu. but on þe morwe. a mo  
che peple þat cam to gidre to þe  
feete day. whine þei hadde herd  
þ' ihe cam to ierlm. tooken brai  
chis of palmes & came forþ azen  
hi. & cryeden. oſana. bleſid is þe  
kiþ of ihu. þat comen in þe na  
me of þe lord. and ihe ſond a 3ong  
aſſe. & ſat on hym aſ it is writi  
þe douȝtr of syon. wyle þou dze  
de. lo þi kiþ comen. ſittige on an  
aſſe ſole. hiſe diſciples knewen  
not firſt þeſ pigis. but whine  
ihe was gloriſied. þane þei had  
den myte. for þeſ pigis were wri  
ti of hi. & þeſ pigis þei diden to  
hi. þ'fore þe peple bar witneſ  
ſing. þat was wip hi. whine he  
clepde laſarus fro þe graue. &  
reſide hi fro deþ. and þ'fore  
þe peple cam & mette wip hym.  
for þei herde þ' he hadde don piſ  
ſigne. þ'fore þe farilees ſeide  
to he ſilf. þe ſeen þ' we pſiten no  
pig. lo al þe worlð wente aſtir hi.  
and þ' were ſime herene mē.  
of hem þat hadden come up to  
worſhupe in þe feete day. & þe  
ie camen to ſiāp. þat was of  
bethſayda of galile. & þreien  
hi & ſeiden. ſir we wole ſe ihu.  
ſilip comen & ſey to andrew. eſt  
andrew & ſilip ſeiden to ihu. and  
ihe anſweride to he & ſeide. þe  
our comen þ' māns ſone be da



d.c.

rified. **T**reuli. I seie to you. but  
a corn of wheete falle into pe  
erpe & be deed: it diuelliþ aloone  
but if it be deed: it bringer mo  
che frucht. he pat loneþ his lyf  
thai lete it: & he pat hatir his  
lyf in vis world: kepir it into  
enlathige lyf. **I**f our mā serue  
me: sue he me: & wher I am:  
pere my mynne thal be: & if  
our mā serue me: my fadir thal  
alwozshpe hi now my sonle  
is troublid: & what thal I seie:  
fadir saue me fro pis our: but  
perfore I cam ito vis our: fadir  
clarifie vi name: and a vois  
cam fro heuene & seide: & I ha  
ue clarified: & eft I thal clarifie:  
þfore pe peple pat stood & herde:  
seide þat þu dur was maid ower  
mē leiden an aūgel spak to hi:  
thē answerte & seide: pis vois  
cam not for me: but for you.

f.

**N**ow is pe dom of pe world: now  
pe pnce of vis world: thal be ca  
st out: and if I thal be enhan  
sid fro pe erpe: I thal drawe  
alle pigis to my lile: & he seide þat  
pig: signyfyge by what deþ he  
was to dye: & pe peple answerte  
to hi: we han herd of þe lawe.  
þ crist diuelliþ wipouten ende:  
& hou seist you: it bihouer mān  
sone to be a rerid: who is pis  
māns lone: & þane thē seip to  
hem: zit althit hit is in you: wal  
ke þe þe while þe han hit: þat derk  
nessis caache you not: he pat wan  
driþ in derknessis: woot net: whi  
dur he gory: while þe han hit: bi  
leue þe in hit: þe be þe childre  
of lūt: thē spak þes pigis: & wē  
te & hnde hi fro hem: & whāne he

hadde don so many myracles bifo  
re þe: þe biuenede not in hi: pat  
pe word of þaye þe þfete thū  
de be fulfild: which he seide: lord  
who biuenede to oure heerig: &  
to who is þe arm of þe lord thē  
wid: þfore þe mynne not biuene  
foret þaye seide: he þay blyndid  
her yen: & he þay maid hard þe  
herde of hem: þat se not wip  
þe: & vnderstonde wip herde: &  
þat be comitid: & heele hem: þa  
pe seide þes pigis: whāne he sy  
þe glorie of hi: & spak of hi: nepe  
les of þe pnces manþe biuenede  
in hi: but for þe farules þe kno  
wlechten not: þat þe thūde not  
be put out of þe synagoge: for  
þe loueten þe glorie of mē: more  
þan þe glorie of god: & thē cryede  
& seide: he þat biueneþ i me: bile  
nep not i me: but in hi: þat sen  
te me: he þat seip me: seip hym  
þat sente me: I hit cam ito þe  
world: þat þat biueneþ i me:  
diuelliþ not i derknessis: and if  
our mā heerir my wordis: & þe  
not þat deme þe world: but þat  
I make þe world lūt: he þat dis  
þisþ me: & takir not my wordis:  
þay hi þat thal iuge hi: þilke  
word þat I haue spokū: thal  
deme hi in þe laste day: for I  
haue not spokū of my lile: but  
þilke fadir þat sente me: þat to  
me amandemēt: what I thal seie:  
& what I thal speke: & I woot  
þis maundemēt is enlathige hē:  
þfore þe pigis: & I speke: as þe fa  
dir seide to me: so I speke:  
þfore þe fadir: & þe son: & þe  
day of pass: thē witege

þis our is comū: þat he passe fro  
vis world to þe fadir: whāne he had  
de lōned hile þat wēre in þe wo  
rld: into þe ende he louede hem:  
& whāne þe soþer was maid: whā  
ne þe denel hadde put þane ito  
þe herde: þat þe of symonit thā  
oth thūde bitraye hi: he witege þat  
þe fadir: þat alle pigis to hi into hi  
hondis: & þat he wente out fro  
god: & gory to god: he risþ fro þe  
souper & dory of his dorys: and  
whāne he hadde takū a līnen dōp:  
he grde hi: & aftward he putte  
war ito a bassin: & bigan to wailhe  
þe dūplis feet: & to wipe wip  
þe līnen dōp: wip which he was  
gud: & so he cam to symonit petre:  
& petre seip to hi: lord wailthit þat  
my feet: thē answerte: & seide  
to hi: what I do þou wost not now:  
but þou thalt wite aftward:  
petre seip to hi: þou thalt neuie  
wailthe my feet: thē answerte  
to hi: if I thal not wailthe þe:  
þou thalt not haue part wip me:  
symonit petre seip to hi: lord not  
oonly my feet: but boþe þe hou  
dis & þe heed: thē seide to hi: he  
þat is wailthit þay no nede: but  
þat he wailthe þe feet: but he is  
al deue: & þe ben deue but not  
alle: for he wite who was he þat  
thūde bitraye hi: þfore he seide  
þe ben not alle deue: & so aftur  
he hadde wailthit þe feet of hem:  
he took his dōp: and whāne he  
was let to mete azen: eft he seide  
to hem: þe witen what I haue  
do to you: þe clepen me mān: &  
lord: & þe seipen wel: for I am: þe  
se if I lord & mān: haue wailthit  
your feet: & þe thūden wailthe

oon anoveris feet: for I haue zomū eīan  
ple to you: þas I haue do to þe: so do þe þen  
ly treuli: I seip to you: þe seruante  
is not gretter þan his lord: neþir  
an apostle is gretter þan he þat se  
te hi: if þe wite þes pigis: þe thū  
len be blestid if þe doe hem: I seie  
not of alle you: I woot which I ha  
ue chōlit: but þat þe scriptur be ful  
fild: he þat etir my breed: thal  
reyle his heele azen me: treuli  
I seip to you bifoze it be don: & whā  
ne it is don: þe biuene þat I am: treu  
li treuli: I seie to you: he þat takir  
whō eīe I thal seide: releyueþ  
me: & he þat releyueþ me: reley  
ueþ hi þat sente me: whāne thē  
hadde seid þes pigis: he was trou  
blid i spirit & witege thē seide: treu  
li treuli: I seie to you: þoon of you  
thal bitraye me: þfore þe dūplis  
lokūen to gidre: dōwige of whom  
he seide: and so oon of hile dūplis  
was rettige in þe bolit of thū: whō  
thū louede: þfore symonit petre  
bekeneþ to hi: & seip to hi: who  
is it of whom he seip: and so whā  
ne he hadde restid azen on þe brest  
of thū: he seip to hi: lord who is it:  
thē answerte: he it is to who I thal  
al a reche a sop of breed: & whāne  
he hadde wet breed he þat to ju  
das of symonit thāwōth: & aftur  
þe mollel: þane sathanas entri  
de into hi: and thē seip to hi: þat  
pig þat þou dōst: do þou swipe  
& noon of þe þat lūt at þe mete  
wite wher to he seide to hi: for hi  
me geistiden for judas hadde þur  
his: þat thē hadde seid to hi: bie þat  
þe pigis þat ben nede ful to us:  
to þe fadir day: or þat he thūde þe  
ne eū pig: to uedy men: þfore



whiche he hadde takē i ve moſtel: he  
wente out a noon. & it was upst  
and whiche he was gon out: the  
ſeide / now māns ſone is clari-  
ed: & god is clariſhed in hi: if god  
is clariſhed in hi: god ſhal clariſhe  
hi in hi ſelf: & anon he ſhal da-  
riſie hi. **I**ſide ſones zit alitel /  
am wiþ you ze ſhulen ſeke me  
as / ſeide to ve iewis: whidur  
/ go ze moni not come: & you / ſeie  
noib: / ʒyue to you auewe man  
demet: pat ze loue to gidre: as /  
louede you: & ʒe loue to gidre  
in ʒis ʒis alle men ſhule knowe  
ʒe ben my diſciþlis: if ʒe han lo-  
ue to gidre / ſymouid petre ſey  
to hi: lord whidur goiſt you: the  
anſweride / whidur / go: you  
maist not ſulue me noib: but ʒ  
ſhalt ſunbe afur ward: petre ſey  
to hi: whi may / not ſulue ʒe noib:  
/ ſhal putte my lif for ʒe: the  
anſweride / ʒ ſhalt putte ʒ lif  
for me: treuh treuh / ſeie to ʒe:  
ʒe cot ſhal not croiue: til you  
ſhalt denye me ʒies: and he ſey  
to hile diſciþlis. **I**ſide. **I**ſide.  
**B** not ʒoure her te afra-  
ied: ne drede it: ʒe bileue  
in god: & bileue ze in me: i ʒe  
houis of my fadir: ben manye  
diſciþlis: if ony ʒis laſte / had  
de ſeid to ʒou: for / go to make  
redy to ʒou a place: and if / go  
to make redy to ʒou aplace: eft  
ſone / come & / ſhal take ʒou  
to my ſelf: ʒ wher / am: ze be-  
t whidur / go ze witen: & ze wi-  
ten ʒe weye / ʒe ſon ſey to hi:  
lord: we wite not whidur ʒ goiſt  
to how moun we wite ʒe weye:  
the ſey to hi: / am weye treime

& lyf / no mā comei to ʒe fadir:  
but by me: if ʒe hadden knowe  
me: ſoueli ze hadden knowe al  
ſo my fadir: and afur ward ze  
ſhulen knowe hi: & ze han ſeyn  
hi: filip ſey to hi: lord thewe to  
us ʒe fadir: & it ſuffiſy to us  
the ſey to hi: ſo longe tyme / am  
wiþ you: & han ze not knowen me:  
filip: he pat ſey me: ſey alſo ʒe  
fadir: how ſeyt you: thewe to us  
ʒe fadir: bucheſt pon not: ʒ  
am in ʒe fadir: & ʒe fadir is in  
me: ʒe wordis ʒe / aþeſe to ʒou:  
/ ſpeke not of my ſelf: but ʒe ſad  
hi ſelf diſciþlis: i me: dony ʒe we-  
kis / bileue ze not ʒe / am in ʒe fa-  
dir: & ʒe fadir is in me: ellis: bi-  
leue ze for ʒis werkis: treuh  
treuh / ſeie to ʒou: if amā bilie-  
uei me: alſo he ſhal do ʒe wer-  
kis ʒe / do: and he ſhal do grette  
werkis ʒa peſe: for / go to ʒe fa-  
dir: & what eu ʒis ʒe aſen ʒe fa-  
dir in my name: / ſhal do ʒis ʒis:  
ʒ ʒe fadir be glorified i ʒe ſone:  
if ʒe aſen ony ʒis in my name: /  
ſhal do it: if ʒe lounen me: kepe  
ze my comādemētis: & / ſhal  
ʒreie ʒe fadir: & he ſhal ʒine to  
ʒou anon coufoztour ʒe ſpirit  
of treime: to diſcelle wiþ you wiþ  
outen ende: which ſpirit: ʒe world  
may not take: for it ſey hi not:  
neper knowiþ hi: but ze ſhule  
knowe hym: for he ſhal diſcelle  
wiþ you: & he ſhal be in you: /  
ſhal not leue ʒou fadir: leſ: /  
ſhal come to ʒou: zit alitel & ʒe  
world ſey not now me: but ze  
ſhulen ſe me: for / hyne: & ze ſh-  
ule hyne in ʒat day ze ſhule kno-  
we ʒe / am in my fadir: & ze in

me: & / in ʒou: he pat hay my com-  
ādemētis & kepiþ he: he it is  
pat louey me: & he pat louey me:  
ſhal be louned of my fadir: & / ſhal  
loue hi: & / ſhal thewe to hi my  
ſelf: / Judas ſey to hi: not he of  
ſtarioth: lord what is don: ʒ pon  
ſhalt thewe ʒi ſelf to us: & not  
to ʒe world: the anſweride & ſeide  
to hi: if ony mā louey me: he ſh-  
al kepe my word: & my fadir ſh-  
al loue hi: & we ſhulen come to  
hym: & we ſhulen diſcelle wiþ hi:  
he pat louey me not: kepiþ not  
my wordis: & ʒe word which ze  
han herd is not myn: but ʒe fa-  
dis pat ſente me: ʒes ʒis / ha-  
ue ſpoke to ʒou diſcelle amog  
ʒou: but ʒis hooly goſt ʒe coufo-  
tour: whom ʒe fadir ſhal ſeide  
in my name: he ſhal teche ʒou  
alle ʒis what eu ʒis / ſhal  
ſeie to ʒou: ʒe ſeie to ʒou:  
my pees / ʒyue to ʒou: not as ʒe  
world ʒyuei / ʒyue to ʒou: be not  
ʒou: her te afrayed: ne drede it: ze  
ha herd / ſeide to / go & come to / ʒe  
ze lounede me: forlope ze ſhule  
hane ioye: for / go to ʒe fadir: for  
ʒe fadir is grette ʒan / & now  
/ hane ſeid to ʒou biſore ʒe it be don:  
whiche it is don: ze bileuen / now  
/ ſhal not ſpeke many ʒis w  
ʒou: for ʒe ʒuce of ʒis word comei:  
& hap not in me ony ʒis: but ʒe  
ʒe world knowe ʒe / loue ʒe fadir:  
as ʒe fadir ʒaſ a comādemēt  
to me: ſo / do: ʒe ze go we heu-  
en. **I**ſide. **I**ſide. **I**ſide.  
**I**ne: & my fadir is an erpe-  
titer: ech brauce i me pat  
berip not fruyt he ſhal take a  
wey it: & ech pat berip fruyt he

ſhal purge it pat it be ʒe ʒe mo-  
ʒe fruyt: now ze ben cleue for ʒe  
word: pat / hane ſpoke to ʒou: diſ-  
celle ze in me: & / in ʒou: as a brau-  
che may not make fruyt of it ſelf:  
but it diſcelle in ʒe ʒyue: ſo ne-  
ʒe: but ze diſcelle in me: / am a  
ʒyue ze ʒe brauche: who pat diſcel-  
ly in me & / in hi: ʒis berip mo-  
che fruyt: for wiþoute me ze  
mon ne ʒis do: if ony mā diſcel-  
ly not i me: he ſhal be caſt out  
as a brauche & ſhal were drie: & ʒe  
ſhule gaderen hi: & ʒe ſhule caſte hi to ʒe fier:  
& he breney: if ze diſcelle i me: & my  
wordis diſcelle in ʒou: what eu  
ʒis ze wolen: ze ſhulen aſe: &  
it ſhal be don to ʒou in ʒis ʒis  
my fadir is clariſhed: ʒe ʒe bryge  
for ʒi ſil moche fruyt: & ʒe ʒe be ma-  
ad my diſciþlis: as my fadir loue  
de me: / hane louned ʒou: diſcelle ze  
i my loue: if ze kepen my comā-  
demētis: ze ſhulen diſcelle i my  
loue: as / hane kept ʒe comāde-  
mētis of my fadir: & / diſcelle in  
his loue: ʒe ʒis ʒis / apak to  
ʒou: ʒ my ioye be in ʒou: & ʒou  
ioye be fulfillid: ʒis is my comā-  
demēt: ʒe loue to gidre: as / loue  
de ʒou: no mā hay more loue ʒan  
ʒis: ʒ amān putte his lif for hile  
frendis: ze ben my frendis: if ze  
doen ʒe ʒis pat / comāde to  
ʒou: now / ſhal not clepe ʒou ſer-  
uāntis: for ʒe ſeruant woot not  
what his lord ſhal do: but / hane  
clepid ʒou frendis: for alle ʒis whi-  
che / herde of my fadir: / hane  
maad knowen to ʒou: ze han not  
choſi me: but / chees ʒou: & / ha-  
ue put ʒou: ʒ ze go & brynge  
for ʒi fruyt: & ʒou fruyt diſcelle







den þu sentist me / þu preie for  
he / þu preie not for þe world: but  
for he þat þou hast zonn to me  
for þei ben þine / And alle my þi-  
gis ben þine: & þi þigis be my-  
ne: & I am clarified in he / & now  
I am not in þe world: & þes be  
in þe world: & I come to þee / hood  
ly fadir: kepe he in þi name: whi-  
che þou zonest to me: þu þe be go-  
as we ben / while I was wyþ he:  
I kepte hem in þi name: yulke þat  
þou zonest to me: I kepte / & now  
of hem perulthide: but þe sone  
of perdition: þu þe dreynt be  
fulfilled: but now I come to þee  
& I speke þes þigis in þe world:  
þu þe haue my wyfe fulfilled i he  
silk / I zaf to he þi word: & þe wor-  
ld hadde hem in hate / for þei be  
not of þe world: as I am not of  
þe world: I preie not þu take  
hem away fro þe world: but þat  
þou kepe hem fro þu / þei be not  
of þe world: as I am not of þe  
world: halewe þou he in trewe /  
þi word is trewe / as þou sentist  
me into þe world: also I sente he  
into þe world / And I halewe my  
silk for hem: þu also þei be halewid  
in trewe: & I preie not oonly for  
hem: but also for hem þat schil-  
beleue i to me bi þe word of he:  
þu alle be oon: as þou fadir i me:  
& I in þee: þu also þei in vs be oon:  
þat þe world beleue: þu þou hast  
sent me: & I haue zonn to hem  
þe clerenesse þat þou hast zonn  
to me: þu þe be oon as we ben oon:  
and I in hem & þou i me: þu þe  
be endid into oon: & þat þe world  
knowe þu þou sentist me: & hast  
loued he: as þou hast loued alle

me / fadir þei whiche þou zonest  
to me: I wole þu wher I am: þu þe  
be wyþ me: þu þe be my clerenesse:  
þat þou hast zonn to me: for þou  
louedist me bifore þe makig of  
þe world: fadir ristful þe world  
knew þe not: but I knew þe: &  
þes knewen þu þou sentist me: &  
I haue maad þi name knowun to  
hem: & I schal make knowun: þu þe  
loue bi whiche þou hast loued me:  
be in hem: & I in hem. **¶** **¶** **¶**  
**W**hane he hadde seid þes  
þigis: he wente out wyþ  
hile discipulis ou þe stound  
of cedron / wher was aserd: into  
whiche he entride & hile discipulis  
and Judas þat bitrayede hi: knew  
þe place for ofte he cam þidur  
wyþ hile discipulis: þu þe whane  
Judas hadde takun a cuppany of kny-  
tis & mynistris of þe biþhopis:  
of þe farisees: he cam þidur w  
lanternis & brondis & armetis  
and so he witege alle þigis: þat  
weren to come on hi: wente forþ  
& seide to hem / whos seken þe: þe  
anseriden to hi / ihu of nazareth  
he seip to he / I am: & Judas þat  
bitrayede hi: stood wyþ hem / and  
whane he seide to he / I am: þei we-  
ten abak & felden don on þe erpe  
& eft he aride hem / whom seken  
þe: & þei seiden / ihu of nazareth  
he answere to he / I seide to þou:  
þu I am: þu þe seken me: suf-  
fre þe þes to go away: þu þe word  
whiche he seide schilte be fulfilled:  
for I losse not ony of hem: whiche  
þou hast zonn to me / þu þe þe  
moit petre hadde alwerd: & don  
it out & smoot þe seruait of þe  
biþhop: & fette of his ryt eere

and þe name of þe seruait: was  
malcus / þu þe seide to petre  
þutte þou in swerd into þi iþhe  
þu wolt þou not þu / I dreyne þe  
cuppe: þat my fadir zaf to me:  
þu þe cuppany of knytis & þe  
tribune: & þe mynistris of þe ie-  
wis: token ihu & bounden hy: & led-  
den hi first to anas / for he was fa-  
dir of capfas wyf: þat was bi-  
shop of þat zee: & it was capfas  
þat zaf conseil to þe ierwis: þu  
sped þu þe ma dye for þe peple: but  
symond petre sawe ihu: & an-  
disciple: & yulke disciple was kno-  
un to þe biþhop: wente out: &  
seide to þe woman þu kepte þe do-  
ze: & brongte yn petre / and þe da-  
mytel kepere of þe doze: seide to  
petre / wher þou art also of þis  
mannis discipulis: he seide / I am  
not: & þe seruaitis & mynistris  
stoden at þe colis: for it was co-  
old: & þe ierwis mede hem: & petre  
was wyþ hem: stondige & war-  
myge hi / and þe biþhop aride  
ihu of hile discipulis: & of his techis  
he answere to hi / I haue spoke  
openly to þe world: I tanzte en-  
more in þe synagoge & in þe te-  
ple: whidur alle þe ierwis came  
to gadre: & ihu þe spak no myg  
what arit þou me: are he þat  
herde: what I haue spokun to he  
lo þe wite what þigis I haue seid  
whane he hadde seid þes þigis:  
oon of þe mynistris stondige  
myz: zaf a boffet to ihu: & seide  
answerist þou so to þe biþhop:  
he answere to hi / if I haue spo-  
kun yuel: bere þu wyttneßig of  
þu / but if I seide wel: why  
smytist þou me: & anas sen

biþhop: & he entride wyþ ihu into  
þe halle of þe biþhop: but petre  
stood at þe doze wyþoute forþ: þu þe  
petre discipule þat was knoun to þe

te hi bounden to capfas þe biþhop  
& symond petre stood & warunde  
hi / And þe seide to hi / wher also  
þou art hile discipule: he denyeþe  
& seide / I am not: oon of biþho-  
pis seruaitis cosyn of hi whos  
eere petre fette of: seide / syz I  
þee not in þe zerd wyþ hi: and  
petre eft sone denyeþe: & anon  
þe col crew: þane þe ledde ihu to  
capfas into þe moot halle: & it  
was eerly: & þe entride not into  
þe moot halle: þu þe schilte not  
be defouled: but þu þe schilte ete  
pask: þu þe pilat wente out wyþ  
oute forþ to hem: & seide / what ac-  
culþing bringe þe aens þis man:  
þe answereþe: & seiden to hym  
if þis were not amysdoere: we  
hadde not bitakun hi to þee: þane  
pilat seip to hem / take þe hy: &  
teme þe hym afor zonn laue: & þe  
ierwis seiden to hym / it is not le-  
eful to us: to sle ony ma: þu þe  
word of ihu schilte be fulfilled  
whiche he seide: signyfinge bi  
what deip he schilte dye: þu þe  
eteloone pilat entride into þe  
moot halle: & clepde ihu & seide  
to hi / art þu king of ierwis: he  
answereþe & seide to hi / leif þou  
þis þig of þis silk: epr ope han  
seid to þe of me: pilat answere  
rite / wher I am a ierwe: þu þe folk  
& biþhopis bitooke þe to me:  
what hast þou don: he answere  
rite / my kingdom is not of þis  
world: if my kingdom wer of þis  
world: my mynistris schilden  
steyne: þu I schilte not be takun  
to þe ierwis: but now my king-  
dom is not her: & so pilat seide to  
hi / þane þou art a king: he an-



*Alf*

判

John

我



gidre. & pilke opur duple ran bi  
fore petre. & cam first to ye graue  
and whine he stoupe. he sez pe  
theetis lyggige. nepeles he en  
tride not. & fore symound petre cam  
habyge hi. & he entride into ye g  
ne. & he sez pe theetis leid. & pe lu  
danie pat was on his heed not  
leid wip ye theetis. but bi it silt  
wappid into o place. & fore yane  
pilke duple pat cam first to ye  
grauie entride. & sez. & bileuede  
for pei kneien not zit pe strip  
tur. & it bihofe hi to ryle aen  
fro deop. & fore ye duple weten  
efeloune to he silt. but marie sto  
od at ye gne wyoute for wepi  
ge. & pe while she wepte. she bo  
uide hir. & biheeld forp into ye g  
ne. and she sez. tweyne angelis  
sitige in whyt. oon at ye heed.  
& oon at ye feet. wher pe body of  
ihu was leyd. & pei seien to hir.  
wōman what weepst þu? she  
seide to he. for pei han take away  
my lord. & i woot not wher pei  
han leyd hi. whine she hadde seid  
res pigis. she tuede backward.  
& sez ihu stondige. & wite not þu  
it was ihu. the seip to hir. wōma  
what wepst þu? who sekist þou?  
she gellige þu he was agardener.  
seip to hi. su. if þou hast takn þu  
wp. seie to me wher þou hast leid  
hi. & i shal take hi away. the seip  
to hir. marie. she turnede. & seip  
to hi. raboun. þu is to seie maister.  
the seip to hir. nyle þou touche me  
for i hane not zit stred to my fa  
dir. but go to my briden. & sepe  
to hem. i stye to my fadir. & to  
zour fadir. to my god. & to zour  
god. marie maideleyn cam tel

lige to pe duple. & sez pe  
lord. & res pigis he seide to me.  
& fore whine it was eyn i par day.  
oon of ye labotis. & pe zatis were  
thit wher pe duple were  
gadrd for drede of ye ieris. the  
cam & stood in ye myddel of ye d  
ciple. & he seip to hem. pees to i.  
and whine he hadde leid ris. he the  
wide to he hondis. & seide. & fore pe  
duple iope. for ye lord was  
seyn. and he seip to hem est. pees  
to zou. as pe fadir seide me. i sen  
de zou. whine he hadde leid ris. he  
bleis on he. & seide. take ye hood  
goft. whos spues ze forpne. ro  
ben for zou. to he. & whos ze wip  
holden. ro ben wipholdn. but the  
misoon of ye twelue. pat is led  
didm. was not wip hem. whine  
the cam. & fore ye ope duple sei  
den. we han seyn ye lord. & he seide  
to hem. but i ge in his hondis pe  
fiching of hapis. & putte my  
fingur into ye places of ye nay  
les. & putte myn hond into his  
spide. & shal not bileue. & after  
eizte dages. efeloune hile duple  
were wip ine. & thomas wip he  
the cam. while pe zatis were thit.  
& stood in ye myddel. & seide. pees  
to zou. after ward he seip to the  
mis. putte yn her yn fingur. &  
se myn hondis. & putte hidur  
yn hond. & putte ito my spide.  
nyle þou be vnbileedful. but seip  
ful. thomas anseride. & seide  
to hi. my lord. & god. the seip to hi.  
thoms for þou hast seyn me. þou  
bileuedist. bleid be þu pat lye  
not. & han bileued. & the dide ma  
nye ope. signes in ye sigt of hi  
se duple. whiche ben not w

tu in vis book. but rise ben wraun.  
ye bileue þu the is crist. pe lone  
of god. & þu se bileunge. hane lif  
in his name. **A**nd the effeloune the  
de hi to hile duple. at  
ye see of tiberias. & he  
theide hi. þu. ye were to gidre  
symount petre. & thoms. pat is  
leid didm. & nathanael pat was  
of ye cane of galilee. & pe lones  
of sebedee. & tweyne ope of hi  
se duple. symount petre seip  
to hem. i go to fyllhe. pei seipen  
to hi. & we come wip yee. & pei  
wenten out. & wenten into a bo  
ot. & in pat nyzt pei taken no  
yung. but whine ye morwe was  
com. the stood in ye byrke. ne  
peles ye duple kneie not. &  
it was the. perfore the seip to  
hem. children wher ze han ony  
louping pig. pei anseride to  
hi. nay. he seide to he. putte ze ye  
nett into ye rixthalf of ye row  
yng. & ze shule fynde. & pei put  
tiden ye nett. & yane pei myte  
not draue it. for mltitide of foz  
th. perfore pilke duple whom  
ihu louede. seide to petre. it is pe  
lord. symount petre. whine he had  
de herd. & it is pe lord. gurte hi  
wip a coote for he was nakid.  
& wente into ye see. but ye ope  
duple came bi boot. for pei we  
re not fer fro ye lond. but as a  
two hundrid cubytis. drayge  
ye net of fyllth. & as pei came  
don into ye lond. pei syen cohs  
lygge. & a fyllth leid on. & breed  
the seip to he. byunge ze of ye fu  
llth. whiche ze han takn now.  
symount petre wente up. & dore.

ye nett into ye lond. ful of grete  
fyllth. an hundrid fifty & yre. &  
whine pei weren so mange. pe nett  
was not brokun. the seip to hem. co  
me ze ete ze. & no mā of he pat  
saten at ye mete durste are hi.  
who art þou. witege þu it is pe lord.  
& the cam. & took breed. & gaf to he.  
& fyllthe allo. now vis yadde ty  
me the was thewid to hile duple.  
whine he hadde risen azen fro  
deop. & whine pei hadden etn. the  
seip to symount petre. symount of  
ihu louest þou me more þan  
yele. he seip to hi. the lord. & woot  
þu i loue yee. the seip to hi. fede  
þou my lambren. & he seip to hi.  
symount of ihu louest þou me.  
he seip to him. the lord. þou woot  
þu i loue yee. he seip to hi. fede þou  
my lambren. he seip to hi. pe yad  
de tyme. symount of ihu louest  
þou me. & petre was henry. for he  
seip to hi. ye yadde tyme louest þu  
me. & he seip to hi. lord. þou knoost  
alle pigis. þou woot þu i loue yee.  
the seip to hi. fede my theep. &  
treuh treuh. i seie to yee. whine  
þou wer zonger. þou gurdest yee.  
& wandredist wher þou woldist.  
but whine þou shalt wer elder.  
þou shalt holde forp yn hondis.  
& anof shal gurde yee. & shal lede  
yee whidur þu wolt not. he seide ris  
pig. signyfuge by what deer he  
shulde glorifie god. & whine he  
he hadde leid res pigis. he seip to  
hi. swaue þou me. petre turnede  
& sez pilke duple. halyunge. who  
the louede. which allo restide in ye  
louper on his brest. & he seide to  
hi. lord. who is it pat shal brye  
yee. perfore whine petre hadde



seyne pis: he seip to ihu lord but  
what pis: ihu seip to hi: so i wole  
le pat he dwelle til i come: whi  
to pee: sume pou me: yfore pis  
word wente out among pe br  
pen: y pille distiple diep not: e  
ihu seide not to hi: y he drey not:  
but so i wole y he dwelle til i  
come: what to pee: pis is pille  
distiple: pat ber y witneslig of pes  
pigs: e wroot he and we wate  
y his witneslig is trewe: e ver  
ben also manye ope pigs pat  
ihu dide: whiche if rei ben wri  
bi ech bi hi self: i deme y re world  
hi self: alhal not take y bok is:  
pat ben to be wri

**Here en  
dip re gospel of ioh: e bigyn  
ner y plog on y pille of po  
ul to romayns**

**P**aulus ben in pe cūtey  
of italie: rei weren dillepud first  
of falle pofetis: y is falle tere:  
e vndir y name of our lord ihu  
crist: rei weren brount into y la  
we e pferis: y is into cerymony  
es eyn fleschly kepyng of nuy  
ses laue e of pferis acordige w  
y cerymonyes: whiche vlig is  
contre nouis to y treupe e fre  
dom of cristis gospel: Poul aen  
clep y pes romayns to bry seip  
e treupe of y gospel: e wryt y  
to hem pis pille fro corinthe

**pis seip ierom in his plog on  
y pille to romayns: e here  
bigynner y pille is**

**P**oul y seruait of  
ihu crist: clepid an  
apostle: departid  
into y gospel of god:  
whiche he hadde by  
hote to fore bi hi pferis: in hooly

apsturis of his sone: whiche is mand  
to hi of y seed of dany: bi y fle  
ilth: e he was bfore ordyned y  
sone of god in vtru: bi y spirit of  
halewying: of y aenryng of de  
me of ihu crist our lord: 23 y whom  
we han resseyned grace e y offi  
ce of apostil: to obeie to y seip  
in alle folkis for his name: Amyn  
whiche ze ben also clepid of ihu  
crist: e so alle pat ben at rome: de  
ligis of god e clepid hooly: grace  
to you e pees of god our fadir: e  
of y lord ihu crist: **A** first i do pa  
figns to my god: bi ihu crist for alle  
you: for zome seip is ihu crist: i  
y world: for god is a witnes to  
me: to who i serue in y spirit: i  
y gospel of his sone: y wryte  
ceellig: i make wite of zome enen  
my preieris: e blesche if in my  
maner su tyne i hane a lpedy  
wepe y re wille of god to come to  
you: for i desyre to se you: to pa  
ten shuphat of spiritual grace: y  
ze be offermyd: y is: to be confor  
tid to god: e in you: bi seip: pat is  
boye zout: e myn to gidre: e bi  
y nyle y za vnbroune: y of  
te i purpouse to come to you:  
and i am lett to pis tyne: y  
hane su fruyt in you: as moye  
folkis: to grekis e to barberyis  
to wyle me e to vnbile me: i am  
dettour: so pat y is i me is redy  
to preche y gospel also to you  
pat ben at rome: for i shane not  
y gospel: for it is y vertu of god  
into heelp to ech ma pat bileuey:  
to y jews first: e to y grekis: for  
y ryt wysnesse of god is shewid  
in it: of seip into seip: as it is wri  
tū: for a iust man lyuey of seip

for y wryppe of god is shewid fro  
heueu: on al vnyte: e wryknes  
se of y me: pat wrytholde y tren  
re of god in vnytwysnesse: for  
pat pig of god pat is knowū: is  
shewid to he: for god har shewid  
to he: for y vnspile pigis of hi:  
pat ben vndir stonde in biholdū  
of y creatur of y world bi y  
pigs pat ben maid: ze e y euer  
lastige vtru of hy e y godhed: so  
y rei mowū not be excusid: for p  
ue rei hadden knowe god: rei glori  
fieden hi not as god: neyn dū  
pansigis: but rei vanyshede in  
her pouzris: e y vnspile herte  
of hem was terfid: for rei seynge  
y hem self were wyle: rei were  
maid foolis and rei chaūgeden y  
glorie of god vncorruptible: into  
y lykenesse of an ymage of a deed  
ly mā: e of byddis: e of foum: foo  
tid beestis: e of serpentis: for wyl  
pig: god bitook hem into y desy  
ris of her herte: to vdenesse: y  
rei ponythe wry wrongis her  
bodies in hem self: y whiche chan  
giden y treupe of god into leelhyg:  
e herieden e serueden a creature:  
rase pan to y creatour: pat is  
blesid into worldis of worldis a  
me: **T**herfore god bitook he into pas  
hous of shenlyth: for y wrymen  
of hem chaūgiden y kyndly vll: i  
to pat vll pat is azens kynde: alle y  
men forloken y kyndly vll of us  
mau: e breneden in her desiris to  
gidre: e men into men wryzten  
slyphed: e resseyneden into he self  
y meede pat bihofte of her erris:  
and as rei pūede pat rei hadden  
not god in knowig: god bitook he  
to a repuable wry: y rei do y pig

pat ben not conuenable: y rei be ful  
fullid w al wryknesse: malice:  
forpocacion: couetise: weyward  
nesse: ful of of enye: malleyngis:  
stryf: gyle: yuel wille: pny bacbite  
ris: detractouris: hateful to god:  
debauchis: proude e hy on meure:  
fyndens of yuele pigs: not obei  
shige to fadir e modur: vnspile:  
e manly wrypoute loue: wrypoute  
boond of pees: wrypoute mercy: y  
whiche whie rei hadden knowe  
y ryt wysnesse of god: vndir stode  
not: y rei pat doen suche pigs: be  
wrypi y deip: not oonly rei pat do  
en y pigs: but also rei pat con  
fente to y doeris: **E** y

**W**herfore y art vntwula  
ble: ech mā pat demest: for  
in what pig rei demest anoy man:  
you condepynt y self: for rei donit  
y same pigs: whiche rei demest:  
e we wite y re dom of god is asen  
treupe azens he: pat doen suche  
pigs: But ge llyk you mā: pat de  
mest hem pat doen suche pigs: e y  
doit y pigs: y you shal allape  
y dom of god: wher y dispisest y  
richellis of his goodnesse: e y paci  
ence e y long abydyng: knowū y  
not y re beynngmyte of god: leed y  
pee to forpynkyng: but aft ym hard  
nesse e vurepētū herte: y tre  
louest to pee: wryppe in y day  
of wryppe e of shewig of y ryt  
ful dom of god: pat shal seide to ech  
mā asen his werkis: sopek to he  
pat ben bi patience of good werk:  
glorie e honour: e vncorruptiō:  
to hem pat scken euilastige lyf: but  
to he: pat ben of stryf e pat glen  
ten not to treupe: but bileue to  
wryknesse: wryppe e indigna



cion. tribulacion & angurich. ito ech  
soul of mā pat worchp ynel to  
ye ieris firft & to ye greek. but glo  
rie & honour & pees to ech mā pat  
worchp good pig. to ye ieris firft  
& to ye greek. for acceptiō of p  
loones. is not anentis god. for who  
eue han spued wroute ye laue.  
thule peridhe wroute ye laue.  
and who eue han spued in ye laue.  
pei thulen be demed by ye laue.  
for ye heeternis of laue. ben not  
nif anentis god. but ye doeris of  
ye laue thule be maid nif. for wha  
ne hepene me pat han not laue.  
doen kyndely po pigis pat ben of  
ye laue. pei not hanngre such ma  
ner laue. ben laue to hem self. pat  
theiken ye werf of ye laue. witiu  
in her hertis. for ye consience of  
hem zeldy to hem a witneffig by  
twice hem self of pouztis. pat be  
accusynge or defendyng. in ye day  
whine god thal deme ye pur pigis  
of me afur my gospel by ihu crist.  
but if you art named a ier. & res  
tit in ye laue. & hast glorie in god.  
& hast knowe his wille. & you lernd  
by ye laue. prenest ye more pfi  
table pigis. & trustit y self to be  
a leder of blynde me. ye lizt of he  
pat ben iderkneffis. to a techen  
of vailyle me. a maistr of zonge  
children. pat hast ye fourme of kn  
yng. & of treupe in ye laue. what  
vane techist you anoy. & techist  
not y self. you pat pchist y me  
thal not stele. debit. you pat re  
chist y me thal do no lecherie.  
dout lecherie. y pat wlatist maly  
metis. dout saclegie. y pat hast  
glorie i ye laue. vnyozidynest  
god by brefig of ye laue. for ye

name of god. is blasfemyd bi you  
a mong hereu me. as it is writu  
for circucioni pfitet if you kepe  
ye laue. but if you be a trespas  
azeyn ye laue. y circucioni is  
maid prepucie. perfore if you  
kepe ye ryt wysnes of ye laue.  
wher his prepucie thal not be a  
rettid into circucioni. & ye p  
cie of kynde pat fulliler ye laue.  
thal deme yee. pat bi lettre & c  
cucioni art trespasoun. azeyn  
ye laue. for he pat is in opyne is  
not a ier. ney it is circucioni  
pat is openly in ye fleidh. but  
he pat is a ier in hie. and ye c  
cucioni of herte. thpnt. not bi  
ye lettre. whos pressyng is not of  
me but of god. **W**at vane is more to a ier.  
or what profit of circuc  
ioni moche. by al wysle. furst for ye  
spetigis of god. wer e bitakn to he  
& what if summe of hem bileuede  
not. wher ye vubileue of hem hay  
avoidid ye fey of god. god forbe  
de. for god is sofast. but ech mā  
a ier. as it is writu. y you be ius  
tified in y wordis. & oncom wha  
ue you art demid. but if our w  
idneffe comende ye ryt wysnes  
se of god. what thulen we seie.  
wher god is wickid. pat byyngy  
in wryppe. afur mā y sepe. god  
forbede. ellis how thal god deme  
yis world. for if ye treupe of god  
hay aboudid i my leffing. unto ye  
glorie of hi. what 3t am i demed  
as a syner. & not as we ben blas  
femyd. & as sū me leyen y we seie.  
do we yuele pigis. y goode pigis  
come. whos dāpnaciō is iust  
what vane & palleu we he. nay

for we han thewid bi skile. y alle  
bope ieris & greek ben vndir hy  
ne. as it writu. for y is no mā nif.  
y is no mā vndir stondige ney  
dekige god. alle bowedu away.  
to gide ye ben maid vnyozitable.  
y is noon pat dony good pig. y is nō  
on til to oon ye prote of hem is an  
opyn sepulcre. wry her tūgis pei  
diden gilefely. ye venym of sna  
kis is vndir her lippis. ye mony  
of whiche is ful of curthys. & but  
turnelle. ye feet of hem ben swet  
to thede blood. soke & curidneffe  
ben i ye weies of he. & yei knewe  
not ye weye of pees. ye dæde of  
god is not bifoze her yen. & we  
witen. y what eue pigis ye laue  
spetir. it spetir to hem pat ben  
i ye laue. y ech mony be stopid.  
ech word be maid suget to god.  
for of ye werkis of ye laue ech  
fleidh thal not be iustified  
bifoze hi. for bi ye laue yei is kno  
wying of syne. but now wroute  
ye laue. ye ryt wysnes of god  
is thewid. pat is witneffid of ye  
laue & ye pferis. & ye ryt wysnes  
of god is by ye fey of ihu crist. to all  
me & on alle me pat bileue in hi. for y is  
no departyng. for alle me spuede.  
& han nede to ye glorie of god. & ben  
iustified frely by his grace. by ye  
azenyng pat is in eit ihu. whom  
god ordeynede for ymer bi fey i his  
blood. to ye thewyng of his ryt wis  
nesse. for remysion of bifoze go  
yng syne. in ye berig. xpy of  
god. to ye thewyng of his ryt wys  
nesse in yis tyme. y he be iust &  
iustefyng hi pat is of ye fey  
of ihu crist. wher vane is y glori  
yng. it is excludid by what la

we. of dedis doyng. nay. but by  
ye laue of fey. for we deme amā  
to be iustified bi ye fey. wroute  
werkis of ye laue. wher of ieris.  
is god onely. wher he is not also of  
hepene me. & his & of hepene me. for  
oon god is. pat iustifey circucio  
on bi fey. & pncie bi fey. distri  
en we pfoze ye laue bi ye fey. god  
forbede. but we stabbith ye laue.  
**W**at vane. **W**at vane. **W**at vane.  
thulen we seie. y abra  
him on. fady afur ye fle  
idh soond. for if abrahim be iusti  
fied of werkis of ye laue. he hay  
glorie but not anentis god. for  
what seip ye septu. abrahim bile  
uede to god. & it was arettid to hi  
to ryt wysnesse. & to hi pat worchp.  
meede is not arettid bi grace. but  
by dette. sovel to hi pat worchp not.  
but bileuey into hi pat iustifey a  
wickid mā. his fey is arettid to  
ryt wysnesse afur ye purpos of go  
dis grace. as dany seip ye bleffid  
nesse of amā whō god accepty.  
he ymer to hi ryt wysnesse wry  
oute werkis of ye laue. Bleffid  
ben pei whos wickidneffis ben for  
zoun. & whos lynes be hid. Blef  
sid is pat mā. to whō god arettide  
not syne. pān wher dwelly yis  
blyffidneffe oonly in circucioni.  
or allo in pncie. for we seipen y  
ye fey was arettid to abrahim  
to ryt wysnesse. how vane was  
it arettid. in circucioni or i pncie.  
& he took a signe of circucioni. a  
tooke of ryt wysnesse of ye fey  
which is i pncie. y he be fady. of  
alle me bileuyge bi pncie. y it be  
arettid also to he to ryt wysnesse.



For he be fadir of circuncisioun / not  
only to hem pat ben of circuncisi-  
oun: but also to hem pat han be  
steppis. of pe fey / which fey is  
in spucie of our fadir abraham  
for not bi pe lawe. is biheeste to  
abraham or to his seed. For he shul-  
de be eyr of pe world: but bi pe  
ristwysnesse of fey / for if pei  
pat ben of pe lawe. ben eyris:  
fey is distroyed. biheeste is don a-  
wey / for pe lawe worchis wra-  
pe / for where is no lawe. per is  
no trespas: ney is trespassing.  
For ristfulness is of pe fey.  
For bi grace biheeste be stable to  
ech seed / not to pat seed only pat  
is of pe lawe: but to pat pat is  
of pe fey of abraham / which is fa-  
dir of us alle: as it is writun / for  
I have lett pee fadir of many fol-  
kis bifore god: to whom pon hast  
biuewed / which god quykenev  
deed me: & clepys po pigis pat be  
not as po pat ben / which abraham  
agens hope. biuewed into hope:  
For he shulde be maid fadir of ma-  
ny folkis. As it was leid to hym  
pus shal pi seed be. as pe steris  
of heuene. & as pe granel pat  
is in pe bynke of pe see / & he  
was not maid vntidefast in pe  
bileue. ney he biheeste his body  
pāne upz deed. Whāne he was  
almost of an hundred yer. ne pe  
wombe of sare upz deed: also in  
pe biheeste of god. he donide not  
wryvntist: but he was confort-  
tid in bileue. & myge glorie to  
god: writige moost fully. For whē  
eu pigis god hay biht: he is my-  
ti also to do: verfore it was aret-  
tid to hi to ristwysnesse / & it is

not wrytun only for hi. For it was  
aretid to hi to ristfulness: but  
also for us to which it shal be  
aretid. pat bileue in hi pat re-  
side our lord ihu crist fro deap / whi-  
ch was bitakun for our synes: &  
rool agen for our iustifying.  
**V**erfore we wryt / **C. vi.**  
fied of fey: hane we pees  
at god bi our lord ihu crist bi  
whom we han upz goyng to.  
by fey into his grace. in which  
we stonden & han glorie in pe hope  
of reglorie of godis children: &  
not pis only: but also we glori-  
en in tribulacioun / in winge. For  
tribulacioun worchis patience  
& patience purgys / & purgys hope  
& hope confortis not: for pe chari-  
te of god is tryed abrood / our her-  
tis by pe hoodi govt pat is zouni  
to us / and whyle we were lyke  
astur pe tyme. wher dyde et for  
writid me: for sneyis dyer our mā  
for pe nist man / & it for a good mā:  
pauente li mā dar dye: & but god  
comedy his charite in vs / for it whi-  
ne we were zit syners: astur pe  
tyme et was deed for vs pāne  
moche more now we iustified in his  
blood shulen be saaf fro wrape  
by hi / for if whāne whāne we  
weren euemyes: we ben recoi-  
celid to god bi pe deap of his sone:  
myche more we recoiuelid: shu-  
len be saaf in pe luf of hi / & not  
only pis: but also we glorie in  
in god. by our lord ihu crist: by  
whi we han resseyued now re-  
concelis / For as by o mā synen  
tride into pis world. & by hys deap  
& so deap passid for us alle me:  
in which mā alle me synen: for til

to pe lawe: syne was in pe world:  
but syne was not retid: whiche  
lawe was not. But deap reguede  
from adam til to moyses. Also  
to hem pat syneden not: & hys  
se of pe trespassing of ada: pe whi-  
ch is liknesse of et to comyge: but  
not as gilt: so pe zifte / for if pyn-  
pe gilt of oon. manye ben deed:  
moche more pe grace of god / &  
pe zifte in pe grace of o mā ihu  
crist hay abondid into many me:  
& not as bi o syne: so bi pe zifte  
for pe don of oon into condepna-  
cioun: but grace of many giltis  
into iustificacioun / for if in pe gilt  
of oon. deap reguede pynz oon: mo-  
che more me p taryng. plente of  
grace / & of zynge / & of ristwys-  
nesse shule regne in luf by oon  
ihu crist / For as bi pe gilt of oon  
into alle me into condepnacioun:  
so by pe ristwysnesse of oon. ito  
alle me into iustifying of luf: for  
as by moberdence of oon mā. ma-  
nye ben maid syners: so bi pe  
obedience of oon. manye shule  
be iust / and pe lawe entride: For  
gilt shule be plenteuous: but  
wher gilt was plenteuous: gra-  
ce was more plenteuous / For as sy-  
ne reguede into deap. so grace  
regne by ristwysnesse into euer  
lastige luf by ihu crist our lord.  
**V**erfore what / **C. vii.**  
shule we seie / shulen  
we dyelle in syne: For gre-  
te plenteuous: god forbete: for h-  
ous shulen we pat ben deed to sy-  
ne: lue zit p me: wher hyen  
ze kuowe not. For whiche eu we be  
baptid in et ihu: we ben bap-  
tid in his deap / for we ben to

gider buried wryt bi baptym  
to deap / For as et aroos fro deap bi  
pe glorie of pe fadir: so walke we  
in a newnesse of luf: for if we plan-  
tid to gyde. ben maid to pe licnel-  
se of his deap: also we shule be of  
pe licnesse of his ristwysnesse / whi-  
tys pis pig / For our oltre man is  
crucified to gyde: For pe body of sy-  
ne be distroyed: For we serue no mo-  
re to syne: for he pat is deed: is ius-  
tified fro syne: & if we ben deed  
wryt: we bileue / also we shu-  
len lue to gyde wryt hi writige.  
for et ristwysnesse agen fro deap: now  
dier not: deap shal no more hane  
lordship on hi: for he was deed  
to syne: he was deed onys / but  
he lue: he luey to god: so ze de-  
me zouni self to be deed to syne: but  
luyge to god / ihu crist our lord.  
verfore regne not syne in your  
deedly body: For ze obeith to his co-  
netynge / ney zyne ze zouni mebris.  
armuris of wickidnesse to syne:  
but zyne ze zouni self to god. as pei  
pat synen of deed me. & zoure mem-  
bris armuris of ristwysnesse to  
god: for syne shal not hane lord-  
ship on zouni: for ze ben not vndir  
pe lawe: but vndir grace: what  
verfore / shulen we do syne. for we  
ben not vndir pe lawe: but vndir  
grace: god forbete wite ze not /  
to whom ze zynen zouni seruaitis  
to obeie to: ze ben seruaitis of rat  
pig to which ze han obeithid: ep  
of syne to deap: ep of obedience  
to ristwysnesse: but I panke god  
For ze weren seruaitis of syne: but  
ze han obeithid of herte. into rat  
fourme of techig. in which ze be  
bitakun / & ze delyned fro syne:











wyfelleſſe yat is of bileue ſey þ<sup>r</sup>  
 ſeue þou not in yi herte. who ſ<sup>r</sup>  
 hal ſtize into heuene: y<sup>r</sup> is to  
 ſeie. to lede doñ eñ. or who ſhal  
 go doñ into helle: yat is to azen  
 clepe eñ fro deep. but what ſey  
 ye ſtptm<sup>r</sup>. ye word is my: i yi  
 mony. i in yi herte. yis is ye  
 word of bileue: which we preche  
 yat if þou knowlecht i yi mo  
 ny. ye lord ihu eñ. i bileueſt i  
 ym herte. y<sup>r</sup> god reſide hi fro  
 deep: þou ſhalt be ſaaf. for by  
 herte we bileuey to i rtiſiſuel  
 ſe: but by mony knowleching is  
 maid to heelpen. for iſy ſtptm<sup>r</sup>  
 ſey. ech yat bileuey in hi. ſh  
 al not be confoundid. i y<sup>r</sup> is no  
 diſtinction of iew i of greek  
 for ye ſame lord of alle. is ryche  
 in alle yat inbardly clepen hi.  
 for ech mā who enle ſhal iward  
 ly clepe ye name of ye lord. ſhal  
 be ſaaf. how rane ſhulē þei in  
 wardly clepe hi. into who þei  
 han not bileued. or how ſhulē  
 þei bileue to hi. who þei han not  
 heerd. how ſhulē þei heer. wry  
 oute a prechour. i how ſhulē  
 þei preche. but þei be ſent.  
 as it is writun. how fan<sup>r</sup> ben  
 ye feet of hem yat pchen  
 pers. of hē y<sup>r</sup> prechen good  
 rigis. but not alle mē obereit  
 to ye goſpel. for i ſaye ſey. lord  
 who bileuede to ou<sup>r</sup> heer yng.  
 y<sup>r</sup> fore ſey is of heerig. but hee  
 rig. bi ye word of eñ. but i ſeie  
 wher þei herde not. i his ſope  
 ly ye word of hem wente out  
 into al erpe. i her wordis to  
 ye end of ye world. but i ſeie wh  
 iſrael knew not. firſt moyſes

sey: / I shal lede you to egypte. y<sup>e</sup> be no folk. y<sup>e</sup> be an ymygelye folk. / I shal sende you into baptye / and I shal be boord & sey: / I am foundū of me yat seken me not / openly / I apperide to hem: y<sup>e</sup> ariden not me / but to israhel he sey al day / I drete out my hondis to a peple yat bileuede not: but azen seide me // *C<sup>m</sup> xxi. 4.*

**A**fore I seye wher god hay put away his peple: god forbed / for I am an israhelite. of ye seed of abraham. of ye lynage of beniamyn. god hay not put away his peple: which he bifoze knewis / wher ye wite not. what ye skryn: sey in elye: / how he priey god azens yrael. lozd yehān slayn y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>etis. yehān vndurdoliuen y<sup>e</sup> anthers: & I am left alalone. & yehān seken my lyf. but what sey godis answere to hi: / I haue left to me leuene yon sendis of me: y<sup>e</sup> han not boord her knees bifoze baal. so yfoze al so in yis tyme. ye relyfs be maad bāt. by ye chesing of ye grace of god: & if it be by ye gre of god: it is not now of werkis / ellis gre is not now gre / what yāne: / israhel hay not getū yis yat he soughe: but election hay getū & ye ope ben blyndid. as it is writū god gaf to hem a spirit of conpunction: / hen y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> se not. & eeris y<sup>e</sup> yehān heer: not: into yis day: / da my sey: be ye boord of he maad into a gryn bifoze hem. & into chesing & into shauēdū & into zeldys to he / be ye yzen of he maad tēf y<sup>e</sup> yehān se not: & boke yon dōū al gatis ye bak of hem / yfoze I se:

wether þei offende so: ꝛ ꝛ þei schuldren  
 falle douȝ/ god forbede/ but bi þe  
 gilt of hem. heche þe is maad to he  
 rene me: ꝛ ꝛ þei make hē/ ꝛ if þe  
 gilt of hē ben richellis of þe wo  
 rld. ꝛ þe makis lesse of hē. be ry  
 cheis of heven me. how moche  
 more þe plente of hē/ but I lete  
 to þou hevene men/ for as lon  
 ge as I am apostle of heven  
 me. I schal honour my mynys  
 terie/ if in ouy maner. I schal my  
 flesch for to folowe: ꝛ ꝛ I make  
 sūme of hē last/ for if þe loss of  
 hē is þe reconcielyng of þe worlde.  
 what is þe takyng vp/ but hys  
 of deed me/ for if a litil part of  
 pat part is tased be hool: þe hool  
 gobet is hool/ ꝛ if þe roote is hool:  
 also þe brānchis/ what if ony of þe  
 brānchis ben brokū. whē þe wer  
 a wylde olyue tree. art graffid a  
 mong hem. ꝛ art maid felowe of  
 þe roote: ꝛ of þe fatnesse of þe oly  
 ue tree: nyle þou haue glorie aze  
 mus þe brānchis/ for if þou glori  
 est. þou berist not þe roote. but  
 þe roote see/ þfore þou seist/ þe brā  
 chis ben brokū: ꝛ I be graffid yn  
 wel for vublene þe brānchis be  
 brokū. but þou stondist bi fey/  
 nyle þou lauore hy pig: but dre  
 de þou/ for if god spare not þe  
 kyndely brānchis: lest þe net  
 he spare not þe/ þfore se þe good  
 nesse. ꝛ þe ferfuelle of god/ zhe þe  
 ferfuelle. into hē pat felle down/  
 but þe goodnesse of god into þe:  
 if þou diuelliſt in goodnesse/ ellis  
 also þou schalt be kutt douȝ/ zhe ꝛ  
 þei schule be lett yn: if þei diuelliſt  
 not i vublene/ for god is myȝty  
 to sette hē yn estloone/ for if þe art

Kyndely  
 But doñ of ye wylde olyue tree: & a  
 zen/ Kynde art sett into a good olyue  
 tree/ how moche more. yei pat ben  
 by kynde: shulde be sett in her oly  
 ue tree: but bryere / I wole not  
 pat ze vnknothe pis myste: pat  
 ze be not wyse to zoiu self: for blyd  
 nesse hay fild a party in israel:  
 til pat ye pleinte of heven men  
 entride. & so al israel shulde be  
 maid sauf: as it is writū he sh  
 al come of syon pat shal deliue.  
 & turne awei pe wickednesse of  
 iacob & pis testamēt to hē of me:  
 whue / I shal do a wey her synes  
 after ye gospel yei ben euemyes for  
 zoiu: but yei ben moost dere woꝛpe  
 bi ye eleccion for ye fadris & ye is  
 tis & ye clepyng of god: ben wy  
 oute foryrynkyng: and as hi tyme  
 allo ze bilededen not to god: but  
 now ze han gete mercy for ye vn  
 bileue of hem/ So & rese nois bileue  
 den not: into zoiu mercy. / Also  
 yei gete mercy for god dolide  
 to gidre alle pigis in vnbileue:  
 / he haue mercy on alle / a ye hū  
 nelle of ye richellis of ye wydo &  
 of ye knynng of god/ how i comp  
 henible ben hile domes: & hile wey  
 es ben vnserchable for whi who  
 kneib ye witt of of ye lord: or who  
 was his counceleur: or who for  
 me zaf to hy: & it shal be quyt  
 to hym: for of hym & by hy: & in  
 hy be alle pigis: to hi be glorie  
 into worddis amē. / **C. xii.**  
**G**herfore bryen / I bileche  
 zoiu by ye mey of god: /  
 ze zyne zoiu bodres: a lymge sa  
 crifice: hooly pleyge to god: & zoiu  
 re seruisable resonable and nyle ze  
 be cōfourned to pis world: but be  
 ze refourned i newnesse of zoiu



Witt: þe þe þe þe which is þe wille  
of god. good & wel pleſynge & par  
ſyt for þe ſeie by þe grace þat is  
joini to me to alle þat ben a nōg  
þou. þe þe ſaie not more þan it bi  
honey to ſaie. but forto ſaie to  
sobrenelle and to ech man as  
god haþ departid þe meſm of  
feir for as in o body we han ma  
ny membris. but alle þe membs  
han not þe ſame dete. ſo we ma  
ny ben o body in cō. & ech ben  
membris. con of anōþ. þerfore  
we þat han zifis dīſynge after  
þe grace. þat is joini to us. eyn  
profecie after þe reſoi of feir. eyn  
ſeruiſe i mīſtīſtīg. eyn he þat  
techi in techīg. he þat ſtīp loſt  
ly i moneſtīg. he þat zīney i  
ſyplenelle. he þat is ſonereyn i  
bīſynelle. he þat haþ mercy i glad  
nelle. lone wīſtīg ſeruiſe. ha  
tīng puel. dīſynge to good. loſt  
ge to gīde. þe charite of benhed  
ech come biſore to wīſtīpen ope  
not ſloſt in bīſynelle. ſeruiſe in līp  
ſeruiſe to þe lord. wīſtīg in hope  
patient in tribulaciō. bīſtīg in pī  
er zīſynge good to þe nedīs of  
ſeruiſe. lēpynge hoſpitalite. bleſt  
le ze me þat pīſtīben zōn. bleſt  
ze & nīle ze canle. forto wīſtīg wī  
men þat joyn. forto wīſtīg wī  
pat wīſtīg. feele ze þe ſame pīng  
to gīde. not ſaīſynge hīz pīngīs.  
but cōſentīng to meke pīngīs.  
**F**ale ze be prudent anentīs zōn  
ſīlf. to no man zeldīng puel for  
puel. but pīſtīne ze good pīngīs.  
not onely biſore god. but allo bi  
fore alle mē. if it may be don. þat  
pat is of zōn. haue ze pees wīſtīg al  
le mē ze moſt dēre bīſtīg not

defendīng zōn ſīlf. but zīne ze pla  
ce to wīſtīg for it is wīſtīg. þe lord  
ſer. to me vīſtīg. & i ſhal zeldīg  
but if pīſtīnemy hīgīg. ſede þe  
hīm. if he pīſtīg. zīne þe dīſtīg  
ke to hī for þe dīſtīg pīſtīg.  
ſhal ga. die to gīde colis on  
hīs heed. nīle þe be onerō  
mī of pī. nīle. but onerō  
pīſtīg. **G**ood. **E**m. **F**m.  
ſonle be ſuget to hī  
ere pīſtīg. for þe is no  
pīſtīg. but of god. And þe  
pīngīs þat ben of god. ben onerō  
þerfore he pīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
azenſtīg. þe ordīnāce of god.  
& þe pīſtīg. azenſtīg. geten to hem  
ſīlf dāpnaciō. for pīſtīg be not  
to þe dīde of good wīſtīg. but of  
pīſtīg. but wīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. do þe good pīſtīg. & þe  
ſhal haue pīſtīg of it for he  
is þe mīſtīg of god. to þe iſtīg  
good. but if þe dīſtīg. dīde  
þe. for not wīſtīg. cauſe he be  
rīp. þe ſīberd. for he is þe mīſtīg  
of god. vīſtīg. wīſtīg. to hī  
pat dīſtīg. & þe dīſtīg. þe ze  
ſuget. not onely for wīſtīg. but  
allo for cōſtīg. for þe dīſtīg. ze  
zīnen tributīs. þe ben þe mīſtīg  
trīs of god. & ſeruen for þe ſame  
pīſtīg. þe dīſtīg. ze to alle mē dī  
tīs to wīſtīg tributīs. tributīs to  
wīſtīg. to. to. to. dīde. dīde.  
to wīſtīg. honōr. honōr. to no mē  
onle ze ony pīſtīg. but þat ze lone  
to gīde. for he þat lone hīs ney  
ebore. haþ ſīſtīg. þe lake. for  
ſhal do no lecherie. þe ſhal  
not ſle. pīſtīg. not ſle. pīſtīg.  
not ſeie fals wīſtīg. þe ſhal  
not cōuepte þe pīſtīg of pīſtīg

bore and if þe be ony ony mān  
nīſtīg. it is mīſtīg in pīſtīg. pīſtīg  
ſhal lone pīſtīg. nezeboze as pīſtīg  
þe lone of nezeboze. wīſtīg not  
pīſtīg. þe lone is þe ſīſtīg of  
þe lake. and we knōken pīſtīg. tīne  
pīſtīg. our is nō. pīſtīg. rīſtīg. fro  
ſleep. for nō. our heeþe is nee.  
pīſtīg. wīſtīg. wīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
wīſtīg. bīſtīg. but þe dīſtīg. hīſtīg.  
neze. þe dīſtīg. wīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
hīs of dīſtīg. & be wīſtīg. dīſtīg.  
in þe ſtīſtīg of hīſtīg. as in dīſtīg.  
wīſtīg. wīſtīg. not in ſīper  
ſīſtīg. & dīſtīg. not in  
beddīs. & wīſtīg. not in ſtīſtīg.  
& in cīſtīg. but be ze dīſtīg. in þe  
lord. hīſtīg. and do ze not þe bī  
ſīſtīg of ſīſtīg. **E**m. **F**m.  
**T**ake ze a ſpīſtīg. mā. iſtīg.  
ne. not iſtīg. of pīſtīg.  
tis. for anō. mā. lone. pīſtīg.  
he may ece alle pīſtīg. but he þat  
is ſīſtīg. ece wīſtīg. he þat ece. dīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. not hī þat ece. not. and he þat  
ece. not. dīſtīg. not hī þat ece.  
for god haþ take hī to hīm. wīſtīg.  
art þe þat dīſtīg. anō. ſer  
uīſtīg. to hīs lord. he ſtīſtīg. or ſal  
hī. fro hī. but he ſhal ſtīſtīg. for  
þe lord is mīſtīg. to make hīm  
pīſtīg. for wīſtīg. con. dīſtīg. a dīſtīg.  
bī. tīſtīg. a dīſtīg. anō. dīſtīg. ece.  
dīſtīg. ece. mā. ece. in hīs wīſtīg.  
he þat. vīſtīg. vīſtīg. vīſtīg. vīſtīg.  
dīſtīg. to þe lord. & he þat e  
tīſtīg. ece. to þe lord. for he dīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
hīs. to god. & he þat ece. not. ece.  
not to þe lord. & dīſtīg. pīſtīg. to god.  
for no mā. of us. lone. to hī. ſīlf.  
& no mā. dīſtīg. to hī. ſīlf. for wīſtīg.  
we lone. we lone. to þe lord.  
& wīſtīg. we dīſtīg. we dīſtīg. to þe

lord. þe dīſtīg. we lone. or dīſtīg.  
we ben of þe lord. for wīſtīg. for pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. ece. wīſtīg. and roos. aze.  
pīſtīg. be lord. bore. of quīſtīg. & of  
wīſtīg. but wīſtīg. dīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. or wīſtīg. dīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. for alle. we ſtīſtīg. ſtīſtīg. bī  
fore. þe trone. of cīſtīg. for it is wīſtīg.  
tīſtīg. i lone. ſer. þe lord. for to me  
ech. hīſtīg. ſhal. be. bīſtīg. & ech. tīſtīg.  
ge. ſhal. knōken. to god. pīſtīg.  
ech. of us. ſhal. zeldīg. reſoi. to god.  
for hī. ſīlf. pīſtīg. no. more. dīſtīg.  
we. ece. ony. but. more. dīſtīg. ze. pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. pīſtīg. not. hīſtīg. or  
ſtīſtīg. to a hīſtīg. wīſtīg. & tīſtīg.  
re. in þe lord. hīſtīg. pīſtīg. no. pīſtīg. is. co  
mīſtīg. by hīm. no. but. to hī. þat. dī  
mer. ony. pīſtīg. to be. vīſtīg. to  
hī. it is. vīſtīg. & if. pīſtīg. be. mī  
ſtīg. in. cōſtīg. for. me. nō. nō.  
pīſtīg. wīſtīg. not. after. dīſtīg. wīſtīg.  
le. pīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg. le. hīm.  
for. wīſtīg. cīſtīg. dīde. pīſtīg. be. not  
our. good. pīſtīg. blaſtīg. for. wīſtīg.  
þe. re. wīſtīg. of god. is. not. me. &  
dīſtīg. but. wīſtīg. & pīſtīg.  
& wīſtīg. i. pīſtīg. goſt. and. he. þat  
in. pīſtīg. ſer. ece. pīſtīg. god.  
& is. pīſtīg. to. nīſtīg. pīſtīg. hīſtīg. we  
pīſtīg. pīſtīg. þe. ben. of. pīſtīg. & pīſtīg.  
we. to. gīde. pīſtīg. pīſtīg. þe. ben. of  
edīſtīg. nīſtīg. pīſtīg. for. me. dīſtīg.  
dīſtīg. þe. wīſtīg. of god. for. alle. pīſtīg.  
ben. dīſtīg. but. it. is. pīſtīg. to. pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. ece. by. offēdīg. it. is. good  
to. not. ece. ſīſtīg. & to. not. dīſtīg.  
wīſtīg. nīſtīg. in. wīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg.  
offēdīg. or. is. ſtīſtīg. or. is. mī  
ſtīg. pīſtīg. hīſtīg. anentīs. pīſtīg. ſīlf.  
haue. pīſtīg. bīſtīg. god. bleſtīg. is. he  
pīſtīg. dīſtīg. not. hīm. ſīlf. in. pīſtīg.  
pīſtīg. pīſtīg. pīſtīg. for. he. þat. dī



meþ is dāpned. if he etip: for it  
is not of fery: & al þig: þat is not  
of fery: is þine. **B**ut we lādere me oþen to  
sūteþne þe febleuelles of  
þe me: & not plese to  
us lest: etþ of us plese to his neþ  
eþore in good: to edificaciō: for  
etþ plese not to his self: as it is  
writū: þe reþroues of me dīþþ  
lige þe: felden on me: for what  
ener þigis ben writū: þo ben writū  
to our techig: þat þe þe þe  
ce & confort of scturis þe han  
hope: þat god of patience & of  
solace zyme to zōn to vnderston  
de þe same þig: etþ into opir at  
tir ihu crist: þat ze of o wille  
wry o moir wōrþshipe god &  
þe fadir of our lord ihu etþ: for  
which þing take ze to gidre: as  
allo etþ took zōn into þe honour  
of god: for i seþe þat ihu etþ was  
a mynysre of circūciō: for þe treu  
þe of god: to conferme þe bilieffis  
of fadris: & þeþene me oþen to ho  
noure god for mercy: as it is writū  
þat þe fore lord i þal knowleche  
to þe amōg þeþene me: & i þal  
þynge to þi name: & etþ he seþ:  
ze þeþene me be ze glad wry his  
peple: and etþ alle þeþene men  
herie ze þe lord: and alle þeþis  
magnyfic ze hym: and etþ i lare  
seþ: þe etþal be a roote of ielle:  
þat etþal ryle vp to goime þeþene  
me: & þeþene men shulen hope in  
lyf: & god of hope fulfille zōn in al  
ioþe & þees in belyngge: þat ze encre  
ce in hope & vertu of þe hooly gost.

**A**nd þyþere i my self am cer  
teyn of zōn: þat allo ze ben ful of  
loue: and ze ben fuld wry al þe

myg: so þat moir moneste etþ of  
and þyþere moze boldely i woot  
to zōn a party as þyngge zōn  
ito myde: for þe grace þat is zōn  
to me of god: þat i be þe mynys  
tre of etþ ihu among þeþene me:  
& i halowe þe gospel of god: þat  
þe offryng of þeþene me be accep  
tid: & haleid in þe hooly gost: þat  
fore i haue glorie in etþ ihu to god  
for i dar not speke ony þing of  
þe þigis: which etþ doir not by  
me in to obedience of þeþene  
men: in word & dedis in vertu  
of tokenes & grete wōndris: i  
etþ of þe hooly gost: so þat þe  
ierlm bi cūpas to þe ihu: & i  
haue fillid þe gospel of etþ: & i  
haue prechid þis gospel: not  
where crist was named: lest  
i bylde vpon anoyers ground:  
but as it is writū: for to whō  
it is not teild of hy: þe ihu  
se: and þe þat herden not: wh  
ulen vnderstonde: for which þig  
i was lettid ful myche: to come  
to zōn: & i am lettid to þis tyme  
and now i haue not ferþere  
place in þes citreis: but i ha  
ue desyr to come to zōn: of ma  
ny zeiris þat ben passid: whā  
ne i bigyne to passe into spay  
ne: i hope þat in my goyng: i  
shal se zōn: & of zōn i shal be  
led ydū: if i vse zōn first in  
party þat fore now i shal passe  
foxy to ierlm: to mynysre to  
seyntis: for macedonye & acme  
han asayed to make sūziste:  
to poze me of seyntis þat ben  
i ierlm: for it plese to þe: &  
þe ben detours of hem: for þe  
þeþene me ben maad þeþenis

of her gostly þing: þe eiben  
allo in fleschly þingis to my  
wryte to hem: þat fore whāne i  
haue endid þis þig: & haue al  
signed to hem þis fruyt: i shal  
passe by zōn into spayne: and i  
woot þat i comye to zōn: shal  
come into þe abidance of þe  
blethig of etþ: þat fore þyþen i  
bileche zōn bi our lord ihu etþ:  
& bi charite of þe hooly gost: þat  
ze helpe me in zōn: þeþenis  
to þe lord: þat i be deliuerid fro  
þe vnfeyful men þat ben i iu  
dee: and þat þe offryng of my  
seruyce: be acceptid in ierlm to  
seyntis: þat i come to zōn i ioþe  
by þe wille of god: & þat i be re  
frethid wry zōn: & god of þees  
be wry zōn alle amē. **A**nd i comende to zōn fe  
ben our sūtir: which  
is in þe seruyce of þe  
churche: þat is at tencris: þat ze rel  
seþne þe into þe lord: wry þe  
to seyntis: & þat ze helpe þe: in  
what eue cause she shal neðe  
of zōn: for she helpide many  
men: & my self: grete ze þat  
ca & aquyla myn helperis in  
etþ ihu: which vnderputide  
her neckis for my lyf: to which  
not i alcone do þankigis: but  
allo alle þe churchis of þeþene  
me: & grete ze wel her meþ  
neal churche: grete wel efene  
te loued to me: þat is þe firs  
te of alþe i etþ ihu: grete wel  
marie: þe which hay traueled  
moche in vs: grete wel andro  
nyk & iuhan my colyns & my  
euene þis: which ben no  
ble among þe aposthis: & whi

che were bifore me in etþ: grete  
te wel amphate moost dereþor  
þe to me in þe lord: grete wel  
urban our helper in etþ ihu: &  
staathen my derlyng: grete wel  
appellem þe noble in crist: grete  
te wel hem þat ben of aristoblis  
hous: grete wel erodion my  
colyn: grete wel hem þat ben of  
narciscies hous: þat ben in þe  
lord: grete wel trespennam & tri  
folam which wrymen traueled  
in þe lord: grete wel perlyda  
moost dereþor þe wōman: þat  
hay traueled moche in þe lord:  
grete wel rufus & cholone  
in þe lord: & his modir & myn: gr  
eete wel anstrete: flegontia: her  
me: patrobā: herma: & þyþen  
þat ben wry þe: grete wel filo  
logus & inham & nereu & his  
sister & olympades: & alle þe seyntis  
þat ben wry hem: grete  
ze wel to gidre in hooly col: alle  
þe churchis of etþ: grete zōn wel:  
**A**nd þyþen i þeþe zōn: þat ze  
alþe hem þat maken dissencionis  
& hirtigis blydis þe doctm: þat  
ze han lerned: & boke ze away fro  
hem: for eue me serue not to  
þe lord etþ: but to her wōmbe:  
& by swete wordis & blethigis  
disseyne þe hertis of inocent  
me: but zōnre obedience is þat  
plathid into euy place: þat fore i  
haue ioþe in zōn: but i wole þat  
ze be wry in good þig: & sūple  
in þuel: and god of þees trede  
sathanas vnder zōnre feet: sūf  
tely: þe grace of our lord ihu  
etþ: be wry zōn. **T**ymothe my  
helper: grete zōn wel: & allo  
lucius & jalon & solipat: my co



lys / I tereyns greete zoi wel:  
pat woot is epistle in ye lord /  
Sayus my oost gretir zoi wel: &  
al ye churche erastus tresorer of  
ye citee greetir zoi wel: & quar-  
tus broper / ye grace of oure lord  
ihū cū: wy zoi alle amen: & ho-  
nour & glorie be to hē pat is my-  
ty. to cōferme zoi by my gospel  
& preching of ihū cū: by ye re-  
uelacion of mysterie holdū stille  
in tymes euilastige / which my-  
sterie is now maid oppn. by ihū  
tis of p̄fētis. bi ye commande-  
ment of god wy oute bigynnyng  
& endig. to ye obediēce of fey tall  
hepene me ye myst̄pe knoibū  
bi ihū cū to god alcone wys: to  
whom be honour & glorie into  
worldis of worldis amē. *¶*

*endir ye pistle to romayns:  
& bigynnyng ye prolog on ye firste  
pistle to corinthis: vis lew jero.*

**C**orinthis ben of acapē: & rei-  
am hē man herde of ye post-  
le ye word of trewe. & weren  
peritid i many maneris of fal-  
se apothis / sume were peritid  
of eloquēce of filosofie ful of wor-  
dis: oter men were led into pe-  
sect of laue of ieris / y is. to hol-  
de it nede ful wy ye gospel / ye  
pottle clep̄n azen pes corinthis  
to verr̄y fey & wysdom of ye  
gospel: & w̄ntir to hem fro ef-  
frie by t̄mōthe his discip̄le.

*¶* *endir ye plog: & bigynnyng  
ye firste pistle: c. p.*

**W**el depid apottle  
of ihū cū: bi ye will  
of god: & softenes  
brov. to ye churche of god pat is  
at corithe / to hē pat ben halowid

in cū ihū: & depid seyntis. wy  
alle pat m̄wardly clepen ye na-  
me of oure lord ihū cū. in ech pla-  
ce of hē & of oure. Grace to zoi  
& pees of god oure fadir. & of ye  
lord ihū cū. I do p̄ankis to my  
god eimore for zoi i ye grace  
of god. y is zoi to zoi i cū ihū  
for in alle yis is ze ben maid ry-  
che i hē. in ech word. & in ech k̄n-  
nyng. as ye w̄ntir of cū is cō-  
ferm̄d i zoi / so y no yis fayle  
to zoi i om̄y grace: pat abiden  
ye st̄belig of oure lord ihū cū.  
Which also shal cōferme zoi to  
ye ende w̄pōnte cr̄yme: in ye  
day of ye coungs of oure lord ihū  
cū. / I t̄reth god: by whō ze ben  
clepid into ye felowshipe of his  
sone ihū cū oure lord: but b̄rpen  
I b̄leche zoi by ye name of ou-  
re lord ihū cū: y ze alle seye ye  
same yis: & pat dullencous be not  
amog zoi / but be ze par̄yt in ye  
same w̄tt. & in ye same k̄nyng  
for my b̄rpen it is teld to me of  
hē pat ben at does: y t̄r̄yues be  
amog zoi / and I seye pat. y ech  
of zoi ley / for I am of pouil: & I  
am of appollo. & I am of cefas.  
but I am of cū. whē cū is depar-  
tid. whē pouil was crucified for  
zoi: epr̄ ze ben baptid in ye na-  
me of pouil: I do p̄ankis to my  
god. y I baptise noon of zoi:  
but crispus & ḡayus: lest om̄y mā  
seye y ze ben baptid i my name  
and I baptise also ye hous of  
stephan / but I woot not y I bap-  
tise om̄y ope for cū sente me not  
to baptise: but to preche ye gos-  
pel / not in wysdom of word: y  
ye croll of cū be not voidid alwey

for ye word of ye croll: is foli to  
hem pat perillhen / but to hē pat  
be maid laif y is to seye to us:  
it is w̄tt of god for it is w̄rtū  
I shal distribe ye wysdom of  
wyle me: & I shal rep̄one ye  
prudence of prudent me / wher  
is ye wyle mā. wher is ye wyle  
lawyere. wher is ye purchalo  
of ye word: whē god has not  
maid ye wysdom of ye word. so  
myd: for ye word in wysdom of  
god. knēis not god by wysdom:  
it pleside to god by foli of schyge  
to maken hem laif pat b̄leuete  
for ieris seken signes: & gree-  
kis seken wysdom / but we p̄che  
cū crucified. to ieris stande:  
& to hepen me foli / but to ye ieris  
& greekis pat ben depid we p̄che  
cris ye w̄rtū of god. & ye wys-  
dom of god: for pat y is foli yis  
of god: is wyl̄er pan me & pat  
pat is feble yis of god: is stren-  
ger pan me / but b̄rpen se ze zoi  
re depp̄y. for not many wyle  
me astir ye fleish. not many  
myxti not many noble / but god  
chees po yis pat ben foned  
of ye word: to confounde wyle  
me / and god chees ye feble ym-  
gis of ye word: to confounde ye  
stronge yis: & god chees ye  
v̄noble yis. & disp̄lable yis  
of ye word. & po yis pat be  
not: to distribe po yis pat be  
y ech mā haue not glorie i his  
syt / but of hē ze be in cū ihū.  
which is maid of god to us wyl-  
dō & r̄iz̄t̄w̄sness: & hoolynesse.  
& azenbyng / y as it is w̄rtū  
hē pat glorie: haue glorie in  
ye lord. *¶* *q. ii. m̄m̄*

**A**nd I b̄rpen whāne I cam  
to zoi: cam not in ye h̄r  
nelle of word ey of wyl-  
dom. tellige to zoi ye w̄rtūessig  
of cris: for I demede not me to  
k̄nne om̄y ying among zoi: but  
cū ihū & hē crucified: & I in syt  
nelle & drede & moche trembling  
was among zoi / & my word &  
my preching was not in s̄ntely  
stirpunge wordis of māns wyl-  
dom: but in thewpyng of sp̄rit  
& of w̄rtū / y zoi fey be not  
in ye wysdom of me: but in ye  
w̄rtū of god / for we sp̄ke wyl-  
dom among par̄yt me / but not  
wysdom of yis word: ney of pu-  
ces of yis word pat ben distried  
but we sp̄ken ye wysdom of  
god i mysterpe: which wysdom  
is hid / which wysdom god b̄fore  
ord̄eyne b̄fore worldis ito on  
re glorie: which noon of ye ym-  
ces of yis word knēis / for i  
ye hadden knoibū. ye shulden  
neuer haue crucified ye lord  
of glorie / but as it is w̄rtū. y  
ye sayz not. ne eere herde. ney  
it azenede into herte of mā. whē  
yis god ar̄ayede: to hē pat louen  
uen h̄r / but god shē w̄ide to us: bi h̄r  
sp̄rit / for whi ye sp̄rit send̄y all yis:  
zhe ye depe yingis of god / and  
who of me woot. what yis  
ben of mā: but ye sp̄rit of mā  
pat is in h̄r: so what yis be  
of god. no mā knoib̄y: but ye  
sp̄rit of god / and we han not  
relleyued ye sp̄rit of yis word.  
but ye sp̄rit pat is of god: y  
we wite what yis ben zoi  
to us of god / which yis we  
sp̄ken also not in wyle wordis



of manys wysdom: but in ye  
doctryn of ye spirit. & maken  
a lyknesse of spiritual yngis  
to gostly me: for a beestly man  
perseuey not po pias: wat be  
of ye spirit of god: for it is folw to  
hi: & he may not vnderstonce  
for it is examyned gostly: but  
a spiritual ma demey alle ym  
gis: & he is demed of no man  
as it is writun: & who knewe ye  
witt of ye lord: or who tange  
hi: & we han ye witt of crist.

**A**nd I bysen myte not  
speke to you: as to spi  
ritual men: but as to  
fleishly men: as to lytle childre  
in crist: I zaf to you mylk: drynke  
not mete: for ze mysten not  
zaf ney ze moibn now: for ze  
ze ben fleishly: for while stryf  
is amog you: wher ze ben not  
fleishly: & ze goen astir ma: &  
for whane eime leip: I am of  
poul: anoy but I am of apollo:  
wher ze ben not me: what yfor  
is apollo: & what poul: pei be  
mystryis of hy: to whom ze ha  
bileyde: & to ech ma as god har  
zoun: I plauid: apollo moy  
tude: but god zaf encreessing  
perfore ney he pat plantip is  
ony pig: ney he pat moystip:  
but god pat zner encreessing:  
he pat plantip: & he y moystip:  
ben con: & ech shal take his oib  
ne meede: astir his trauel: for  
we ben ye helperis of god: ze  
ben ye erpe tihing of god: ze  
ben ye bilding of god: astir ye  
grace of god pat is zoun to  
me: as a wyl mayntir carpent  
I lettide ye foudemet: & anoy

byldip abone: but ech ma se hols  
he bildip abone: for no ma may  
lette anoy fudamet: ontakun  
pat pat is lett: which is crist ihu  
for if ony byldip ony: ris foun  
demet: gold: siluer: piousse stoo  
nes: sticis: hep or tribul: eir  
manys werk shal be opyn: for  
ye day of ye lord shal declare:  
for it shal be shewid in fier  
ye fier shal preue ye werk of  
ech man: what maner werk it  
is: if ye werk of ony ma dibelle  
fille: which he bildide abone: he  
shal resseyne mete: if ony ma  
nys werk brene: he shal sustre  
harm: but he shal be saaf: so ne  
veles as by fier.

**W**ite ze not  
pat ze ben ye temple of god: &  
ye spirit of god dwellyn in you:  
& if ony defouly ye temple of god:  
god shal leese hy: for ye temple  
of god is hooly: which ze ben: no  
ma dwellyn hy self.

**I**f ony ma  
amog you is leyn to be wys in  
his world: be he maid a fool: yhe  
be wys: for ye wysdom of his  
world: is folw auentis god: for it  
is writun: I shal caache wysle me  
in her fel wysdom: & est: ye lord  
knowip ye pointis of wysle me:  
for po ben weyn: perfore no ma  
haue glorie in me: for alle yngis  
ben zoun: ep poul: ep apollo: ep  
cefus: ep ye world: ep hy: ep  
deep: ep yngis plent: ep yngis  
to comye: for alle yngis be zoun:  
& ze ben of crist: & crist is of god.

**S**ama gello.

**S**us: as mynys of crist:  
& dispenderis of ye mynys  
teries of god: now it is saut her  
amog ye dispenderis p a man

be foudu trewe: & to me it is for ye  
leeste pig: y be demyd of you: or  
of manny day: but ney I deme my  
self: for I am no pig onertro  
Wige to my self: but not i ye  
yng: I am iustified: for he pat  
deme me: is ye lord: yfor nyle  
ze deme before ye tyme: til ye  
ye lord come: which shal lytue  
ye hid yngis of derknellis: & it  
shal shewe ye coucelis of hertis:  
and yane preiung shal be to e  
che ma of god.

**A**nd bysen I  
haue tiffingid pes yngis to  
me: & into apollo for you: y m  
vs ze lerne lest ou y it is writun:  
oon meus anoy: be blouen wy  
pyde: for anoy: who deme y:  
what hast you: pat y hast not  
reseyued: what glorie y as y  
haddit not resseyued: now ze  
ben fillid: now ze ben maid ry  
che ze regnen wy outen us: &  
I wolde pat ze regne: y also we  
regne wy you: & I gelle: y god  
shewide us ye laste apostis:  
as pilke pat bey sent to ye deep:  
for we ben maid a spectacle to  
ye world: & to angels: & to men:  
we fookis for crist: but ze pridet  
in crist: we syke: but ze stronge  
ze noble: but we vnable: til ito  
his hour: we hngren & pristen  
& ben nakid: & ben lypen wy  
buffatis: & we ben vustable: &  
we trauelen worchige tery our  
hondis: we ben cirfid: & we bles  
sen: we sustren persecucion:  
& we abiden longe: we be blasfe  
myd: & we blesche: as defingis  
of his world: we ben maid ye out  
castig of alle yngis til zit: I w  
te not pes yngis: y I confoude  
you: but I warne as my moost

deuorpe sonas: for why if ze  
han ten pouland of vunder maist  
in crist: but not not many fadris:  
for in crist ihu I haue geuad you  
by ye gospel: perfore bysen I bye  
you be ze folowaris of me: as I of  
crist: perfore I sente to you tymothe:  
which is my moost deuorpe lo  
ne: & feryful: ye lord: which shal  
teche you my weyes: pat be in crist  
ihu: as I teche enery wher: i ech  
churche: as you: I shulde not co  
me to you: so sinne be blouen wy  
pyde: but I shal come to you: if god  
wile: & I shal knowe not ye word  
of he pat ben blouen wy pyde: but  
ye vertu for ye reime of god is  
not in word: but in vertu: what  
wile ze: shal I come to you in a  
zerde: or in charite: & in spirit of  
mydenelle.

**I**n al maner fornycatioun  
herd amog you: & such for  
nycatioun: which is not a mos he  
pen me: so pat su man haue ye  
wyf of his fadn: ze ben bolun  
wy pyde: & not more hadde wey  
linge: y he pat dide his werk be  
takun away fro ye myddel of you:  
& I absent in body: but present in  
spirit: now haue demyd as plet  
hym pat hap his wzonzt: whne  
ze ben gaderid to gidre in ye name  
of onre lord ihu crist: & my spirit  
wy ye vertu of ye lord ihu: to  
take such ama to sathanas: ito  
ye perilling of fleish: y ye spi  
rit be saaf in ye day of our lord  
ihu crist: zoun gloriung: is not  
good: witep ze not y alptil sou  
doun: apery al ye gobet: cle  
se ze out ye olde souidoun: y ze be  
neibe lypingunge to gidre: as  
ze ben yert: for crist offrid: is oe

soone

be foud







unbyndyng/ you art unbound fro  
a wyf: nyle you seke a wyf: but  
if you haue takē a wyf: you haue  
not syned: & if a mayden is wed  
did: she synede not: nepeles  
liche schulen haue tribulaciō  
of fleish: but I spare you/ per  
fore byperē I sepe pis pig: pe  
tyme is lthort/ anoper is pis.  
p̄ pei pat han wyues: be as porz  
pei hadde noone: & pei pat wepe:  
as pei wepten not/ and pei pat wy  
en: as pei wyeden not/ & pei pat  
byen: as pei hadde not/ & pei pat  
vlen pis world: as pei pat vlen  
not/ forwhi pe figur of pis wor  
ld passy/ but I wole pat ze be  
wyoute bysynelle/ for he pat is  
wyoute wyf: is bysh what pigis  
ben of pe lord: how he schal plese  
god/ but he pat is wyf a wyf:  
is bysh what pigis ben of pe wor  
ld how he schal plese pe wyf: & he  
is departyd/ and a wōman vn  
weddid & mayden peny what  
pigis ben of pe lord: & she be hoo  
ly in body & spirit/ but she pat  
is weddid peny what pigis be  
of pe world: how she schal plese  
pe holebōde/ And I sepe pes pi  
gis to zoni: p̄fyt not p̄ I caste  
to you a swar/ but to pat pat is  
honest & p̄ zynep esynelle wy  
outen lettynge to make preieris  
to pe lord: & if ony mā gelly hy  
self to be seyn foul on his vngy  
pat she is ful wōm: & so it biho  
uey to be don: do she pat p̄ she  
wole/ she synep not: if she be  
weddid/ for he pat ordeyne de  
bly in his herte: not hanngene  
de: but hanngē power of his  
wille & har demed in his herte

pis pig to kepe his vngyn: do  
ny wel/ p̄fore he pat Joyney his  
vngyn in matrimonye: dony wel  
and he pat Joyney not: dony bet  
ter: pe wōman is bound to pe  
lawe: as long tyme as hir hole  
bōde lyuey/ & if hir holebōde is  
deed: she is deliuerid fro pe la  
we of pe holebōde: be she weddid  
to whom she wole: conly in pe  
lord/ but she schal be more blestid:  
if she dwellyt p̄s after my cou  
cil: & I weene: p̄ I haue pe sp  
ryt of god. **C. viii.**  
**B**ut of pes pigis pat ben  
sacrificed to ydols: we  
witen: for alle we han kēnyng  
but kēnyng: bloky charite edy  
fiep but if ony mā gelly p̄ he  
kan ony pig: he har not zit kno  
we how it bihouey hym to kē  
ne/ and if ony mā louey god:  
pis is knouyn of hy/ but of met  
pat ben offrid to ydols: we wite  
p̄ an ydol is no pig in pe world:  
& p̄ per is no god: but con/ for youz  
p̄ ben synne pat ben seid goddis  
epir in heuene epir in erpe: as  
per ben many goddis & many  
lordis: nepeles to us is o god/ pe  
fadir of whom ben alle pigis: &  
we in hym/ & o lord ihu cr̄: by  
whō ben alle pigis: & we by hy  
but not in alle mē is kēnyng/ for  
sū me wry cōstience of ydol/ til  
now eten as pig offrid to ydols:  
& her cōstience is defouled: for it  
is lyk mete comēdy us not to  
god/ for ney we schulen sayle: if  
we eten not/ ney if we eten: we  
schulen haue plente/ but se ze  
lest perauentur: pis zoni leue:  
be mand hirtynge to syt mē for

if ony man schal se hy pat har  
kēnyng: etyge in a place wher  
ydols ben worshypid: whey his cō  
stience synen it is lyk schal not  
be edyfied to ete pigis offrid to  
ydols: & ye syke brop for whom  
cr̄ dicte: schal perithe in p̄ kē  
nyng/ for yus ze kēnyng azens by  
pen: & smytige her syke cōstien  
ce: synen azens cr̄/ wherfore  
if mete standy my broyr: &  
schal neye ete fleish: lest I alai  
die my broyer. **C. ix.**  
**W**hep I am not fre: am  
I not apostle/ whep I  
sar: not ihu cr̄ our lord:  
whep ze ben not my werk in pe  
lord: & youz to ope I am not apost  
le: but nepeles to zoni I am/ for ze  
ben pe lytle signe of myn apost  
leshed in pe lord/ my defense to he  
pat aren me: pat is/ whep we  
han not power to ete & drynke:  
whep we han not power to lede  
aboute a wōman a siff: as also  
ope apostlis & bypen of pe lord  
& cefas/ & I aloone & barnabas:  
han not power to worche pes  
pigis: who tranchy ony tyme  
wy hile owne bagis: who plan  
ty a vynezard: & ety not of his  
fryt: who kep a floc: & ety  
not of pe mylk of pe floc/ whep  
astur mā I sepe pes pigis: whep  
also pe lawe seyn not pe pigis:  
for it is wrytū in pe lawe of moy  
ses/ p̄ schalt not bynde pe moyn  
of pe ope pat wrylthp/ whep  
of ope is charge to god: whep  
for us he seyn pes pigis: for p̄ cr̄  
why: yo ben wrytū for us/ heed  
for he pat erip: oky to ere  
in hope/ & he pat wrylthp: in

hope to take fruytis/ if we so  
ben spiritual pigis to zoni: is it  
greet if we repen zoni fleish  
ly pigis: if ope ben parteneris  
of zoni power: why not rafe  
we/ but we vlen not pis power/  
but we suffren alle pigis: & we  
synē no lettynge to pe euangelye  
of cr̄/ wite ze not p̄ pei pat wor  
chen i pe temple: eten po pigis  
pat ben of pe temple: & pei pat  
serue to pe anter: ben partene  
ris of pe anter/ so pe lord ordey  
nede to hem pat tellen pe gospel:  
to hme of pe gospel/ but I white  
noone of pes pigis: & I wroot not  
pes pigis: p̄ yo be don so in me/  
for it is good to me rafe to dye:  
van p̄ ony mā anoye my glorie/  
for if I preche pe gospel: glorie  
is not to me/ for neye wrytū I moot  
don it/ for wo to me: if I preche  
not pe gospel/ but if I do pis pig  
wrylthp: I haue meede/ but if  
azens my wille: dylpendig is  
bryakū to me/ what pāne is my  
meete: & p̄ I prechge pe gospel:  
putte pe gospel wyoute operis  
cost: p̄ I vfe not my power in  
pe gospel/ forwhi schāne I was  
fre of alle mē: I made me ser  
uant of alle mē: to wyne pe mo  
me/ & to ieris I am maid as a  
iery: to wyne pe ieris to hem  
pat ben vndir pe lawe: as I we  
re vndir pe lawe: whne I was  
not vndir pe lawe: to wyne he  
pat weren vndir pe lawe/ to  
hem pat weren wyoute lawe:  
as I wet wyoute pe lawe: whā  
I leue ne I was not wyoute  
p̄ pei pat ve lawe of god: but I  
knouyn was in pe lawe of



crift: to wyne hem pat weren  
wipoutte pe laibe: / I am maad  
spe to epe me: to wyne epe  
me: / So alle me I am maad alle  
pigs: to make alle me saas: but  
I do alle pigs for ye gospel: /  
I be maad partener of it. / **W**  
ten ze not pat pei p<sup>r</sup> reuen in  
a fur long: alle reuen but con  
tak y pe pigs: so reue ze: / p<sup>r</sup> ze  
cualle: ech ma pat ar yuer i fyt:  
absteper hym fro alle pigs  
/ pei p<sup>r</sup> pei take a corruptible cro  
wne: but we an vn corrupt /  
foze I reue so: not as into an  
vncerteyn pig: / rus I fiste not  
as betyge ye epr: but I chastite  
my body: / byunge it into lerna  
se: / lest pauet in whine I pche  
to ope: / I my self be maad rep  
uable. / **C. 11. 14.**  
**B**rypen I nyle p<sup>r</sup> ze on  
knowe: / p<sup>r</sup> alle our fa  
dres weren vnder cloude: / alle  
passiden pe see: / alle were bap  
tized in moyses: in ye cloude: /  
in ye see: / alle eeten ye same  
spiritual mete: / alle drunken ye  
same spiritual drynke: / pei dri  
ken of ye spiritual stoon: / sole  
wyge hem: / ye stoon was ca:  
but not in ful manye of hem:  
it was wel plesant to god: / for  
whi pei were cast don in desert  
but pes pigs ben don i figure  
of us: / p<sup>r</sup> we be not conuenteris  
of yuel pigs: as pei conuente  
nep be ze maad idolatreris: as  
sime of hem: as it is writun  
pe peple sat to ete: / drynke:  
/ pei rylen up to plepe: / **15.**  
nep do we fornyccacion myge ne  
as sime of hem diten er of his  
herte

fornyccacion: / p<sup>r</sup> ze i tenty  
poulandis weren dede in o day  
nepir tempte we ca: as sime  
of hem teptid: / p<sup>r</sup> pei uhele of  
serpentis: nep gruahe ze as si  
me of hem gruahten: / p<sup>r</sup> pei p<sup>r</sup>  
ilthete of aditryer: / alle pes  
pigs feliden to hem i figur: but  
pei ben wriun to our amedynge:  
into whiche pe endis of ye word:  
bey commi / fore he pat gelyp  
hi pat he stoupe: / se he p<sup>r</sup> he fal  
le not teptacion take not zon:  
but manys teptacion: / for god  
is trewe whiche shal not suste  
yon to be temptid: / aboue pat p<sup>r</sup>  
ze mou: but he shal make wy  
teptacion also purpauce: / p<sup>r</sup> ze  
mou suste. / **W**herfore ze most  
dereborpe to me: / fle ze fro wor  
ldyng of manymetis: as to  
pudent me I speke: / deme ze zon  
sulf pat pig: / pat I sepe: / wher  
ye cuppe of blesyng whiche we  
blesen: is not ye conuynge of et  
tis blood: / p<sup>r</sup> wher ye breed whiche  
we breen: is not ye takyng of  
ye body of ye lord: / for we manye  
ben o breed: / o body: / alle we p<sup>r</sup>  
taken part of obreed: / of o cuppe:  
se ze mael afur ye fleuth: / wher  
pei pat eeten sacrifices be not  
parteneris of ye auter: / what  
pfore sepe I p<sup>r</sup> a pig: / pat is of  
fryd to idols is ony pig: / or pat  
ye ydol is ony pig: / but yo ym  
gis pat hevene me offren: / pei  
offren to deuels: / not to god:  
but I nyle p<sup>r</sup> ze be maad felows  
of fendis: / for ze mou not  
we a drynke ye cuppe of ye lord:  
alhi: / p<sup>r</sup> ye cuppe of fendis: / ze mou  
not be parteneris of ye bood

of reld: / of ye bood of fendis: / **W**he  
p<sup>r</sup> we han eue to ye lord: / wher  
we ben frenger: / pan he: / alle pi  
gis ben leessful to me: / but not  
alle pigs ben spedful: / alle pi  
gis be leessful to me: / but not  
alle pigs edifyen: / no ma seke  
pat pig: / p<sup>r</sup> is his owne: / but pat  
pig: / p<sup>r</sup> is of anoye al pig: / pat is  
seeld in ye bocherie etc ze: / ar  
ge no pig: / for coscience: / pe erpe  
/ ye plente of it: / is ye lord: / if  
ony of hevene me clepy zon to  
saper: / ze wolengo: / al pig: / pat  
is lett to zon etc ze: / arige no pig:  
for coscience: / but if ony ma lepy  
pis pig: / is offrid to ydols: / nyle  
ze etc for hym pat shewide: /  
for coscience: / p<sup>r</sup> I sepe not pi  
coscience: / but of anoye: / but  
wher to is my freedom: / demp  
of anoy manys coscience: / pfore  
if I take part: / by grace: / what  
am I blasfemy: / for pat p<sup>r</sup> I do  
pantigis: / pfore wher ze eten  
or drynken: / or doen ony ony pig:  
do ze alle pigs into ye gloze of  
god: / be ze wry onte stande to  
relyis: / to hevene me: / to ye  
chirche of god: / as I by alle pin  
gis plese to alle me: / not sekyn  
ge pat p<sup>r</sup> is pfitable to me: / but  
pat p<sup>r</sup> is pfitable to many me:  
/ p<sup>r</sup> pei be maad saas: / **C. 11. 14.**  
**B**ze my foloweris: / as I  
am of crist: / and brypen  
prie zon: / p<sup>r</sup> by alle pigs  
ze be myteful of me: / p<sup>r</sup> as I bitok  
to zon my comandemētis: / ze hol  
den: / but I wole p<sup>r</sup> ze wite: / p<sup>r</sup> ca  
is heed of ech man: / but ye heed  
of ye wōman: / is ye mā: / p<sup>r</sup> ye  
heed of ca: / is god: / ech mā pri

unge or pfectyunge: / whine his heed  
is hild: / defoulyr his heed: / but ech  
wōman pteyunge or pfectyunge  
whine hyr heed is not hild: / defou  
lyr hyr heed: / for it is oon: / as if  
she were pollid: / if a wōman  
be not kenerid: / be she pollid: /  
if it is foul pig: / to a wōman to  
be pollid: / or to be maad ballid:  
hile she hyr heed: / but amā shal  
not hile his heed: / for he is ye  
ymage: / p<sup>r</sup> ye gloze of god: / but  
a wōman is ye gloze of mā: / for  
amā is not of ye wōman: / but  
ye wōman of ye mā: / p<sup>r</sup> ye man  
is not maad for ye wōmā: / but  
ye wōman for ye mā: / pfore ye  
wōman shal hane an hekyng  
on hyr heed also for angels: / ne  
peles nep ye mā is wryonte wō  
mā: / nep ye wōman is wryon  
te mā in ye lord: / for whi as ye wō  
mā is of mā: / so ye mā is by ye  
wōman: / but alle pigs ben of  
god: / deme ze zon sulf: / blesmy it  
a wōman not hild on ye heed do  
prieris to god: / nep ye brynte it lile  
techy us: / for if amā norlthe  
long heer: / it is shewshyp to hym:  
but if a wōmā norlthe long heer:  
it is gloze to hyr: / for heeris ben  
zon to hyr: / for keneris: / but if ony  
mā is leyn to be ful of ar yf: / we  
han non such custom: / nepir ye  
chirche of god: / but pis pig: / I co  
maunde: / not pteyge: / p<sup>r</sup> ze come  
to gidre not into ye bette: / but  
into ye worse: / first for whine ze  
come to gidre into ye chyrche: / I  
heet p<sup>r</sup> dilycacionis ben: / i party  
I leue: / for it bilyouey ereties to be:  
/ p<sup>r</sup> pei pat ben pteyde ben openly  
knowil in zon: / pfore whine ze



come to gidre into don: now it is  
not to ete ye lordis soper / for whi  
ech mā bifor taky his soper to  
ete / & don is hūgry: & anoy is  
drūkn / wher ze han not housis  
to ete & drynke: or ze dispulen ye  
chyrche of god. & confoudeu hem pat  
han none: / what shal y sepe to  
zon: / I preise zon: but here y ne  
I preise zon not. **¶** For I haue  
takn of ye lord. pat pig which  
I haue bitakn to zon / for ye lord  
ihū. in what myt he was bitra  
ed: took bread & dide panfigis  
& brak & seide / take ze & ete ze.  
pis is my body which shal be  
bitrayed for zon / do ze pis ring  
into my mynde / also ye cuppe.  
astir pat he hadde sopid: & sei  
de / pis cuppe is ye newe testa  
ment i my blood do ze pis ring.  
as ofte as ze shulen drynke into  
my mynde / for as ofte as ze shule  
ete pis bread. & shule drynke ye  
cuppe: ze shule telle ye deap of  
ye lord. til pat he come / y fore  
who eue ety ye bread. or dryn  
ke ye cuppe of ye lord / onkox  
vily: he shal be galy of ye body  
& of blood of ye lord / but preue  
a mā hi self: & so ete he of ye il  
ke bread. & drynke of ye cuppe / for  
he pat ety & drynky vnkoxly:  
ety & drynkay don to hi. not wyl  
sely demyge ye body of ye lord / y  
fore among zon manye be epe  
& feble: & manye slepen / & if we  
demede wylsely us self: we shule  
not be demyd / but while we ben  
demed of ye lord. we ben chasti  
sid: y we be not dāpned wyl y  
world / y fore my bryen whie  
ze comen to gidre to ete. abpde

ze to gidre / if ony mā hūgry:  
ete he at home. y ze come not  
to gidre into don: & I shal dis  
pose of ye pigis: whane I come.  
**¶** Of spri. **¶** ¶  
**B** tual pigis. bryen I my  
le y ze vnkoxly: for ze  
Witen y whane ze were hevene  
mē: how ze were led goyng to  
donbe markmetis perfore y  
make knowen to zon. pat no mā  
spetige in ye spirit of god: seip  
departyng fro ihū / & no mā may  
seie ye lord ihū: but i ye holy goost. & dide  
grys be. but it is al oō spirit: & dide dūles  
it is al oon lord / & dūle wordchigis  
per ben: but al is oon god y for  
chyr alle pigis in alle pigis: & tho  
to ech man ye shewyng of spirit  
is zoni to xpe / ye word of wyl  
dom is zoni. to oon hi spirit  
to anoyr ye word of kūng: by  
ye same spirit / seip to anoyr. in  
ye same spirit / to anoyr: grace  
of heelis mo spirit / to anoyr:  
ye wordchig of stūes to anoyr:  
pfectie to anoyr: verry knowig  
of spiritis to anoyr: kyndis of  
langagis to anoyr: expoyng  
of wordis / and oon & ye same  
spirit wordchyr alle yes pigis:  
departige to ech by he self as  
he wole / for as per is o body. &  
hap many mebris / & alle ye me  
bris of ye body. whane yo ben  
manye: ben o body: so also crist  
for in o spirit. alle we ben bap  
tylid into o body. epe ieris epe  
hevene. epe seruantis. epe free.  
& alle we ben fillid wyl drynke  
in o spirit / for ye body is not o  
mebre: but manye / if ye foot  
seip. for y am not ye hond y am

not of ye body: not y fore it is not  
of ye body: & if ye eer seip. for y a  
not ye ye. / I am not of ye body.  
not y fore it is not of ye body: if  
al ye body is ye ye: wher is hee  
rig: / And if al ye body is heerig:  
wher is linellyg: / but nois god  
hap sett mebris. & ech of hem in  
ye body as he wole / y if alle we  
re o mebre: wher wet ye body:  
but nois y ben many mebris: but  
o body: & ye ye may not sepe to  
ye hond: / I haue no nede to y wer  
kis / or est ye heed to ye feet: ze be  
not necessarie to me / but moche  
more yo pat ben seip to be ye lo  
wer mebris of ye body: ben mo  
ze nede ful / & yllke pat we gelle  
to be ye vnkoxprier mebris of  
ye body: we yne more honoir  
to hera / and yo mebris y ben vn  
honest: han more honeste / for on  
re honeste mebris: han nede of  
noon / but god tēprie ye body: y  
nyge more wordchyr to it to who  
it spilde: y debate be not i ye to  
dy / but y ye mebris be bily into  
ye same pig ech for op: & if o me  
bre susteyr ony ring: alle me  
bris susteyr ywyl epe if o me  
bre wyep: alle mebris iopen to  
gidre / & ze ben ye body of ca:  
& mebris of mebre / but god set  
te sū mē in ye chyrche / first a  
postlis. ye secūde tyme pfectis.  
ye vride techenis. astir ward  
vertues / astir ward graces of  
heelis. helpigis. goynaplis.  
kyndis of langagis. mēprietaci  
onis of wordis / wher alle apost  
lis: wher alle pfectis: wher  
alle techenis: wher alle stūes.  
Wher alle mē han grace of hee

lyngis. wher alle speken wyl  
langagis / wher alle expoyne  
but sūbe ze ye bettere goostly zif  
tis / & it I shewe to zon amoz  
excellēt wepe. **¶** ¶  
**I** f I speke wyl tūgis of  
men & of anghels. & I  
haue not charite: I am mand  
as bras sonnyge. or a symbal  
tynkynge / and if I haue pfe  
cie. & knowe alle mysteries. &  
al kūngge. & if I haue al seip.  
so pat I mene thillis fro her  
place. & I haue not charite: I  
am nougt / and if I departe alle  
my goodis to yemetis of pore  
men. & if I bryake my body. so  
y bryene. & if I haue not charite:  
it profity to me no pig / charite  
is patient / it is benygue. chari  
te enyep not. it dony not wickid  
ly. it is not blowū. it is not coney  
tous. it sekty not po pigis pat be  
hile owne / it is not fūid to wryp  
re. it penyty not yuel. it ioyey  
not on wickidneis. but it ioyey  
to gidre to treupe. it susteyr alle  
pigis. it bileuey alle pigis / it ho  
pey alle pigis. it susteyney alle  
pigis / charite fallay neie down  
wher profecies shulen be voydid.  
epy langagis shule ceelle: epy  
science shal be distroyed / for a  
party we knowe: & a party we  
pfectien / but whie pat shal co  
me pat is parfyt: pat pig pat  
is of party shal be auoydid / whā  
I was a lital chld: I spak as a ly  
til chld. / vnderstood as a lytil  
chld. / yoyte as a lytel chld /  
but whie I was mand a man:  
I auoydide yo pigis pat were  
of a lytil chld / & we seen now by



a myroure in der knesse: but þane  
face to face / now I knowe of par  
ty: but þane I shal knowe. as  
I am knowyn and now dwellen  
sey hope & charite: yes yre: but  
ye mooste of res is charite.

**S**ike ze chari. **C. xiii.**  
re: loue ze spiritual vi  
gis: but more þe pfe  
ciens: & he pat speky in tuge:  
speky not to me but to god: for  
no man heery: but ye spirit spe  
ky mysteries: for he pat pfecter:  
speky to me to edificacioun: &  
monestynge & confortynge: he p  
speky in tuge: edifye hy self  
but he pat pfecter: edifye ye  
churche of god: & I wole þe alle  
ze speke in tugs: but more þe  
ze pfecte: for he p pfecter: is  
more þe he pat speky in langa  
gis: but perauentur he expou  
ne: þe churche take edificaci  
oun: but now bysen but if I co  
me to you: & speke in langagis:  
what shal I profite to you: but  
if I speke to you: eyn in reuelaci  
oun: eyn in science: eyn in pro  
fete: eyn in teching: for þe vgis þe  
ben wyoute soule: & zynere voys  
ces: eyn pipe: eyn harpe: but þe  
zynen distynccion of lowynge:  
how shal it be knowyn: & is in  
gyn: eyn pat pat is trippid: for if  
a tripe zyne an ouer tyn sou  
ne: who shal make hy self redy  
to batel: so but ze zyne an apyn  
word bi tuge: how shal pat þe  
is seid be knowyn: for ze shule  
be spekyge in weyn: þe ma  
ny kyndis of langagis in þis wor  
ld: & no þig is wyoute voys:  
but if I knowe not þe vtn of

a voys: I shal be to hy to who I shal  
speke a barbar þe: & he pat spe  
ky to me: shal be a barbar:  
so ze for ze ben loners of spm  
tis seke ze þe be plenteuous:  
to edificacioun of þe churche: and  
þfore he pat speky in langage:  
preye pat he expoune: for if I  
preye in tuge: my spirit prei  
ey: my vnderstonding is wyoute  
te fruyt: what þane: I shal prei  
in spirit: I shal preye in myte:  
I shal seie salm in spirit: I shal  
seie salm also in myde: for if I  
blest in spirit: who shal þe pla  
ce of an ydot: **¶** Now shal he seie  
amē on þe blestynge: for he woot  
not what you seist: for you doist  
wel þankis: but anoy mā is not  
edifyed. **¶** I þanke my god: for  
I speke in þe langage of alle you:  
but in þe churche I wole speke þe  
ne wordis in my vtn: pat also I  
teche oþe me: þan ten thousandis  
of wordis in tuge. **¶** Zynen nyle  
ze be maad childe in wittis: but  
I malice be ze childe: but I wot  
tis: be ze parfyt: for in þe lawe  
it is writun: þe moþe tugs & oþe  
lupis: I shal speke to þis peple:  
& neþ so verthule heer me: seyn  
þe lord: þfore langagis ben into  
tokene not to seynful me: but  
to me out of þe fey: but pfecties  
ben not to me out of þe fey:  
but to seynful me: þfore if al þe  
churche come to gude into con  
& alle me speken in tugs: if ydo  
tis eyn me out of þe seyn entren:  
where þe verthulen not seie: what  
ben ze woode: but if alle men  
pfectien: if ony vnseynful mā o  
ydot entre: he is conyrt of alle.

he is wyteþ demyd of alle: for þe  
hid vgis of his herce ben kno  
wn: & so he shal falle don on þe  
face: & shal worshype god: &  
shewe verily: þe god is in you:  
what þane bypene: whne ze  
comen to gude: ech of you haþ  
a salm: he haþ teching: he haþ a  
pocalps: he haþ tuge: he haþ ex  
pouynge: alle vgis be þe don  
to edificacioun: where amā speky  
in tuge: by tuge me eyn þe at  
þe mooste: & by parties: þe don  
interpret: but if þe be not an  
interpretour: be he stille in þe chur  
che: & speke he to hy self: & to god:  
pfectis tuge þe seie: & oþe  
wyteþ deme: but if ony þig be  
shewid to a sille: þe formere  
be stille: for ze mon profete al  
le: ech by hy self: þe alle me lerne:  
& alle moneste: & þe spiritis of  
pfectis: be suget to pfectis: for  
why god is not of distynccion: but  
of pees: as in alle churchis of ho  
ly men: I teche. **¶** Wy men in chur  
chis be stille: for it is not sufyd  
to he to speke: but to be suget  
as þe lawe seyn: but if þe wole  
oun þig lerne: athom aye þe  
her hole bondis: for it is fouþ þig  
to a woman: to speke in churche:  
where þe of you þe word of god  
cam forþ: or to you alone it ca  
if ony mā is seyn to be a profe  
te or spiritual: knowe he þe  
vgis pat I write to you: for þe  
ben þe comandementis of þe lord:  
& if ony man vnknowyn: he sh  
al be vnknowyn: þfore bypene  
loue ze to profete: & nyle ze for  
bede to speke in tugs: but be al  
le vgis don honestly & by due

ordre in you. **C. xvi.**  
**B**reuen I make þe gospel  
knowun to you: which I ha  
ue prechid to you: þe wh  
ich also ze han takun: in which ze  
stonen: also by which ze shulen  
be saued: by which resun: I haue  
prechid to you if ze holden: if ze  
han not bilerid þely: for I by  
took to you at þe bigynne: pat  
þig which also I haue reselyned:  
þe crist was deed for oure synes:  
by þe scripturis: & þe he was bi  
ryed: & pat he roos azen i þe end  
de day after scripturis: & þe he is  
seyn to celes: & after þe vgis  
to enleuene: after ward he was  
seyn to mo þan fyue hundred bi  
þen to gude: of which manye  
lyne 300: but sume ben deed: af  
ter ward he was seyn to James:  
& after ward to alle þe aposthis:  
& last of alle: he was seyn also to  
me: as to a deed born childe: for I  
am þe leeste of aposthis: þe am  
not worþi to be clepid apostle:  
for I pursuide þe churche of  
god: but by þe grace of god: I am  
pat þig: þe I am: and his grace  
was not voyde in me: for I tra  
uelide more plenteuously þan  
alle þe: but not I: but þe gra  
ce of god wyþ me: but wyþ þe  
I or þe: so we han prechid: &  
so ze han byleynid: & if crist is  
prechid: pat he roos azen fro  
deey: how seyn þe me a mog  
son: þe þe azenryng of deed  
me is not: & if þe azenryng  
of deed me is not: neþ crist roos  
azen fro deey: & if crist roos not:  
oun prechig is weyn: oun fey  
is weyn: and we ben found fals



Witnesis of god for we han seid  
Witnesis azens god. p<sup>r</sup> he rey  
side et. whom he rey side not.  
if deed me r<sup>y</sup>sen not azen for  
why if deed me r<sup>y</sup>sen not azen.  
nepr et roos azen. et if et roos  
not azen. om<sup>r</sup> fey is veyn. et  
zit ze ben i zom<sup>r</sup> synes. et p<sup>r</sup>ane  
vei p<sup>r</sup>han dyed in et. han peril  
chid. if in vis h<sup>r</sup> only we ben  
hoppinge in et. we ben more  
wrethys pan alle me. but now  
cris roos azen fro deey. p<sup>r</sup>e fiste  
fruyt of deed me. for deey was  
by aman. et by ama is azenry  
fing. fro deey. et as in adam al  
le men depen. so in et. alle me  
thulen be quykempd. but ech  
ma in hys ordre. p<sup>r</sup>e fiste fruyt  
et. after ward vei p<sup>r</sup>ben of et.  
pat bilenede in pe comyng. of et.  
after ward anende. whanne he  
shal bitake pe kyngdom to god  
et to pe fadir. whanne he shal a  
voide al p<sup>r</sup>ushed. et p<sup>r</sup>over et  
vertu. but it bihoney hy to reg  
ne. til he putte alle hys enemy  
es vnder hys feet. et at pe laste.  
deey pe enemy shal be distroyed  
for he hap maid suget alle pig  
gis vnder hys feet. et whanne  
he seip. alle pigis ben suget  
to hy. v<sup>r</sup>outen doute out ta  
ku hy pat sugetide alle pigis  
to hym. et whiche alle pigis ben  
suget to hym. p<sup>r</sup>ane pe lone hy  
sulf shal be suget to hy. p<sup>r</sup>ma  
de suget alle pigis to hy. p<sup>r</sup>god  
be alle pigis in alle pigis. et hys  
what thulen vei do pat ben bap  
tised for deed me. if in nowyle.  
deede me r<sup>y</sup>sen azen. wherto be  
vei baptised for hem. et wherto

ben we in perel eny ome. **E**ch  
day i dye for zom<sup>r</sup> glorie bryen.  
which glorie i hane in et. ihu  
om<sup>r</sup> lord. if after ma i hane sou  
ten to beethis at etesi. what  
pfitit it to me. if deed me r<sup>y</sup>se  
not azen. ete we et d<sup>r</sup>ynke we.  
for we shule dye to mozte. ny  
le ze be distroyed. for puel spe  
chis distroyen good p<sup>r</sup>eris. a wa  
ke ze nist me. et nyle ze s<sup>r</sup>ne. for  
su men han ignorauce of god.  
but to reuente. i speke to zom.  
**B**ut su ma seip how thulen  
deed me r<sup>y</sup>se azen. or in what  
man body thulen vei come. in  
wyle man. pat pig p<sup>r</sup>you b<sup>r</sup>ist  
is not quykempd. but it dye first  
et pat pig p<sup>r</sup>you b<sup>r</sup>ist. p<sup>r</sup>soult  
not pe body p<sup>r</sup>is to come. but a  
natid torn as of whete or of su  
oper. seedis. et god p<sup>r</sup>uey to it  
abody as he wole. et to ech of see  
dis a p<sup>r</sup>re body. not ech fleish. **S.**  
is pe same fleish. but oon is of  
me. anoy is of beethis. anoy is of  
brydis. anoyr of f<sup>r</sup>isthis. et he  
nenly bodyes ben. et erpely bo  
dyes ben. but oon glorie is of he  
nely bodyes. et anoy is of erpe  
ly. anoyr derenele is of pe su  
ne. anoy derenele is of pe moue.  
et anoy derenele is of sterris.  
and a sterris dyuhy fro a sterris  
in derenele. et so pe azenrylig  
of deed men. it is souu in corrup  
cion. it shal r<sup>y</sup>se in corrupci  
on. it is souu in nobley. it shal  
r<sup>y</sup>se in glorie. it is souu in infir  
myte. it shal r<sup>y</sup>se in vertu. it  
is souu a beethy body. it shal r<sup>y</sup>se  
a spual body. if p<sup>r</sup>is a beethy body.  
p<sup>r</sup>is allo a spual body. as it is

Witu pe fiste ma adam was  
maid into abule hyngge. pe laste  
adam into a spual quykempe.  
but pe fiste is not pat pat is  
spual. but pat p<sup>r</sup>is beethy. af  
ward. pat p<sup>r</sup>is spual. pe fir  
ste man of erpe. is erpely. pe  
secunde ma of heuene. is heuen  
lych. such as pe erpely ma is. hi  
che ben pe erpely me. et such as  
pe heuenly ma is. such ben al  
so pe heuenly me. p<sup>r</sup>for as we han  
bozu pe ymage of pe erpely ma.  
bere we allo pe ymage of pe he  
nely bryen. i seip vis vis. pat  
fleish et blood moit not welde pe  
kyngdom of god. ney corrupcion  
shal welde corrupcion. lo. i seie  
to zom. p<sup>r</sup>iste of hooly pigis. et al  
le we thulen r<sup>y</sup>se azen. but not  
alle we thulen be chaigid. in a  
momēt in pe t<sup>r</sup>ynkeling of an  
ye in pe laste t<sup>r</sup>ype. for pe t<sup>r</sup>u  
pe shal soune. et deed me thulen  
r<sup>y</sup>se azen v<sup>r</sup>outen corrupcion. et  
we thulen be chaigid. for it biho  
ney vis v<sup>r</sup> corruptible pig to do  
pe corrupcion. et vis deethy pig  
to putte ansey v<sup>r</sup>deedynesse. but  
whiche vis deethy pig shal clope  
v<sup>r</sup>deedynesse. p<sup>r</sup>ane shal pe word  
be don pat is witu. deey is sapu  
up in victorie. deey wher is v<sup>r</sup> vic  
torie. deey wher is v<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup>ucte. but  
pe p<sup>r</sup>ucte of deey. is s<sup>r</sup>ne. et pe etu  
of s<sup>r</sup>ne. is pe lawe. but do we p<sup>r</sup>a  
bys to god. pat zat to us. v<sup>r</sup>ito  
rie. by our lord ihu et. p<sup>r</sup>fore my  
dereworpe bryen. be ze stidfast  
et v<sup>r</sup>ionable. beyng p<sup>r</sup>leutenon  
le in werk of pe lord enmore. vi  
tyngge p<sup>r</sup> zom. t<sup>r</sup>amel is not idel  
in pe lord. **C. 16. 11.**

**B**ut of pe gadryngis of mo  
ney pat ben maid into seyn  
tis. as i ordeynede in pe  
churchis of galathe. so allo do ze  
o day of pe wole. ech of zom kepe  
at hym sile. kepige pat p<sup>r</sup>plest  
to hy. p<sup>r</sup>whanne i come pe gadry  
gis be not maid. and whiche i shal  
be p<sup>r</sup>sent. whiche me ze p<sup>r</sup>ene. i  
shal sende hem by epistlis to be  
re our grace into ierlm. p<sup>r</sup>if it be  
woxy. et allo i go. vei thulen go  
wry me. but i shal come to zom.  
whiche i shal passe by macedonie.  
for whi i shal passe by macedonie.  
but p<sup>r</sup>anetun. i shal diueller at zom.  
or allo diueller pe wryntur. p<sup>r</sup>et ze le  
de me whidur eu. i shal go. et i  
wole not now se zom in my passig.  
for i hope to diueller wry zom a whi  
le. if pe lord shal suffre. but i sh  
al diueller at etesi. til to watonti  
de. for a greet doze. i an opyn is  
openid to me. et many aduersari  
es. et if t<sup>r</sup>ymothe come. se ze pat  
he be v<sup>r</sup>outen drede wry zom. for  
he worchy pe werk of pe lord. as  
i p<sup>r</sup>fore no ma dispile hy. but le  
de ze hy for in pees. p<sup>r</sup>he come  
to me. for i abide hy wry bryen.  
but bryen. i make knowu to  
zom of apollo. p<sup>r</sup>et p<sup>r</sup>epede hy mo  
che. p<sup>r</sup>he shulde come to zom w  
bryen. but it was not his wille.  
to come now. but he shal come.  
whiche he shal hane leyser. **U**al  
ke ze et stonde ze in pe fey. do ze  
maly. et be ze confortid in pe lord.  
et be alle zom. pigis don in chari  
te. et bryen. i bileche zom. ze kno  
we pe hous of stephan. et of fortu  
nati. et acaci. for vei ben pe fir  
ste fruytis of acaye et into my

vis stephan  
a woman



myfterie of leynis: rei han ordey  
ned hem self. y also ze ben suget  
tis to luche. & to ech worchige to  
gidre & trauelinge: for i haue  
ioye in ye presence of stephan  
& of fortunat & acaci. for rei  
filliden pat pig y faile to zoi  
for rei han refreithid boye my  
spirit & zoi. y fore knowe ze  
hem pat be luche man me alle  
ye churchis of alie: grette zoi  
wel. Alquyla & prilla wir her ho  
mely church grette zoi moche  
in ye lord: at ye whiche i am her  
bond alle bryen greden zoi wel  
grette ze wel to gidre in hooly  
coll my greetig bi poulis hond  
if ony ma louey not our lord ihu  
crist: be he curid mara natha: ye  
grace of our lord ihu crist: be wir  
zoi my charite be wir zoi alle i  
crist ihu our lord and. **Her en**  
**dyt ye firste pistle to corinthis**  
**ner ye plog on ye secunde pistle to cor**  
**inthis**  
**A**ir penance don: pouil wir th  
try to corinthis a pistle of coi  
fort: fro troade bi titus & he p  
ly he & exercit to betre pigis &  
therwir pat rei were maid zoi:  
but amedid. **Her o leyn pis i his**  
**plog on ye secunde pistle to corinthis**  
**O**ul apostle of ihu crist.  
by ye wille of god. & ty  
mothe broy: to ye chir  
che of god y is at cori  
thi. wir alle leynis pat be nat  
acaci: grace to zoi & pees of god  
oure fadir. & of ye lord ihu crist: blef  
sid be god & ye fadir of our lord  
ihu crist: fadir of mercies & god  
of al confort: which confortis us  
in al oure tribulaciou: y also we  
moun confort he pat ben i al dis

ele. bi ye monestig bi which also  
we ben monestid of god: for as ye  
passions of crist be plenteuous i  
us: so also by crist our confort is  
plenteuous: & wher we ben i  
tribulaciou: for zoi re tribulaci  
on & heelp: erir we ben confortid.  
for zoi confort: erir we be mo  
nestid: for zoi monestig & heelp  
ye which worchir in zoi ye suf  
firing of ye same passions whi  
che also we suffer: y our hope  
be sad for zoi: writige for as ze be  
felowis of passions: so ze ihu  
be also of confort. **For bryen**  
**we wolen y ze wite of oure tri**  
**bulaciou pat was in ahe: for ou**  
**maner we weren greuyd ouer**  
**myzt: so y it anoyde us zhe to**  
**lyne: but we in us self hadden**  
**amiser of deap: y we trite not**  
**in us but in god pat reuhyr deed**  
**men: which deliuerde us: & deli**  
**uery fro so grete perels: into**  
**who we hope: also ze he ihu**  
**deliuer: while also ze helpe in**  
**preier for us: y of ye plones of**  
**many faces: of pat zoi pigis y is**  
**in us: paufis be don for us by**  
**many me to god: for oure gloze**  
**is pis: ye witnessig of our con**  
**science y in syplenelle & denel**  
**se of god: & not in fleishly wys**  
**dom: but in ye grace of god:**  
**we luyeten in pis world: but**  
**more plenteuously to zoi: & we**  
**writen not ope pigis to zoi: pa**  
**po y ze han red & knowe: & i ho**  
**pe: y into ye ende ze ihu kuo**  
**we: as also ze han knowe us a**  
**party: for we ben zoi gloze:**  
**as also ze ben oure i ye day of ou**  
**re lord ihu crist: and in pis triste**

myg: i wolde first come to zoi:  
pat ze shulden haue ye secunde gra  
ce: & passe by zoi into macedoine.  
& est fro macedoine come to zoi.  
& of zoi be led into judee: but  
whane i wolde pis pig: wher  
y vlide vultid fastnesse: erir  
po pigis y i penke: i penke at  
tir ye fleish: y at me be: it is.  
& it is not: but god is trewe.  
for oure word pat was at zoi:  
is & is not: is not y sone: but is.  
is in it: for whi ihu crist ye sone  
of god: which is prethid a mog  
zoi bi us: bi me & siluan & tymothe.  
per was not in hi is & is not:  
but is was in hi: for whi hoi  
many eie ben biheftis of god:  
in pilke is ben fulfillid: y fore bi  
hi we lepename to god: to ou  
re gloze: sopey it is god y offer  
mer us wir zoi i crist: & ye which  
anoyntide us: & which marke  
us: & ze ernes of ye spirit i ou  
re hertis: for i depite god to  
witnesse azens my soule: y i  
sparyge zoi cam not ouer to co  
rithi: not y we ben lordis of zoi  
feyr: but we ben helperis of zoi  
re ioye: for zoi bilene ze stode.  
**A**id i ordeynede. **C. ii.**  
pis pig at me: y i sh  
ulde not come estloone  
in heynesse to zoi: for if i ma  
ke zoi loy: who is he pat gla  
dyr me: but he y is loyful of  
me & pis same pig: i woot to  
zoi: y whne i come: i haue not  
soybe on soybe: of ye which it  
bihoft me to haue ioye: and  
i triste in zoi alle: y my ioye  
is of alle zoi: for of myche tri  
bulaciou & anglysh of herte:

i woot to zoi by many teeris:  
not y ze be loy: but pat ze wite  
what charite i haue more ple  
tenously i zoi: for if ony ma har  
maad me sozful: he har not  
maad me sozful: but a parti  
y i charge not zoi alle: pis bla  
myg y is maid of manye: suf  
ficy to hi y is luche con: so y ze  
ward: ze raper for y ne & confor  
te: lest pamenture he y is luche  
amaner ma: be sopu up by mo  
ze greet heynesse: for whi pig  
i bileche zoi: y ze cofeme charite  
into hi: for whi y fore i woot  
pis: y i knowe zoi preef: whe  
pir i alle pigis ze ben obedient:  
for to who ze han forzoi ony  
ymg: also i haue forzoi: for i  
pat y i forzaf: if i forzaf ony  
pig: haue zoi for zoi i ye per  
loone of crist: y we be not distei  
ned of sathanas: for we knowe  
hile pouztis: but whne i was co  
mii to troade for ye gospel of crist:  
& a doze was openyd to me in ye  
lord: i hadde not reite to my spi  
rit: for i foond not my broy tite:  
but i leide to hem fare wel: & i  
passide into macedoine: & i do  
paufis to god y eumore maky  
us to haue victorie in crist ihu: &  
therwir by us ye odour of his kno  
wig in ech place: for we ben ye  
good odour of crist to god: among  
pese y ben maid iust: & among  
pes y perillhen: to ope sopeh  
odour of deap into deap: but to  
ye ope: we ben odour of lyf in  
to lyf: & to pes pigis: who is so  
able: for we be not as manye  
pat doen auoude bi ye word of  
god: but we speken of denelle.



as of god before god in ch. 1. m.  
**B**rotherne we fore eft bo  
 ne to preise us selfe. or  
 wepne we ueden as su  
 men pittis of preising. to you  
 or of you. ze ben oure pitte. wri  
 tu in oure hertis. which is kno  
 wn & red of alle me. & maid oppu  
 for ze ben pe pitte of ch. my m  
 trid of us and wri tu not wri  
 euk. but bi pe spirit of pe lynn  
 ge god. not in stouen tablis. but  
 in fleschly tablis of herte. for  
 we han such ch. by crist to god.  
 not p. we ben sufficient to pe  
 ke ouy pig of us as of us. but ou  
 re sufficiete is of god. which al  
 so made us able mynistis of pe  
 newe testamēt. not by lettre  
 but by spirit. for pe lett. gley.  
 but pe spirit quykney. & if pe  
 mynistaciou of deep wri tu bi  
 lettris in stouen. was in gloze.  
 so pat pe children of isrl. nyzten  
 not biholde into pe face of moyses.  
 for pe gloze of his cheer which is  
 anoydid. how shal not pe mynit  
 cion of pe spirit be more i gloze.  
 for if pe imitaciou of dapnaciou  
 was in gloze. moche more pe  
 mynistrie of ryz. wille is ple  
 tenous in gloze. for ney pat pat  
 was cleer. was glorified in his  
 part for pe excellēt gloze. & if pat  
 p. is anoydid was bi gloze. moche  
 more pat p. dwellyt stille. is i glo  
 ze. yfore we p. han such hope.  
 vlen moche trist. and not as moy  
 les leide a veyl on his face. p. pe  
 children of isrl. shulde not bihol  
 de into his face. which veyl is a  
 voydd. but pe wittis of hem be  
 a ston. d. for into his day. pe sa

me veyl in redige of pe olde testa  
 mēt dwellyt. not shewid. for it is  
 anoydid in ch. But into his day  
 shulde moyses is rad. pe veyl is  
 put on her hertis. but shulde is  
 rael shal be coitid to god. pe veyl  
 shal be don away. & pe spirit is  
 pe lord. & wher. pe spirit of pe  
 lord is. pere is freedom. & alle we  
 p. wryt opyn face seen pe gloze  
 of pe lord. ben tralloumed into  
 pe same ymage. fro clerenesse  
 into clerenesse as of pe spirit  
 of pe lord. 1. m.  
**E**fore we pat han his  
 administraciou. after. p.  
 p. we hangetil mercy. faple we  
 not. but do we away pe p. p.  
 gis of shame. not walkige in shi  
 til gyle ney doyng anoyt by  
 pe word of god. but in shewige  
 of pe treywe. comedige us lik to  
 ech conscience of me. before god.  
 for if also our gospel is keuerid.  
 in yese pat perurthen it is keuer  
 id in which god hay blend pe son  
 lis of onferful me of his world.  
 p. pe litznyng of pe gospel of pe  
 gloze of ch. which is pe ymage  
 of god. shyne not. But we pre  
 chen not us like. but our lord ihu  
 est. & us zour seruantis bi ihu. for  
 god pat seide liz to shyne of derf  
 nellis. he hay zone liz. t. iour her  
 tis to pe litznyng of pe shence of  
 pe clerenesse of god in pe face of  
 ihu est. & we han his trelour i  
 bzutal wellis. p. pe wrypelle  
 be of godis. uertu. & not of us.  
 in alle p. is we suffren tribula  
 cion. but we ben not angibillid  
 or anoydd. we ben maid pore.  
 but we lacky no pig. we suf

feren plectuon. but we ben not  
 forstet. we ben maid lowe. but  
 we ben not cofoundid. we ben  
 cast down. but we perurthen  
 not. and eunore we bere abou  
 te pe slepyng of ihu in our body.  
 & also pe liz of ihu be shewid i  
 our bodies. for eunore we pat  
 lyue. ben taku into deep for ihu  
 pat pe liz of ihu. be shewid in  
 our dwellyt flesch. yfore deep woz  
 chy in us. but liz in you. & we  
 han pe same ne spirit of fery.  
 as it is wri tu. i. hane bileyd.  
 i. hane spoke. & we bileyd. wher  
 fore also we speken wrytge pat  
 he pat reside ihu. shal reyse  
 also us wryt ihu. & shal ordey  
 ne wryt you. & alle p. is for you.  
 p. a plenteuous grace by many  
 p. a p. is. be plenteuous into  
 pe gloze of god. for which p. is  
 we fallen not. but youz out. et  
 ter ma be corruptid. nepeles  
 pe yner ma is newid fro day  
 to day. but p. liz pig of our t.  
 bulaciou pat lasty nois but as  
 it were bi a moment. wrytchy  
 in us ou melin. an euilastige bu  
 ren into pe lizness of gloze.  
 while p. we biholde. not po p.  
 gis pat ben seyn. but po p. ben  
 not seyn. for po p. is pat be seyn. be  
 but durige for a short tyme. but  
 po p. is pat ben not seyn. ben  
 everlastyng. 1. m.  
**A**d we wri tu. p. if oure  
 erpely hous of his dwel  
 luyng be dissolued. p. we han a  
 byldyng of god. an hous not maid  
 bi hondis euilastige in heuenes  
 for whi in his p. is we mome  
 conertige to be cloyd aboue us

our dwellyng which is of heue  
 ne. if nepeles we ben foundu do  
 pid. & not nakid. for whi we pat  
 ben in his tabernacle. soz ben  
 wrytme. & ben heuped for p. we  
 wole not be spoyld. but be clo  
 yd aboue. p. pe ilke pig p. is deed  
 ly. be lopyt up of hys. but whi  
 is it p. maky us into his same  
 pig. god. pat zat to us pe er  
 nes of pe spirit. yfore we ben  
 hardy algatis. & wri tu. p. pe whi  
 le we ben i his body. we goen i  
 pilgrimage fro pe lord. for we  
 walken by fery. & not by deer sit.  
 but we ben hardy. & han good  
 wille. more to be in pilgrima  
 ge fro pe body. & to be present  
 to god. & yefore we stryue. whe  
 p. absent. wher present. to ple  
 se hy. for it bihouey us alle. to  
 be shewid before pe trone of ch.  
 p. eney ma telle pe p. p. is  
 of pe body. as he hay don. eyn  
 good eyn. p. uel. yfore we wrytge  
 pe drete of pe lord. conuelen me.  
 for to god we ben opyn. & i ho  
 pe p. we ben opyn also in your  
 consciencis. we comente not us  
 selfe eftsoone to you. but we zyn  
 uen to you occasioun to haue glo  
 ze for us. p. ze haue to hem pat  
 glozen i pe face. & not in pe her  
 te. for ouy we by mynde passe.  
 to god eyn. we ben soze. to you  
 for pe charite of ch. dymey us.  
 gellige his pig. p. if oon dyede  
 for alle. yane alle weren deed.  
 & ch. dyede for alle. p. pei p. lyue.  
 lyue not nois to hem selfe. but  
 to hi pat diede for hem. & roos  
 azen. yfore we fro his tyme  
 knowe no ma after pe flesch.



youz we knowe it after pe flesh.  
but now we knowe not / þ fore  
if ony newe creatur is in it. pe  
elde pigis ben pallid. & lo alle pi  
gis ben of god / which reconsele  
us to hi bi crist. & zaf to us pe  
seruise of reconcelig. and god  
was in it. reconcelige to hym  
pe world: not retigge to he her  
giltis / & putte in us. pe word  
of reconcelig. þ fore we vlen  
message for crist. as if god mo  
netty bi us. we bi lochen for it.  
be ze reconcelid to god. God pe  
fadir made hi syne for us. which  
knew not syne. þ we schulden  
be maid rixt bysness of god i hi.

**B**ut we helpige. **C. vii.**  
moneste. þ ze ressepe  
not pe grace of god in  
veyn. for he seyn. In tyme wel  
pleynge. I haue herd pee. & in  
pe day of heelp. I haue helpid  
pee. lo now a tyme acceptable.  
lo now a day of heelp. þne we  
to no mā ony offencoun. þ our  
seruise be not reppend. but  
malle pigis þne we us file as  
pe mynistis of god. i moche pa  
cience. in tribulacions. i nedis. i  
angurithis. i betyngis. i plosis.  
i dullencions. i tynels. i tynels.  
i watigis. i tynels. i chaitie.  
i tynels. i long abidig. i fytet  
nelle in pe hooly gost. i charite  
not feyned. i pe word of tren  
pe. i vertu of god. þ gairing  
of rixt bysness on pe rixt half  
& on pe lefthalf. bi glozie & an  
noble. by þne same & good fa  
me. as dilepneris & trewe me.  
as pei pat ben vnknowi. & kn  
own. as me dyge. & lo we ly

factice for hie  
ty

pe

nen. as chaitid. & not mande  
ed. as lozenful. eumore ioyu  
ge. as hanige nete. but maki  
ge many men rixhe. as no pig  
hanige. & weldige alle pigis.  
**¶** Ze corithis oure mony is  
oppyn to you. our herte is alar  
gid. ze be not angurithid i us.  
but ze ben angurithid i zoure  
wardnesse. & i seie as to sones.  
ze pat han pe same reward be  
ze alargid nyle ze bere pe zok w  
onferful me. for what partig  
of rixt bysness we wixt iduel  
se. or what felouship of lye to  
derkness. and what accordig  
of it to belial. or what part of  
a ferful. we pe vnferful. &  
what colent to pe temple of god  
we manmetis. & ze ben pe te  
ple of pe linge god. as pe lord  
seyn. for i shal dwelle in hem.  
& i shal walke among he. & i  
shal be god of he. & pei shule  
be a peple to me. for which pig  
go ze out of pe myddel of hem.  
& ze departid seyn pe lord. & ton  
che ze not vnclene pig. & i shal  
ressepe you. & i shal be to you ito  
afadir. & ze schulen be to me i  
to sones & donztris seyn pe lord  
almighti. **C. vii.**

**T**herfore moost derest  
pe lypen. we pat han  
pes bihectis. dense we us fro  
al filpe of pe flesh & of pe spirit.  
doyng hoolynesse i pe drede of  
god. take ze us. we han hirt no  
mā. we han apperid no mā. we  
han bigyld no mā. i seye not  
to zoure codepnyng. for i seide  
bifore. þ ze ben i zour hertis. to  
dye to godze & to lyue to godze.

moche trist is to me anentis  
you. moche glozying is to me  
for you. i am fillid wey confort.  
i am plenteuous i weye i al our  
tribulacioun. for whane we we  
re come to macedonie. our fle  
sh hadde no reite. but we suf  
fiden al tribulacioun. we pout  
forz fytigis. & dzedis we me  
but god pat confort me.  
men. confort us i pe comyng  
of tite. & not oonly i pe comyng  
of hi. but also i pe confort by  
which he was confortid i you.  
tellig to us zour desir. zour  
wepig. zour loue for me. so  
þ i ioyede more. for youz i ma  
de you son in apistle. it rewep  
me not. youz it rewep. seige  
þ youz vilke pistle made you  
son at an our. now i haue ioye  
not for ze were maid sorowful.  
but for ze were maid sorowful  
to penance. for which ze be maid  
son after god. þ in no pig ze  
suffre penemēt of us. for ze for  
we þ is after god. worchyp pe  
naunce into stidfast heelp. but  
sorwe of pe world. worchyp deey  
for lo pis same pig. þ ze be for  
whil after god. how moche bish  
ness. & worchyp in you. but de  
fendig. but indignacioun. but  
dred. but desyr. but loue. but  
verance. in alle pigis ze han zo  
ni you self to be vnde foulid in  
pe cause. þ fore youz i wroot to  
you. i wroot not for hym pat  
dite pe iurie. uer for hy þ suf  
fide. but to thewe oure bish  
ness. which we han for you by  
fore god. þ fore we ben confort  
tid. but in zour confort more

plenteuous. we ioyede more  
on pe ioye of tite. for his spirit  
is fulfillid of alle you. & if i glo  
riede ony pig anentis hi of you.  
i am not confoundid. but as we  
han spoke to you alle pigis. so  
also our glozie þ was at tite.  
is maid trewe. & pe mwardnes  
se of hi be more plenteuous in  
you. which hap in mynde pe obe  
dience of you alle. how we drede  
& tremblig. ze ressepe hym. i  
haue ioye. þ in alle pigis i triske  
in you. **C. viii.**

**B**ut byperen we make tuo  
wi to you pe grace of  
god. pat is zour in pe churchis of  
macedonie. þ in moche alayng  
of tribulacioun. pe plente of pe  
ioye of he was. and pe hette po  
uert of hem. was plenteuous i  
to pe richess of pe spylencesse  
of hem. for i bere iurialig to he.  
after myt. & abone myt pei were  
wilful. we moche monestis bi  
schinge us pe grace & pe comyng  
of ministrige. þ is maid to hooly  
me. & not as we hopiden. but pei  
zamen hem self first to pe lord.  
afterward to us. bi pe wille of  
god. so pat we preide tite. þ as  
he bigan. so also he parfourme  
in you pis grace. but as ze abou  
den in alle pigis. in seyn a word  
& tynys. & al bishness. more ou  
i in zour charite into us. þ also  
in pis grace ze aboude. i seie not  
as comandige. but by pe bishnes  
se of ofe men. apprenysse also pe  
good witt of zour charite. **¶** And  
ze wite pe grace of our lord ihu  
crist. for he was maid nedy for  
you whane he was rixhe. þ ze schul



den be mard ryche bi his nedmesse  
 & i ȝyue conseil in pis pig. for pis  
 is profitable to ȝou. & not onli  
 han bigune to do: but also ȝe bigu  
 ne to haue wille fro ȝe formere  
 ȝeer: but now parfourme ȝe in  
 teede / ȝas pe distreccion of wille  
 is redy: so be it also of p̄foum̄g  
 of ȝat ȝe han for if ȝe wille  
 be redy: it is acceptid astur pat  
 ȝat hap. not astur pat ȝat hap  
 not: & not ȝat be remysshoun  
 to opet men: & to ȝou tribulaci  
 on. But of euēesse: i ȝe p̄lent  
 tyme: ȝour abouidance fulfille  
 ȝe mysele of hē ȝat also ȝe abū  
 dante of hem: be afulfyllig of  
 ȝour mysele / ȝe euēesse be m̄d:  
 as it is writū he pat gedude m̄  
 che: was not encresid: & he pat  
 gedude lital: hadde not lesse. & i  
 do p̄ankis to god. ȝat ȝe ha  
 me biȝynesse for ȝou in ȝe herte of  
 t̄yte / for he reuēuede exortaciō  
 or moneȝis: but whāne he was  
 biȝer: bi his wille. he wente for  
 to ȝou: & we sente w̄y h̄i ab̄op̄r.  
 whos p̄isyn̄g is in ȝe gospel by  
 alle churchis & not onli: but also  
 he is ordeyned of churchis. ȝe felo  
 we of oūr pilgrymage into ȝis  
 grace ȝis m̄m̄trid of us to ȝe  
 glorie of ȝe lord. & to oūr ordey  
 ned wille / elcheȝynge ȝis pig. ȝ  
 no man blame us. in ȝis p̄lente.  
 ȝis m̄m̄trid of us to ȝe glorie  
 of ȝe lord: for we p̄m̄uepen goode  
 pigis: not ouely biȝore god: but al  
 so biȝore alle mē / for we sente w̄  
 hē also oūr broȝ. who we han p̄  
 ind i man pigis ofte. ȝe was  
 biȝ: but now moche biȝer: for  
 myche et̄ in ȝou / eȝ for t̄ite ȝ

is my felowe & helper in ȝou: eȝ  
 oūr b̄yep̄n ap̄ollis of ȝe churchis  
 of ȝe glorie of et̄ p̄fore l̄thwe  
 ȝe into hē in ȝe face of churchis.  
 pat l̄thwe ȝis of ȝour charge  
 of oūr glorie for ȝou. *Chap. 11*  
**A**nd of ȝe m̄m̄strie pat  
 is mard to hooly mē: it is  
 to me of p̄lente to w̄yte  
 to ȝou for i knowe ȝour wille:  
 for ȝe which i haue glorie of: &  
 auentis macedon̄es: for also a  
 caye is redy fro a ȝeer passid:  
 & ȝour loue hap stand fulman̄e  
 and we han sent b̄yep̄n. ȝis  
 pig. ȝe glorie of ȝou be not  
 auoydid in party: ȝas i sente ȝe  
 be redy: lest wh̄ne macedon̄es  
 comē w̄y me: & fynde ȝour m̄  
 di: we be shamed. ȝe we l̄ze ȝou  
 not in ȝis substantiā: p̄fore i ged̄  
 de necessarye to p̄eȝe b̄yep̄n: ȝe  
 come biȝore to ȝou: & make redy  
 ȝis biȝit bleȝis: to be redy: so al  
 bleȝis: & not as auarice: for i see  
 ȝis pig. he pat l̄w̄y st̄r̄ly: sh̄  
 al also repe st̄r̄ly: & he pat l̄w̄y  
 m̄bleȝis: sh̄al repe also of bleȝ  
 is: ech man as he castide in his  
 herte: not of heim̄esse or of ne  
 de: for god loueȝ a glad ȝyne &  
 god is m̄ȝti: to make al grace  
 abouide in ȝou ȝe malle pigis  
 enuore han al sufficiencye: & a  
 bouide into al good werk as it is  
 writū he deȝite ab̄ood. he ȝaf to  
 poȝe men: his r̄iz̄w̄yssh̄e diuē  
 ly w̄youte ende: and he pat m̄  
 m̄st̄ry seed to ȝe s̄ow̄ere sh̄al  
 ȝyne also breed to et̄: & he sh̄al  
 multiplie ȝour seed: & make  
 moche ȝe encresc̄is of fr̄u  
 tis of ȝour r̄iz̄w̄yssh̄e ȝat alle

pigis ȝe mard ryche: weren plen  
 tenous into al symplenesse: wh̄  
 ich w̄orsh̄p bi vs: doȝynge of ȝa  
 figis to god for ȝe m̄m̄strie of  
 ȝis office: not onli fillyp po p̄m̄  
 gis pat failen to hooly mē: but  
 also multiplie many p̄aul̄is  
 to god. bi ȝe p̄ynge of ȝis m̄  
 m̄st̄rie: wh̄iche gloriȝen god  
 i ȝe obedience of ȝour knowle  
 chis in ȝe gospel of et̄: & in l̄y  
 plenesse of com̄p̄taciō into  
 hem & to alle: & in ȝe b̄ilech̄is  
 of hē for ȝou: ȝe deȝen ȝou for ȝe  
 excellent grace of god in ȝou. i  
 do p̄ankis to god of ȝe ȝifre of  
 h̄i: ȝat m̄g not be teld. *Chap. 12*  
**A**nd i m̄p̄z̄ poul b̄ileche  
 ȝou bi ȝe m̄p̄denesse &  
 softnesse of et̄: wh̄ich i  
 ȝe face am meek am̄g ȝou: & i  
 absent t̄rite in ȝou: for i p̄eȝe ȝou:  
 ȝe l̄t i p̄lent be not boold bi ȝe et̄  
 in wh̄ich i am̄gellid to be boold to  
 ȝime: pat deȝen us: as if we w̄a  
 dien astur ȝe fleȝh: for we walk̄  
 ge in fleȝh: fixen not astur ȝe  
 fleȝh: for ȝe arm̄ur is of oūr e  
 l̄m̄ȝthod ben not fleȝhly: but  
 m̄ȝti biȝod to ȝe distreccion of  
 strenḡis: & we distreȝen coun̄els  
 & al h̄yuel̄e pat h̄yep̄ a s̄ilf aȝens  
 ȝe stren̄se of god: & d̄ryuen into  
 cap̄t̄ite al v̄nd̄r st̄ond̄ig into ȝe  
 seruile of et̄: & we han redy to  
 avenge al oūr obedience: wh̄ne ȝou  
 re obedience sh̄al be fillid: & ȝe  
 ȝe pigis ȝe ben astur ȝe face: if  
 oūr man tr̄ist̄y to h̄i s̄ilf ȝe is  
 of crist: penke he ȝis pig. et̄ anē  
 tis h̄y s̄ilf: for as he is et̄is: so  
 also we: for if i sh̄al glorie oūr  
 pig. moze of oūr poȝer wh̄ich ȝe

lord ȝaf to us into ed̄ifyng: & not  
 into ȝour distreccion: i sh̄al not  
 be sh̄amed: but ȝe i be not get  
 tid. as to feet ȝou bi ep̄ist̄is: for  
 ȝe l̄ep̄en. ȝe ep̄ist̄is ben gre  
 uous & stronge: but ȝe p̄esence  
 of ȝe body is feble. & ȝe word w̄or  
 ȝi to be disp̄id: he ȝis l̄ich oū  
 penke ȝis: for l̄ich as we absent  
 ben i word bi p̄ist̄is: l̄ich we be  
 p̄esent in t̄ele: for we d̄oren not  
 p̄itte us am̄g. or cōpar̄isone  
 us to ȝime: pat comēde hē s̄ilf:  
 but we uel̄ue us in us s̄ilf: &  
 cōpar̄isone us s̄ilf to us: for we  
 sh̄ule not haue glorie ouer me  
 sure: but ȝe uel̄ue of ȝe reule  
 wh̄ich god uel̄urde to us ȝe me  
 sur̄ pat st̄reȝh̄p to ȝou: for we  
 ouer st̄reȝhen not for ȝis: as not  
 st̄reȝh̄ge to ȝou: for to ȝou we ca  
 men in ȝe gospel of et̄: not glori  
 ynge ouer mesur̄: i oȝe mēȝs t̄  
 uels: for we han hope of ȝour t̄er̄  
 ȝe w̄er̄y in ȝou to be magn̄ified  
 bi oūr reule in ab̄idance: also to  
 p̄eȝe into ȝo pigis pat ben biȝe  
 dis ȝou: not to haue glorie i oȝe  
 m̄āȝs reule. i ȝes pigis ȝe ben  
 mard redy: he ȝe glorieȝ: haue glo  
 rie in ȝe lord: for not he ȝe comen  
 dy h̄i s̄ilf is p̄eȝid: but whom  
 god comēdy. *Chap. 13*  
**I** w̄olde ȝe w̄olten suff̄re  
 al̄t̄il pig. of m̄p̄n v̄n̄b̄y  
 dom: but also supporte ȝe  
 me: for i loue ȝou bi ȝe loue of  
 god: for i haue sp̄onlid ȝou to cō  
 holebonde: to zelde a ch̄ast v̄rḡyn  
 to et̄: but i d̄rede lest as ȝe l̄er  
 pent d̄il̄eȝuede eue w̄y his l̄ital  
 fraude: so ȝour w̄ittis ben cor  
 rupt: & fallen don fro ȝe sp̄ple



neße pat is i cēt for if he p comey.  
prechy anoy crist. wls we prech  
den not. or if ze taken anoyr spi  
rit. whom ze taken not. or anoy  
gospel. which ze releyne not.  
rytly ze shulden luffe for i we  
ne. p i haue don no pig lesse pā  
re grete apostlis for pouz i be  
vnterid in word. but not in fē  
nyg for in alle rygys i am opp  
to you. or wher i haue do syue.  
mekige my sile. p ze be enhaū  
sid. for frely i prechide to you pe  
gospel of god. i made nakid ope  
churthis. i took lowde to you  
seruple. And whāne i was amōg  
you i hadde nede. i was charge  
ous to no mā. for bysen pat ca  
me fro macedonpe fulfillden  
pat p fayhde to me. and i alle  
rygys i haue kept. i shal kepe  
me wyoute charge to you. pe  
treupe of cēt is in me. for pīs  
gloze shal not be brokū i me  
in pe cētreis of acaye. whi. for  
i loue not you. god woot for p  
pat i do. i pat i shal do is p  
i lute alwey pe oadon of hem.  
p wolen oadon. p in pe ring  
in which pei glozen. pei be fou  
dun as we for luche false apost  
lis. ben trecherous werkmen.  
i traufigure hem to apostlis  
of crist. i no wondur for satha  
nas hi sile tūfigury hi into an  
aūgel of lūt. pfore it is not gre  
et. if his mynistris ben tūfigu  
rid. as pe mynistris of ryt wyl  
nelle. whos ende shal be astir  
her werkis. est i seie. lest ony  
mā gelle me to be vntyp ellis  
take ze me as vntyp. p also  
i haue gloze a lūl what p pat

i speke. i speke not astir god.  
but as in vntypidom. i pīs sub  
staūce of gloze for many mē  
glozen astir pe fleish. i sh  
al gloze. for ze susten gladli  
vntypse men. whne ze sile be  
wyle. for ze susteynen if ony  
mā dryuey you into seruage.  
if ony mā deuoury. if ony mā  
tak y. if ony mā is enhaūsid. if  
ony mā smyt y on pe face. bi  
vntypse i seie. as if we were  
syke in pīs party. i what pig  
ony mā dar. i vntypidom i seie. i  
dar not. pei ben ebreys. i  
pei ben israelitis. i i pei ben  
pe seed of abrahā. i i pei be  
pe mynistris of cēt. i i as les  
se wyls i seie. i more in fulma  
ny trauels. in pflows more ple  
tenouly. i wōdis aboue mā  
ner. i depris ofte tymes i rel  
ceyuede of pe ieris fyne syris  
fourty stokis. oon lesse pries  
i was betū wy zerdis. onys i  
was stoupyd. pries i was at sh  
ip breche. amyt i aday i was  
in pe depneße of pe see. in wei  
es ofte. in perels of floodis. in  
perels of yenis. i pels of kyn.  
i pels of heven mē. i pels i cite.  
in pels in desert. i pels i pe lee.  
in pels amōg false bysen. i i  
neil i nedynesse. i many waki  
gis in hūgury in yist. in many  
fastigis. in cold. and wakidneße  
wyoute po rygys pat ben wy  
oute for. myn eche dayes trauē  
lyng is pe byspneße of alle chr  
chis. who is sly. i i am not sly.  
who is standrd. i i am not lūt.  
if it bihoney to gloze. i shal glo  
ze i po rygys pat ben of my ifir

myte. Sod i pe fady our lord  
shū cēt. p is blelid into wōldi.  
woot p i lie not. pe p uost of  
damak. of pe kyng of pe folk  
of arethe. kepte pe citee of da  
malanes to take me. i by any  
dow in a leep. i was latū donbi  
auwal. i so i astapide hi hōd.  
i i bihoney to. **ii. cor. xi.**  
i haue gloze. i spech not. but  
i shal come to pe visiois. i to pe  
renelacions of pe lord. i woot  
amā in cēt p bifoze fourtene  
year. wher in body. wher out  
of body. i woot not. god woot.  
p such amā was rāpshid til  
to pe ynde heuene. i i woot  
such amā. wher in body. or out  
of body. i woot god woot. pat  
he was rāpshid into parady  
se. i herde prym wordis. whi  
che it is not leessul to gma  
to speke for suchē mān rygys  
i shal gloze. but for me no ryg.  
no but myne infirmytees. for  
if i shal wline to gloze. i sh  
al not be vntyp. for i shal sei  
e treupe. but i spare. lest ony  
mā gelle me on pat ryg. p he  
leep in me. or heer y ony ryg  
of me. i lest pe greetneße of  
renelacions enhaūce me i pte.  
pe pricke of my fleish an am  
gel of sathanas is zōm to me.  
p he bultate me. for which ryg  
pries i prepede pe lord. p i sh  
ulde go anyey fro me. i he seide  
to me. my grace sufficy to p.  
for vertu is parfaly maad  
i infirmyte. pfore gladi i sh  
al gloze i myne infirmytees.  
p pe vertu of cēt diuelli i me  
for which ryg i am plelid in

myne ifirmytees. i dispilgis  
i nedis. i psecuciois. i angust  
chis for crist. for whāne i am  
sly. vāne i am myzti. i am mā  
ad vntyp. ze contrayneden  
me. for i ouyte to be comendū  
of you. for i dide no ryg. lalle  
pā pei. pat ben apostlis aboue  
mā. pouz i am nouyt. nepeles  
pe signes of my apostillhed be  
maad on you i al pācieuce. i sig  
nes i grete wōndis. i vertues.  
i what is it p ze hadde lalle pā  
ope churthis. but p i my sile  
greupe you not. for p me ze  
to me pīs wōng. **ii. cor. xi.**  
pō pīs  
ynde tyme i am redy to come  
to you. i i shal not be greuo  
to you. for i seke not po rygys  
p ben you. but you. **for ney.**  
for ney. lones oiven to trefōe  
to fady. i modur. but pe fady  
i modur to pe lones. for i shal  
zyue moost wylfulli. i i my lile  
shal be zōm aboue for zōmē fou  
lis. pouz i more loue you. i be let  
se lōyd. but be it. i greupe  
not you. but whāne i was sital  
i took you wy gyle. wher i  
dilleuete you. bi ony of hem  
whiche i sente to you. i pzei  
ede titee. i i sente wy hi abro  
pyr. wher i tite bigylde you. wher  
we zede not in pe same spuyt.  
wher not in pe same steypis. lū  
tyme ze wene p we shulen ercu  
se us anentis you bifoze god i cēt  
we speten. i moost der bysen.  
alle rygys for zōm edifyng. but  
i dide. lest whāne i come. i sh  
al fynde you not luche as i wo  
le. i i shal be foundū of you. luche  
as ze wolen not. lest pāneture



at puygis. enyos. ston dnyellis.  
dillencous. & detracionis. puy  
spechis of distord. boluygis bi p  
te. debatis ben amog zoi. & leit et  
soone whane i come. god make me  
low. anentis zoi. & i biweple ma  
nye of hem p bifoze sinede. & di  
de not penance on pe vnde ngle  
foryncacion. & vuchastite v rei  
handon. C. xii. #. #  
**I**dis vnde tyme. i come  
to zoi. & in pe mony of t  
tweyne of yre vituelis. euy  
word thal stonde. i seide bifoze &  
sepe bifoze as pient tipes & non  
abient. to hem pat bifoze han sy  
ned & to alle ope. for if i come est  
loque. i thal not spare. wher  
ze seken pe preef of pat est pat  
spek in me. which is not feble  
i zoi. for yoi he was crucified  
of i firmite. but he lyney of pe  
vertu of god. for also we ben syt  
i hi. but we sthulen lyue wy hi  
of pe etu of god in us. alawe zoi  
silk if ze ben i pe fey. ze zoi silk  
prene. wher ze knowen not.  
silk. for est ihu is i zoi. but i hap  
ze ben reponable. but i hope  
ze knowen. y we be not repua  
ble. & we preien pe lord. y ze do  
no pig of yuel not y we seme  
preyde. but y ze do pat y is good  
y we be as repuable. for we  
mon no pig. azens treupe. but  
for pe treupe. for we iopen whie  
we be syt. but ze ben myti. & we  
preien pis pig. zoi. pfectioun. y  
foze. i absent wyte pes pigs.  
y i pient do not harder. bi pe po  
wer. which pe lord gaf to me into  
edificacioun. & not into zoi. diffi  
coun. **E**ripen heny for yward

iope ze. be ze par fyt. erate ze.  
vndir stonde ze pe same pig. ha  
ne ze pees. & god of pees & of lo  
ne thal be wy zoi. **E**rete ze  
wel to gidre i hooli coll. alle hoo  
ly me greeten zoi. wel. pe grace  
of oure lord ihu est. & pe charite  
of god. & pe comynge of pe hoo  
ly gost. be wy alle zoi. ame. **I**de  
endry pe seide pille to corinthis. &  
bigynny pe plog o pe pille to galathies.  
**G**alathies beu greeten. pei toke  
first of pe apostle. pe word  
of treupe. but afur his goying a  
wey. pe were temptid of false a  
posthis. y pei weren tied into pe  
lame & circuncion. pe pille aze  
depy he to pe fey of treupe. &  
wyty to hem fro efecies. **I**ero  
this plog to galathies seip al pis. C. p.  
**D**ul pe apostle not of  
me. ne by un. but bi ihu  
est & god. pe fadir. y rei  
side hi fro wey. and alle  
pe bryen pat ben wy me. to pe  
churchis of galathie. grace to zoi.  
pees of god. pe fadir. & of pe lord  
ihu est. pat gaf hi silk for our sy  
nes. to delpye us fro pe pient  
wicked world. bi pe wille of god.  
our fadir. to whom is worldhip  
& glorie into wordis of worldis.  
amen. **I** wondre y so soone ze be  
yus moned fro hi. pat depite zoi  
into pe grace of est. unto anoyr.  
euangelie. which is not anoyr. but  
y per be sume pat troublen zoi.  
y wolen mytne pe euangelie of  
crist. but yoi we oz an angel of  
heue. pchide to zoi. biydis pat  
y we han preechid to zoi. be he acur  
sid. as i hane seid bifoze. & not  
estloone. i se. if ony preeche to.

biydis pat y ze han vndir fongu.  
be he acur sid. for now wher con  
cele. i me. oz god. oz wher i seche  
to plese me. if i plese ze men.  
i wer not cith seruait. for bryen  
i make knowe to zoi. pe euange  
lie y was preechid of me. for it is  
not by man. ne i took it of man.  
ne lerne. but bi reuelacioun of  
ihu est. for ze han herd my counsa  
cioun su tyme i pe ierurie. & y  
pnrliuede palligly pe church  
of god. & fangt azen it. & i pftid  
i pe ierurie above many of myn  
euengelid. i my fymed. & was mo  
ze abundaunt a folowere of my  
fadir. tradicioun. But whane  
it plese hi. pat departe me fro  
my modir wombe. & depite bi his  
grace. to schewe his lone i me. y  
i thulde pche hi amog pe hevene.  
me. anoon i drou. me not to fleish  
& blood. ne i cam to ierlm to pe a  
posthis. y were to fore me. but  
i wente into arabie. & estloones  
i turnete azen into damasce. & i  
ye zeer. afur i cam to ierlm to  
se petre. & i dwelid wy hi. 40  
dayes. but i saw noon opn of pe  
aposthis. but james our lordis  
brof. and yelle pigis. which i  
wrote to zoi. loo to fore god. i lie  
not. afurward i cam into pe  
coostis of syrie & cilice. but i was  
vntuol bi face to pe churchis  
of iudee. y weren i est. & pei had  
den only an heerig. y he pat p  
sawede us su tyme. pchide now  
pe fey. azens which he fangt  
su tyme. & in me rei gloriode god.  
**A**d sy fourtene. C. ii. #. #  
zeer. afur. estloones. i wete  
up to ierlm wy barnabas.

& took wy me tite. i wente up  
bi reuelacioun. & spak wy he pe e  
uangelie. which i pchide among  
pe hevene. & bi hem silk to yelle  
semede to be suwhar. lest i rine  
oz hadde rine in weyn. & ney tite  
y hadde be wy me while he was  
hevene. was compellid to be circun  
cidid. but for false bryen pat we  
ren brouz me. which had den entrid  
to alpe our freedom. which we ha  
in ihu crist. to brynge us into ser  
uage. but we yue no place to sub  
iectioun. y pe treupe of pe gospel  
thulde dwelle wy zoi. but of pe  
le y semyden to be suwhar. whi  
che pei were su tyme. it perter  
ney not to me. for god taky not  
pe plooone of ma. for rei y semyde  
to be suwhar. zane me no pig.  
but azenward. whie pei hadden  
seyn. y pe euangelie of psepucie  
was zoi to me. as pe euangelie  
of circuncion was zoi to petre.  
for he pat wrouzte to petre i apostle  
head of circuncion. wrouzte also  
to me amog pe hevene. & whie pei  
hadde knowe pe grace of god. pat  
was zoi to me. james & petre.  
And john. which were seyn to be  
pe pilers. pei zanen rythand of  
felonship to me. & to barnabas.  
y we among pe hevene. & pei  
to pe circuncion. only y we had  
den mynde of poze me. pe which  
pig. i was sil bily to don. but wha  
ne petre was comi to antioche.  
i azenood hi in pe face. for he was  
wozy to be vndir nomu. for bifo  
ze y per came su me fro james.  
he eet wy hepen me. but whie  
pei were comi he wy drou. & de  
partide hi. dredge hem y were of



circumcision / & ye of ierusalem assenti  
den to his sepuyng. So p<sup>r</sup> barua  
bas was drawu of hem to pat  
sepuyng. But whine / & sy / p<sup>r</sup> rei  
walkiden not ritzly to ye treupe  
of ye gospel. / & seyde to pet<sup>r</sup> bi  
foze alle me / if pou p<sup>r</sup> art a ier<sup>s</sup>.  
lynest hepenlych / & not ier<sup>s</sup>lych.  
how coustreyneft p<sup>r</sup> hepen men  
to bicomie ier<sup>s</sup>. We ier<sup>s</sup>is of kyn  
de & not syful me of ye hevene.  
knowe pat amā is not iustified  
of ye werkis of lawe. but bi ye  
fey of ihu crist. & we bileue in ihu  
crist. & we ben iustified of ye fey  
of crist. & not of ye werkis of la  
we. wherfore of ye werkis of  
lawe. ech flesch shal not be ius  
tified. & if we sechen to be iust  
fied in crist. we our self ben fou  
den synful me. wher crist be mi  
nistre of syne. god forbode. & /  
if / bilde azen pigis p<sup>r</sup> / I hane dis  
tyred. / I make my self a trespass  
sour. for bi ye lawe. / I am deed to  
ye lawe. & / I am fastid to ye cross  
p<sup>r</sup> / I lyue to god w<sup>th</sup> crist. & now  
lyue not. / but crist lyue i me.  
but p<sup>r</sup> / lyue now in flesch. / I ly  
ue i ye fey of godis lone. pat lo  
uyde me. & / I am self for me. /  
caste not away ye grace of god.  
for if ritzfulnesse be p<sup>r</sup> / I lase.  
p<sup>r</sup>ane crist diede w<sup>th</sup>oute cause.

**O**n w<sup>th</sup> galath / **C. m.**  
mans. to fore whos p<sup>r</sup>zen  
ihū crist is crucid. & is cru  
cified i zoi. who hap diseyued. /  
p<sup>r</sup> ze obeyen not to treupe. p<sup>r</sup>is  
oonh. / I w<sup>th</sup>ne to lerne of zoi. whe  
p<sup>r</sup> ze han vnderfonge ye spirit  
of werkis of ye lawe. or of hee  
ryng of bileue. / so ze ben fooli.

p<sup>r</sup> whane ze han bigune i spirit.  
ze ben endid in flesch. so grete  
p<sup>r</sup>is ze han sufferid w<sup>th</sup>oute cau  
se. if it be w<sup>th</sup>oute cause. he pat  
zyney to zoi spirit. & w<sup>th</sup>chir ver  
tues i zoi. wher of werkis of ye  
lawe or of heeris of bileue. as  
it is writu. abraham bileuede to  
god. & it was reitid to hi to ritzil  
nelle. & p<sup>r</sup>fore knowe ze p<sup>r</sup> res p<sup>r</sup>  
ben of bileue. ben ye sonnes of  
abraham. and ye scripture seyn  
ge after pat iustifie ye hevene.  
of bileue tolde to fore to abrahā.  
p<sup>r</sup> in p<sup>r</sup> alle ye hevene shulen be  
blessid. & p<sup>r</sup>fore res p<sup>r</sup> ben of bi  
leue. shulen be blessid w<sup>th</sup> fey  
ful abrahā. for alle p<sup>r</sup> ben of ye  
werkis of lawe. ben vnder curs  
for it is writu. ech mā is cursid  
pat abidit. / alle pigis p<sup>r</sup> ben w<sup>th</sup>  
tū in ye booke of ye lawe. to doro  
p<sup>r</sup>is. & pat no man is iustified  
in ye lawe bifoze god. it is op<sup>r</sup>.  
for arizful mā loney of bileue.  
but ye lawe is not of bileue. but  
he pat dory po pigis of ye lawe.  
shal lyue in he. but crist azenbon.  
te us fro ye curs of ye lawe.  
& was maad acursid for us. for it  
is writu. ech mā is cursid pat han  
gry in ye tree. / a mong ye he  
vene ye blessig of abraham. we  
re maad i crist ihū. p<sup>r</sup> we vnderfon  
ge ye biheeste of spirit. p<sup>r</sup> / bi  
leue. brypen / I seie after mā. no  
mā dispisly ye testament of mā  
pat is cōfermyd. or ordeyned a  
bone. ye biheestis were leid to  
abrahā. & to his seed he seip not  
in seedis as in manye. but as in  
oon. & to p<sup>r</sup> seed p<sup>r</sup> is crist. / But /  
seie p<sup>r</sup>is testament is cōfermyd

of god. ye lawe p<sup>r</sup> was maad afe  
fou. hūndid & p<sup>r</sup>it. ze. ne mā  
p<sup>r</sup> not ye testament. ze. to auoy  
drake ye biheest. for if eritage  
were of ye lawe. it were now of  
biheeste. but god graunte to a  
braham. p<sup>r</sup> / biheeste. what p<sup>r</sup>  
ne ye lawe. it was sett for trel  
passig. til to ye seed come to who  
he hadde maad biheeste. which la  
we was ordeyned bi angelis. in  
ye hond of a mediator. but a me  
diator. is not of oon. but god is  
oon. is p<sup>r</sup>ane ye lawe azen ye bi  
heestis of god. god forbode. for  
if ye lawe were zoi. p<sup>r</sup> myzte  
quyrene. / But ye ritzfulnes  
se of lawe. but scripture hap cō  
dudid alle pigis vnder syne. p<sup>r</sup>  
ye biheeste of ye fey of ihū crist.  
were zoi. to hem pat bileuen  
and to fore p<sup>r</sup> bileue cam. p<sup>r</sup> we  
re kept vnder ye lawe. enclodid  
into pat bileue p<sup>r</sup> was to be the  
wid. & so ye lawe was our. vnder  
maister in crist. p<sup>r</sup> we ben iustifi  
ed of bileue. but after p<sup>r</sup> bileue  
cam. we ben not now vnder ye  
vndermaister. for alle ze be ye  
childzen of god p<sup>r</sup> / ye bileue  
i ihū crist. for alle ze pat ben bap  
tised. ben droyd w<sup>th</sup> crist. p<sup>r</sup> is no  
ier<sup>s</sup> ne greek. no bonde mā. no  
fre mā. no male. no female. for  
alle ze ben oon i ihū crist. & if ze be  
oon i ihū crist. p<sup>r</sup>ane ze ben ye seed  
of abrahā. & eues bi biheeste.

**B**ut I seie as **C. m.**  
long tyme as ye er is a  
lyt child. he dyntly no  
pig fro a leuait. whane he is  
lord of alle pigis. but he is vnder  
feperis & tūours. into ye ty

me determined of ye fadir. So  
we whane we were lytle chil  
dre. we serueten vnder ye ele  
metis of ye world. but after p<sup>r</sup>  
ye fulfyllig of tyme cam. god  
seme his lone maad of a wōmā  
maad vnder ye lawe. p<sup>r</sup> he shulde  
azenbie he pat were vnder ye  
lawe. p<sup>r</sup> we shulde vnderfonge  
ye adopcion of sonnes. and for ze be  
goddis sonnes. god sente his spirit  
into zoi. heris. cōnge abba  
fadir. & so p<sup>r</sup> is not now a seruait  
but a lone. & if he is a lone. he is  
an eyr bi god. but p<sup>r</sup>ane ze vnto  
w<sup>th</sup>inge god. seruide to hem p<sup>r</sup>  
in p<sup>r</sup>nde weren not goddis. but  
now whane ze han knowe god.  
& ben knowu of god. how ben  
ze turned escloues to ye feble  
& nedry elementis. to ye whiche ze  
wolen est serue. / ze taken kepe  
to dayes & moneyis & tymes  
& zeeris. but / drede zoi. lest  
w<sup>th</sup>oute cause / I hane traueid  
amog zoi. / Se ze as p<sup>r</sup>. for / I am  
as ze. / brypen / I biseche zoi. ze ha  
hert me no pig. but ze knowe  
p<sup>r</sup> bi infirmyte of flesch. / I hane  
prechid to zoi now bifoze. & ze  
dispileden not ney forsoken zoi.  
teptacion in my flesch. but ze  
relleynede me as an angel of god.  
as crist ihū. wher p<sup>r</sup>ane is zoi.  
blethig. / for / I bere zoi w<sup>th</sup>uette.  
p<sup>r</sup> if it myzte hane be don. ze wol  
den hane put out zoi. p<sup>r</sup>zen. &  
hane zoi. hem to me. / am / p<sup>r</sup>ane  
maad an enemy to zoi. seyinge  
to zoi ye lope. / p<sup>r</sup> lone not zoi  
wel. but p<sup>r</sup> wolen exclude zoi. p<sup>r</sup>  
ze snaken hem. but lube ze ye  
good euermore in good. & not ool



Whiche I am present wip you my  
smale childe: whiche I ber est  
soones til pat est be fourmed i  
you: & I wolde now be at you: &  
change my voice: for I am con  
foudid amog you: seie to me ze  
p wolu be vndir ye laue: ze ha  
not redd ye laue: for it is wri  
til i habraham hadde two lones  
oon of a seruaut: & oon of a fre  
woman: but he p was of ye ser  
uaut: was born astir ye fleish  
but he p was of ye fre woma:  
bi a biheeste: ye whiche pigis  
be seid bi anopr: vnderstondig  
for rese ben two testamētis oon  
in ye hul of synay: geuēdige ito  
seruage: which is agat: for sy  
na is an hil p is marabie: which  
hil is ioyued to it: p is now ie  
rusalem: & seruey wip hir chil  
dren: but pat ierlm p is abone  
is fre: which is oure modur: for  
it is wri til: Be glad you barey:  
pat berit not: bryk out & crye:  
p bryngit fory no childe: for  
many lones ben of hnr: pat is  
left of hir holebonde: more pan  
of hnr pat hnr an holebonde: but  
bryen we ben lones of biheeste:  
astir Ianc: but now as pis pat  
was born astir ye fleish: pur bi  
ede hi p was astir ye spirit: so  
now: but what seiy ye scriptu  
calle out ye seruaut: & hnr lone  
for ye lone of ye seruaut shal  
not be eu: wip ye lone of ye fre  
wip: And so bryen we be not  
lones of ye seruaut: but of ye  
fre wip: bi which freedom est har  
maud us free: **C. v.**  
**S**onde ze p fore: & nyle  
ze est soones be holden i

ye rok of seruage: lo I poul seie  
to you: p if ze be circūcidid: est  
shal no rig profite to you: & I  
writuelle estloones: to ech mā p  
circūcidid hi self: p he is detour  
of al ye laue to be don: And ze ben  
vopdid alkei fro est: & ze p ben  
iustified i ye laue: ze han falli a  
wey fro grace: for we pur ze  
spirit of bileue: abiden ye hope  
of rig fulnesse: for in ihu est ney  
circūcidid is ony rig wozp ney  
ppucie: but ye bileue p wozdip  
bi charite: ze rimen wel: who let  
tude you p ze obeyeden not to tren  
ye: consente ze to no mā: for pis  
coucel is not of hi p hnr clepid  
you: altil soundou: apen p al  
ye gobet: I triste on you i oure  
lord: p ze shulde vnderstoude noo  
opr pig: & who p disturblip you:  
shal bere doom: who eue he be:  
& bryen i p pzeche it circūci  
on: what suffice I it persecuci  
on: pane ye standre of ye cross:  
is voidid: I wolde p rei were cuit  
akey p disturblen you: for bryen  
ze ben clepid into freedom: only  
zyne ze not freedom ito occasion  
of fleish: but bi charite of spi  
rit: serue ze to gode: for euey  
laue is fulfilled in o word: you  
shalt lone pi neyboze as pi self:  
& if ze byte & ete ech opr: & ze  
left ze be wastid ech fro opr: & I  
seie you i est: walke ze i spirit: &  
ze shule not parfourme ye deli  
ris of ye fleish: for ye fleish co  
nente a zen ye spirit: & ye spirit  
azen ye fleish: for pes ben aduer  
saries to gidre: p ze doen not alle  
pigis p ze wille: p if ze be led by  
spirit: ze be not vndir ye laue

ze ye werts of ye fleish ben opr  
whiche ben fornicaciō: vndēnel  
se: vndēstite: lecherie: seruile  
of false goddis: wyahetractis:  
emtees: stryngis: idignaciōs:  
wzappis: chidigis: dissencions: lec  
tis: enyes: mālancris: dūkenel  
his: vmesurable etyngis: & rigis  
ipk to rese: whiche I seie to you:  
as I hane toold you to fore: for rei  
pat doen luche pigis: shule not  
hane ye kydom of god: But ye  
frust of ye spirit: is charite: to  
ye pees: pacience: long abydyg:  
benygnte: goodnesse: mylonel  
se: fey: tēpance: contynēce: chal  
tite: azen suchē pigis is no laue:  
& rei p ben of est: han crucified  
her fleish wip vices & conetti  
gis: if ye lyngi by spirit: walke  
we by spirit: Se we mand not  
conetions of veyn glorie: stryge  
ech opr to wzappe: or hange en  
we ech to opr: **C. vi.**  
**B**ryen if aman be occupied  
in ony gilt: ze p ben spi  
ritual enfourme ze luche  
i spirit of softnesse: biholdige pi  
self: lest p you be tēptid: ech ber  
operis charges: & so ze shulen  
fulfille ye laue of est: for who  
p troye p he be out: whie he  
is nougt: he bigly hi self: but  
ech man proue his owne werk:  
& so he shal hane glorie in hym  
self: & not in anopr: for ech man  
shal ber his owne charge: he p  
is taryt by word: comyne he w  
hi pat techy hy in alle goodis:  
nyle ze erre: god is not storned  
for no pigis pat amā lowy: po  
pigis he shal reye: for he pat lo  
wip in his fleish: of ye fleish he

shal reye corrupciō: but he pat  
lowy ye spirit: of ye spirit he sh  
al reye enlastige lōf: & doynge  
good: faye we not: for i his ty  
me we shal reye not faytge:  
pfore while we han tyme: woz  
che we good to alle me: but moost  
to hem p ben homelich of ye  
seiy: & ze what man lettis  
I hane wryte to you: wip myn  
owne hond: for who eue wole  
plese ye fleish: pis cōstreyner  
you to be circūcidid: only: p rei  
suffre not ye psecucion of cris  
tis cross: for ney rei p be circū  
cidid: kēpen ye laue: but rei wo  
len p ze be circūcidid: p rei hane  
glorie i you: fleish: but fer be  
it fro me to hane glorie: but in  
ye cross of oure lord ihu est: bi who  
ye world is crucified to me: & I  
to ye world: for in ihu est: ney  
circūcidid is ony rig wozp: ne  
ppucie: but aneue creatur: &  
who eue sulben pis reule: pees  
on he & mercy: & on yrael of god:  
and herastir no mā be heiy to  
me: for I bere i my body: ye take  
nes of oure lord ihu est: ye grete of de lord ihu  
your spirit bryen amē: **Here est: be w**  
**endy re epistil to galathes: & bi**  
**gynce ye plog on ye pistle to effecies:**  
**A**phēcians ben of asie: rese  
whane rei hadden relēfyed  
ye word of treupe: abide stedfastli  
i ye seiy: ye possle prechp he: wri  
ge to he fro rome: out of ploi: bi ti  
tic: ye dekenē: **Jerō in his plog on**  
**pis pistle: seiy pis: C. p.**  
**D**ul ye apostle of ihu  
est bi ye wille of god:  
to alle seyntis p be  
at effecy: & to ye seiy



fulme in ihu crist. grace be to you  
e pees of god oure fadir. e our  
lord ihu crist. blestid be god e pe  
fadir of our lord ihu crist. e har  
blestid us i al spiritual blessing  
i heuely pigris in crist. as he har  
chose us in hi self. bifoze we ma  
ke of pe world. e we were ho  
ly e wynter wem i his hit i cha  
rite. which har bifoze ordey  
ned us ito adopcio of sones.  
by ihu crist into hy by pe purpos  
of his wille. into pe hering of  
pe glorie of his grace. i which he  
har glorified us in his derewor  
pe sone. i who we han redepci  
on bi his blood. foryfuessle of sy  
nes. after pe richellis of his g  
te e abondide greetly i us mal  
wyldom e prudece. to make kno  
we to us pe sacramet of his wil  
le. bi pe good pleasur of hy. pe  
which sacramet he purposide  
i hy. i pe dispelacio of plente  
of tymes. to enstoure alle pigris  
i crist. which ben i heuenes  
e which ben i erpe in hi. i who  
we be deyd bi soun. bifoze ordey  
ned by pe purpos of hy e worch  
alle pigris. bi pe conceit of his wil  
le. e we be into pe hering of hi  
glorie. we e han hapid bifoze i  
crist. i whom also ze were de  
pid. whane ze herde pe word of  
treupe pe gospel of zour heelp.  
i who ze belyue ben markid  
by pe hooly gost of biheste.  
which is pe eerness of our eri  
tage. into pe redepciou of pur  
challig into hering of his glo  
rie. **E**fter fore. i heerige zour  
fery pat is i crist ihu. e yeloue in  
to alle seyntis. ceesse not to do pa

trigis for you. makige myde of  
you i my preieris. e god of our  
lord ihu crist. pe fadir of glorie.  
yine to you pe spirit of wysdo  
e of reuelacio into pe knowyng  
of hym. e pe pzen of zour her  
lytred. e ze wite which is pe  
hope of his clepig. e which he  
pe richellis of pe glorie of his e  
ritage in seyntis. e which is pe  
excellent greetnesse of his ver  
tu ito us pat han beleuid bi pe  
worchig of remyxt of his etu  
which he wrought i crist. refige  
hi fro deye. e lettige hi on his hit  
half i heuely pigris. aboue ech  
pncipat e potestat e etu e do  
minacio. e aboue ech name. e  
is named. not conly i his world.  
but also in pe world to comyge.  
e made alle pigris liget vnder  
his feet. e ze hit to be heed on  
al pe churche. e is pe body of hy.  
e pe plente of hi which is alle  
pigris i alle pigris. **A**nd whne ze were a  
deed i zour gyltis e synes.  
i which ze wandre su  
tyme. after pe counel of his world.  
after pe pnce of pe power of pi  
er. of pe spirit e worch. not  
into pe lones of vnbilene in whiche  
alle we alle lueden su tyme  
in pe de lins of our fleish. do  
yunge pe willis of pe fleish e of  
pouertis. e we were by kynde pe lo  
nes of wraupe. as ope me hit  
god is ryche in mercy. for his  
ful moche charite in which he lo  
uede us. 3he whne we were deed  
in synes. quykende us to gide  
in crist. by whos grace ze ben laud  
e azenrethid to gide. e made to gi

die to lute in heuely pigris. i crist ihu  
e he schulde thewe in pe worldis  
aboue comyge. pe plenteuousse  
richellis of his grace in goodnes  
se on us i crist ihu. for bi grace ze  
ben laud by fery. e is not of  
for it is pe zifte of god. not of wer  
kis. e no man hane glorie. for  
we ben pe makig of hi. mand of  
noug in crist ihu i gode werkis.  
which god har ordey ned. e we  
go in pe werkis. for which pig be  
ze myde ful. e su tyme ze were  
hepe in fleish. which were  
deid pnce. fro pat e fsted cir  
cuacio. mand bi hond in fleish.  
e ze were in pat tyme wyoute  
crist. aliened fro pe luyng of tra  
el e geftis of testamētis. not ha  
uyge hope of biheste. e wyoute  
god in his world. but now i crist  
ihu. ze pat weren su tyme ferr.  
be maid myz i pe blood of crist. for  
he is our pees. e made bope oon.  
e vnbrydige pe myddel wal of  
a wal wyoute motter enemy  
tes in his fleish. e auoyde pe  
lawe of manemētis by domes.  
e he make tweyne i hi self ito  
o nerke mā. makige pees. to re  
concele bope in o body to god by  
pe cross. sleynge pe enemytees  
in hi self. e he comyge prechide  
pees to zour pat were ferr. e  
pees to he e were myz. for bi hy  
we bope han myz comyge. e in  
o spirit to pe fadir. pfoze now ze  
ben not gestis e strangeris. but  
ze ben citeleyns of seyntis. e hous  
hold meyne of god. aboue bildid  
on pe fudamēt of apostlis e of  
pftis. upon pat hyeste corner  
ston crist ihu. i whom ech bildig

mand. were into an hooly tem  
ple i pe lord in who also be ze bil  
did to gide into pe abytade of  
god in pe hooly gost. **E** m.  
**A**nd pe grace of his pig  
I poul pe bound of crist  
ihu for zour hepenme. if  
nepeles ze han han herd pe dis  
pensacio of goddis grace. e is  
zour to me in you. for by reuela  
cio. pe sacramet is maid kno  
wu to me. as i aboue wroot in  
short pig. as ze moun rede e on  
dirstonde my prudence. i pe unmal  
terie of crist. which was not kno  
wu to ope genacious to pe lones  
of me. as it is now thewid to his  
hooly apostlis. e pftis i pe spirit  
e hepe me ben euene eyis. of  
o body. e partenes to gide. of  
his biheste i crist ihu bi pe euigeli  
whos mynstre i am maid bi pe  
zifte of goddis grace. which is  
zour to me bi pe worchig of his  
vertu. to me leest of alle seyntis.  
his grace is zour to preche amog  
hepen me. pe vnserchable richel  
lis of crist. e to lize alle me which  
is pe dispelacio of sacramēt. hid  
fro worldis i god. e made alle pigris  
of nouzt. e pe moche fold wysdo  
of god be knouwu to pnces e po  
testatis i heuely pigris. by pe chr  
che. by pe bifoze ordinaunce of woul  
dis. which he made i crist ihu on  
re lord. i who we han trust. e myz  
comyge. i trustemig by pe fery of  
hi for which pig i ope. e ze fable  
not i my ebulacio. for zour which  
is zour glorie. for grace of his  
pig. i bove my knees to pe fadir  
of our lord ihu crist. of who ech fa  
dirheed in heuenes e i erpe is







pei her wyues: as her owne bodi  
es/ he pat louep his wyf: louep hi  
self/ for no man hatide ene his ow  
ne fleish: but nouthir & forp  
it. as cit doir pe church/ & we be  
membres of his body: of his fleish  
& of his boons/ for pis pig: anna  
shal forsake his fadir & his mo  
dur: & he shal draue to his wyf.  
& pei shule be tweyne in o fleish  
pis sacramet is greet/ she/ I leue  
in cit & in pe church/ nepeles ze  
alle. ech ma loue his wyf as hyin  
self/ & pe wyf: drede hir holeboie.  
**S**ones obeunte. **C. viii.**  
ze to zour fadir & modur.  
i pe lord/ for pis pig: is  
ristful/ honoure you pi fadir  
& modur/ p is pe firste maidermet  
i biheste. v it be wel to pee. & p  
you belong/ luyge ou erpe pe  
and fadris npleze terre zour so  
nce to wrappe. but nouthir ze  
he in teching & chastig of pe lord.  
**S**eruantis obeunte ze to fleis  
chly lordis/ wrydrede & tremblig.  
in symplenesse of zour herte as  
to crist/ not seruynge at pe yze as  
pleynge to me: but as seruau  
tis of crist/ doynge pe wille of  
god bi distreccion wry good wille.  
seruynge as to pe lord. & not as  
to me/ wryte p ech ma. what  
ene good pig: he shal do. he sh  
al resseyne pis of pe lord. wher  
seruant wherir fre ma/ & ze lor  
dis do pe same pigis to he: for  
zynge manafis. wryte p bove  
her lord & zour is in heuenes. &  
pe takig of persons is not a  
nemis god/ herafter ward bry  
en be ze confortid in pe lord. &  
in pe mygt of his vertu clove

zou wry pe armet of god. p  
ze moir stonde azen aspyngis  
of pe deuyl/ for wry aspyngis  
is not to us azen fleish & blood.  
but azen pe pnces & pote stas.  
azens goimomis of pe world of  
resderfneiss/ azen spymal pi  
gis of wickidnesse in heuely pin  
gis/ p fore take ze pe arm of god.  
ze moir azen stonde in pe puel day.  
in alle pigis stonde par fyt/ p  
fore stonde ze & be gnd aboute zour  
re leendis in soytastnesse. & doyd  
wry pe haburion of ruyr pines  
se. & zour feet shod in makig re  
dy of pe gospel of pees/ alle pigis  
take ze pe sheld of fery. i which  
ze moir quenche alle pe fyi dar  
tis of pe wryte/ & take ze pe helm  
of heelp. & ze swerd of pe goost.  
p is pe word of god/ bi al pier  
& bisechig. preie ze al tyme/ sp  
rit. & in hy wakige in al bismes  
se & bisechig for alle hoohy men  
& for me/ p word be zour to me  
i openig of my moir. wry trust  
to make knowu pe multie of pe  
gospel for which I am set i mel  
lage in a chayne/ so p m it/ be  
hardy to speke. as it bihouep  
me & ze wite. what pigis ben  
about me. what I do. tuncus  
my moost dere broy. & trewe  
mynstre i pe lord. shal make  
alle pigis knowu to zour/ who  
I sente to zour for pis same pig.  
ze knowe what pigis be abou  
te us. & p he confortte zour hertis  
pees to bryen. & charite w fery  
of god oure fadir. & of pe lord ihu  
crist/ gte wry alle me. p louen  
ou lord ihu crist i ruyr pines.  
amen p is so be it. **Here eu**

**D**ip pe pistle to effectes. & bigy  
ner pe plog on pe pistle to filip  
philippis ben of **enlis**  
macedonye/ pes whane  
pei hadde resseyued pe word  
of treupe. stoden stede fastly in  
pe fery. & pei resseyued not fal  
se aposthis/ pe apostle preihp  
pes. wryte to he fro rome  
out of pson bi epafrodite. **Je**  
**ro in his plog on pis pistle fery**  
**vis. i. c. p. ii. a.**  
**D**ul & symothe seruau  
tis of ihu crist. to alle  
pe hoohy me in cit ihu  
y ben at filippis. wry bishopis &  
defenes. grace & pees to zour of  
god oure fadir. & of pe lord ihu  
crist. I do pauligis to my god in  
al mynde of zour einmore i alle my  
preieris for alle zour wry ioye. &  
make a bisechig on zoure comy  
nyg i pe gospel of crist fro pe  
firste day til now/ trustenig  
pis ilke pig. p he y bigan i zour  
a good werk. shal parfourme  
it til into pe day of ihu crist/ as  
it is mit to me. to feele pis ping  
for alle zour/ for p I haue zour in  
herte & in my boondis. & in de  
fendig & confermyg of pe gol  
pel. p alle ze be felowis of my  
ioye/ for god is a wrynele to me.  
hois/ I conente alle zour. in pe bo  
ndis of ihu crist/ & pis pig. I preie.  
p zour charite be plenteuous mo  
re & more in kyming & in al wat  
p ze preue pe bettre pigis. pat  
ze be clene & wyoute offence in  
pe day of cit/ filid wry pe frunt  
of ruyr pines bi ihu crist. into  
pe glorie & pe hermyng of god for  
bryere/ I wole p ze wite. p pe

pisig y ben aboute me. han comi  
more to pe pte of pe gospel/ so  
p my boondis were mand knowu  
mit. in ech moot halle & in al  
le ope placis/ p mo of bryen trul  
tyng in pe lord more plenteuous  
ly for my boondis. durken wry  
oute drede speke pe word of god  
but sume for ewe & fery. I  
me for good wille prechen cit/ &  
sume of charite. wryte p I a  
putt in pe defence of pe gospel  
but sume of fery shewen cit.  
not clerly. gethige he to reise tri  
bulacion to my boondis/ but wry  
pe while on al maner ep by oca  
sion ep by treupe. cit is shewid.  
& in pis pig. I haue ioye. but also  
I shal haue ioye. & I wote p pis  
ping. shal come to me into heelp.  
by zour preier & p andir my  
mistrig of pe spirit of ihu crist. by  
my abydig & hope/ for in no pig  
I shal be shamed. but i al trust  
as einmore & now. cit shal be  
magnified i my body. ep bi hif.  
ep bi depe/ for me to lyne is cit.  
& to dye is wryng. p it to lyne  
in fleish. is frunt of werk to  
me. lo what I shal chese/ I kno  
we not/ but I am cofreyned of  
trey pigis. I haue desir to be  
dissolued. & to be wry cit/ it is mo  
che more bette/ but to diueller in  
fleish. is nedful for zour. & I trul  
tyng pis pig. wote p I shal  
diueller. & par fytly diueller to alle  
zour/ to zour profit & ioye of fery.  
p zour pauligis aboute i cit ihu  
i me. bi my comyng estlone to  
zour/ only lyne ze wryly to pe  
gospel of cit. p wher whane  
I come & se zour ep absent.



I heere of you þe stonde in o  
spirit. of o wille. travelige to  
gidre to þe fere of þe gospel. &  
in no þing be þe afere of aduer  
saries. which is to þe cause of  
perdition. but to you cause of  
heelp. & þis þing is of god. for  
it is you. for crist. & not onli  
þe bileve in þe. but also þe  
suffre for him. haue þe sa  
me strif. which þe lare in me.  
& now þe han herd of me. **C. ij.**

**V**is in crist. if ony confort  
is in crist. if ony solace of  
charite. if ony felouschip  
of spirit. if ony iustardnes  
se of mercy doyng. fille þe my  
iope. þe vnderstonde þe same  
þing. & haue þe same charite.  
of o wille. & feele þe same þing.  
no þing bi strif. ne þing bi veyn  
glorie. but i mekenesse. demyge  
ech oþer to be lyzer. & hi self. not  
biholdige ech þing bi hi self. whi  
þis ben his owne. but þo þis  
þe ben of oþer. me & feele þe þis  
þing in you. which also in crist ihu.  
þe whi he was in þe fourme of  
god. demyde not raneyn. þe hi  
self were enene to god. but he  
lowde hi self. take þe fourme  
of a seruait. & was maad to þe  
liknesse of me. & in abytt was  
foudu as a ma. he meke hi self.  
& was maad obedient to þe depe.  
þe to þe depe of þe croll. for whi  
ch þis god enhaile hi. & þe to  
hi aname. þe is aboue al name. &  
in þe name of ihu. ech knee be  
bowid. of heuely þis of erpely  
þis. & of helis. & ech tinge kno  
wleche. þe þe lord ihu crist is i þe  
glorie of god þe fadir. **Trer**

fore my mooste dereworþe ben  
þen as enmore þe han oberthid  
not i my þense onli. but mo  
che more now i my absente. for  
che þe wy drede & tremlyng. you  
re heelp. for it is god. & worch  
in you hope to wille. & to þe  
me for good wille. & do þe alle þin  
gis. wipoute graciþis & deu  
tiris. & þe be wipoute playnt.  
& esple as þe sones of god. wip  
oute reff. & þe myddil of all þe  
wid nation. & a keyward. among  
whiche þe sthyne as znyeris  
of lyt. in þe world. & holde þe to  
gidre þe word of lyt to my glorie  
i þe day of crist. for i haue not ri  
ne in veyn. ne i haue tranelid  
i veyn. but þou. i be oftrid. & elay  
on þe sacryfice. & enple of you  
fere. i haue iope. & i þanke you  
alle. & þe same þis haue þe iope.  
& þanke þe me. & i hope in þe  
lord ihu. þe þe i thel. & de  
chymothe looue to you. þe i  
be of good confort. whi þo  
þingis ben knowen. þe ben abou  
te you. for i haue no ma so of  
o wille. & is blyþ for you. wip de  
ne affection. for alle me seken  
þo þis þe ben her owne. not  
þo þe ben of crist ihu. but knowe  
þe þe assay of þe. for as a lone  
to þe fadir. he þe serued. wip  
me i þe gospel. þe fore i hope  
þe i thel. sende hi to you. and as  
i se what þis ben aboute me.  
& i truste in þe lord. & also my  
self. thel come to you soone. &  
i geside it nedeful. to sende to  
you epafrodite my broþer. & ene  
ne worcher. & my enene knyzt.  
but þou. apostle. & þe minister

of my nece. for he desyre you  
alle. & he was lozenful. þe fore  
þe herden. & he was lyk. for he  
was lyk to þe depe. but god had  
de mercy on hi. & not onli on  
hi. but also on me. lest i hadde  
heynesse on heynesse. & fore  
more hastely i sente hi. & wip  
ne þe han seyn hi. & haue iope  
est. & i be wipoute heynesse.  
þe fore reslepe. & hi wip al iope  
in þe lord. & haue þe suche wir  
al hono. for þe werk of crist. he  
wente to depe. & wipge his lyt.  
þe he thel. fulfille. & þe þe  
lde of you. and as my seruait.

**H**me forþward. **C. iij.**  
my bryden haue þe iope  
i þe lord. to wente to you. þe  
same þis. to me it is not slow.  
& to you it is necessary. & þe þe  
dis. & þe þe werk. & þe þe  
in þe lord. for we ben circucum  
whiche by spirit. serue to god. &  
glorien in crist ihu. & han not  
trist in þe fleit. þe i haue  
trist. & in þe fleit. & ony oþ  
ma is seyn to trist in fleit. &  
more. & was circucumid in þe  
erpe day. of þe kyn of israel.  
of þe lynage of beniamyn. an e  
bren of eby. & eby. bi þe la  
we. a farise. bi þe lawe. & wipge  
þe church of god. by rist. whi  
se þe in þe lawe. wipge wip  
oute playnt. but whiche þis  
weren to me. wipnyngis. i haue  
demid þe. apenrigis. for crist. **¶**  
þe þe. i selle alle þis to be  
þe. for þe deere. thence of  
ihu crist. my lord. for whom i ma  
alle þis. þe. & i deme as  
drit. & i wipne crist. & þe þe

in hi. not haue my rist. whi  
nelle. & is of þe lawe. but þe  
is of þe fere of crist ihu. & is of  
god. þe rist. & nelle. i fere. to kno  
we. & þe. & þe. of his rist. &  
& þe. & þe. of his passion. &  
to be maad. hi. to his depe. & on  
ony man. i come to þe. & rist. &  
crist. & is. fro depe. not. & not. i  
haue tak. or. now. am. þe. &  
but. i. & in. in. ony. man. i. co  
prehende. in. whiche. þis. also. i. am  
comprehend. of. crist. ihu. & þe  
i. deme. me. not. & i. haue. co. prehe  
did. but. o. þis. & fore. þe. þo. þis  
þe. ben. bi. þis. & stre. the. for. þe  
my. self. to. þo. þis. & þe. bi. fore  
& þe. to. þe. orde. þe. meete  
of. þe. þis. cle. þis. of. god. in. crist. ihu.  
þe. fore. who. ene. we. ben. þe. &  
feele. we. þis. þis. & if. þe. vnder  
stonden. in. ope. man. ony. þis. þis  
þis. god. thel. the. to. you. ne. þe  
les. to. what. þis. we. han. com. &  
þe. we. vnder. stonde. þe. same. þis.  
& þe. we. þe. the. & þe. same  
reule. & þe. be. þe. my. folo  
weris. & wipge. & þe. þe. wipge  
so. as. þe. han. ome. four. me. for  
man. wipge. whiche. i. haue. se  
of. to. you. & þe. now. i. wipge  
se. þe. enemes. of. crist. croll.  
whos. ende. is. depe. whos. god. is  
þe. wipge. & þe. glorie. i. confu  
oil. of. he. & þe. sam. er. þis  
but. our. þis. is. in. he. fro  
whi. also. we. abyden. þe. sam  
our. our. lord. ihu. crist. whi. thel  
re. þe. body. of. our. me. &  
se. & is. maad. hi. to. þe. body. of. his  
cler. bi. þe. wipge. bi. whi  
ich. he. may. also. make. alle. þis  
saget. to. him. **C. iij. ¶**



**V**erfore my bryden moost  
dereworpe & moost desirid.  
my ioye & my croune. so  
stonde ze i pe lord moost der  
bryden. I preie encodiam. & bi  
seche synceun. to vnderstonde pe  
same pig in pe lord. also I preie  
I pee germa felowe. helpe p ve  
ilke wyman y trauelid wy me  
in pe gospel wy demet & ope  
my helperis. whos names be  
i pe book of lyf. Ioye ze i pe lord  
enemore. est I seie ioye ze. be  
zoure pacience knowu to alle  
me. pe lord is my be ze no yng  
bly. but i al preier & bileding w  
doynge of pankyng. be zoure ar  
yngis knowu at god & pe pees  
of god y passy al wytt. kepe  
zour hertis & vnderstonde igit  
crist ihu. fro heims fory bryden.  
whit ene pigis ben soye. what  
ene pigis chaf. whit ene pigis  
mst. whit ene pigis hooly. what  
ene pigis able to be loued. whit  
ene pigis of good fame. if ony  
vtn. if ony preihs of disciplyne.  
pe ke ze pes pigis. y also ze han  
lernd & take & herd & seyn i me.  
do ze pes pigis. & god of pees sh  
al be wy zou. but I ioyete greet  
ly i pe lord. y on tyme asen ward  
ze flouride asen to feele for me.  
as also ze feelid. but ze were ocu  
pied. I seye not as for nede. for  
I haue lernd to be sufficient. in  
whiche pigis I am. & I can also  
be lowid. I can also haue plente  
enwhere & in alle pigis. I am  
taugt. to be fillid & to hugre.  
& to aboude & to suffre miseste.  
I may alle pigis. in hy y confort  
ty me. nepeles ze han doon wel.

comynge to my tribulaciou for  
also ze filipensis wite. y in pe bi  
synys of pe gospel. whiche I we  
te fory fro macedonie. no chre  
che comynede wy me i resoi  
of pig zom & taku. but ze al  
oone. whiche senten to tessalo  
nyk. comys & ryves also into  
vll to me. not for I seke riste.  
but I requyre fruyt abouidige  
i zom. resoi. for I haue alle pi  
gis. & aboude. I am fillid wy  
po pigis taku of epafrodite. wh  
che ze sente into pe odour of sy  
etnelle a couenable sacrifice ple  
lige to god. & my god fill all zou  
re desir bi hile richellis i glorie  
i crist ihu. but to god I our fadir.  
be glorie no worldis of worldis  
ame. Greete ze wel eny hooly  
ma in crist ihu. po bryden y be n  
me greeten zou wel. alle hooly me  
greete zou wel. moost soyei pe  
y ben of pe empouris hois. pe  
gite of our lord ihu. & be wy zou  
re lprtt ame. **Here endy pe  
pistle to filipensis. & bigynner pe  
plog on pe pistle to colocenlis.**  
**C**olocenlis ben also laodice  
lis. pes ben of alie. & pe had  
de be disseyned by false apofthys  
pe possle h. silt cam not  
to he. but. ze he dryngy he aze  
to correxiou by epistle. for pe  
hadde herd pe word of archyp.  
pat hadde vnderfonge pe my  
msterie ito he. y fore pe apofthle  
not boundu wroot to he. & effelie.  
bi titic pe deken & onosym pe a  
colyt. **Her i his plog  
on vis pistle seip vis  
Dul apofthle. & p  
of crist ihu. bi pe wille**

of god. & tymothe brop. to he  
y ben at colose. hooly & fawful  
bryden i crist ihu. gte & pees to  
zou of god our fadir. & of pe lord  
ihu. & we don pankyng to god  
& to pe fadir of our lord ihu. & t.  
eumore preyinge for zou. hee  
rige zoure fery i crist ihu. & pe lo  
ue y ze han to alle hooly me. for  
pe hope y is kept to zou. I heue  
nes. whiche ze herde in pe word  
of tremp of pe gospel y cam to  
zou. as also it is in al pe world.  
& maky fruyt & wery as in  
zou fro pat day. i whiche ze her  
den & luewe pe gte of god i treu  
pe. as ze lerne of epaftras our  
felawe moost dereworpe. whiche  
is a trewe ministr of ihu. & t. for  
zou. whiche also thewde to us. zou  
re longy in lprtt. y fore we fro  
pe day i whiche we herden. ceulle  
not to preie for zou. & to are. y  
ze be fillid wy pe knowig of his  
wille. in al wysdom & goostly. on  
durstondig. y ze walke worpily to  
god plehyng by alle pigis. & ma  
ke fruyt in al good werk. & were  
in pe stience of god. & ben confort  
tid in al vertu bi pe mygt of his  
derenesse. i al pacience & long  
abiding wy ioye. y ze don panky  
ng to god & to pe fadir. whiche  
made zou worpi into pe part of  
eritage of hooly me in lprtt. whiche  
deliuerde us fro pe power of derk  
nessis. & cullatid into pe ligo  
of pe sone of his lonyg. in whom  
we han asenbyng. & remission  
of synes. whiche is pe ymage of  
god vnsible. pe firtte bigeti  
of ech creatur. for i hy alle pigis  
ben maad. in heuenes & in erpe.

visible & vnsible. ep trones ep  
duacions. ep pncehodis ep pors  
cris. alle pigis ben maad of nougt  
by hy & in hy m. & he is bfore al  
le. & alle pigis ben in hy. & he is  
heed of pe body of pe churche. wh  
ich is pe bigynnyng. & pe firtte  
bigeti of deed me. y he holde pe  
firtte dignyte in alle pigis. for  
i hy it pleide al plente to inhabi  
te. & bi hy alle pigis to be recon  
celid into hy. & made pees by pe  
blood of his cross. po pigis pat  
ben i erpis. ep y ben in heue  
ms. & whiche ze were su tyme  
ahemyd & enemys bi witt i y  
uele werkis. now he hay recon  
selid zou i pe body of his fleish  
bi deyr. to haue zou hooly & vwe  
myd. & wyppente reprof bfore  
hy. if nepeles ze diuella in pe  
fery. foundid & stable. & vnuouable  
fro pe hope of pe gospel y ze han  
herd. whiche is prechid in al crea  
tur. y is vnder heuene. of whiche  
I pouil am maad mymist. & now  
I haue ioye i passion for zou. & I  
fille po pigis y faulen of pe pas  
sious of crist i my fleish. for his  
body y is pe churche. of whiche I  
pouil am maad mymist. bi pe dis  
pensacion of god y is zom to me  
i zou. y I fille pe word of god. pe  
pynpte y was hid fro worldis  
& genacions. but now it is sthe  
wid to his seyntis. to whiche  
god wold make knowu pe ry  
chellis of pe glorie. of his sacra  
met in hepene me. whiche is  
crist in zou. pe hope of glorie. who  
we stheben. reprenye ech ma.  
& techyge ech ma in al wysdom.  
y we offre ech ma partyt i crist







to 3on þu ben aboute me / whom  
sente to 3on to þis same þing / þe  
he knowe what þingis ben abou  
te 3on. & conforte 3on / hertis  
wip one þyme moost dere & fery  
ful bropir. which is of 3on / whi  
che schil make alle þingis þe  
don here. knowe to 3on / schil  
tark þloner wip me. greetip  
3on wel / & mark þe colun of þan  
nabas: of who þe han take man  
dementis / if he come to 3on: rel  
seyue þe hy / and ihu þe is leid mit.  
whiche ben of circucision þe al  
oone ben my helpiris in þe kyg  
dom of god. þe were to me in solace  
& paftras þe is of 3on þe seruant  
of ihu crist. greetip 3on wel / eue  
bily for 3on i þieris. þe stonde  
par fyt & ful mal þe wille of god  
and þe were witnessig to hy: þe  
hay moche trauel for 3on / and for  
he þe ben at laodice: & þe ben at  
jerapoly / þe leche moost  
dere & demas. greetip 3on wel  
Greete þe wel þe bryfen: þe ben  
at laodice / & þe woman nymfam:  
& þe churche þat is in þe hous  
& whane þis pistle is rad amog  
3on: do þe þe be rad i þe churche  
of laodice. & rede þe þat pist  
le þe is of laodice. & se þe to  
archippus. Se þe mynistris þat  
þe hast tak i in þe lord. þe þe felle it  
my salutacion. bi þe hond of  
poul. be þe mynistris of my bondis  
þe grace of þe lord ihu be w 3on  
anne. **¶ Here endip þe pistle to  
colocenlis: & bigyne þe plog  
þe firste pistle to tessalonicis**  
**T**essalonicis ben / lis  
macedonies: in ihu crist / whi  
ane þe hadde resseyued þe word

of trewe: þe stode i þe fastis  
in þe fery / & also i þe circucion of  
her owne citeis / for þe mo  
ze þe resseyued not falle a  
pistlis: ne þe þingis þe weren  
leid of falle apostlis / þe se þe  
pistlis þe schil: wryte to hem  
from athenis bi titicus & onesy  
mus. **¶ Jerom in his plog on  
his pistle seip þis: C. p.**  
**D**ul & schil i þe tyme  
che to þe churche of tes  
salonicis: in god þe  
fadir & in þe lord ihu  
crist: grace & pees to 3on / we do  
þankigis to god eimore for al  
le 3on. & we make mynde of 3on  
in our prieris wipoute ceessig  
hanyge mynde of þe werk of 3o  
ure fery & trauel & charite & a  
bpydng of þe hope of our lord ihu  
crist bifore god & our fadir / & þe  
lord bryere of god: we wryte  
ge 3on þe churche / for our gospel  
was not at 3on i word only: but  
also in wryt i in þe hooky goost &  
in moche plente: as þe wryten:  
whiche we were amog 3on for  
3on / & þe ben maad folowiris of  
us & of þe lord: resseyuynge þe  
word i moche tribulacion wip  
ioye of þe hooky goost / so þe  
ben maad ensample to alle men  
þe bilye: i macedonie & in achye  
for of 3on þe word of þe lord is  
þurplishid: not only i macedo  
nye & achye / but 3on fery þat  
is to god: in ech place is gon for  
so þe it is not nede to us for to  
speke ony þing / for þe schil we  
of 3on: what maner entre we  
hadde to 3on / & þe be comitid  
to god fro manymetis: to serue

to þe lunge god & very: & to  
abyde his sone fro heuenes.  
whom he reside fro depe: þe  
lord ihu þe schil us fro wryt  
re to comynge. **¶ C. p.**  
**H**er bryere & wryte om  
entre to 3on: for it was  
not veyn / but first we  
suffrede & were þurplishid wip  
þingis as þe wryte in filippis: &  
hadde trist in our lord: to speke  
to 3on þe gospel of god in moche  
bilye: & our exortacion: is  
not of errour: ne þe of vclenel  
se: ne þe in gyle / but as we ben þe  
mynde of god. þe þe gospel of god  
schil be tak i to us: so we spe  
ken / not as pleige to me: but  
to god þe þe þe our hertis / for  
ne þe were ony tyme i word  
of glofing: as þe wryte / ne þe in  
oacion of auarice: god is wit  
nesse / ne þe sekyge gloie of me:  
ne þe of 3on ne þe of oyr / whane  
we as cristis apostlis wryten  
hane be in charge to 3on / but we  
were maad lytle in þe myddel of  
3on as if a murle fofre þe lo  
nes / so we desirge 3on wip gre  
et loue: wold hane brake to 3on  
not only þe gospel of god / but  
also our lynes: for þe ben maad  
moost dere wryte to us / for  
þe ben þe mynde ful of oure  
truel & wryne: we wrych  
de myt & day. þe we schil not  
greue ony of 3on & þe chide to  
3on þe euageli of god / god & þe  
ben witnessis: how hooky & mit  
ly: & wipoute playnt we were  
to 3on þat bilye: as þe wryten.  
how we þe 3on & confortid  
ech of 3on as þe fadir: his sones:

& we han witnessid / þe schil  
go wryp to god: þat depe 3on  
into his kyngdom & gloie / þe  
we don þankigis to god: wipou  
te ceessig / for whane þe hadden  
take of us þe word of þe heerig  
of god: þe taken it not as þe word  
of men / but as it is wryte þe word  
of god: þe wrych i 3on þe han bi  
lied / for bryen þe ben maad fo  
lowiris of þe churche of god þe  
in iudee i crist ihu / for þe han suf  
fride þe same þingis of 3on: euene  
lynagis: as þe of þe ielwis / whi  
che slouen bore þe lord ihu & þe  
þe fery: & þe schil be us / & þe  
þe ben adu  
saries to alle me / for þe þe us  
to speke to hevene me: þe þe be  
maad sark / þe þe felle her lynes  
eimore for þe wryte of god ca  
on he: into þe ende / & bryere we  
desolat fro 3on for a tyme þe mo  
ny: & in biholdig / but not in her  
te: han lized more plenteuous  
ly to se 3on: face wip greet desir  
for we wold come to 3on / the  
þe poul oony & efloone: but sa  
thanas lettide us for whi what  
is our hope: or ioye or coroune  
of gloie: wher þe ben not bifore  
our lord ihu crist: in his comynge:  
for þe ben our gloie & ioye. **¶ C. p.**  
**H**er which þing we suffrede  
no lengere: & it pleide  
to us to diuella aloone at  
ztemys / and we sente tymothe  
our brop: & mynistris of god in  
þe euageli of crist: to 3on to be  
cofermyd / & to be taryt for our  
fery: þe no ma be moued in þe  
tribulacionis / for þe schil wryte: þe  
in þis þing we ben sette / for whane



we were at ion: we bifore leide  
to ion p<sup>r</sup> we shulde suffre tri  
bulaciounis / as it is don: & ze w  
ten p<sup>r</sup>fore / poult no legere a  
bidige: sente to knowe zoure  
feyr / lest p<sup>r</sup>anetun he p<sup>r</sup>cepty  
tepte ion: & zour cranel be  
maad veyn / but now whie th  
mothe shal come to us fro  
te telle to ion zour fey & chari  
te / & p<sup>r</sup> ze han good mynde of  
us: enev desirige to se us. as  
we also ion / p<sup>r</sup>fore bryen we be  
confortid in ion i al our nede  
i tribulacioun: bizoni fey for  
now we lyne: if ze stonde in pe  
lord / for what doyng of p<sup>r</sup>anki  
gis moyn we zelde to god for  
ion: in al ioye: i which we ioye  
for ion: bifore oure lord: nyzt  
i day more plenteuouly prei  
ge: p<sup>r</sup> we se ion face: & fulfil  
le po pigis p<sup>r</sup> faylen to ion fey  
but god hi self & our fadur & pe  
lord ihu crist: dreffe our weye to  
ion / & pe lord multiplie ion: &  
make ion charite to be plen  
teuous of ech to ovr & into alle  
me: as also we in ion / p<sup>r</sup> zoure  
hertis ben conseruyd. wyon  
te pleynt in hoolynesle bifore  
god & our fadur: i pe comyng of  
our lord ihu crist wy alle hyle  
leyntis amē. **Thess.**  
**V**rfore bryen fro he  
ne forwarde we pien ion:  
& bilerchen i pe lord ihu / p<sup>r</sup>  
as ze han resleyued of us:  
how it bihoney ion to go & to  
plese god: so walke ze p<sup>r</sup> ze a  
bonide pe more / for ze wite wht  
comandemetis / hane zour  
to ion: by pe lord ihu / for pis

is pe wille of god: zoure  
hoolynesle. p<sup>r</sup> ze abdeye ion  
eco forwacou / p<sup>r</sup> ech of ion  
kune welde his vessel: in hoo  
lynelle & hono / not i passiou  
of lust: as hepen me p<sup>r</sup> knowe  
not god / & p<sup>r</sup> no ma on go: ney  
disleyue his brop in chastite  
for pe lord is venger of alle pe  
p<sup>r</sup>igis: as we bifore leide to ion:  
& han witneslid for god clepde  
not us to vudenesle: but to  
hoolynesle / p<sup>r</sup>fore he p<sup>r</sup> dispisy  
pes pigis: dispisy not ma: but  
god p<sup>r</sup> also: zat his hooly spyt  
i us. **But** of pe charite of ben  
p<sup>r</sup>heed: we hadde no nede to wri  
te to ion / ze self han leuid of god:  
p<sup>r</sup> ze loue to gidre / for ze doe pat  
into alle bryen i al macedome  
& bryen we preyen ion: p<sup>r</sup> ze a  
bonide more / & take kepe: p<sup>r</sup> ze  
be quyet: & p<sup>r</sup> ze do zoure nede:  
ze worche wy zoure hondis: as  
we han comandid to ion: & p<sup>r</sup>  
ze wandre honestly to he pat  
ben wyonnesoy: & p<sup>r</sup> of no ma  
nes ze desir our pig / for bryen  
we wolen not p<sup>r</sup> zernknowe:  
of me p<sup>r</sup> dpen: p<sup>r</sup> ze ben not loz  
ful as ope p<sup>r</sup> han not hope: for  
if we bilerchen p<sup>r</sup> ihu was deod  
& roos azen: so god shal lede  
wy hi hem p<sup>r</sup> ben deede bi ihu  
& we seien pis pig to ion: i pe  
word of pe lord / p<sup>r</sup> we pat lyne  
p<sup>r</sup> ben lest in pe comyng of pe lord  
shule not come bifore hem pat  
ben deede / for pe lord hi self shal  
come down fro heuene: i pe  
comandemet & in pe vois of  
an archangel: & in pe tripe of  
god / & pe deede me p<sup>r</sup> ben i crist:

shule ryle azen first / afenward  
we p<sup>r</sup> lyne p<sup>r</sup> ben lest: shule  
be ranyshid to gidre wy hem  
in clowdis: meetige eit into pe  
eyr / & so eimore we shule be  
wy pe lord / p<sup>r</sup>fore be ze confort  
tid to gidre: i pes wordis. **Thess.**  
**B**ryen of ty  
mes & monietis: ze nede  
not p<sup>r</sup> i wite to ion / for  
ze self witen diligently: p<sup>r</sup> pe  
day of pe lord shal come as a  
peef in pe nyzt / for whane pe  
shule sepe pees is & siknes  
se: p<sup>r</sup>ane liden deap shal come  
on hem as sorwe to a woman  
p<sup>r</sup>is wy childe: & pei shule not  
stape / but bryen ze ben not i  
derkeness: p<sup>r</sup> ze ilke day as a  
peef caache ion / for alle ze ben  
pe lones of lyzt: & lones of day  
we be: not of nyzt: ney of derk  
nessis / p<sup>r</sup>fore slepe we not as  
ope: but wake we & be we so  
bze / for pei pat slepen: slepe  
in pe nyzt / & pei p<sup>r</sup> ben deid i  
ben deid i in pe nyzt / but we  
p<sup>r</sup> ben of pe day: ben sobze / do  
yd in pe habyrion of fey &  
of charite: & in pe helm of ho  
pe of helpe / for god putide not  
us into wraupe / but to pe p<sup>r</sup>  
challig of heeche by our lord  
ihu crist: p<sup>r</sup> was deod for us / pat  
whet we waken: whet we sle  
pen: we lyne to gidre wy hi  
for which pig confort ze to gi  
dre: & edetie ze ech ovr: as ze  
don & bryen we preyen ion:  
p<sup>r</sup> ze knowe hem pat triale  
amog ion / & ben loniepis to  
ion in pe lord: & techen ion: p<sup>r</sup>  
ze hane hem abondantly i cha

rite: & for pe werk of hem: ha  
ne ze pees wy he & bryen we  
preyen ion: reprene ze wy pe  
hoble me: confort ze me of lytle  
herte: resleyue ze syke me: be  
ze pacient to alle me / se ze pat  
no ma zelde puel for puel to ovr  
ma: but eimore shulke ze p<sup>r</sup> p<sup>r</sup> is  
good ech to ovr & to alle me: en  
more ioye ze: wyonite ceelstig  
preie ze: in alle pigis do ze pan  
p<sup>r</sup>igis / for pis is pe wille of god  
in crist ihu: in alle ion / nyle ze  
quench pe spirit: nyle ze dis  
pile p<sup>r</sup>ecies / but prene ze alle  
p<sup>r</sup>igis / & holde ze pat ping p<sup>r</sup> is  
good: abdeye ion fro al puel  
spice: & god hi self of pees ma  
ke ion hooly bi alle pigis: pat  
ion spyt be kept hool: & sou  
le & body wyonite playnt i pe  
comyng of oure lord ihu crist: god  
is trewe p<sup>r</sup> clepde ion: which  
also shal do bryen: preie ze for  
us / greete ze wel alle bryere  
in hooly coll: i coune ion bi pe  
lord: p<sup>r</sup> pis pistle be rad to alle  
hooly bryen / pe gte of of our  
lord ihu crist: be wy ion amē.  
**Her endy pe furste pistle to**  
**thessalonicensis: & bigynnyng pe p**  
**log on pe secunde pistle to thessa**  
**lonicensis. m m**  
**T**he postle writy pe secun  
de pistle to thessalonicensis: &  
maky knowu to hem of pe las  
te tymes: & of pe comyng of  
pe adularie: & of pe prowynge  
don of hym / he writy pis epist  
le fro athenys: bi titicus pe de  
bene & onesym / pe acolyt.  
**Jerom in his prolog on pis**  
**pistle seiy pis. C. p. =**



**O**ul & siluan & tymothe to pe church of tessalonicis god our fadir. & in ye lord ihu crist grace to you & pees of god our fadir. & of ye lord ihu crist. We owen to do pauligis enmoze to god for you bryere. so as it is worpi for our fery on werp. & ye charite of ech of you to ope aboundy so p we sulk glori en in you i pe church of god. for your patience & fery. i alle your plectious & tribulaciouns. whiche ze susteynen ito ye ensauple of ye mist dom of god. p ze be had worpi in ye bigdom of god. for whiche ze sustre if nepeles it is nist to fore god. to quyte tribulacioun to hem pat troublen you. & to you p ben troublid. reite us us i pe the big of ye lord ihu fro heuene wy angelis of his uertu. in ye flame of fier. p thal zyne veniunce to he p knowe not god. & p obeyen not to ye euangehe of our lord ihu crist. whiche thul sustre enlastige peynes. i perillig fro ye face of ye lord. & fro ye glorie of his vtu. whane he thal come to be glorified in his seitis. & to be maid wondrousful in alle me p blyueden. for our witnessig is bileuid on you. in pat day i whiche pig allo we pzeuen enmoze for you. p oure god make you worpi to his clepig. & fille al ye wil of his goodnesse. & ye werk of fery i uertu p ye name of oure lord ihu crist. be claresied i you & ze in hi. bi ye gie of our lord

**B**ihesu crist. & of oure cōgre gation into ye same cōmyg. p ze be not mouyd soone fro you re uirt. ney be aferd. ney by spirit. ney by word. ney by epistle as sent by us. as if ye day of ye lord be nyzi no man dillepne you i ouy maner. for but dissencion come first. & ye mis of hyne be stherid. ye loze of p dition. p is aduer sarie. & is enhauid ouer al pig. p is seid god. oz pat is worlthid. so p he lute in ye tēple of god. & stherid hē sulk. as if he were god. wher ze holde not. p it whane i was at you. i seide yes pigis to you. & now what wypholdy ze wte. p he be stherid in his tyme. for ye p rympe of wickidnesse worlthid now. onely pat he p holdy now. holde til he be don avey. & pāne ye ille dū. lid mā thal be stherid. whō ye lord ihu thal sle wy ye spirit of his moip. & thal distre wy litznyg of his cōmyg. hi whos cōmyg is bi ye worchig of sathanas. i al vtu & signes. & grete woundis falle in al dilleit of wickidnesse. to hem p perillhen. for p per resseue den not ye charite of tremp. p per thulde be maid lase. & p for god thal sente to he. awoychig of errour. p per bileue to lesyng. p alle be demyd. whiche bileuede not to tremp but cōsentide to wickidnesse. but bryen loued of god. we owen

to do pauligis enmoze to god for you. p god ches us pe firste frimtis into heelpre i halewigh of spirit & in fery of tremp. in whiche allo he clepide you by oure gospel. into getis of ye glorie of our lord ihu crist. p for bryen stonde ze & holde ze pe tra dicious p ze han lerud. ey by word. ey by our epistle. & oure lord ihu crist hi lute. & god oure fadir. whiche louede us & zaf en lastige confort & good hope & gce. pū your hertis & cōterme i al good werk & word. **C. 111.**

**B**ryen fro hems forwar d pze ze for us. p ye word of god rene & be clarifi ed. as it is anentis you. & p we be deliyed. fro noyous & yuele me. for fery is not of alle me. but ye lord is trewe p thal cōterme you. & thal kepe fro yuel. & bryen we triden of you in ye lord. for what en pigis we comande to you hope ze don & thulen do. & ye lord dresse you re hertis i ye charite of god. & in ye patience of crist. but bryen we denoucen to you i ye name of our lord ihu crist. p ze wyndrewe you fro ech bzo pū. p wandry out of ordie & not astir pe techig. p per rel seynede of us. for ze sulk wte. how it bihouey to sulbe us. for we were not vnpelible a mog you. ney wyoute our on ne trauel. we eete breed of ony mābut i trauel & werynelle worchide nyzt & day. pat we greuede noon of you. not as we hadden not porer. but p we

thulden zyne us hlt ensauple to you to ouwe us. for also wha ne we were amōg you. we de noucede pis pig to you. p if ony mā wole not worche. ney ete he. for we han herd p sume a mog you goe in reite. & no pig worchen but doe curiously. but we denoucen to he p ben luche me. & blesche in ye lord ihu crist. p per worche wy hltce. & ete her oune breed. **C. 111.** But nyle ze bryere faple. wel doynge. pat if ony mā obeyer not to our word by epistle. marke ze hi. & cōmyne ze not wy hlt. p he be thamed. & nyle ze geile hi as an enemye. but reproue ze hi as a bzo. & god hi hlt of pees. zyne to you ener lastige pees i al place. ye lord be wy alle you. in salitacioun. by ye hond of pou. whiche signe i ech epistle. i wyte pus. ye gce of our lord ihu crist. be wy alle you. amē. **Ver endy pe**

secunde pistle to tessalonicis.

& bigyner a plog on ye firste

pistle to tymothe

**E**nsourmey & techy tymothe of ye ordynance of bisho pis office. & of debenes office. & enyech diltiplyne of hooly chur che. writte to hi fro macedonie by titicus pe dekene. **Verō i his**

plog on pis pistle. seip pis. **C. 111.**

**O**ul apostle of crist ihu. bi ye comande met of god our sauy our. & of ihu crist our hope. to tymothe biloued sone in ye fery. gie & mercy & pees. of god pe fadir & of ihu crist our lord. as i pzevede yee p p thul



dist dwelle at effect. whane i  
wente into macedouye. y' pou  
shuldest denouce to su me y'  
pei shuldest not teche of wylle  
ney y'ue tent to fablis. & gene  
logies y' ben vncertey. which  
zyuen questionis more pa edi  
ficacion of god y' is in pe fery  
for pe ende of comauendmet of  
charite of clene herte & good  
conscience. & of fery not feyned  
fro whiche yigis hi me han er  
rid & ben turned into weyn the  
che & willen to be techeris of  
pe lawe. & vnderstonde not  
what yigis pei speken. ney  
of what yigis pei assermen.  
& we witen y' pe lawe is good.  
if ony man wile it lawefully. &  
wytunge pis yig. y' pe lawe is  
not lett to a mist ma. but to vn  
mist me & not ligett. to wickid  
me & to syneris. to curtid men  
& desoulid. to sleeris of fadir. &  
sleeris of modir. to me sleeris  
& lechouris. to hem y' doe leche  
rie wip me. lesyngmogeris. &  
forlyorne. & if ony opir ying  
is cotrarie to pe holli teching.  
y' is astir pe euageli of pe glo  
rie of blelid god. which is bita  
li to me. i do panfigns to hym  
y' confortide me in crist ihu ou  
re lord. for he geside me fery  
ful & pinte me i mynisterie. y'  
first was a blasfeme & a plu  
ere & ful of wrongis. but i ha  
ue getu pe mercy of god. for  
i vnkouinge dide i vublene  
but pe grace of our lord. ou  
abouidide wip fery & loue y' is  
i crist ihu. a trewe word & woyn  
al ressepyng. for crist ihu cam i

to pis world. to make & fulfil me  
salf. of whiche i am pe firste  
but pfore i haue getu mercy.  
y' crist ihu shulde thewe i me  
first. al pacience to pe enfor  
myng of he y' shulde bileue to hi  
into euilassage lyf. & to pe king  
ito worldis of worldis. am i  
bitake pis comauendmet to pee  
you lone tymothe astir pe p  
fecies y' han be hertofore in  
pee. y' pou trauel in he a good  
truel. hanngge fery & good co  
die. which su men casten away.  
& pithide aboute pe fery. of  
whiche is i mene & alilandre.  
whiche i brook to sathanas. y'  
pei lerne to not blasfeme.

**V**erfore i bileche first  
of alle yigis y' bilechis.  
preieris. at yigis. doynge  
of panfigns be maid for alle  
me. for kingis. & alle y' ben  
lett in hynesse. y' we leden a  
myet & a pebble lyf. mal pi  
te & chautite. for pis yig is go  
od & acceptid bi fore god oure  
sanyoun. y' wole y' alle men  
be maid salf. & y' pei come to  
pe knowig of treupe. for o  
god & a mediat is of god & of  
me. and crist ihu. y' zaf hi salf  
redepcion for alle me. wip  
witneslig. is confermyd in  
his tymes. in which i am sett  
a pchour & an apostle. for i  
seye treupe. & i lyze not. y'  
am atechere of hepen me in  
fery & in treupe. pfore i wole  
y' men prepe mal place. luf  
ge xp. clene hondis wipoute  
wraspe & stryf. also wipmen  
i couenable abite. wip shame

fastnele & sobrenelle arayinge he  
salf. not in wipn heeris eyn i  
gold. eyn peeris. eyn pzeious  
clay. but pat y' bicomere wipme.  
blycetige pitee. by good werke.  
A woman lerne in silence wip  
al subiectioun. but i suffre not  
a woman to teche. ney to haue  
lordship on pe husebonde. but  
to be in silence. for adam was  
first fourmed. astir ward eue.  
& adam was not disleyned. but  
pe woman was not disleyned i  
bretig. of pe lawe. but shal be  
saled bi genacioun of children.  
if she dwellip. pthly in fery &  
loue & hoolpnele wip sobrenelle

**A**stirful word. **C. m.**  
if ony man desirp abillhop  
ryche. he desirp a good  
werk. y'fore it bihouey a bish  
op to be wipoute repret. pe ho  
sebonde of o wyl. sobre. pntet.  
chast. vtiuous. holdige holsma  
ne. a techer. not zoun moche  
to wipn. not a myte but tepat.  
not ful of chidig. not couento.  
wel rewhge his hous. & haue  
sones liget wip al chastite.  
for if ony man kan not goume  
his hous. how shal he haue di  
ligence of pe churche of god. not  
neue couertid to pe fery. lest  
he be born vp into prate. & fal  
le into dom of pe denel. for it  
bihouey hy to haue also good  
witneslig. of hem y' ben wipon  
teforp. y' he falle not into repret.  
& into pe snar of pe denel. **Al**  
so it bihouey dekenes to be ch  
ast. not double tigid. not zoun  
moche to wipn. not luyngge so  
ul wipnyng. y' han pe myte

of fery in clene consiere. but be  
pei pzeiud first. & mynistrer  
so. hanngge no cryme. also it bi  
houey wipmen to be chast. not  
barbyrige sobre. feryful in alle  
yigis. dekenes be husebondis of  
o wyl. whiche gouerne wel her  
sones & her houles. for pei pat  
mynistrer wel. shulde gete a  
good degre to be salf. & moche  
triste in pe fery y' is in crist ihu.  
Sone tymothe. i wryte to pee  
pes yigis. hopige y' i shal co  
me soone to pee. but if i tarie.  
y' pou wite how it bihouey pee  
to lyue i pe hous of god. y' is pe  
churche of hynge god. a piler  
& sadnesse of treupe. & opynly  
it is a greet sacramet of pitee.  
pat ying y' was shewid i flesh.  
it is iustified in spirit. it appe  
rile to angelis. it is pzeidid  
to hepe me. it is bileued i pe wo  
ld. it is taku vp in glorie. **C. m.**

**B**ut pe spirit seip openly  
pat in pe laste tymes. hi  
me shulen departe fro  
pe fery. zyngge tent to spiriti  
of errour. & to techingis of deue  
lis. y' speken lesyng. i poci  
lie. & haue her conscience corrupt.  
forbedige to be weddid. to aban  
ne fro metis whiche god made.  
to take wip doynge of panfign  
to feryful me & hem y' han kno  
we pe treupe. for ech creatur  
of god is good. & no yig is to  
be cast away. which is taku up  
doynge of panfigns. for it is ha  
lewid bi pe word of god & bi pzei  
er. pou puttige forp pes yigis  
to brypen. shakbe a good myn  
tre of crist ihu. nozuthid wip wor



dis of fery & of good doctryne. whi  
ch pou hast gete / but eltherwe p  
ynconuenable fablis & alde wynn  
es fablis. haite pisek to pi  
tee / for bodily exercitaciou. is  
pfitable to lytel pig. but pitee  
is pfitable to alle pigs. p har  
a biheete of lyf & now is & p  
is to come. **T**rewe word.  
& worpi al accepaciou. & in pis  
pig we trauelen. & ben cur lid.  
for we hopen i hygge god p is  
sainpoun of alle men. moost of  
feryful me / comaude p vis pig  
& teche / no ma dispile p zongre.  
but be pou ensauple of feryful  
me i word i hygg i charite in  
fery i chastite / til i come take  
tent to redige. to exortaciou  
& techig / nyle p luel charge pe  
grace which is in pee. p is so  
ui to pee bi pferie wip puttig  
on of hondis of presthod yente  
pon pes pigs. i pise be pou. pat  
p pfitig be thewid to alle me  
take tent to doctryn. be bish i  
he. for pou doyng pes pigs.  
thalt make bope p silt cas. & he  
p heere pee / blame pou not an  
eldere man. but bisech as a fad  
zonge me as bryen. elde wynn  
men. as modis / zonge wynn  
as histrys i al chastite. **C. v. //**  
**H**onour pou widows. p  
ben vzi widows. but if  
ony widowe has childre  
of lones. lerne she first to go  
ime hir hous. & quyte to fadir  
& modir / for vis pig is accepitid  
bifore god & she p is a widowe &  
zily & desolat. hope in god. & be  
bisy in bisechigis & preieris  
nyzt & day / for she pat is lyny

ge i delices. is deed & comaude  
pou vis pig. p per ben wiponte  
repref / for it ony ma has not  
cure of his owne. & moost of  
his houshold me. he has denyed  
pe fery. & is worle pa an vnferp  
ful ma. & widowe be choli not  
lesse pan fyrty zeer. p was wip  
of oon holebonte. & has witenel  
lig in good werkis. if she nozt  
chide childre. if she ressepyeth  
poze me to herboze. if she has  
wailthi pe feet of hool me. if  
she mynstryde to me p enstie  
den tribulaciou. if she solewide  
al good werk. but eltherwe pou  
zonge widows. for whane pei  
han don lecherie. p wolen be  
weddid in ca. haunge dapna  
ciou. for pei han maid voyde pe  
furte fery. also pei ydel lerne  
to go aboute housis. not conly  
ydel but ful of wordis & curiou  
se. lpekege pigs p bihouey not  
pfore i wole p zonger widows.  
be weddid. & brynge forp childre.  
& ben holewynes. to zyne noo  
occalioun to pe adulsarie. bi can  
se of cur lid pig. for now hime  
ben turned abat after sathans.  
is ony feryful ma has widows.  
myntre he to he. p pe churche  
be not greuyd. p it suffice to  
hem p ben verrey widows. pe  
prestis p ben wel goimowis.  
ben per had worpi to doubte  
honour. moost pei p trauelen  
in word & techig. for lature fery  
p thalt not bryde pe moun of  
pe oze pzeuithge. & alwer  
ma is worpi his hyze. nyle  
pou ressepye acutis agen a  
pzeest. but widdr trepne

or pre witenelhis / but repreue  
pou me pat synen bifore alle  
me. p alio ower hane dret. i pie  
bifore god & ihu crist & his choli  
angels. p on kepe pes pigs  
wiponte puidice. & do no ping  
i bowyng into ve opn syde / put  
te pou hondis to no ma. ne p  
anoon conyue p wip ope me  
wys synes. kepe p silt chait  
nyle pou zit drynke watur. but  
yle alpeil wynn for p stomak.  
& for p m ofte falling. i furmit  
es. su meins synes ben opyn  
bifore goyng to doom. but of  
su men pei come afur. & also  
goode dedis ben opyn. & po pat  
han he in opir maner molu  
not be lid. **C. vi. //**  
**W**at en seruaitis be m  
dr job. deme pei her loz  
dis worpi al honour. lest pe na  
me of pe lord & pe doctryn be  
blasfemyd. & pei p han feryful  
lordis. dispile hem not for pei  
ben bryen. but more serue  
pei. for pei ben feryful & lored.  
whiche ben parteneris of be  
nefice / teche pou pes yngis.  
& mouete pou pes pigs. if ony  
ma techy opir wyle. & acordy  
not to pe holli wordis of oure  
lord ihu crist. & to pat techig. p is  
by ptee. he is prond & can no  
pig. but langwiltlyp aboute  
questiounis & stryngs of wordis.  
of pe whiche ben brynt forp  
enyes. strynges. blasfemyes. y  
nele suspiciounis. fytigis of me  
p ben corrupt in soule. & p be  
pzyued fro treupe. p demen  
wynn to be ptee. but a greet  
wynn is ptee. wip enstie

ce. for we brynten in no pig ito  
pis world. & no doute. p we moztu  
not bere auey ony pig. but we  
haunge fadis & wip what pigs  
we sthulen be hild. be we pained  
wip pes pigs. for pei p wolen  
be maid ryche. fallen into tep  
taciou. & into snare of pe denel  
& into manye vnpfitable deliris  
& noyous. whiche dzenche men  
into deey & peridiciou. for pe roo  
te of alle yuels. is conertise. w  
hich en me conertige. erride fro  
pe fery. & biletiden he wip many  
lozdis. but pou ma of god flee  
pes pigs. but haue p ryzte p  
nelle pite fery charite paciete  
myldenes. Stryue p a good stryff  
of fery cache enlastige lyf. into  
whiche p art clepid. & hast knott  
lethid a good knottlethig bifore  
many witenelhis. i comaude to  
pee bifore god. p quyte ney alle  
pigs. & bifore crist ihu. p zeldide  
al witenelhis. vndir pilat of pou  
ce. a good confeshon. p pou pe  
pe pe comaudemet wiponte  
wem wiponte repref. into pe  
comyg of our lord ihu crist. who  
pe blethid & aloone myzty king  
of kyngis. & lord of lordis thal  
the we in his tymes. whiche al  
oone has vndeedynele. & diel  
ly in lye to whiche no ma may  
come. who no ma sayz. ney may  
se. to who glorie & honour & em  
pyre be wiponte ende amen. //  
Comande pou to pe riche me of  
pis world p pei vnderstonde  
not hily. ney p pei hope in m  
crepnte of richelhis. but in pe  
hygge god p zyne to us alle  
pigs plenteuouly to vleit to do



Wel to be maid riche in good  
werkis. lytly to yow. to co-  
myne to trefour to hem self  
a good foundement i to tyme  
to comynge. pat per cacche  
elkadyng. lyt. p. timothe  
kepe ye p. ping bitakn to pee.  
elche wyng cutid nonetces  
of voices. i oppynis of fall  
name of kynnig. which lūme  
bihetige. aboute pe few.  
felle don. ye grace of god be  
wy. ye amen. **Here endy pe  
firte pistle to timothe. i bigyn  
ney pe plog on ye secūde pistle to**  
**H**e writay also. **¶ timothe**  
to timothe of exortaciō  
to martir dom. i of eueri reu-  
le of treupe. i what shal co-  
me in ye laste tymes. i of his  
owne palliō. writage to hi  
fro pe citee of romē. **¶ Ierō**  
**i his plog on pis pistle. sen pis**  
**¶ Onl apostle. C. p.**  
**O**f ihu crist bi pe wil-  
le of. bi pe biheste  
of hys. p. is i. c. ihu.  
to timothe his mooste der. wor-  
pe lone. grace. mercy. i pees. of  
god. ye fadir. i of ihu. c. ihu. lord.  
i do p. k. g. to my god. to who  
i serue fro my p. p. p. i. i. i.  
clene cōstience. p. i. p. i. i. i.  
lig. i. hane mynde of pee i my  
preieris. n. i. t. d. ay. de. h. y. r. i. g. e.  
to se pee. h. a. n. y. g. e. mynde of pi-  
teeris. p. i. be. fillid. wy. i. o. y. e. i. t. i.  
biyente of p. few. p. is in pee not  
feyned. which also dwellede first  
in ym. a. i. t. e. l. o. n. d. e. i. m. y. m. o. d. i. r.  
ē. n. y. c. e. i. i. am. certeyn. p. also i  
pee. for which cause i monette  
pee p. pou. reysle. azen. ye. g. r. e. of

god. p. is in pee by ye settig on  
of myn hondis. for whi god. i. a. f.  
not to us. ye. spirit. of. d. r. e. d. e. but  
of. v. t. u. i. of. lone. i. of. sobrenesse.  
i. f. o. r. e. n. y. l. e. p. i. h. a. m. e. p. e. w. i. t. n. e. s.  
s. i. g. of. o. u. r. l. o. r. d. i. h. u. c. i. t. n. e. y. m. e.  
his. p. l. o. n. b. u. t. t. r. a. n. e. l. e. p. i. t. o. g. i. d. e.  
i. y. e. g. o. s. p. e. l. b. i. p. e. v. t. u. of. god. p. a. t.  
d. e. l. y. n. e. d. e. u. s. i. d. e. p. i. d. e. w. i. p. h. i. s.  
h. o. o. l. y. d. e. p. i. g. n. o. t. a. f. t. u. r. o. u. t. w. e. r.  
p. i. s. b. u. t. b. i. h. i. s. p. u. r. p. o. s. i. g. r. a. c. e.  
p. i. s. z. o. u. i. n. i. n. c. i. t. i. h. u. b. i. f. o. r. e. w. o. r. l. d. i.  
t. y. m. e. s. b. u. t. n. o. w. i. t. i. s. o. p. p. n. b. y. p. e.  
l. i. z. t. y. n. g. of. o. u. r. s. a. u. y. o. u. i. h. u. c. i. t.  
w. h. i. c. h. d. i. s. t. r. i. e. d. e. d. e. e. p. i. l. i. z. t. u. e. d.  
h. y. f. i. c. o. n. c. o. r. u. p. t. i. o. n. b. i. p. e. g. o. s. p. e. l.  
i. w. h. i. c. h. i. a. m. l. e. t. t. a. p. r. e. c. h. o. u. r. i.  
a. p. o. s. t. l. e. i. m. a. i. s. t. r. u. of. h. e. y. e. m. e. n.  
f. o. r. w. h. i. c. h. c. a. n. s. e. a. l. l. o. i. s. u. s. t. i. p. e. s.  
p. i. g. i. s. b. u. t. i. a. m. n. o. t. c. o. n. f. o. u. n. d. i. d.  
f. o. r. i. w. o. o. t. to. w. h. o. i. h. a. u. e. b. i. l. e. n. e. d.  
i. i. a. m. c. e. r. t. e. y. n. p. h. e. i. s. m. y. s. t. y.  
to. k. e. p. e. p. a. t. i. s. t. a. k. e. to. m. y. k. e. p. i. g.  
i. n. t. o. p. a. t. d. a. y. h. a. u. e. y. o. u. p. e. f. o. u. r.  
m. e. of. h. o. l. l. i. w. o. r. d. i. s. w. h. i. c. h. y. o. u.  
h. e. r. d. i. s. t. of. m. e. i. n. f. e. y. i. l. o. n. e. i. c. r. i. s. t.  
i. h. u. k. e. p. e. y. o. u. p. e. g. o. o. d. t. a. k. i. n. t. o. m.  
k. e. p. i. g. b. i. p. e. h. o. o. l. y. g. o. s. t. p. d. i. u. e. l.  
h. y. i. n. u. s. y. o. u. w. o. o. l. t. p. i. s. p. a. t. a. l. l. e.  
p. a. t. b. e. n. i. n. a. l. i. e. b. e. n. t. u. r. n. e. d. a. n. s. w. e. r.  
f. r. o. m. e. of. w. h. i. c. h. i. s. f. i. g. e. l. i. s. i. e. r.  
m. o. g. e. n. e. s. y. e. l. o. r. d. z. y. n. e. m. e. r. c. y. to.  
p. e. h. o. u. s. of. o. n. e. s. i. f. o. r. u. s. f. o. r. o. f. t. e. h. e.  
r. e. s. t. r. e. i. t. h. i. d. e. m. e. i. t. h. a. m. e. d. e. n. o. t.  
m. y. c. h. a. y. n. e. b. u. t. w. h. a. n. e. h. e. c. a. m.  
to. r. o. m. e. h. e. l. o. u. g. t. e. m. e. b. i. l. y. i. t.  
f. o. n. d. y. e. l. o. r. d. z. y. n. e. to. h. i. t. o. f. i. n. d.  
m. e. r. c. y. of. g. o. d. i. n. y. d. a. y. i. t. h. o. i. s. g. r. e.  
t. e. p. i. g. i. s. h. e. m. y. n. i. s. t. r. i. d. e. to. m. e. a. t.  
e. s. s. e. l. i. p. k. n. o. w. i. s. t. b. e. t. e. r. **¶ C. i. i.**  
**¶ F. o. r. e. p. m. y. l. o. n. e. h. e. c. o. u.**  
**¶ f. o. r. t. i. d. i. n. g. r. e. p. i. s. i. n. c. i. t. i. h. u.**  
**¶ a. n. d. w. h. a. t. p. i. g. i. s. y. o. u. h. a. s.**

herd of me by many witneis. bi  
take p. yes to feryful me. which  
shulen be able also to teche ope  
me. trauel ye pon as a good knyght  
of c. i. h. u. no mā holdyng knyght  
thood to god. w. l. a. p. p. h. y. s. i. l. f.  
w. i. p. w. o. r. l. d. l. y. n. e. d. i. s. p. h. e. p. l. e. s. e. to  
h. y. to. w. h. o. m. h. e. h. a. y. p. r. e. n. e. d. h. y.  
s. i. l. f. f. o. r. h. e. p. a. t. f. i. z. t. y. i. n. a. b. a. t. e. l.  
sh. a. l. n. o. t. b. e. c. r. o. i. k. n. e. d. b. u. t. h. e. f. i. z.  
t. e. l. a. w. f. u. l. l. y. i. t. b. i. h. o. n. e. y. a. n. e. r. p. e.  
t. i. l. e. t. o. r. e. s. l. e. y. n. e. f. i. r. s. t. of. y. e. f. r.  
u. y. t. i. s. r. o. u. n. d. i. t. a. n. t. o. y. o. u. w. h. a. t. p. i.  
g. i. s. i. l. e. p. e. f. o. r. y. e. l. o. r. d. sh. a. l. z. y. n. e.  
to. p. e. e. v. n. d. i. r. f. o. n. d. i. g. i. n. a. l. l. e. p. i. n.  
g. i. s. b. e. y. o. u. m. y. n. d. e. f. u. l. p. e. l. o. r. d.  
i. h. u. c. i. t. of. y. e. s. e. e. d. of. d. a. m. y. h. a. y.  
r. i. s. e. a. z. e. n. f. r. o. d. e. e. p. a. f. t. u. r. m. y. g. o. s.  
p. e. l. i. n. w. h. i. c. h. i. t. r. a. u. e. l. e. t. i. l. to. b. o. o.  
d. i. s. a. s. w. o. r. d. h. i. g. e. y. u. e. l. e. b. u. t. y. e.  
w. o. r. d. of. g. o. d. i. s. n. o. t. b. o. u. d. i. p. f. o. r. e.  
i. s. u. f. f. r. e. a. l. l. e. p. i. g. i. s. f. o. r. y. e. c. h. o. s. e.  
n. e. p. a. l. l. o. y. e. i. g. e. t. e. p. e. h. e. o. l. p. e. p.  
i. s. i. c. i. t. i. h. u. w. i. p. h. e. u. e. n. l. y. g. l. o. r. i. e. i. t.  
t. r. e. u. e. w. o. r. d. p. i. f. w. e. b. e. n. d. e. d. to.  
g. i. d. e. w. e. sh. u. l. e. n. h. y. n. e. to. g. i. d. e.  
i. f. w. e. s. u. f. f. r. e. n. w. e. sh. u. l. e. n. r. e. g. n. e.  
to. g. i. d. e. i. f. w. e. d. e. n. y. e. n. h. e. sh. a. l.  
d. e. n. y. e. u. s. i. f. w. e. b. i. l. e. n. e. n. o. t. h. e.  
d. i. u. e. l. l. y. f. e. r. y. f. u. l. h. e. m. a. y. n. o. t. d. e.  
u. y. e. h. y. m. s. i. l. f. t. e. c. h. e. y. o. u. y. e. s. p. i.  
g. i. s. w. i. t. n. e. s. s. i. g. e. b. i. f. o. r. e. g. o. d. m. y.  
l. e. y. o. u. s. t. r. y. u. e. i. n. w. o. r. d. i. s. f. o. r. to.  
n. o. p. i. g. i. t. i. s. p. r. o. f. i. t. a. b. l. e. b. u. t. to.  
p. e. e. n. d. u. e. r. t. y. n. g. of. m. e. p. a. t. h. e. e. r.  
b. i. l. y. k. e. p. e. to. z. y. n. e. p. i. s. i. l. f. a. p. u. e. d.  
p. r. e. i. s. a. b. l. e. w. e. r. k. m. a. to. g. o. d. w. i. p. o. u.  
t. e. sh. a. m. e. r. u. t. l. y. t. r. e. t. y. n. g. e. p. e. w. o.  
r. d. of. t. r. e. u. p. e. b. u. t. e. l. c. h. e. w. e. p. v. n.  
h. o. o. l. y. i. v. e. y. n. s. p. e. c. h. i. s. f. o. r. w. h. y.  
p. o. p. f. i. t. e. n. m. o. c. h. e. to. v. n. f. e. r. y. f. u. l. n. e. s.  
s. e. i. p. e. w. o. r. d. of. h. e. m. c. r. e. p. i. p. a. s.  
a. f. a. n. k. i. n. of. w. h. i. c. h. e. f. i. l. e. t. e. i. s. i.

ymeneus. whicher feldē dou fro  
ye treupe. seynge p. ye rylung  
aze is now don. i. p. e. i. s. u. b. i. t. i. d. e.  
ye fery of lūmen. but ye sad fou  
damet of god stouidy. h. a. n. y. g. e.  
p. i. s. m. a. r. k. e. y. e. l. o. r. d. k. n. o. w. i. p. w. h. i.  
c. h. e. b. e. n. h. i. l. e. i. e. c. h. m. a. p. n. a. m. e. y.  
p. e. n. a. m. e. of. y. e. l. o. r. d. d. e. p. a. r. t. i. y. f. r. o.  
w. i. c. k. i. d. n. e. s. s. e. b. u. t. i. n. a. g. r. e. e. t. h. o. u. s.  
h. e. n. o. t. c. o. n. l. y. v. e. s. s. e. l. s. of. g. o. l. d. i. o. f.  
s. i. l. u. e. r. b. u. t. a. l. s. o. of. t. r. e. e. i. o. f. e. r. p. e.  
i. s. o. s. u. m. e. b. e. n. i. n. t. o. h. o. n. o. u. r. i. t.  
e. u. n. n. e. i. n. t. o. d. i. s. p. u. t. p. f. o. r. e. i. f. o. n. y. m. a.  
c. l. e. n. s. i. p. h. i. s. i. l. f. f. r. o. p. e. s. e. h. e. sh. a. l.  
b. e. a. v. e. s. s. e. l. h. a. l. e. n. d. i. n. t. o. h. o. n. o. u. r.  
i. p. f. i. t. a. b. l. e. to. y. e. l. o. r. d. r. e. d. y. to. a. l. g. o. o. d.  
w. e. r. k. i. f. l. e. y. o. u. d. e. s. i. r. i. s. of. z. o. u. p. e.  
b. u. t. s. u. e. y. o. u. r. u. t. w. i. s. n. e. s. s. e. f. e. r.  
c. h. a. r. i. t. e. p. e. e. s. w. i. p. h. e. p. i. m. b. a. r. d. l. y.  
c. l. e. p. e. n. y. e. l. o. r. d. of. a. d. e. n. e. h. e. r. t. e. i.  
e. l. t. h. e. w. e. y. o. u. f. o. k. i. t. h. e. q. u. e. s. t. i. o. n. s.  
i. w. i. p. o. u. t. e. k. i. n. y. g. i. w. i. t. i. g. e. p. r. o.  
g. e. n. d. r. e. n. c. h. i. d. i. g. i. s. b. u. t. i. t. b. i. h. o. n. e. y.  
p. e. s. e. r. u. a. n. t. of. y. e. l. o. r. d. to. c. h. i. d. e. n. o. t.  
b. u. t. to. b. e. m. y. l. d. e. to. a. l. l. e. m. e. a. b. l. e.  
to. t. e. c. h. e. p. a. c. i. e. n. t. w. i. p. t. e. p. e. r. a. n.  
c. e. r. e. p. r. e. u. y. g. e. h. e. m. y. a. z. e. n. s. t. o. n. d. e.  
p. e. t. r. e. u. p. e. p. s. u. t. y. m. e. g. o. d. z. y. n. e.  
to. h. e. f. o. r. y. m. i. t. i. g. i. p. p. e. i. k. n. o. w. i. e. p. e.  
t. r. e. u. p. e. i. t. p. e. i. r. y. l. e. a. z. e. n. f. r. o. p. e.  
s. n. a. r. i. s. of. p. e. d. e. u. e. l. of. w. h. o. p. e. i.  
b. e. h. o. l. d. i. p. l. o. n. e. r. i. s. a. t. h. i. s. w. i. l. l. e. **¶ C. i. i. i.**  
**¶ O. t. w. i. t. e. y. o. u. p. i. s. p. i. g. p.**  
**¶ i. n. p. e. l. a. s. t. e. d. a. y. e. s. p. e. r. e. l. o. u.**  
**¶ l. e. t. y. m. e. s. sh. u. l. e. n. e. z. e. i. t.**  
**¶ m. e. sh. u. l. e. b. e. l. o. u. y. g. e. h. e. s. i. l. f. c. o.**  
**¶ u. e. r. t. o. u. s. l. e. h. y. o. f. b. e. r. y. n. g. p. r. o. u. d. e.**  
**¶ b. l. a. s. t. e. m. e. r. i. s. n. o. t. o. b. e. d. i. e. t. to. f. a.**  
**¶ d. i. r. i. m. o. d. i. r. v. n. f. y. n. d. e. c. a. n. s. i. d.**  
**¶ w. o. u. t. e. a. f. f. e. c. i. o. n. w. i. p. o. u. t. e. p. e. e. s.**  
**¶ f. a. l. s. e. b. l. a. m. e. r. i. s. v. n. c. o. t. y. n. e. t. v. n.**  
**¶ m. y. l. d. e. w. i. p. o. u. t. e. b. e. i. n. g. n. e. t. e. t. y.**  
**¶ t. o. u. r. s. o. u. p. w. e. r. t. b. o. l. l. i. n. p. r. o. u.**



de pouzris. blynde loners of hul-  
tis. more pan of god. haunge  
pe hknelle of pite. but demy  
yuge pe vertu of it. & esthethe  
pon pes me. of pese pei ben p  
peerlen houls. & leden wyme  
caytys chargid wip hynes.  
Whiche ben led wip dyerle de-  
lyzis. eumore lernyge. & neie  
parfytly comyge to pe stience  
of treupe. & as Jamues & ma-  
bres azenstode moyses. so pes  
azentoden treupe. me corrupt  
in vnderstondig. repreued a  
boute pe fery. but ferper pei  
shule not pite. for pe vnwyl-  
dom of hem shal be knowu to  
alle me. as hern was. but pon  
hast getu my techig. ordynau-  
ce pposig. fery long abydyng. lo-  
ne patience. persecuciois. pas-  
sions. whiche were maid to me  
at antioche. at pcomy. at hitris.  
Whar maner persecuciois. i  
suffride. & pe lord hay deliued  
me of alle. & alle me p wolen hy  
ne feryfully i ch ihu. shulen  
suffre psecuciois. but yuele  
me & dislepneris. shule encre-  
se into worse. errige & sendige  
into errour. but diuells p m  
pes pigis p pon hast lernid. &  
pat ben braki to pee. wryte  
of whom pon hast lernid. for p  
hast knowu hooly letris fro vi-  
roupe. whiche moun lerne p  
to heelp bi fery p is m ch ihu.  
for al strycture mspnd of god.  
is profitable to teche. to repre-  
ue. to chastise. to lerne i ryz w  
pnele. pat pe man of god be  
parfyt. lernid to al good we-  
werk. // = 1. 11. // = 1. 11. //

**I**biuenele before god & ch-  
ihū. p shal deme pe quye  
of hi. & pe kyngdom of hi. pache  
pe word. be pon bly conenably  
wypointe reite. repene p. bise-  
che pon. blame pon i al pacien-  
ce & doctryn. for tyme shal be  
whane me shulen not suffre  
hoolu techig. but her desirys  
pei shulen gadre to gidre to he  
sulf mantris nache to pe ce-  
ris. & trenly pei shule turne  
mbe pe heerig. fro treupe. but  
to fablis pei shule turne. but  
wake pon. in alle ygis trauere.  
pon do pe werk of an euange-  
liste. fulfille y scripse. be pon  
sober. for i am sacrificid now.  
& pe tyme of my departig is  
nyz. i hane stryui a good stryf.  
i hane endid pe cours. i hane  
kepe pe fery. in petoy tyme a  
croune of ryte. whiche is kept  
to me. whiche pe lord aust domes  
ma shal zelde to me. in p day.  
not oonly to me. but also to pe  
p loue his comyng. hye p to co-  
me to me soone. for demas loun-  
ge pis world hay forlaku me. &  
wente to tessalonyk. crellens  
into galathie. tite into dalmace.  
hic aloone is wip me. take pon  
mark. & brige wip pee. for he  
is pfitable to me into seruile.  
forlofe i sente titicus to effer  
pe doy which i leste at troate  
at carpe. whane p comest hy  
ge wip pee. & pe booke is but mo-  
ost parchemy. alisandrie pe tre-  
serer. shewide to me moche  
ynel pe lord shal zelde to hym  
after his werk is who also pon

esthethe. for he azenstod ful gre-  
ty our wordis. in my firtte de-  
fence. no ma helpide me. but al-  
le forloken me. be it not arettid  
to hem. but pe lord helpide me  
& confortide me. & pe prechig be  
fillid by me. & p alle folkis here  
p i am deliuerid fro pe moyn of  
pe hoou. & pe lord deliude me fro  
al ynel werk. & shal make me  
satt into his heuely kyngdom to  
whom be glorie into wordis of  
worldis amen. Grete wel pil-  
ta & aquila. & pe hous of onole  
foris. erastus leste at coacth. &  
i leste trofym. spt at mylete.  
hye pon to come bifore wipm-  
Dubolis & prudente & hymus &  
claudia & alle byren grete pee  
wel. our lord ihu ch belym spi-  
ryt. pe grace of god be wip pon  
amen. **Here endy pe secunde pil-  
tle to tymothe. & bigneye p  
log on pe pistle to tite. // = 1. 11. //**  
**H**warney tite & entomey  
hy of pe ordynauce of pest-  
hood. & of spiritual coulaciois.  
of cretikis to ben esthetid.  
p belye in pe ierwis wrytis.  
wryte to hym fro mycopolis.  
**lerd. ing plog o p. pistle fery p.**  
**D**il pe seruait. & p.  
of god & apostle of ihu  
ch. bi pe fery of pe cho-  
lene of god. & bi pe kno-  
wying of pe treupe. which is  
astur ptee. into pe hope of eu-  
lastige lyf. which lyf god pat  
hye not bihyte. bifore tymes  
of pe world. but he hay shewid  
in hile tymes his word i pchig.  
p is braki to me bi pe coman-  
dmet of our sauour god. to

tite moost dereworpe sone bi pe  
comy fery. grace & pees of god  
pe fadir. & of ch ihu. our sau-  
our. for caule of pis pig. i leste  
pee at crete. p. you amede po vi-  
gis p faylen. and ordeyne prel-  
tis bi citees. as allo. i disposi-  
de to pee. if ony ma is wypointe  
cryme. an holeboute of o wylf.  
& hay feryful sones. not i actu-  
sacrou of lecherie. or not linge-  
for it bihouey abillhop to be w-  
ointe cryme. a dispensour of  
god. not proud. not wryful.  
not drukelewe. not luytere.  
not couertous of foul wymyng.  
but holdige hospitalite. benyg-  
ne. prudent. sobre. iust. hooly.  
cōtyment. take p trewe word.  
p is astur doctryn. p he be mytti  
to anoneste in hoolu techig. &  
to repreue hem p azen seyen  
for per ben manye vnobediet  
& veyn spekeris. & dislepneris.  
moost pei p be. & of circuculi-  
on. whiche it bihouey to be re-  
proned. whiche subuert alle  
houles. techige whiche pigis it  
bihouey not for pe lone of foul  
wymyng. & oon of he her ppe-  
profete. seide. me of crete ben  
eumore lerys. yuele beestis of  
slowe wombe. pis wrynellig is  
trewe. for what caule blame he  
soze. p. pei be hool in fery. not  
zynyge tent to fablis of ierwis.  
& to mandemetis of me. p. tur-  
nen akey hem fro treupe. &  
alle pigis be clene to clene me.  
but to vncleue me. & to vnfer-  
ful. no pig is clene. for pe loue  
& consience of hem be maid vn-  
clene. pei knowleche. p. pei kno



Wen god: but bi dedis pei demp  
en / whāne pei ben abhomyūa  
ble & vnbiene ful: & reproua  
ble to al good werk // *C. ij.*

**B**ut speke pou po pigis.  
pat bilemen holli te  
chig / p'elde me be loubre.  
chast. prudent. hool in fey i lo  
ue & patience / also olde wyme  
in hooly habite. not slaudre  
ris / not seruynge moche to wy  
wel techige. p'pei teche pri  
dence / mouette pou zonge w  
me. p'pei loue here holebondi.  
p'pei loue her children. & p'pei  
be prudent. chast. sobre. han  
ge cure of ye hous. benygne. li  
get to her holebondis: p'pe word  
of god be not blasfemyd. *Also*  
mouette pou zonge me: p'pei be  
sobre in alle pigis / yue pi self  
enlample of good werkis: ite  
chig. in hoolnesse. in sadnesse.  
an holli word & vurepro  
uable / p'he. p'is of ye cont  
rie hyde be a shamed: hanng  
noon yuel pig to seie of zoi / mo  
nette pou seruauitis. to be luge  
to her lordis in al pigis: pleyge  
not azenleyge. not defraudige /  
but in alle pigis thewige good  
fey. p'pei honoure i alle pigis  
pe doctryn of god our sauour  
for ye grace of god oure sau  
our hay apperid to alle me: & tau  
te us / p'we forsake wickidnesse  
& worldly desiris: lyue sobzely  
& mistly & pteuonilly in pis wo  
rld / abidige ye blessed hope & pe  
comynge of ye glorie of ye grete  
god: & of oure sauour ihu crist  
p'zaf hi self for us: to azenbie  
us fro al wickidnesse: & make

clene to hi self a peple accepta  
ble & swere of good werkis  
Speke pou pes pigis & mones  
te pou: & repreue pou wip al  
comandemēt / no mā dispise  
**A** mouette he: to *C. iij.*  
be luge to p'ices &  
to p'ones / to obeithie  
to pat p'is seid. & to be redy to  
al good werk. to blasfeme no  
mā / to be not ful of chidig: but  
teporat thewige al unclenes  
se to alle men / for we were su  
tyme vnkyse / vnbleffil. er  
rige & seruynge to desiris & to dy  
uile lustis. doynge i malice & en  
mye worpi to be hatid. hatige  
ech oyr / but whāne ye benyg  
nitye & ye manhood of om' sa  
uour god apperide / not of ther  
kis of rztuinele p'we dūe  
but by his mercy he made us  
saaf / bi waunthig of azen bige  
tig & azen newynge of ye hooly  
gost. whō he shede into us ple  
teuonilly bi ihu crist oure sau  
our p'we iustified by his grace: be  
eyris bi hope of enelastige lyf  
a trewe word is / & of pes pigis  
i wole p'pon cofirme ope / pat  
pei p'biene to god: be bily to  
be aboue ope in goode werkis  
pes pigis ben goode: & p'fiteble  
to men / & enliewe pou folke the  
questions & genealogies & stry  
ues / & fistigis of ye lawe: for  
po ben vnprofitable & deyn / et  
cheue pou amā eretyp. after  
oon & pe seruice correccion / wi  
tuge p'he p'is such amā mā  
is subitid / & trespassy: & is  
dāpned bi his oure dom / whā  
ne i sende to pee artema o2 ti

ticus: hūe pou to come to me  
to nycopolis for i haue spolid.  
to diuile in wyntur pere / bilyly  
bifore sende zenam a wise man  
of lawe & apollo: p'no pig faile  
to hem / pei p'ben of our is: lerne  
to be gouernouris in goode wer  
kis to necessarie vlis: p'pei be  
not wipoute fruyt / alle me pat  
ben wip me. greette pee wel / gr  
eete pou wel hem: p'loue us in  
fey / ye grace of god be wip zoi  
alle amē // *Here endy pe pis  
tyle to tite: & bigneye pe plog  
on ye pille to filemon.*

**H**uakir samylar o2 ho  
mely letris to filemon.  
for honestimus his seruauit: w  
ritige to hi fro ye cite of rome  
out of prilon bi ye for seid ouer  
unus / *Jerom i his*

*plog on pis pille: lew pis / C. p.*

**D**ul pe boundū of crist  
ihu & tymothe brop.  
to filemō biloned  
oure helper. & to ap  
pia moost der lader & to archip  
om' euene kuyt. & to ye chr  
che p'is in ym hous / grace be  
to zoi & pees of god our fader.  
& of ye lord ihu crist / i do paki  
gis to my god enmore: makige  
myde of pee in my pzeieris / hee  
rige pi charite & fey p'pon  
hast in ye lord ihu: & to alle hoo  
ly me / pat ye comynge of pi  
fey be maad opyn. in knabig  
of al good pig in crist ihu: & i had  
de greet ioye & confort i pi cha  
rite: for ye entrails of hooly  
me restide by pee bropr. *For*  
which pig / hanng moche tr  
ust in crist ihu to comande to pee.

pat p'pteyney to p'fyt: but i bi  
leche moze for charite / *Suen*  
pou art such as ye elde pou: &  
now ye boundū of ihu crist / i bile  
che pee for my lone onely me.  
whom i in boondis bigat. wh  
ich su tyme was vnprofita  
ble to pee / but now profitable  
bope to pee & to me: whō i sente  
azen to pee & reslegue pou hi:  
as myne entrails / whō i wolde  
wipholde wip me: p'he thulde  
serue to me for pee in boondis  
of ye gospel. But wipoute pi  
couceil i wolde not do ovy pig.  
p'pi good thulde not be as of  
uede. but wylful / for p'auetur.  
p'fore he departide fro pee for  
a tyme: p'pon thuldut resley  
ne hi wipoute ende / Now not  
as a seruauit: but for a seruauit.  
a moost dere brop. moost to me  
& hois moche moze to pee: bope  
in fleitly & in ye lord: p'fore if p'  
hast me a felowe: reslegue hy  
as me / for if he hay ony ping a  
noyed pee. ey ouy. arette pou  
pis pig to me / i poult woot wip  
myn hond / i thal zelde. i seye not  
to pee: pat allo pou olist to me  
pi self / So brop i thal vīe pee i  
ye lord: fille pou my entrails in  
crist / i tristenng of ym obediē  
ce: woot to pee / witege p'pon  
thalt do: on pat p' i thal seye /  
allo make pou redy to me an hous  
to diuile yue / for i hope p'bi zoi  
pzeieris i thal be zoiu to zoi /  
Epafra p'oner wip me i crist  
ihu greety pee wel / and mark.  
aristark. demas. lucas. myn hel  
peris / ye grace. of om' lord  
ihu crist. be wip zoi. re spurt.



thine. Were endy pe pistle to  
filemō. & bigynner pe plog on  
pe pistle to Ebreis.

**I**f it is to seye. whi poul  
apostle i pis epistle. in writunge  
kepyn not his vslage. distynge  
ge his name oz pe dignite of his  
ordze. pis is pe cause p he wri-  
tuge to hem p were of circūci-  
sion. biledede. wroot as pe apost-  
le of hevene me & not of ieris.  
And he knowege her prude. & the  
wige her owne humehesse. nol-  
de not putte bfore pe disert of  
his office. & in hyl man also John  
pe apostle for humehesse in his  
epistil. for pe same skile sette  
not his name to fore. Als it seid  
pe apostle sente pis epistle to  
pe ebreis writū in Ebreis tū-  
ge. & after pe deep of poul pe a-  
postle. hyl pe enangeliste made  
it in greet speche. holdynge pe  
vndirstandynge & pe ordze of it.  
**Here this plog o pis pistle leyn pis**

**A**d pat apak. **C. 1.**  
On tyme by pferis. i  
many manes to oin-  
fadris. at pe laste in  
pes dayes he hay spoke to us bi  
pe sone. whom he hay ordeyned  
er of alle pigis. & by whom he  
made pe worldis. which whine  
also he is pe bytunesse of glorie.  
& figm of his substance. & berip  
alle pigis bi word of his vertu.  
he makyn purgaciō of synes  
& entry on pe rythall of pe ma-  
geste in hevenes. & so moche is  
mand betē pan angelis. bi hors  
moche he hay enritid amore dy-  
uers na. me bfore he for  
to. whiche of pe angels

seide god ony tyme. p art my sone.  
I have gendrid pee to day. & eft  
soone. I shal be to hy into a fadir.  
& he shal be to me into a sone. &  
whie eftsoone he bypnyng yn pe  
fyrste bigetū sone. into pe world.  
he leyn. & alle pe angels of god. the  
shype hy. but he leyn to angelis.  
he p makyn his angels spurtis.  
& hile mynistris flayme of fier.  
But to pe sone he leyn god yn tro-  
ne is into pe world of world. aserd  
of eqypte is pe zerd of yn reis-  
me. pon hast loued ryttyshel  
se. & hansted wickidnesse. pfor  
pe god yn god. amoyntide pee  
wyp oyle of ioye. moze pā pife  
lowis. & pon lord i pe bigyn-  
foundedit pe erpe. & hevenes  
bera. Wer. tis of pū hondis. pū  
shilens. peritthe. but p sh-  
alt. par. fithy dwelle. & alle sh-  
len were elde as a dōy. & p sh-  
le change hem as a dōy. & p sh-  
len be chaigid. but pon art pe  
same yn self. & yn zeeris shulen  
not fayle. but to which of pe an-  
gels seide god at ony tyme. sitte  
on my rythall. til i putte yn  
euemyes astool of yn feet. Vke  
p pei alle be not seruyge spū-  
tis. sent to seruen. for he pat  
taken pe eritage of heeche.

**For more. C. 2.**  
plenteuouly. & bihouer  
us to kepe yo pigis p we  
han herd. lest panetm the  
fleten ankep. for if pe ilke  
word p was seid bi angels. the  
mand sad. & ech brefig of pe  
lawe. & violence took inst re-  
tribucion of meede. how shu-  
len we alyape. if we dispisen

so greet an heeche. which whine  
it hadde takū bigynnyng to be teld  
out bi pe lord. of hem p herde. is  
cofermyd into us. for god wruet  
side to gidre by myracles. & won-  
dus. & greette myncls & dynerse. &  
tues. & departyngs of pe hooly go-  
ost bi his wille. but not to angelis.  
god luyetide pe world p is to co-  
myge. of which we speke. but  
sū mā wruetillide in a place. & sei-  
de. what pig is man. p p art my  
deyl of hī. oz māms sone. for pon  
vstide hī. pon hast maid hī a lūl  
lesse pan angelis. p hast crowned  
hī wip glorie & honour. & p hast oz  
deyned hī on pe werkis of pū hou-  
dis. pon hast maid alle pigis luyet-  
vndir his feet. & in pat. p he sūge-  
tude alle pigis to hī. he leste no pig  
vnluyet to hī. but now we seen  
not it alle pigis luyet to hī. p  
but we seen hī. p was maid altil  
lesse pan angelis. ihu for pe passi-  
on of deep. crowned wip glorie &  
honour. p he pūz grace of god  
shulde tūde deep for alle me. for it  
biledede hī for who alle pigis. & by  
whom alle pigis were maid. which  
hadde brougt many sones into glo-  
rie. & was andour of pe heeche of  
hem. p he hadde an ende by passiō.  
for he pat halewip. & pei p ben hale-  
wid. ben alle of oon. for which cau-  
se he is not shamed to clepe hem  
brayren leyge. I shal telle yn na-  
me to my brayen. in pe mydel of  
pe church. I shal herie pee. & eft  
soone. I shal be trustyge into hī.  
& eftsoone. lo. I & my chylde. wh-  
iche god zaf to me. p fore for chyl-  
dren conmyet to flesch & blood.  
& he also took part of pe same.

p by deep he shulde destrye hī  
p hadde lordshyp of deep. p is to  
sepe pe denel. & p he shulde deli-  
uer hē. p bi drede of dep bi al lōf.  
weren boundū to seruage. & he  
took neie angelis. but he took  
pe seed of abrahā. wherfore he  
ougte to be hūned to brayen by  
alle pigis. p he shulde be maid  
merciful. & feryful bishop to god.  
p he shulde be merciful to pe  
trespassis of pe peple. for i pat  
pig in which he sufride. & was  
temptid. he is mysty to helpe al  
so he pat ben tēptid. **C. 3.**

**V**erfore hooly brayen. &  
peneris of heuēly cle-  
pyng. biholde ze pe apol-  
tle. & pe bishop of oin. cōfel-  
sion ihu. which is trewe to hī  
pat made hī. as also moyses in  
al pe hous of hī. but pis bishop  
is had wozyn of moze glorie pan  
moyses. by as moche as he hay  
more honour of pe hous p made  
pe hous. for ech hous is maid of  
sū mā. he p made alle pigis of  
noyrt. is god. & moyses was tre-  
we in alle his hous. as a seruant  
into wruetshig of po pigis. pat  
were to be seid. but cū as a sone  
in his hous. which hous we be.  
if we holden sad trist & glorie  
of hope into pe ende. wherfore  
as pe hooly goost leyn. to day if  
ze hau herd his vois. nyle ze hard  
ne zoure hertis. as in wryppig.  
hyl pe day of tēptaciō in desert.  
wher zour fadris tēptiden me.  
& pmede & spzen my werkis  
fourty zeeris. wherfore. I was  
wry to pis genaciō. & I seide  
enmore pei erren i herte. for



pei knetwe not my weyes. to wih  
che / swoor in my wraupe. pei  
thulen not entre into my reste  
bypen se ze. lest panetir i ony  
of you be an yuel herte of vnbile  
lene. to departe fro pe lymyng  
god. but moneste you salf bi all  
dayes. pe while to day is named.  
p noon of you be hardned bi falla  
ce of syne / for we ben maad par  
ceneris of eit. if nepeles we hol  
den pe biggynnyng of his substa  
ce sad into pe ende. while it is seid.  
to day. if ze han herd pe vois of  
hi. nyle ze hardne your hertis. as  
m p wrauping. for su me heerige  
wraupiden. but not alle pei pat  
weimen out of egypt by moyses.  
but to wihche was he wraupid  
fourty zee ris. / whey not to he  
p synede. whos careyns were  
cast down i desert. / to wihche  
swoor he. / p pei thulde not entre  
into pe reste of hy. no but to hem  
p were vnbilestful. / i we seen.  
p pei myzte not entre into pe res  
te of hi for vnbilene. **C. m.**

**T**herfore drede we lest p  
anetir. while pe biheel  
te of entryng into his  
reste is left. p ony of us be got  
lid to be a weye. for it is teeld al  
so to us. as to hem. / p pe word p  
was herd p fide not to he. not  
meynd to fery. of pe pigis pat  
pei herden. for we p han bileud.  
thule entre into reste. as he  
seide. as / swoor in my wraupe.  
pei thule not entre into my res  
te. / while pe werkis weren  
maad. p fyt at pe ordynaice of  
pe word. he seide p us i a place  
of pe senenpe day. / god restide

in pe senenpe day. fro alle his wer  
kis. / i in his place estloone. / pei  
thulen not entre into my reste.  
pfore for it luyber. / p su men  
thule entre into it. / p pei to wih  
che it was teeld to bifoze entiden  
not for her vnbileene. estloone  
he termynep su day. / p fery. i da  
my to day after. so moche tyme  
of tyme. as it is bifoze seid. to day  
if ze han herd his vois. nyle ze hard  
ne your hertis. for if he hadde you  
reste to hem. he thulde neie speke  
of opere after his day. pfore pe la  
bot is left to pe peple of god. for  
he pat is entrid into his reste.  
restide of his werkis. as also god  
of hile. pfore hadde we to entre  
into pat reste. / p no ma falle into  
pe lame ensauple of vnbilene. for  
pe word of god is quyk. / p fery. in  
wozthig. / p more able to perle pan  
any tweyne eggid swerd. / p fery.  
dhy for to pe departyng of pe  
soule. / p fery. / p of pe wintu  
ris. / p merewis. / p demet of poy  
tis. / p eutentis. / p hertis. and no  
creatur is omible in pe out of  
god. for alle pigis ben nakid. / p  
pyn to his pzen. to who alword to  
us. pfore we p han a greet bish  
op. p p fide heuenes ihu pe sone  
of god. holde we pe knowlechyng  
of our hope. for we han not a bi  
shop. p may not hane capashoi  
onoure i firmytees. but was  
teptid bi alle pigis. bi liknesse  
wrynte syne. pfore go we out  
to pe trone of his grace. / p we  
gete myc. / p fery. / p fery. / p fery.  
ble help. **C. m.**

**A**ble help. / p fery. / p fery. / p fery.  
Or ety bishop takii of  
me. is ordeyned for me.

in pes pigis p be to god. p he of  
fre zifris. / p sacrificis for synes.  
whiche may to gidre souwe wry he  
pat bey vnkynge. / p erren. for al  
lo he is enyorned. / p infirmyte.  
pfore he owry. as for pe peple.  
so also for hi salf to offre for syne.  
ney ony ma taky to hi honou. but  
he p is clepid of god as aaron was.  
so eit clarified not hi salf. p he  
wer bishop. but he pat spak to  
hi. you art my sone. to day / i gen  
date pee. as in anow place he sen  
p art a preeft wry onte ende af  
tr pe orde of melchisedech. whi  
ch in pe dayes of his flesch offri  
de wry greet cry. / p teeris. pzeie  
ris. / p bisechyngis to hy. p myzte ma  
ke hym salf fro deye. / p was herd  
for his reuence. and whie he ws  
goddis sone. he lernye obedien  
ce of pes pigis. p he suffride. / p  
he byouyt to pe ende. is maad can  
le of euilasyng heeche to alle pat  
oben then to hi. / p is clepid of god  
a bishop. by pe orde of melch  
sedech. of who per is to us a greet  
word. for to seye. for ze ben maad  
feble to heere. for whie ze onte  
to be mantris for tyme. estloo  
ne ze niden. p ze be tanzt. whiche  
ben pe lettris of pe biggynnyng  
of goddis wordis. and ze be maad  
pille. whiche is nete of mylk. / p  
not sad mete. for ech p is par  
cener of mylk. is wyponite part  
of pe word of ryztyshelle. for  
he is a lytil chld. but of parfyt  
me is sad mete. of he p for cust  
han wittis exclud. to districon  
of good. / p of ynel. **C. vj.**

**W**herfore we byngynge  
in a word of pe biggynnyng

of eit. be we born to pe pfecti  
on of hi. not estloone leggyn  
ge pe foundamet of penance. / p  
deede werkis. / p of pe fery to god.  
p of techig. of baptysme. / p of  
leygis on of hondis. / p of rlyg  
zen of deede me. / p of pe euilasyng  
ge dom. / p ris pig. we thule do.  
if god thal suffre. but it is ym  
possible. p pei p ben oomys lytued.  
p han tanzid also an heuenly zite.  
p ben maad parcenis of pe hoody  
goot. / p nepeles han tanzid pe good  
word of god. / p pe stues of pe  
world to comyge. / p ben shidun  
fer asey. p pei ben reneuid est  
loone to penance. whiche estloo  
nes crucifen to he salf pe sone of  
god. / p han to storn. for pe erpe p  
dzynter reyn ofte comyge on it.  
p byngynge forp conenable erbe  
to he of whiche it is tilid. taky  
blessig of god. / p pat p is by  
gyng forp pornes. / p breeis. is  
repreuable. / p next to cur. whos  
endig. thal be into byngynge. but  
ze moost dere wozpe. we tristen  
of you bettr pigis. / p neer to heel  
pe. youz we speken so. for god  
is not vnyst. p he forzete your  
werk. / p lone whiche ze han stherid  
in his name. for ze han mymyf  
trid to seyntis. / p mymyre. and  
we couerte p ech of you atherwe  
pe same bishnelle to pe fylling  
of hope. into pe ende. p ze be  
not maad gloube. but also liabe  
ris of he whiche bi fery. / p paci  
ence thulen euher ne pe biheel  
tis. for god by heeltis. for god  
bi heetyng to abrahim. for he  
hadde noon greet by who he sh  
ulde liue. swoor by hi salf. / p



leide: I blesse ſhal blesse pee: & I multiplynge ſhal multiplye pee: & ſo he longe abidige: hadde pe biheeste: for me ſwere bi a gretter pan hem ſelf: & pe ende of al her pleis an oop to confirmacion: I which pig god wil lige to ſtheve plenteuouſſhet to pe eyris of his biheeste. pe ſadneſſe of his conſent: puttude but wyre an oop: & by rubei pig: amenable by which it is ympossible god lye. we haue ſtrengthe ſolace. pat ſlen to guide to holde pe hope & is put for to us: which hope as an ankir we han ſiker to pe ſoule & ſad & goynge yn to pe yner pigis of hydig: wher pe biſore goere iſt: & is maad biſthop wyrount ende. by pe ordre of melchisedech: entide for us.

**A**d pis melchile **C. vii.** dech kig of ſalem: & preeſt of pe hyette god: which met te wy abrahim: as he turnede a zen fro pe ſleyng of kigis: & bleſſide hi to whom: alſo abrahim departide tyris of alle pigis: firſt he is leide kig of ryztiſneſſe: & after ward kig of ſalem & is to ſeye kig of pees wyrount ſadur wyrount modur: woute genealogie: ney hanpge bigynnyng of dayes ney ende of lye: & he is likned to pe gone of god: & dwellip preeſt woute ende: but biholde ze hou greet: is pis: to whom abrahim pe patriarch: & tyris of pe beſte pigis: & tyris for me of pe ſones of leeny takige preeſthod: han maad demet to take tyris of pe peple bi pe laſe: & is to ſeye of her bi perer: yon: alſo pei wente out

of pe leendis of abrahim. But he whos genacion is not noubrid in hem: took tyris of abrahim: & he bleſſide pis **Abrahim** which hadde repmyſſions wyrount any azenſeyis: pat & is leſſe: is bleſſid of pe bettre & here dwellip me take tyris: but per he be ryp witneſſig & he lynes: & pat it he leide ſo: bi abrahim: alſo le ny pat took tyris was tyrid: & it he was in his ſadris leendis: whie melchisedech mette wy hy: pſore if perfection was bi pe preeſthod of leny: for vndur hi pe peple took pe laſe: what zit was it nedeful: anoy preeſt to ryle bi pe ordre of melchisedech: & not to be leide bi pe ordre of an on: for whi whie pe pſthod is tullatid: it is nede: & alſo tullacion of laſe be maad: but he in whom pes pigis ben leide: is of anoyr lymage: of which no ma was preeſt to pe auter: for it is opyn: & our lord is born of juda: in which lymage moſes ſpak no pig of preeſt: & more: it is known: & bi pe ordre of melchisedech: an oy preeſt is rihit up: which is not maad bi pe laſe of fleuſhly maademet: but but by vertu of lye & may not be vndon: for he witneſſip & pou art a preeſt wyrount ende: bi pe ordre of melchisedech: & repmyſſig of pe maademet biſore goynge is maad: for pe vnladueſſe & on pſit of it: for whi pe laſe hrou te no pig to pſtacion: but & is a bringyng yn of a bettr hope: by which we neze to god: and how greet it is: not wyrount ſwerig: but pe ope ben maad preeſtis wy

outen an oop: but pis preeſt wy an ooch bi hi & ſende to hi: pe lord ſkooz: & it ſhal not rewe hi: & art a pſt wyrount ende: bi pe ordre of melchisedech: & ſo moche iſt is maad biheester of pe bettre teſtamet: & pe ope were maad manye pſtis yſore for pei we re forbedu bi deuy to diuella ſalle: but pis: for he dwellip wy ount ende: har an euſtange preeſthod: wherfore alſo he may ſane wy ount ende: comyge ny: bi hy ſelf to god: & enmore lym to pie for us: for it biſempe & ſuch a ma were a biſthop to us: hooly innocent: vnde ſonid: clene depar tid fro eyful me: & maad hyer pan heuenes: which hay not nede: ech day as preeſtis for his owne giltis to offre ſacrifices: & after ward for pe peple: for he dide pis pig: & offrige hi ſile comys: & re laſe ordeyne me preeſtis: hanpge ſykneſſe: but pe word of ſwerig: which is after pe laſe: ordeyne pe ſone pſt wyrount ende **C. viii.**

**B**ut a capite on po pigis & ben leide we han ſuch a biſthop: & ſat in pe ryghthalf of pe ſeete of greetueſſe i heuenes: pe mynſtre of leyntis & of pe very tabernacle pat god made & not ma: for ech biſthop is ordeyned to offre ziftis & ſacrificis: wherfore it is nede & alſo pis biſthop hane ſu pig: & he ſhal offre: & for if he were on erpe: he wer no preeſt: whie per were pat ſhilden offre ziftis bi pe laſe: whiche ſerue to pe ſamplir: & ſhadonbe of heuenly pigis: as

it was anſwerid to moſes: whie he ſhulde ende pe tabernacle: ſe he ſende: make p alle pigis: bi pe ſamplir: & is ſhe widd to pee i pe moit: but not he hay getti a bettr mynſtere: bi ſo moche as he is a mediator: of a bettre teſtamet: wy bettr biheestis: for if pe ilke ſirte had de lackid blame: pe place of pe ſecunde ſhulde not hane be ſouit: for he repremyge hem: ſerp lo dayes comen ſerp pe lord: & I ſhal make parſyt a newe teſtamet on pe hous of iſrl: & on pe hous of juda: not hyl pe teſtamet & I made to her ſadris i pe day i which I cauete her hond: & I ſhulde lede hem out of pe lond of egypt: for pei dwellid not parſy i my teſtamet: & I haue diſpild he ſerp pe lord: but pis is pe teſtamet: which I ſhal diſpoſe to pe hous of iſrael: after po dayes ſerp pe lord: in zynge my lauis into pe ſoulis of hem: & into pe hertis of he: I ſhal aboue wryte hem: & I ſhal be to he into a god: & pei ſhulen be to me into a peple: & ech ma ſhal not tette his ney ehoze: & ech ma his brop: ſerpyge knowe me: fro pe leſſe to pe more of he: for I ſhal be merciful to pe wickidneſſe of he: & not I ſhal not biſenke on pe ſynes of he: but in ſerpyge a newe: pe former werid eeld: & pat & is of many dayes & werid eeld: is

**A**nd pe former teſtamet hadde multiplyngis of woz ſhip & hooly pig durige for a ty me: for pe tabernacle was maad

which was of gold

which was of gold



first. in which were candlesticks.  
 & boord & setting forp of loones  
 which is seid hooly. & pe veil. pe  
 secunde tabernacle. & is seid sanc  
 ta stoz. & is hooly of hooly pigis  
 haunge a goldi censer. & pe arte  
 of pe testamēt. Keuerid aboute  
 on ech syde wip gold. in which  
 was a pott of gold. haunge mā  
 na. & pe zerd of aron & flozultu  
 de. & pe tablis of pe testamēt on  
 which pigis were cherubyns  
 of glorie ouer shadewyge pe ppi  
 ciatorie. of which pigis it is not  
 now to sepe by alle. but whane  
 pes were maid pus to gidre. pze  
 this entride enemore i pe former  
 tabernacle. doynge pe offices of  
 sacrifices. but i pe secunde taber  
 nacle pe bishop entride oonyes  
 in pe zeer not wip oute blood.  
 which he offride for his ignoran  
 ce & pe peple. for pe hooly gost  
 signyfyde pis pig p not 3it pe  
 wepe of seyntis was openyd. wh  
 le pe former tabernacle hadde  
 stant. which parable is of pis p  
 sent tyme. bi which also iustis  
 & sacrifices ben offrid. which  
 mouen not make a man seruyge  
 parfyt by consience. conly i me  
 tis & drynkis & drynkis waulthigis.  
 & rytyngis of flesch. p were  
 get to pe tyme of correccion. ||  
 But cit beynge a bishop of goo  
 dis to conyge. entride bi a large  
 & pfitere tabernacle not maid  
 by hond. p is to sepe not of pis ma  
 tis. ney bi blood of goot buckis  
 oz of calues. but by his owne blo  
 od entride oonyes into hooly pigis  
 p were fouden bi an enlastige re  
 depcion. for if pe blood of goot bu

ckis & of bohs. & pe aultre of a con  
 salt spreind. hale wip vndene  
 me to pe clensig. of flesch. hons  
 moche more pe blood of cit. wh  
 bi pe hooly gost offride bi self. ren  
 we myd to god. thal dense oure  
 consience fro deade werkis to ser  
 ne god p lyuey. and p fore he is  
 a mediator of pe neuwe testamēt.  
 p bi depe falligge bi wip into re  
 depcion of po trespalligis p were  
 vndir pe former testamēt. pei  
 pat ben clepid. take pe biheste  
 of euerlastig. eritage. for wher  
 a testamēt is. it is nede. p pe depe  
 of pe testamēt maker come bi  
 tlyuey. for a testamēt is confer  
 med in deede me. ellis it is not  
 wozy. while he lyuey. f made  
 pe testamēt. wherfore ney pe  
 firste testamēt was halewid bi  
 oute blood. for whine ech maide  
 met of pe lawe was rad of mo  
 ples to al pe peple. he took pe blo  
 od of calues. & of buckis of geet.  
 wip watir & reed wolke & shape  
 & biheste bove pilke book & al  
 pe peple & seide. pis is pe blood of  
 pe testamēt. p god comāndide  
 to you. also he spreind wip blood  
 pe tabernacle & alle pe vessels of  
 pe seruyce in lyk man. & al mest  
 alle pigis ben denhid in blood bi  
 pe lawe. & wipoute shedig of  
 blood. remission of synes is not  
 maid p fore it is nede pat pe shū  
 pteris of heuely pigis. wip ber  
 tre sacrifices ran yse. for wh  
 entride not into hooly pigis ma  
 ad bi hondis. p ben saupleris  
 of verrp pigis. but into he  
 uene it self p he appere now  
 to pe cheer of god for us. ney

be denhid wip pes pigis. but p  
 be heuely pigis.

p he offre hi self ofte. as pe bish  
 hop entride into hooly pigis. bi  
 alle zeeris maken blood. ellis  
 it biheste hym to enfre ofte. fro  
 pe bigynnyng of pe world. but  
 now is oonyes. in pe endyng of  
 worldis. to destruction of sy  
 ne. bi his sacrifice he appere  
 & as it is ordeyned to men oonyes  
 to dye. but after pis is pe dom  
 so. & cit was offrid oonyes. to auoi  
 de pe synes of many me. pe secū  
 de tyme he shal apper. wipoute  
 syne. to me p abiden hi to heche.  
**H** & pe lawe haunge. ||  
 a shadowe of good pigis p be to  
 come. not pe ilke ymage of pigis.  
 may neu make me neyge pfit. bi pe ilke  
 same sacrifices. which pei offre  
 wipoute ceessig by alle zeeris. el  
 lis pei shuld hane ceessid to be  
 offrid. for as moche as pe wor  
 shyperis denhid oonyes. hadde not  
 ferper more consience of syne.  
 but in hem mynde of synes is  
 maid by alle zeeris. for it is ym  
 possible. p synes be don alyey  
 by blood of bohs & of buckis of ge  
 et. p fore he entrige unto pe world.  
 seip. you woldut not sacrifice &  
 offryng. but you haist thapū a  
 body to me. brent sacrifices also  
 for syne. pletide not to pee. pāne  
 I seide. lo. I come. in pe bigynnyng  
 of pe booke it is writū of me. p  
 I do p wille god. he seynge bifoze  
 p you woldut not sacrifices &  
 offryngs & brent sacrifices for sy  
 ne. ne pe pigis ben plesant to pee  
 which ben offrid bi pe lawe. pā  
 ne. I seide. lo. I come. p. I do p  
 wille god. he dop alyey pe firste.  
 p he make stidefast. pe secunde.

in which wille we ben halewid.  
 bi p offryng of pe body of cit. wh  
 oonyes. & ech pzeet is redy. myn  
 stryngge ech day. & ofte tymes of  
 stryngge pe same sacrifices. wh  
 che mouen neie do alyey synes.  
 but pis mā offryge o sacrifice  
 for synes. for enemore. sittip in  
 pe ryzthalf of god pe fadir. fro  
 penys forp abidyge. til his ene  
 myes be putt a stool of his feet.  
 for bi oon offryng he made parfyt  
 for enie halewid me. & pe hooly  
 gost witnessip to us. for after p  
 he seide. pis is pe testamēt. wh  
 ch. I. a nelle thal to hem after  
 po dayes. pe lord seip. I zynge  
 my lawis in pe hertis of hem. &  
 in pe soulis of hem. I thal no mo  
 ze penke on pe synes & wickid  
 nessis of hem. & wher remys  
 sion of pes is. now is p noon  
 offryng for syne. p fore byrpen  
 haunge trist into pe entrig of  
 hooly pigis in pe blood of crist.  
 which halewid to us a neuwe  
 wepe & lymge bi pe hlyg pat  
 is to sepe his fleish. & we haun  
 ge pe greet pzeet on pe hons  
 of god. neye we wip verrp her  
 te in pe pleinte of fery. and be  
 om. hertis spreind fro an ynel  
 consience. & our bodies waulthū  
 wip clene watir. & holde we pe  
 cofusion of our hope bovyge to  
 no hyde. for he is trewe. p hap ma  
 ad pe biheest. & biholde we to gi  
 dre in pe stryng of charite & of  
 goode werkis. not for labyngge  
 our gaderig to gidre. as it is of  
 custom to sū me. But conforti  
 ge. & bi so moche pe more. bi hon  
 moche ze seen pe day neyzyng.



for whi now a sacrifice for synes  
is not left to us y<sup>e</sup> spen wil  
fuly: after pat we han take pe  
knowyng of treuþe for whi on  
abydyng of don is dredeful. &  
pe synyng of fier: which shal  
waste aduſarices: who y<sup>e</sup> bre  
kyn moyses lank: diep wroun  
ten ony mercy by tseyne or pre  
witnessis: hou moche gellenze  
pat he dyslerner worde turne  
tis: which defouley pe sone of  
god: & holdy pe blood of pe tes  
tament pobit: in which he is ha  
lewid: & dey dyspit to pe spirit  
of grace: for we knowen hym  
y<sup>e</sup> seide: to me v<sup>e</sup>ſaunt: & i shal  
seide: & eft: for pe lord shal deme  
his peple: it is ferdful to falle in  
to pe hondis of god hyngge: & hane  
ze mynde on pe formere dapes: i  
whi he weren hyned & outryde  
greet stryff of passions: & in pe  
to y<sup>e</sup> were maid a spectacle in the  
ithynis & tribulacions: in anoyr  
ze weren maid felows of we hy  
nyge so: for also to bounde me ze  
hadden compassioun: & ze resseyne  
den wy ioye: pe robbynge of zow  
goodis: knowyge y<sup>e</sup> ze han a bettr  
adwelling substance: y<sup>e</sup> fore nyle  
ze leese zow trust: which hay gre  
et rewardeyng for patience is ne  
deful to zow: y<sup>e</sup> ze doen pe wille of  
god: & byryngen azen pe biheest  
for zyt altyel & he y<sup>e</sup> is to comyge  
shal come: & he shal not tarie  
for my nylt ma lynes of fery: y<sup>e</sup>  
if he wrydaway hi oul: he shal  
not plese to my soule: but we  
ben not pe sones of wrydaway  
away into perdition: but of fery  
into getyng of soule. **¶ C. 21. 11**

**B**ut fery is pe substance of  
pyns pat ben to be hopid:  
& an argumet of pyns not  
apperige: and in pis fery: elde me  
han getu witnessis: bi fery we  
vndirstoden y<sup>e</sup> pe wordis were ma  
ad bi godis word: y<sup>e</sup> vifible pyns  
were maid of vifible pyns: bi  
fery: abel offryde a moche more sa  
crifice yam caym to god: bi whi  
he gat witnessis to be nylt: for  
god bar witnessis to hile zittis:  
& bi pat fery: he deed speky zyt:  
bi fery enok was tullaad: y<sup>e</sup> he  
shulde not se dey: & he was not  
foundu: for pe lord tullaad hi: for  
bi fore tullaad: he hadde witness  
is: y<sup>e</sup> he pleide god: & it is ym  
possible: to plese god wrynte fery:  
for it bihouey y<sup>e</sup> amā comyge to  
god bilene: y<sup>e</sup> he is: & y<sup>e</sup> he is reser  
ued to me pat seken hi: 28 y<sup>e</sup> fery  
mo drede pyn: answer taku: of  
pes pyns y<sup>e</sup> zyt were not seyn: &  
ithapide alystip: into pe heele of  
his hors: bi whi he dyspene pe  
world: & is ordeyned en of ryzt wyl  
nelle which is bi fery: bi fery: he  
pat is clepid abrahā: obeyde to  
go out into a place: which he shul  
de take into eritage: & he wete  
out: not wryte whidur he shul  
de go: bi fery he dwelte in pe lond  
of biheste as man alien lond: dwel  
lige in lytel housis wy ihar: &  
jacob euene cyas of pe same bi  
heeste: for he abood a citee hary  
ge foundemētis: whos crafty man  
& maker is god: bi fery also pe ille  
sara bareyn: took vertyt i cōsey  
nyng of seed: she azen of pe tyme  
of age: for she bileneid hi trewe  
y<sup>e</sup> hadde bihst: for which pyn of

con & zyt nylt deed y<sup>e</sup> ben born as ster  
ris of heuene in multitudine: & as  
grauel y<sup>e</sup> is at pe see hde out of  
noybe: bi fery alle pelye ben deed:  
whi pe biheestis were not ca  
fu: but pe biheeste hem afer: &  
greetyng wele: & knowledide  
pat pei were pilgris & her bond  
me on pe erpe: & pei y<sup>e</sup> syen pes  
pyns: hignificu y<sup>e</sup> pei sechen a cū  
tree: if pei hadden had mynde of  
pe ille of whi pei wente out: pei  
haddē tyme of turnyng azen: but  
nois pei desyren abettu: y<sup>e</sup> is to  
seye heuēly: y<sup>e</sup> for god is not con  
foundid: to be clepid pe god of he  
for he made redy to he a citee: bi  
fery abrahā offryde ihar: whi  
he was teptid: & he offryde pe oon  
bigettu: which hadde take pe bi  
heestis: to who it was seid: for  
in ihar pe seed shal be clepid to  
pee: for he dempe y<sup>e</sup> god is my  
ty to reyle hy: zhe fro dey: wher  
fore he took hy also into a para  
ble: y<sup>e</sup> fery also of pyns to co  
myge: ihar blestide: jacob dyngē:  
blestide alle pe sones of joseph:  
& onoured pe hynelle of his zerd:  
bi fery joseph dyngē: hadde my  
de of pe passyng fory of pe childe  
of irael & comaudide of his bo  
nes: bi fery moyses born was hnd  
pre moneris of his fadur & mo  
dur: for y<sup>e</sup> pei syen pe zong childe  
fayz: & pei drede not pe maude  
met of pe kyg: bi fery: moyses  
was maid greet: & dempe y<sup>e</sup>  
he was pe sone of faraos donz  
ty: and chees moze to be tur  
metid wy pe peple of god: pa  
to hane myzpe of tēporal hynē  
dempe pe reprof of est: moze

Jacob &  
elau: bi  
fery

richellis: pan pe tresouris of  
egyptians: for he biheeld into  
pe rewardeyng: bi fery he forsook  
egypt: & drede not pe hardnes  
se of pe kyg: for he abood al see  
yngē hi pat was vifible: bi fery  
he halewde passyng & pe shedis out  
of blood: y<sup>e</sup> he y<sup>e</sup> distrepe pe fū  
te pyns of egyptians: shulde not  
touche he: bi fery pei passide pe  
reed see as bi dype lond: which  
pyn egyptians asayinge weren  
denouid: bi fery: pe walkis of je  
rico felde don: bi aipallige of seuē  
ne dapes: bi fery raab hoore ressey  
nade pe alpienis wy pees: & pe  
rythide not wy: vifiblestul me:  
& whi zyt shal i seie: for tyme  
shal fayle to me tellige of jede  
on: barak: gālon: septe: dāny  
& samuel & of ope profetis: whi  
che bisey oikame reymes wryng  
ten ryzt wrynele gaten repro  
uillions: pei shapide pe monyis  
of lyous: pei quenched pe ferl  
nelle of fier: pei dzyuede a wep  
pe egge of fiverd: pei koneride  
of siknelle pei were maid strōg  
in batel: pei turnede pe oostis  
of aliens: wrymen resseyuede  
her deede children fro dey to lyf:  
but ope were holdu fory not ta  
kyge redēpcioun: y<sup>e</sup> pei shulden  
fynde a bettre azen yfhyng: & ope  
asayede stoungis & betyngis: mo  
re on & bondis & plous: pei were  
stouyd: pei were sauid: pei we  
re teptid: pei were deed i slepyng  
of fiverd: pei wente aboute in  
brot stynis: & i lēpnes of greet ne  
dy: angwylid: turnetid: to whi  
che pe world was not wrypi: pei  
erride in wildrnesses: i moutris



þe dēms & canes of þe erpe: & alle  
þese þreynþ by wīnneþ of fey:  
token not reþromyþliou: for god  
pur neþede gū bettre þiþ for us:  
þ þei ſþulde not be maad þar  
þy wipoute us. **¶ C. xx.**

**T**herfore we þat han so  
greet a clove of wīnneþ  
his þint to: do we alwer al  
charge & sþne stouðige a  
þoute us: & bi þacience rene  
we to þe þareil þpolid to us: bi  
holdige into þe make of fey  
& þe þar þy ender ihu: which  
whāne ioye was þpolid to hi  
he ſuffride þe croſſ: & diþnede  
confuſion: And litþy on þe riþt  
hale of þe ſete of god: and bi  
þenke þe on hi þ ſuffride ſuch  
aþen ſeyng of ſynful mē aþen  
hy ſilf: þ þe be not maad wery.  
þaylige in þour ſouls: for þe aþe  
þooden not 3it til to blood: þizige  
aþen sþne: & þe han forþete þe  
confort þ ſþeky to þou as to ſo  
nes & ſey: my ſone nyle þou diþpyle  
þe techyng of þe lord: neþ be þ maad  
wery: þe while þou art chaſtliþ  
of hi: for þe lord chaſtly þi þat  
he loneþ: he bety euy ſone: þat  
he reſſeyney: aþide þe ſtulle in ch  
aſtlyg: god þrofer þi to þou  
al to ſoues: for what ſone is it:  
whom þe ſadur chaſtly not: þ  
if þe ben out of chaſtlyg: whos  
þarteneris be þe alle maad: þāne  
þe ben anowtreris & not ſoues:  
& aſturward. we haðde ſadur of  
our fleiþly techeris: & we wip re  
uerēce dzedde hem: wher not moþe  
more we ſþulen obeidþe to þe ſa  
dus of ſþiritis: & we ſþulen lyne:  
& þei in tyme of ſewe dapes: tanþ

ten vs bi her wille: but þis ſadur  
techy to þat þiþ þat is þ ſþable:  
i reſſeyng þe hale wip of þim:  
& ech chaſtlyg in þreſent tyme: þe  
mey to be not of ioye but of ſor  
we: but aſturward it ſþal zelle  
þrynt of ryzlyþneſſe moof þee  
hble: to mē exerciſid bi it: for wh  
ich þiþ reile þe ſloue hondis: &  
þnees vnbondū: & make þe riþt  
ful ſteppis to þour feet: þ no mā  
þaſtlyg erre: but moze be heeliþ  
þuwe þe þees wip alle mē & þoþ  
lyneſſe: wipoute which uo mā  
ſþal ſe god: biholde þe þ no mā  
þayle to þe grace of god: þ no wo  
te of bitterneſſe: but ioye  
upward lette: & manþe be deſou  
lid bi þit: þ no mā be lechþ eþur  
vnhoolþ as elan: which for o mete  
þelte his firſte þiþis for wite þe  
þat aſturward. he couerþe: to en  
erite bleſſig: was reþreynþ for  
he foud not place of penaþce: þou  
he ſouþte it wip teeris: but þe han  
not come to: & to þe wþn lewþnd  
& myþt & tempeſt & ſolū of trū  
þe: & vois of wordis: which þei  
þ herte exculde hem: þ þe word  
ſþulde not be maad to þe: for þei  
þare not: þ þat was ſeud: & if  
a beſt touchde þe hyl: it was ſaw  
ned: & ſo dzedde ful it was: þ was  
ſeyn þ moþles ſeyde: i am aſerid.  
& ful of treimþlyg: but þe han co  
mū mþ to þe hyl syon: & to þe cite  
of god þyngþe: þe heuenly ierþin.  
& to þe wīrtude of many þouſad  
aūgels: & to þe church of þe fir  
ſte mē: which ben wīrtū i heu  
nes: & to god comeliþ of alle: &  
to þe ſþirit of wīl þarfit mē: & to  
ihu mediatoir: of þe newe teſta

A þe fier able to be touchid & able to  
come to.

met: & to þe ſþrengyng of blood.  
beþe ſþekyge van abel: Se þe þ  
ze forlake not þe ſþeker: for if  
þei þ forſaken hy þ ſþak on þe er  
þe aſtapue not: moþe moze we  
þ turuen aþey fro hy þ ſþeky  
us to fro heuenes: whos vois þā  
ne monede þe erpe: but not þe  
aþen bi þet þ ſey: 3it onys & i  
ſþal moue not onky erpe: but  
allo heuene: & þ he ſey 3it onys:  
he deſclary þe tūllacion of mona  
ble þiþis as of maad þiþis: þ þoþ  
gis diſelle: þ ben vmonable: þ for  
we reſſeyngþe þe þigdom vmo  
uable han we grace: bi which  
ſerne we þleþige to god wip dzed  
& reuerēce: for our þis fier þ wāþy.

**T**he charite of **¶ C. xxi.**  
þ þer hed diſelle in þou: &  
nyle þe forþete hoſpitalite  
for bi þis: ſū mē þleþiden to aūge  
his þwerē reſſeyned to her þouen:  
þenke þe on þouidū mē: as þe we  
re to gūdre þouidū & of trauchge  
mē: as þe ſilf diſellunge i þe bo  
dy weddigis i alle þiþis hoūdale:  
& bed vnbemþd: for god ſþal de  
me forþycatouris & anowtris  
be þoure maues wipoute come  
tyſe: apayed wip þreſent þiþis  
for þe ſeide: i ſþal not leene þee.  
neþy forſake: ſo þ we ſeye trū  
tly: þe lord is an helþer to me:  
i ſþal not dzedde: what amā ſþal  
do to me: han þe mýde of þoure  
loueyns þat han ſþokū to þou þe  
word of god of which biholde þe  
þe goþyng out of þyngþ: & ſubþe  
þe þe ſey of hem ihu cū iſtaday  
& to day: he is allo into worldis: my  
le þe be led aþey: wip dūle techy  
gis & aūge: for it is beſt to ſta

ble þe herte wip grace: & not w  
metis: which þrofitede not to  
mē wandzige in þe: we han an  
aūter of which þei þ ſerue to þe  
tabernacle: han not þouer to  
ete: for of which bectis þe blood  
is boꝝn yn þe ſyne into hooly þiþis  
bi þe biſþop: þe bodies of hem be  
þrent wipoute þe caſtels: for wh  
ch þiþ: ihu þ he ſþulde halewe  
þe þeple bi þis blood: ſuffride wip  
oute þe jate: þ þe go we out to  
hi wipoute þe caſtels: þerige þis  
reþreþ: for we han not here a ci  
tee diſellige: but we ſeken a cite  
to comþge: þ þe bi þi offere we  
a ſaþce of herþyng euen moze  
to god: þ is to ſeye: þe fruyt of  
lypis knowleþing to his name:  
& nyle þe forþete wel doþyng & co  
mynþg: for bi ſuche ſacrifices  
god is diſſeruyd obeþe þe to þour  
ſuffreyngs: & be þe ſugēt to hem:  
for þei þarþtly waken: as to þel  
dige reſon for þe ſouls: þ þei do  
þis þiþ wip ioye: & not ſozwige:  
for þis þiþ ſþedry not to þou þre  
re þe for us: and we trūþe: þ we  
han good conſtrēce in alle þiþis  
willige to lyne wel: moze ouer  
i biſeþe þou to do: þ þe be reſto  
rid þe ſimeþ to þou: & god of þees  
þ ledde out fro deþy þe greet þh  
eþard of ſþeep in þe blood of ei  
laſtlyg teſtameþt oure lord ihu cū.  
ſþape þou in al good þyng: þ þe do  
þe wille of hi: & he do in þou þ þiþ  
þ ſþal þleþe biþore þy: bi þi cū.  
to who be gloꝝe to world of world: am  
and þriþen i þreþe þou: þ þe ſuf  
fre aūord of ſolace: for bi ful fe  
we þiþis i hanē wīrtū to þou þou  
we þe oure þroper tyme þe þis



send. & forþ: wip whom if he  
shal come more hastily. I shal  
se you greete & wel alle your go  
neyus: & alle hooly me. ye bryde  
of ytalie greete you wel. ye  
gite of god be wip you alle amē.  
**Here endyþe þe pistle to the  
vntis: & bigynneþe þe prolog on  
þe actis of apostles.**  
**A**ntioche of þe nacioun  
of syrie whos preliþig is teeld  
i þe gospel: at antioche he was a  
woxþi mā of leche craft. & after  
ward a discipule of cristis apostles  
& sinbele pouil þe apostle. he seruyd  
de god i mayntēhod wip oute blame.  
& whāne he was four. thore zeer  
old & four. he dyede i bythynne ful  
of þe hooly gost. & he pur. aung. of  
þe hooly gost in þe coostis of acaye  
wroot þe gospel to feirful grekis.  
& thewre þe incarnation of þe lord  
by a trewe tellig. & thewre also þe  
was come of þe kynrede of dāny  
to hi not wōnte desert wōtoun po  
wer. to wite þe doyngrs of þe apol  
this ther mynistie. y god beige fuli  
god whiche þe lone of pñon was  
deed. & þe apostles hadde maad her pi  
er pur. lot of þe lordis electioun. þe  
noubr of þe apostles wer. fulfild  
& also þe pouil shuldē ceden þe doyngrs  
of þe apostles whō þe lord hadde cho  
si. y long tyme wylde azen þe pe  
ke. and to þe patrede & lechen god  
he wolde thewre it. bi short tellig  
raper þa thewre forþ ony þig mo  
ze lenger to hem þe wlatēp longe  
þigis. knowyge þe bihōney þe ti  
lyer. y wōchþ. to ete of his owne  
fruytis. and he foond so moche g  
ce of god. y not only his medyc  
ne pfitete to bodies. but also þe

sonhs. **Jerom in his prolog:**  
**On þis booke seruyþe**  
**Deofle first.**  
**I** made a sermon of  
alle þigis þe shi by  
gan to do & to teche into þe day  
of his assencion. & whiche he comā  
dite: bi þe hooly gost. to hile exol  
this whiche he hadde chosē to whi  
che he shewide hy. ilk a hūe. af  
ter his passiou by many argu  
metis. apperige to hem for ty  
dages. & speke of þe reuēme of  
god. and he eet wip þe comādi  
de y þe shuldē not departe fro ie  
rlm. but abyde þe biheeste of þe  
fadir. whiche ze herden he seide hi  
my moyn for john baptiste m  
watur. but ze shule be bapti  
sed in þe hooly gost. after þes fe  
we dages. þerfore þe pat we  
re comū to gidre. axiden hy &  
seyde. lord whēyr in þis tyme  
you shalt restoze þe kyngdom of  
rael. & he seide to hem. it is not  
your to knowe þe tyme epr  
momētis. whiche þe fadir hap  
pit i his powir. but ze shule  
take þe vertu of þe hooly gost  
comyge fro aboue into you. &  
ze shule be my wntnessis i ie  
rlm. & in al iudee & samarie. &  
to þe vtmoste of þe erpe. & whā  
ne he hadde seid þes þigis. in  
her ex. he was lyft up. & a clo  
de resseynede hi fro þe erzen.  
& whiche þe bihelden hi goynge  
into heuene. lo akey me stood  
biþdis he in whi doryg. & seide.  
men of galile. what stonde ze  
biholdige into heuene. þis shi  
whiche is takē up fro you into  
heuene. shal come. as ze sauen

hi goynge into heuene. yāne þe  
tinneden azen into ierlm fro þe  
hil y is clepid of olyuete. whiche  
is biþdis ierlm an halydages  
þerney. & whiche þe werē mto  
into þe hous wher þe dwellede.  
þe wente up into þe soler. þe  
& john. james & andreu. philip  
& thomis. bartilmeu & mathen.  
james of alpher & symound zelote.  
& judas of james. alle þes werē  
lastyngly cōteynge wip o wille  
in preier. wip wyman & marie  
þe modir of ihu. & wip his bry  
en. in þe dages þe tre roos up  
in þe myddel of lepen. & seide.  
þe was a cūpany of me to gidre  
al meet an hūad & tūenty  
bryen it bihōney y þe scriptu  
re be fulid. whiche þe hooly gost  
bifore seide bi þe moyn of dāny.  
of judas þat was letere of þe  
y token ihu. & was noubrid a  
mog us. & gat a part of þis  
seruyse. & þis judas hadde a fe  
eld of þe hyze of wathdnesse.  
& he was hangid. & to barst þe  
myddel. & alle his entrails we  
ren stred abrood. & it was mō  
knowē to alle mē y dwelten  
i ierlm. & y þe ilke feeld was  
clepid acheldemak i þe langa  
ge of þe. y is þe feeld of blood.  
& it is wrytē in þe booke of sal  
mes. þe habitacioun of þe be  
maad desert. & be y noon þat  
dwelle in it. & any take his  
bilthopriche y for it bihōney  
of þes mē þat be gade.  
rid to gidre wip us in  
al þe tyme. i whiche þe lord  
ihu entride & wente out am  
ong vs. & bigan fro þe bap

tym of john til into þe day wh  
ich he was takē up fro us. y  
oon of þese be maad a wntel  
se of his resurreccion wip vs. &  
þe ordeynede tūeyne. joleph  
y was clepid barlabas. y was  
named nūt. & math. & þe prei  
ede. & seide. you lord y knowst  
þe hertis of alle mē. thewre wō  
you hast chosē of þes tūeyne.  
y oon take þe place of þis seruy  
se & apostilhed. of whiche judas  
tretpasside. y he shuldē go into  
his place. & þe zauen lottis to  
he. & þe lott felde on math. & he  
was noubrid wip entēne apolth.  
**A**d whiche þe. **¶ C. ij.**  
dages of pentecost we  
ren fulid. alle þe disciples  
werē to gidre i þe same place.  
& suddenly y was maad a soyn  
fro heuene. as of a greet wynd  
comyge. & it fulid al þe hous.  
where þe laten. & dyuerse tū  
gis as fyer apperiden to þe. & it  
sat on ech of hem. & alle weren  
fulid wip þe hooly gost. & þe by  
gimen to speke dyuerse langa  
gis. as þe hooly gost gaf to hem  
for to speke. & þe werē in ierlm  
dwellige ierms religiouse men.  
of ech nacioun y is vndir heuene. &  
whiche þis vois was maad. þe m  
titude cam to gidre. & þe werē  
a stomped in pouit. for ech man  
herde þe speke. i þis langage.  
& alle werē astonped. & wōdrde  
& seide to gidre. wher not alle þes  
þat speke be men of galile. and  
how herde we ech mā þis langa  
ge in whiche we ben bozn. þat  
dñ & medy & elampye. & þe pat  
dwellen at mesopotamy. iudee



capodocie & pontie & alie. fri  
gie & pamphie. egipt. & pe par  
ties of libie. y is aboue sirenen.  
& comelgis romayns & ierhis  
& prolelmis me of crete & of  
arabie. we han herd he speke  
in our langagis pe grete pui  
gis of god & alle weren a stoupi  
ed: & wondred & seide to gidre  
what wole pis pig be: & ope  
stornede & seide: for pes me be  
ful of must: but pete stood wip  
pe enleuene: & rehide up his  
vois & spak to he: ze ierhis & al  
le pat diuella at ierhu: be pis  
knowu to you: & wipceris per  
seyne ze my wordis: for not as  
ze uene pes ben drinhu: wha  
ne it is pe pride our of pe day  
but pis it is: & was seide bi pe  
pfete Joel: & it shal be in pe las  
te dayes pe lord seip: & shal hee  
de out my spirit on ech fleuth:  
& your sones & your donys sh  
ule pfectie: & your zounge shule  
be vilious: & your eldres shule  
dreme liuenenes: & on my ser  
uautis: & on my handmaydes.  
i po dayes: & shal shede out of  
my spirit: & pei shulen pfectie  
& shal zyne grete wondris  
in heuene aboue & signes i er  
pe bmepe: blood & fyre & heete  
of smoke: pe lime shal be tun  
ned into blood: bifore y pe greet  
pe appyn day of pe lord come:  
& it shal be: ech ma which enei  
shal clepe to help pe name of  
pe lord: shal be saaf. **A**ze me of  
nalsareth a ma preiup of god  
bifore you bi dries & wondris

& tokenes. which god dide bi hi  
in pe myddel of you as ze witte  
ze turmetide & lilleden hi bi pe  
hondis of wickid me: bi counsil  
dermyned. & bitak bi pe for kno  
wying of god. whom god rehide:  
whie forwis of helle were vn  
bound bi pat y it was ipossible  
y he wer holdu of it: for damp  
seny of hi. I sanz afer pe lord bi  
foze me euer more: for he is on  
my rythalf: y be not moued  
for pis pig my herte ioyede & my  
tuge made fulout ioye: & more  
ouer my fleish shal reide i hope  
for you shal not leue my soule  
in helle: ney you shal zyne pui  
hooky to be corrupcion: you shal  
mand knowu to me pe weyes  
of lyf: y shal fille me in myz  
pe my pi face: bypen be it lef  
ful boldy to seie to you of pe pa  
triark: for he is deid & buried:  
his sepulchre is amog us into pis  
dape: pfoze whie he was a pro  
fete: & wite y wip a greet oop  
god hadde liuorn to hi y of pe firu  
it of his leende: shulde con sette on  
his seete: he seynge afer spak of  
pe reliuexion of et: for ney he  
was left in helle: ney his fleish  
or corrupcion: god rehide pis  
shu: to who we alle ben wituells:  
pfoze he was enhauid bi pe ruy  
hond of god: & pui ze biheeste  
of pe hooky gof: y he took of pe fa  
dur: he shede out pis spirit pat  
ze seen & heere: for damp stude  
net: into heuene: but he seip pe  
lord seide to my lord: sette  
pon on my rythalf: til y  
putte pui euemyes: pe fool of  
pi feet: pfoze moost certeynly

wite al pe hous of nael: y god ma  
de hi bore lord & et: pis ihu who  
ze crucified: whie pei herde pes  
pigs: pei were copuic in herte  
& pei seiden to petre: & to ope a  
posthis: bypen: what schulen  
we do: & petre seide to hem: do  
ze penance & ech of you be bap  
tisd in pe name of ihu crist: into  
remysion of your synes: & ze  
shulen take pe zifte of pe hooky  
goft: for pe biheest is to you &  
to your sones & to alle y ben fer:  
which enei our lord god hap de  
pid: also wip ope wordis ful ma  
nye he witnesside to he: & mo  
nestide to hem & seide: be ze sa  
ued fro pis shpewid generaci  
on: yane pei pat releyuede his  
word: were baptisd: & in pat day  
sonhs were encreellid: aboute  
pe poulande: & were lastige sta  
bly in pe techig of pe aposthis: &  
in pe comynyg of pe heekig of  
breed & in ppeperis: & drede was  
mand to ech ma: & many won  
dis & signes: were don bi pe  
aposthis i ierhu: & greet drede  
was in alle: & alle y bileueden  
were to gidre: & hadde alle pui  
gis comyne: pei seide posselions  
& castel: & departide po pigs to  
alle me: as it was nede to ech:  
& ech day pei dwellede  
stably wip o wille in pe  
temple: & bzake breed aboute  
houles: & toke mete wip ful  
out ioye & explenesse of herte:  
& heride to gidre god: & hadde g  
te to al pe folk: & pe lord etreel  
fide he: y were ind saif e  
che day to pe same pig:  
**A**ld pete & john: **C. m.**

wente up ito pe temple: at pe  
nyne our of ppeying: & a ma  
pat was lame fro pe wombe of  
his modr: was born: & was leid  
ech day at pe zate of pe temple:  
is leid sayz: to are almes of me  
y entriden into pe temple: pis  
whie he sayz pete: & john bigg  
myge for to entre ito pe temple:  
preiede y he shulde take almes:  
& petre wip john biheeld on hy:  
& seide: bihold y into us: & he bi  
heeld into he: & hopide y he sh  
ulde take su what of hem: but  
pete seide: I hane ney siluer  
ne gold: but pat y I hane: & zyne  
to pee: in pe name of ihu crist  
of nalsareth: ryle you up & go:  
& he took hi bi pe rythond & he  
wyde hi up: & anon his leggis &  
his feet were sondid to gidre: &  
he leppide & stood: & wandride: &  
he entride wip he into pe temple:  
& wandride & leppide & heriede  
god: & al pe peple syz hi walki  
ge & herynge god: & pei knewe  
hi: y he it was y sat at almes  
at pe farr zate of pe temple: & pei  
were fillid wip wondryg: & sto  
nyg: in pat pig y bifelde to  
hi: but whie pei syzen pete  
& john: al pe peple ran to hem  
at pe porche y was depid of sa  
lomon: & wondride greet  
ly: & petre syz: & auferide to  
pe peple: men of nael: what  
wondren ze i pis pig eyr:  
what biholden ze us: as bi our  
vertu ey power: we made pis  
ma for to walke: god of abra  
hu & god of Isaac & god of Jacob:  
god of our fadris: hap glorified  
his sone ihu: who ze bitrapede:



denyede bifore pe face of pilat  
whiche he denyede hi to be dehy  
nerid but ze denyede pe hooly  
e pe ryghtful. & afide amall leet  
to be zoun to zoun & ze slowe pe  
maker of lyf. whom god rey  
fide fro deap of who we ben wh  
nellis & pe fep of his name.  
he hay cofermid yis ma who  
ze deen & knowe pe name of  
hi & yis by hi. zat to yis man  
ful heeche in pe fyt of alle zoun  
& now bypen y woot. y bi vial  
tyng ze dide as allo zoun. pnces  
but god y bifore tolde bi pe mo  
up of alle profetis. y his crut  
thulde enffre. hay fillid so y  
fore be ze repentant & be ze co  
uertid. y zoun. fynes be dona  
way. y whiche pe tymes of re  
frenting thulen come fro pe  
syt of pe lord. & he thal fode  
pulle ihu cit y is now prechid  
to zoun who it bifouney heuene  
to resleyne. into pe tymes of  
restruccion of alle yigis. wh  
ch pe lord spak bi pe monp of  
his hooly pfetis fro pe world  
for moyses seide for pe lord zoun  
re god thal reile me to zoun  
a profete of zoure bypen. as  
me ze thule heer hy by alle pi  
gis. what eu he thal speke to  
zoun. & it thal be y eny  
ma y thal not heer pe ilke p  
fete. thal be destryped fro pe pe  
ple. & alle pfetis fro sam  
nel. & afen pat spaken. teelden  
pes dapes but ze ben pe lones  
of pfetis. & of pe testamet pat  
god ordeynede to our fadris. &  
seide to abrahim in y seed. alle  
pe meynes of erpe thule be

blefid god reilde his lone first  
to zoun. & sente hi bleffige zoun  
y ech ma coite hi. fro his wic  
kednesse. **A**nd while pei spake to  
pe peple. pe prestis & ma  
gistratis of pe temple & pe saduce  
es came up on hem & forweden  
y pei tanzie pe peple. & telde  
in ihu pe agemtyng fro deap  
& pei leyde hondis on he. & putte  
den hem ito ward ito pe moxte  
for it was pane euentyd but  
many of hem y hadden herd pe  
word. bileuede & pe noubre of  
me was maid fyue poulandis  
& a moxte it was don. y pe pi  
cis of he & pe eldze me & tribis  
were gedrid i ierlm & anas. pi  
ce of prestis & capfas & john &  
ahilandre. & how many eue we  
re of pe kynde of prestis & pe  
lettide he in pe mydel. & afide  
in what tye in what name.  
han ze doon yis yig. y pane pe  
re was fillid wy pe hooly go  
ost. & seide to he ze pncis of pe  
peple and ze eldze me. heere  
ze. if we to day be demyd in pe  
good dede of a sylk man. i who  
yis ma is maid laf. be it kno  
wn to zoun alle. & to al pe peple  
of irael. y in pe name of ihu  
cit of na. & areth whom  
ze crucified. whom god  
reilde fro deap. in yis. pi. ma  
stondy hool. bifore zoun yis is  
pe stoon. which was repperid  
of zoun bildige. which is maid  
into pe heed of pe corner. and  
heeche is not in ony oyr. for  
nep of name vndir heuene  
is zoun to me. i which it bisho

ney us to be maid laf. & pei sy  
en pe stidfastnesse of petre &  
of iohu. for it was fouden pat  
pei were me vilettrid & lelid  
me. & pei wondrid & kneiben  
he y pei were wy ihu. & pei  
syzen pe ma y was heehd ston  
dige wy hem. & pei myzte no  
yis agensepe but pei comandi  
den hem to go forp wyoute pe  
coucel. & pei spaken to gidge  
& seiden. what thulen we do to  
pes me. for pe signe is maid  
knouyn bi he. to alle me y dnel  
len at ierlm. it is apyn. & we  
mouyn not denye but y it be  
no more puyfullid into pe pe  
ple. manafe we to he. y pei spe  
ke no more in yis name to ony  
me. & pei clepde he. & denouce  
den to he. y on no man yi stul  
den speke. nep teche in pe name  
of ihu. but petre & john answe  
riden. & seiden to hem. if it be  
ryghtful in pe fyt of god to heer  
zoun rayn pan god. deme ze. for  
we mote nedis speke po yigis.  
pat we han seyn & herd. & pei  
manafiden & leften hem. & fou  
den not how pei thulde pony  
the he. for pe peple. for alle me  
clarifide pat yig. y was don i  
pat y was bifalle. for pe man  
was more pa of fourty zeer.  
i which yis ligue of heeche was  
maid. & whiche pei were dehy  
ed yei came to her felous  
& teelde to he. how grete yigis  
pe pnces of prestis & pe eldze  
me hadde seid to he. & whiche  
pei herde wy don herte pei rei  
leden vons to pe lord. & seide. lord  
pou pat madist heuene & erpe

se & alle yigis y ben in he. wh  
ich seidist bi pe hooly gost bi pe  
monp of oure fadir dany y ch  
ild. whiche heepe me gnastiden wy  
teep to gidge. & pe peplis pouz  
ten. veyn yigis. yigis of pe erpe  
stode wy. & pnces come to gidge  
in oon agens pe lord pe lord. & a  
gens his cit. for verily eroude  
& pouce pilat wy hepen men  
& peplis of irael came to gidge  
in yis citee agens yin hooly child  
ihu whom pou anoyntidest. to do  
pe yigis y yin hond & y coucel  
demede to be don. & now lord bi  
hold into pe pretenyngis of he  
& graute to y seruantis to spe  
ke y word wy al trust. i y yig  
y pou holde forp yin hond y hee  
yis & signes & wondris be ma  
ad. bi pe name of yin hooly lone  
ihu. & whiche pei hadden preied.  
pe place was moued. in which  
pei were gaderid. & alle were  
fillid wy pe hooly gost. & spa  
ke pe word of god wy trust. &  
of pe mltitude of me bileyge.  
was con herte & oon wille. nep  
ony ma seide ony yigis of po  
yigis. y he weeldide to be his  
owne. but alle yigis were co  
myne to hem. & wy greet. & bi  
pe apostlis zeldide witneslig.  
of pe agemtyng of ihu cit out  
lord. & greet grace was i alle  
hem. for nep ony uedy man  
was amog he. for how many  
ener weren possessoris of  
feeldis eyr of housis. pei sel  
den & byouzte pe pris of po y  
gis y pei selde & leyde bifore  
pe feet of pe apo. thas. & it  
was departid. to ech. as it



was nede to ech forsoye joseph  
was named bar sabas of apost  
his y is to sepe ye lone of confort  
of ye lynage of leeny amā of ci  
pre. whne he hadde a feeld solde  
it & brouzte ye pis. & leide it bi  
fore ye feet of aposthis. **C. v.**

**B**et amā anany bi name  
whi sathra his wyf. sol  
de a feeld & defraunde of  
ye pns of ye feeld & his wyf was  
writige & he brouzte a part & lei  
de before ye feet of ye aposthis.  
petre seide to hi. z many whi  
hap sathanas tēptid ym herte y  
yon lye to ye hooly goost. & to de  
frande of ye pns of ye feeld.  
wher it vnselid was not ym. &  
whne it was seeld it was i ppo  
wer. whi hast yon putt yis pig  
in ym herte. y hast not lyed to  
me. but to god. anany herde res  
wordis. & felde dolu & was ded.  
z greet drede was maid on alle y  
herde. z zonge me risen & moue  
de hi awep. & baren hi out & buri  
de & pere was maid as a spate  
of pre ouris. & his wyf kneiwe  
not pat pig y was don. & entride  
z petre answerte to hir. whōmā  
seie to me. wher ze sellen ye fe  
eld for so moche. & she seide zhe  
for so moche. & petre seide to hir.  
what bifel to zou. to tēpte ye spi  
rit of ye lord. lo ye feet of hem  
y han buried ym holobonde ben  
at ye doze. & ye shulen bere pee  
out. anon she felde dou at his  
feet. & diede. & ye zonge me en  
triden & fōnden hir deed & ye ba  
ren hir out & buri de to hir hōse  
bōnde. and. greet drede was ma  
ad in al ye church. & into

alle y herden res pigis. & bi ye  
hoondis of ye aposthis. signes  
z many wōndis werē maid in  
ye peple. & alle werē of con acord  
in ye porche of salomō. but no  
man of oyr durste ioyne hi sūf  
whi he. but ye peple magnyfiēde  
he. & ye mltitute of me & of whi  
me bileyge in ye lord. was  
more encreesid. so pat yei brou  
zte out syke me into streets.  
z leiden i lūl beddis & couchis.  
whne petre cam nameli ye shi  
dōwe of hi shulde shadōwe ech  
of hem. & yei shulde be deliynd  
fro her syknēss. and ye mlti  
tute of citees nyz to ierlm ran.  
bryngyge syl me & y were tra  
uelid of vndene spyrutis. whiche  
alle weren heeld. but ye pnce of  
prestis roos up. & alle y were  
tōny hi. y is pe erelie of saduce  
is. & were fillid whi enye. & lei  
den hōndis on ye aposthis. & put  
tide he in ye couy warde. but ye  
aūgel of ye lord openyde hy wy  
te ye zatis of ye plou. & leide hy  
out & leide go ze & stonde ze & spe  
ke in ye tēple to ye peple. alle  
ye wordis of pis lūf. whi whne  
pei hadde herd yei entride eerly  
into ye tēple & tēpze. & ye pnce  
of prestis cam & yei y were  
whi hi. & clepide to gōdze ye cōū  
cil. & alle ye eldze me of ye chil  
dren of israel. & senten to ye pri  
lou. pat yei shulde be brouzte for  
z whane yei mynistis cam. fōū  
den he not. & for ye plou was  
openyd. yei turnede awen & fel  
den & leiden. we fōūde ye pri lou  
stitt whi al diligēce & ye kepe  
ris stōndige at ye zatis. but we

openyde. & fōūden no mā y yne  
z as ye manifestatis of ye tēple.  
z ye pnces of pntis herde res wōr  
dis. yei dōnteden of he whi was  
don. but amā cam. & telde to hem  
for lo yo me whiche ze han putt i  
to plou. ben in ye tēple & stonden  
z techen ye peple. pane ye malet  
trat wente whi ye mynistis.  
z brouzte hem whi pnce violence  
for yei dōdēde ye peple. lest yei sh  
ulden be stōned. & whne yei had  
de brouzte he. yei letide hem i ye  
cōūcil. & ye pnce of prestis. ari  
de hem & seide. i comādemēt we  
comāūden zou. y ze shulde not  
teche in yis name. & lo ze han fil  
lid ierlm whi zōm techig. & ze  
wolen bryngē on vs ye blood of  
pis mā. & petre answerte & ye a  
posthis & leiden. it bihōuey to obere  
to god. more pan to me. god of ou  
re fadris reilide ihu whi ze slo  
wen. hangyngē in a tre. god en  
haūcde whi his rythōnd pis pnce  
z laupour. y penaunce wer. zo  
ūū to ill. & remysion of synes.  
z we ben witnessis of res wordis.  
z ye hooly goost. whi god zaf to al  
le obeūthige to hi. whne yei her  
den res pigis. yei were turnen  
tid. & pouzte to sle he. but a man  
ros in ye cōūcil. a farle gama  
hel bi name. a doctour of ye lawe.  
a wōlthpful mā to al ye peple. &  
comāūde ye me to be putt whi  
pnce for. for a while. & he seide  
to hem. ze me of israel take tent  
to zou sūf on res me. what ze sh  
ulen do. for bifore res dāyes. oeo  
das pat seide hi sūf to be sū man.  
to whi anōūze of me consenti  
de. aboute fōū hūdrid. whi whi

slayn. & alle y bileynd to hi. were  
disparpelid & brouzte to nouzt. af  
tir pis. iudas of galile was i ye  
dāyes of pntis. & turnede alker  
ye peple afir hi. & alle hōw many  
eue cōsentide to hi. were statrid  
z he peritide. & nouz pfoze. y seie  
to zou. depar te ze fro res me. &  
anwite ze he. for if yis cōūcil ey  
werk is of me. it shal be vndon.  
but if it is of god. ze mōūn not vū  
do hem. lest pāūctur. ze be fōūdi  
to repugne god. & yei cōsentide  
to hi. & yei depide to gōdze ye apōst  
his. & denōūced to hem y were be  
tū. y yei shulde no more speke i  
ye name of ihu. & yei leere he go.  
z yei wente ioyige fro ye oyr of  
ye cōūcil. y yei were had wōrpi  
to oufrie dispilg. for ye name  
of ihu. but ech day yei ceehiden  
not in ye tēple & aboute hōules.  
to teche & to pteche ihu cū. **C. vi.**

**B**et in yo dāyes. whne ye  
nōūze of distiphs encre  
side. ye grekis grucūde  
men ye ebreis. for y her whidōbi  
were dispilid in eu dāyes my  
nystrige. & ye abelne clepiden  
to gōdze ye mltitute of distiphs  
z leiden. it is not ryzful y we le  
ue ye word of god. & mynistren  
to bozdis. pfoze bryen biholde ze  
me of zou. of good fame. ful of  
ye hooly goost & of wysdom. whi  
che we shulen ordeyne on yis  
werk. for we shulen be biy to  
preier & pteche ye word of god.  
z ye word pleside bifore alle ye  
mltitude. & yei chelide steuene  
amā ful of fery & of ye hooly goost.  
z philyp & pprocoze & nycanor. &  
tymon & parmanam & nicol a







bifore us for to pis moyses p  
ledde us out of pe lond of egypt.  
we write not what is don to hi  
f pei made a calf i po dayes: f  
offride a sacrifice to pe man  
met. f pei were glad in pe wer  
his of her hondis: f god turne  
de f bitook hem to serue to pe  
fnythod of heuene: as it is wri  
tu i pe book of pphetis. wher  
ze hous of israel offride to me.  
slayn sacrifices ey sacrifices  
fourty zeer in desert: f ze han  
take pe tabernacle of moloc f  
pe sterr of zom god renfam.  
figuris p ze han maid to worlde  
pe he f i thal tulle late zom i to  
babylone / pe tabernacle of ut  
nellig was wy ouf fadris in  
desert: as god dispouite to he f  
spak to moyses p he schilde ma  
ke it afair pe fourme pat he say  
which also ouf fadris token wy  
ihū f brouzte into pe possessiō  
of hepe men: which god putti  
de away fro pe face of ouf fa  
dris. til in pe dayes of danny.  
f found grace anetis god: f ar  
ide p he schilde fide a tabernacle  
to god of jacob / but salamo bldide  
pe hous to hi / but pe hys god dwel  
hy not in pigis maid bi hond: as  
he seip bi pe profete / heuene is  
a seete to me. f pe erpe is pe stool  
of my feet / what hous schilde ze  
bplde to me seip pe lord: ey what  
place is of my resting: / wher  
my hond made not alle pes pū  
gis: / wy hard nol f vncircul  
did hertis f eeris ze wptode en  
more pe hooly goost: f as zom fa  
dris so ze / who of pe pfectis ha not  
zom fadris purliued: f han slayn

hem pat bifore teelden of pe conyng  
of pe rythful mā: whos crantys  
f mansleeris ze were nola. wh  
che tooken pe lanpe in ordynance  
of angels: f han not kept it: f  
pei herde pese pigis f were dynt  
ly tūmerid in her hertis. f gren  
netē wy teep on hi / but whne he  
uene was ful of pe hooly goost: he  
biheeld into heuene f ey ze glori  
e of god. f ihū stōdige on pe ryt  
half of pe vertu of god: f he seide  
lo f se heueneis openyd: f māys  
sone stōdige on pe ryt half of pe  
vtn of god: f pei cryede wy agre  
et / voys: f stoppide her eeris. f  
manden wy o wille an alant  
ito hi / and pei brouzte hi out of  
pe citee: f stoonede f pe wntes  
his dide of her cloys. bifidis pe  
feet of azong mā: p was clepid  
saule / and pei stoonede heuene:  
pat clepide god to helpe seynge  
lord ihū resleyue my spūit: f he  
fnehte f cede wy a greet voys f  
seide / lord sette not to he pis syne:  
f whne he hadde seid pis pig: he dede  
**B**ut saul was cō. f vñ  
seynge to his deip f greet  
plectiōn was maid pat  
day i pe chynche p was in ierlm  
f alle me were staterid bi peci  
treis of jude f samarie: outta  
fū pe aposths / but good me bi  
riete heuene: f mādē greet mo  
nyg on hy / but saul greetly dis  
trypede pe chynche f entride bi hou  
sis: f drowte me f wpmē. f bi  
took he into pson: f pei f were  
staterid: passide for p. pedyge  
pe word of god. f and filip cam  
dowu into a citee of samarie:  
f pteche to hem cō: f pe pe

ple zat tent to pes pigis f were  
seid of filip: wy o wille heert  
ge f seynge pe signes p he dide  
for manye of he pat hadden vnde  
ne spūit: cryede wy a greet  
voys f wente out: f many lyke  
in pe paleys f crokid were hee  
lid / f fore greet ioye was maid  
in pat citee. **Q**ut p was amā  
in p citee whos name was symo  
id a wyche pat hadde disleyned  
seynge p hi silt was si greet  
mā / whom alle herkene f fro pe  
leete to pe mooste: f seide / pis  
is pe vertu of god: which is de  
pid greet: f pei leuened hy for  
long tyme he hadde maddid hem  
wy his wyche f asis / but whā  
ne pei hadde bileyned to filip p  
pchy of pe kyngdom of god: men  
f wpmen were baptisid i pe na  
me of ihū cō: f pāne allo symonid  
hi silt bileuede: f whāne he was  
baptisid: he drow to filip f he say  
allo signes f greet vtues were  
don: he was a stōyed f wōndri  
de / but whāne pe aposths f were  
at ierlm hadde herd p samarie  
hadde resleyued pe word of god:  
pei sente to hem petre f ioun f  
whne pei came: pei preide for  
he p pei schilde resleyue pe hooly  
goost: for he cam not zū into ony  
of hem: but pei were baptisid oon  
ly in pe name of pe lord ihū: pā  
ne pei seide hondis on he: f pei  
resleyuede pe hooly goost: f whā  
ne symonid hadde seyn: p pe hoo  
ly goost was zom by leyng on  
of hondis of pe aposths: f he pro  
feride to hem money f seide / zy  
ne ze also to me pis powe pat  
whō ever f shal seye on my hon

dis: f he resleyue pe hooly goost  
but petre seide to hi / pi money be  
wey yee into perdition: for pou  
geshiedt pe zitte of god schilde be  
had for money: p is no part ne so  
ort to yee: in pis word for pi her  
te is not rythful bifore god: f fore  
do pou penance for pis wickidnes  
se of yee: f preie god: f pāne  
pis pouzt of pi herte be forzou  
to yee / for f se p pērt i pe galle  
of butirnesse: f in pe bond of wic  
kidnesse: f symonid answerte f  
seide / preie ze for me to pe lord: p  
no pig of pes pigis p ze han seid  
come on me: f pei wntes hie f spa  
ken pe word of pe lord: f zede azen  
to ierlm f pchde to many citrees  
of samaritanis: f an angel of pe  
lord: spak to filip f seide / rise p  
f go azen pe souy to pe weye  
pat goy dou fro ierlm into gala  
pis is desert: f he roos f wente for  
f lo amā of ethiope: a wyrt mā  
seruant ageldyng of candace pe  
queene of ethiopians. which wō  
on alle hy richeslis: cō to wōldh  
pe i ierlm: f he turnede aze lūtige  
in his chare: f redige f laye pe  
profete: f pe spūit seide to filip  
neue p: f ioyne yee to pis chare  
f filip ran to f herde hi redige  
flaye pe pfecte: f he seide / gesht  
p. wher pou vnderstōdist: what  
pigis p redist: f he seide / hōh  
may f if no mā shewe to me: f  
he preide filip: p he schilde come  
w p: f litte wy hi f pe place of pe  
scripture p he redde: was pis  
as a sheep he was lōd to sleyn  
f as a lomb bifore amā p shery  
hi: is dōub wyoute voys: so he o  
penide not his mouy: f me f ewesse



his doom was takē up. Who shal  
telle out pe geshaciō of hi? for  
his luf shal be takē up fro pe  
erpe and pe geldig answere to  
filip: & seide / I bileche pee: of what  
pfece lew he pis pig / of hi self:  
erpe of ony opur: & filip openide  
his moup. & bigan at pis stur:  
& prechide to hi ihu: & pe while pei  
weten bi pe weye: pei came to a  
watir: & pe geldig seide / lo watir:  
who forbedir me to be baptisid: &  
filip seide / if you bilewest of al pe  
herte: it is lechil: & he answere  
& seide / I bilewe p ihu: & it is pe so  
ne of god: & he comāndide pe cha  
re to stonde stille: & pei wenten  
don boye into pe watir. filip & pe  
geldig: & filip baptiside hi: & whā  
ne pei were come up of pe watir:  
pe spirit of pe lord raupsthitte fi  
hp: & pe geldig: & p hy no more:  
& filip was found in aetotus: &  
he passide forp: & pchide to alle ci  
tees: til he cam to cesarie. **C. 12.**

**B**ut saul at abloner of  
manalis & of betigis a  
zens pe distiphs of pe lo  
rd: cam to pe pnce of prestis: & at  
ide of hi letris ito damalk to pe  
synagogis: p if he found ony mē  
& wyme of pis luf: he shulde le  
de he bound to ierlm: and whne  
he made his journey: it bifelde  
p he cam ny to damalk: & sude  
ly a lxt fro heuene shoon abou  
te hi: & he fallde to pe erpe: & her  
de a vois seynge to hi: saul saul  
what pursuest p me: & he seide  
who art thou lord: & he seide / I am  
ihu of nazareth: whom p puest  
it is hard to pee: to like aens pe  
pfece: & he tremblde & wondide:

& seide / lord what wolt you par  
do: & pe lord seide to hi: rise up & en  
tre into pe citee: & it shal be seid  
to pee: what it bihouey pee to do:  
& yo mē p weten wip hi: stoden  
astonyed: for pei herde abois: but  
pei ezen no mā: & saul roos fro pe  
erpe: & whne his hen were ope  
nyd: he saiz no pig: & pei drowe  
hi bi pe hondis: & ledde hi into da  
malk: & he was pre dais not seynge:  
& he eet not ne p drank: & adis  
ciple anany bi name: was at  
damalk: & pe lord seide to hi: a  
nysou anany: & he seide / lo lord  
& pe lord seide to hi: ryle pou & go  
into a strete p is clepid rectis:  
& seke in pe hous of judas sau  
le bi name of tharse: for lo he pi  
ep: & he liz amā anany bi name  
entuge & lepye on hi hondis: pat  
he resleyue sxt: & anany answere  
ride / lord I haue herd of manye  
of pis man: how grete yuels he  
dide to pi seynis ierlm: & pis hap  
posser of pe pnces of prestis  
to bynde alle mē p clepen pi na  
me to help: & pe lord seide to hi:  
go p for pis is to me a vessel of  
chelig: p he bere my name bifor  
herē men & figis & tofore pe so  
nes of israel: for I shal theke  
to hi: how grete pigis it biho  
uey hi to suffre for my name:  
& anany wete & entric ito pe  
hous: & leyde on hi his hondis &  
seide / saul broz pe lord ihu sente  
me p xperide to pee in pe weye  
i which p comest: p you se: & be  
fulfild wip pe hoohy gost: & a  
noo as pe dails feld fro his yre:  
he resleyuede sxt: and he roos: &  
was baptisid: & whne he hadde ta

ken mete: he was confortid: & he  
was bi sū dapes wip pe distiphs  
p ibere at damalk: & anoo he en  
trede into pe synagogis: & pch  
de pe lord ihu: for pis is pe sone  
of god: & alle mē pat herde hym  
wondide: & seiden / where pis is  
not he p mpugne i ierlm: hem  
p clepide to help pis name: & hdu  
he cam for pis pig: p he shulde  
lete hem bound to pe pnces of  
prestis: but saul moche pe more  
weride strong: & confounde pe  
weis p dwelld at damalk: & at  
ierlm: p pis is cā: & whne ma  
ny dapes were fillid: ierlm ma  
den a concil p pei shulde sle hy:  
& pe apstis of he were maid kno  
wū to saul: & pei kepte pe zatis  
day: & nyt: p pei shulde sle hi: but  
his distiphs tooken hy bi nyt:  
& deliyde hi & leete hy doibn ma  
leep bi pe wal: & whne he cam i  
to ierlm: he asapde to ioyne hi to  
pe distiphs: & alle dreden: & leue  
de not p he was a distiple: but  
barnabas took & ladde hi to pe  
apostis: & teelde to he / how in  
pe weye he hadde seyn pe lord:  
& p he spak to hi: & how in dam  
alk he dide & taly: i pe name of  
ihu: & he was wip he & entide & ze  
de out i ierlm: & dide & taly in  
pe name of ihu: & he spak wip he  
pen mē: & distipide wip grete  
& pei souste to sle hi: which pig  
whne pe bryen hadde knowe: pei  
ledde hi bi nyte to cesarie: & lete  
hi go to tarlis: & pe churche bi al  
juder & galile & samarie hadde pe  
es: & was edyfyed & walkide i pe  
diete of pe lord: & was fillid w  
confort of pe hoohy gost: & it by

felde: p petre: pe while he passide  
aboute alle: cam to pe hoohy men  
p dwelld at lide: and he found  
anā encas by name p fro exte  
zeer he hadde sepe in bed: & he w  
spt in palye & petre seide to hi:  
Encas pe lord ihu cā heele pee:  
ryle you & arape pee: & anoo he ro  
os: & alle mē p dwellden at lide:  
& at sarone spt hi: which were  
conuertid to pe lord: & in ioye was  
a distipelle whos name was tabi  
ta: p is to seie doxas: pis was ful  
of good werkis & almesdeis pat  
she dide: & it bifel in po dapes: p  
she was syk & diede: & whne pei  
hadden waulthi hir pei leide hir  
i a soler: & for lida was ny ioye  
pe distiphs herde p petre: was per  
yne: and sente ryle mē to hy: &  
preide p you tarie not to come  
to us: & petre roos up: & cam w  
he: & whne he was comm: pei led  
den hi into pe soler: & alle wido  
wis stode aboute hy: wepye &  
theuige cootis & doris: which  
doxas made to he: & whne alle mē  
were pnt wyponte forp: petre  
kneide & preie: & he turnede to  
pe bodie: & seide / tabita ryle you:  
& she openide hir yren: & whne  
she spt petre she saut up & se:  
he took hir bi pe hond: & reside  
hir: & whne he hadde clepid pe hoohy  
mē & widois: he assignede hir  
alyne: & it was maid knowū bi al  
ioyde & manye bileuede in pe lord:  
& it was maid p may dapes he dw  
ellide i ioye: at con hymoud a corio:  
**A**ran was i ce. **C. 13.**  
sarie cornehe by name:  
a centurien of pe cūpanye  
of kyngis p is leid of ytalie: a



religious mā: & dzedige pe lord  
wip al his meyne / doynge many  
almes to pe peple: & preyng  
pe lord enermore / vis layz i a  
visiō openly as i pe nyghte our  
of pe day. an aūgel of god entn  
ge into hy: & seyrge to hi / corne  
lye: & he biheeld hi & was adrad  
& seide / who art þu lord: & he sei  
de to hi / i preieris & pyn alme  
dedis: han lized up into myde  
m pe sūt of pe lord: & now sen  
de þou me into joppe: & clepe  
oon symonit: þu is named pett  
pis is herborid at a man symonit  
cornour: whos hous is bihydis  
pe see / vis schal seye to pee: wist  
it bihouey pee to do: & whne pe  
aūgel þu spak to hi: was gon a  
wey: he clepide aþey me of his  
hous: & a knyzt þu dzedde pe lord:  
whiche weten at his biddis: &  
whne he hadde toold he alle pes  
pīgis: he sente he into joppe: &  
on pe day synge while pei ma  
den journey: & neyete to pe ci  
te: petre wente up in pe hyette  
place of pe hous to preie abou  
te pe lize to our: & whne he was  
hūgrid: he wolde haue ete / but  
while pei made redy: a rann  
sting of spirit: felle on hi: & he  
syz heuene oponyd: & a nelled  
comygge don as a greet scheete  
wip four corneris to be lette  
doun fro heuene ito erpe: i wh  
ich werē alle four footid beest:  
& crepige of pe erpe: & volatils  
of heuene: & a vois was mand  
to hi / ryle þu petre ble & ete: and  
petre seide / lord forbete: for i ne  
uer eet ony comy pig: & vnde  
ne: & eft pe secūde tyme pe vois

was mand to hy / þu pig: rat god  
hay cleuid: seie þou not vnde  
ne: & pis pig: was don bi pres  
& anoon pe vessel was ressepyed  
agen: & while þu petre dountid is  
yne hi sūt what pe visiō was  
þu he syz: lo ye me þu were sent  
fro cornel: soute pe hous of sy  
monit & stood at pe zate: & whne  
pei hadde clepid: pei arde if sy  
monit þu is named petre: hadde  
per herboze: & while petre pouge  
on pe visiō: pe spirit seide to hi  
lo ye me seke þu ffore ryle þou  
& goddū: & go wip he & doun þou  
no pig: for i lēte hem and þe  
cam doun to pe men: & seide / lo  
i am who ze seke: what is pe  
caule: for which ze ben come:  
and þe seide / cornel: pe cōmū  
a nūst man: & dzedde god: &  
hay good carue stīg of alle  
pe folk of je wis: took anker of  
an hooly angel to clepe pe see to  
his hous: & to be wordis of pee  
þu ffore he ledde he yne: & ressepye  
de i herboze: & fupst pei dibelid  
wip hi: & in pe day synge he roo  
& wente forp wip he: & hūme of  
pe berperē solewde hi fro joppe:  
þu pei be witnessis to pett: & pe  
opir day he entride into cesarie  
& cornelie abood he: wip his co  
syns & necessarie frendes rat  
werē clepid to gidre: & it was  
don whne petre was comē in:  
cornelie cam metyge hi: & fell  
doun at his feet: & wozthipid hi  
but pett reistid hi: & seide / a  
ryle þu: also i my sūt am a mā  
as þou: & he spak wip hi: & wote  
yne & fond manye þu were comē  
to gidre: & he seide to he: ze wite

howe abhominable it is to a jew:  
to be joynd: ey to come to a shē  
but god stheride to me: þat no  
man seie aman comē ey vnde  
ne: for which yng: i cam whane  
i was clepid: wip oute dountyng  
þu ffore i afe zon: for what caule  
han ze clepid me: & cōsepe seide  
to day four dayes into vis our: i  
was preyng & fastyge i pe ny  
te our i my hous: & lo a mā stood  
bifore me i a whit clooy: & seide  
cornelie þu pier is herd: & i m  
almes dedis be i mynde i ye sūt  
of god: þu ffore seide þou ito joppe:  
& clepe symonit þu is named pett  
þu is herborid i pe hous of symonit  
cornour: bihydis pe see / vis wha  
ne he schal come: schal speke to  
pee: þu ffore anoo: i sente to pee: &  
þou didist wel in comygge to us  
þu ffore now we alle ben present  
in pi lize to hee: pe wordis what  
ei ben comāidid to pee of pe lo  
rd: and pett apenyde his mouy:  
& seide / in treure i haue foundū:  
þu god is not acceptid of pldons  
but i ech folk he þu dzedid god: &  
worchyng ryzibylle: is accept  
to hi: god sente a word to pe chil  
dre of israel: stherwyge pees by  
ihū cū: pis is lord of alle pigis:  
ze wite pe word: þu is mand þu r  
al judee: & bigan at galile: aft  
pe baptyim þu john prechide: ihū  
of nazareth: how god anoyntid  
hi wip pe hooly gost: & vertū: wh  
ich pallid forp in doynge wel: &  
heelige alle me opprellid of pe  
deuel: for god was wip hi: & we  
ben witnessis of alle pigis: wh  
iche he dide i pe citrepe of je wis  
& of ierlm: whom pei slouke han

gyng i a tre: and god reistid  
pis in pe prude day: & zaf hym  
to be mand knowū: not to alle  
peple: but to witnessis bifore  
ordeyned of god: to us þat eete  
& driken wip hi: aftir þu he roos  
agen fro deap: & he comāidid to  
us to preche to pe peple: & to wit  
nesse þu he it is þu is ordeyned of  
god domel mā of pe knyke: & of  
teede: to pis alle pētis here wit  
nessis: þat alle me þu bileuen  
i hi: sthūle ressepye remysion  
of synes by his name: & i wh  
le þat petre spak pes wordis:  
pe hooly gost fell on alle þu her  
den pe word: & pe fepful men  
of circūciōn þu came wip pett  
wondrid: & also into naciōis  
pe gte of pe hooly gost is sthed  
out: for pei herden he spetige in  
langagis: & magnifyge god:  
þane petre answeride: wher  
on y man may forbete þatir:  
þu pe se be not baptid: þu also ressepyed pe hooly  
name of pe lord ihū cū: þane  
pei preid hi: þu he sthūle dibel  
le wip he sūme dayes: ¶

**A**nd pe apollis & pe bi  
perē þu were in judee her  
den: & also hepen me res  
sepyede pe word of god: & pei glo  
rified god: but whne petre cam  
to ierlm: pei rat weren of circū  
ciōn disputid agens hi: & seide  
whi entridst þou to me þu haue  
spūcie: & hast ete wip he: & pett  
bigan & expoune to he by or  
dre: & seide / i was i pe cite of  
joppe & preiete: & syz i rāysch  
yng of my mynde a visiō: þu  
a vessel cam doun as a greet schee  
te wip four cordis: & was sent

gost as we: & he co  
māidid he to be ba  
ptid: in pe



don fro heuene: & it cam to me /  
to which / I loke bi heeld. & so /  
four footide beethis of pe crye &  
beethis. & crepyng beethis & vo  
latils of heuene / & I herte also  
a vois p seide to me / petre ry  
se pon & ale & ete / but I seide  
nay lord: for comyn pig eyn  
vncleue: entride uenue into my  
mouy / & pe vois answereide pe  
seconde tyme fro heuene / pat pig  
p god hay cleid: sepe p not vn  
clene / & pis was don by pries:  
& alle pigs were resseyned a  
zen ito heuene / & lo pe me anoo  
stode in pe hous i which I was:  
& pei were sent fro cesarie to  
me / & pe spirit seide to me: p  
shulde go wyh he & doue no pig  
zhe & pes hye bysen came wy  
me: & we entiden ito pe hous of  
pe ma / & he teelde to us how he  
sayz an angel i his hous: don  
dige & sepyge to hi / sende ito pon  
iope & clepe symour: p is na  
med petur / which shal speke to  
pe wordis. i which p shal be  
saie & al pin hous / & whane I  
hadde bigyne to speke: pe hooly  
gost fel on he as ito us i pe bi  
gynnyng / & I bypouzte on pe  
word of pe lord: as he seide / for  
john baptiside in watir: but ze  
shule be baptisid i pe hooly gost  
pfore if god zaf to hem pe same  
grace as to us p biledede in pe  
lord ihu crist: who was I p myzte  
forbede pe lord p he zyne not pe  
hooly gost to he pat biledede in  
pe name of ihu crist / whne pes  
pigs were herd: pei heelde pe  
ees. & glonfide god & seide / pfor  
also to hepen me. god hay zoni

penance to lyf / & pei p were sta  
terid of pe tribulaciou p was  
maid vnder itenue: wolkiden  
soy to semple & to cyrie & to anti  
oche. & spaken pe word to no ma.  
but to ieris alcone / but sume of  
hem were me of cyrie & of cure  
nen / which whne pei hadde entid  
into antioche: pei spaken to pe  
greekis & prechiden pe lord ihu /  
pe hond of pe lord was wyh he / &  
moche noubre of me bileuysge was  
coitid to pe lord / & pe word cam  
to pe eers of pe chirche p was  
at ierlm on pes pigs: & pei seue  
barabas to antioche: & whne he  
was come & hye pe grace of pe  
lord: he iojete & monestide alle  
me. to diueller i pe lord in purpos  
of herte / for he was a good man:  
& ful of pe hooly gost & of teyr /  
moche peple. was entresid to pe  
lord / & he wente for to thar he  
to seke saul / & whne he hadde fou  
du hi: he ledde to antioche: & a  
rei lyuete pet in pe chirche: & a  
ten moche peple / so p pe discipulis  
were named first at antioche  
ten me / & in pes dayes: pferis  
came ouer fro ierlm to antioche  
and oon of hem roos up agab:  
bi name: & sigfiete bi pe spirit  
agreet hygnr to comyge in al  
pe world which hygnr was ma  
ad vnder claudius: & alle pe  
discipulis pposide afur p ech had  
de: for to seide ito mynsterie. to  
bysen p diueller in iudee / wh  
ich pig also peidde: & seten it to  
pe eldre me: bi pe hondis of bar  
nabas & saul. ¶ **En**  
¶ And in pe same tyme &  
roude pe hig seide p

to turnete son me of pe chirche  
& he glonfide by liuerd: James pe  
brof of john / & he so: p it ples  
de to ieris: & kaste to take also  
petre / and pe dayes of per f loo  
nes were: & whne he hadde ca  
nys petre: he sente hi into pson  
& bitook to four quatipous of  
knyz to kepe hi: & wolde affe  
pall byngge hi for to pe peple  
& petre was kept in pson / but  
pier was maid of pe chirche w  
oute ceelg: to god for hi / but  
whne eroude shulde byngge  
hi for: in pat nyzt petre was  
slepige by tawre tawer kny  
tis: & was bound wyh taw chey  
nes: & pe keperis bifore pe doze  
kepte pe pson / & lo an angel of  
pe lord stood nyz: & lzt shoon  
in pe pson hous / & whne he had  
de synpte pe spde of petre: he  
rethide hi & seide / ryle pon libit  
ly / and anoo pe chaynes felden  
don fro his hondis / & pe angel sei  
de to hy / gnde pee: & do on pin  
holis / & he due so / & he seide to hi  
do aboute pee p dlois: & lme me  
& he zede out & synpte hi: & he wil  
te not p it was sop p was don  
by pe angel / for he gelfide hi zilk  
to haue sepe aduision / and pei  
passide pe furde & pe secude / war  
de & came to pe men zate p ledy  
to pe citee which anoo was ope  
nyd to he / & pei zeden out & came  
into oostreet: & anoon pe angel  
passide awey fro hi / & petre tur  
nete azen to hi gils: & seide / now  
I woot verily p pe lord sente his  
angel: & deliuerde me fro pe hod  
of eroude: & fro al pe abydyng of  
pe peple of ieris / & he biheld

& cam to pe hous of marie mo  
dr of john. p is named marth:  
wher manye were gedrid to gi  
dre & frynge / & whne he knocki  
de at pe doze of pe zate: a dam  
sel rode bi name. com for to se  
and whne she knewe pe vois of  
petre: for joye she openye not  
pe zate. but ra yne & telde pat  
petre stood at pe zate / & pei sei  
den to hir / pon maddist / but  
she affermyde p it was lo / &  
pei seide it is his angel / but pe  
tre abood stille & knockide / and  
whne pe hadde openyd pe doze  
pei sayzen hi: & woudiden / & he  
bekenyde to he wyh his hond to  
be stille: & telde how pe lord had  
de led hi out of pe pson / & he sei  
de / telle ze to James & to pe bri  
yen pes pigs: & he zede out: and  
wente ito anop place / & whne  
pe day was come: p was not ly  
tal troublig a mogs pe knyztis.  
wher was don of petre: & whne  
eroude hadde souzt hi & fond not.  
afur p he hadde maid enquerig  
of pe keperis. he comaunde he  
to be bronz to hi / and he cam don  
fro iudee ito cesarie: & diueller  
pet / & he was wyzop to me of ti  
re & of sidon / & pei of oon accord  
came to hi whne pei hadde con  
celid wyh battus p was pe figi  
chambirlayn pei aride pees. for  
as moche p her karris were  
vntailid of hi / & in aday p was  
ordeyned. Eroude was clopid  
wyh figis clopyg: & latt for do  
melms & spak to he / & pe peple  
cryede pe vois of god: & not  
of man / and anoo an angel of  
pe lord smoot hi: for he hadde



not zoue honour to god / & he was  
 wastid of worms & diede & pe  
 word of pe lord was pte. & was  
 mltipled / and barnabas & sa  
 ul turneten aze fro ierlm. wha  
 ne pe mynisterie was fillid: &  
 tookē ioh̄n p̄ was named markus.  
**A**d p̄fctis // *ch. xiiij.*  
 & doctours were i pe  
 churche pat was at an  
 tioche: in whiche barnabas &  
 symonid p̄ was clepid blas. &  
 lucius cronensis & manaeu p̄  
 was pe soultḡ feer of Erome  
 tetrarke & saul were / & whiche  
 pei mynistrde to pe lord & fas  
 tide: pe hooky gost seide to hem  
 departe ze to me barnabas &  
 saul into pe werlt to which j  
 haue takē hē pāne pei fastide  
 & preietē & leyden hondis on hem  
 & leten hē go / but pei were sent  
 of pe hooky gost: & wentē forp  
 to seleucia / & fro pēms pei wentē  
 bi boot to cypre: & whāne pei ca  
 me to salampue: pei prechide pe  
 word of god in pe synagogis of  
 ierlm & pei hadde also ioh̄n i my  
 nistrde / & whiche pei hadde walkid  
 bi al pe yle to pafum: pei fou  
 den a man a whiche a fals p̄fete  
 a ierlm to who pe name was bari  
 elu: p̄ was wh̄ pe p̄conful sergi  
 us paul a prudent mā / p̄is clepi  
 de barnabas & poule: & desirde  
 to heere pe word of god / but ely  
 mas whiche wh̄p̄tōod hē for his  
 name is expownded so: & he souz  
 te to turne alwey pe p̄conful fro  
 h̄lene. but saul which is seid al  
 so paul was fillid wh̄ pe hooky  
 gost: & biheeld into h̄i & seide / a  
 pou ful of gyle & al falsnesse p̄

son of pe deucl. p̄ enemy of al  
 rytwh̄p̄nesse: p̄ leuest not to  
 turue / uplodou pe rytful w̄tes  
 of pe lord / and now to pe hond of  
 pe lord is on yee: & pou shalt be  
 blynd & not seynge pe sūne ito  
 a tyme / & anoo upst & t̄ert̄nesse  
 feldē doū on h̄i & he zede aboute  
 & souzte h̄y pat shuld zyne hond  
 to h̄i pāne pe p̄conful. whiche hē  
 hadde seyn pe dede: b̄leuyde  
 pe teching of pe lord / & whiche fro  
 pafum pouil hadde go by a boot.  
 & pei p̄ were were wh̄ h̄i: pei ca  
 men to p̄gen of p̄amfilie / but wh̄  
 depreide fro hem: & turnete azen  
 to ierlm / & pei zede to perge: &  
 came to antioche of phidie / &  
 pei entrde into pe synagoge  
 pe day of labotis: & lare & astur  
 pe redyng of pe laue & of pe p̄  
 fctis pe p̄ncis of pe synagoge  
 senten to hem & seide / b̄rypen it  
 ony word of exortacion to pe pe  
 ple is in zou: sepe ze / & pouil roo  
 & wh̄ hond band silence: & seide  
 me of yrael & ze pat d̄zede god:  
 heer ze / god of pe peple of yra  
 el chees our fad̄is. & enhaūc  
 de pe peple: whiche pei weren  
 comelgis in pe lond of egypt.  
 & in an h̄z arme he ledde hē out  
 of it / & by pe tyme of fourty  
 zeeris. he sust̄ide her manis  
 in desert / & he destr̄yde leuene  
 folkis in pe lond of canaan: &  
 bi sort departide to hem her lo  
 ond as astur four h̄nd̄id & f̄y  
 ty zeeris / & astur pes pigis hē  
 zaf̄ dome t̄me to samuel pe p̄o  
 fete / & fro p̄ tyme pei ariden  
 a b̄ig: & god zaf̄ to hē saul pe so  
 ne of cis: a mā of pe l̄ynage of

beiamyn. by fourty zeeris. & whā  
 ne he was don alwey: he reishde to  
 hem d̄am̄p̄ l̄yng. to whom he ba  
 ar wh̄tueh̄ḡ & septe / I haue fou  
 de d̄am̄p̄ pe bone of jesse. aman  
 astur my herte: wh̄ch shal do al  
 le my w̄llis / of wh̄os seed bi pe  
 blycest god hap led out to wael  
 a saupour sh̄i: wh̄ch ioh̄n p̄ch  
 de b̄fore pe face of his comyng pe  
 bap̄tym of penance to al pe pe  
 ple of wael / but wh̄ch ioh̄n fillid  
 his cour̄t: he septe wh̄ch ze demē  
 me to be: I am not he / but lo he co  
 mey astur me: & I am not wh̄orpi  
 to don of pe l̄thoon of his feet / b̄  
 ryen & l̄ones of pe l̄p̄de of abrah̄m.  
 & wh̄ch y in zou d̄zede god: to  
 pe word of heelp̄ is sent: for pei  
 p̄ dwelld̄ at ierlm & p̄ncis of it.  
 pat knewē not p̄is sh̄i & pe voi  
 ces of p̄fctis. p̄ bi enery sabot  
 ben red. dem̄p̄tē & filliden / & pei  
 fouiden in sh̄i no cause of deap̄: & ar  
 den of pilat. p̄ pei sh̄uld sle h̄y  
 & wh̄ch pei hadde endid alle pigis  
 p̄ were wh̄tū of h̄i: pei token h̄i  
 dou of pe tre. & leyden h̄y i a gra  
 ue / & god reishde h̄i fro deap̄ in pe  
 p̄dde day: wh̄ch was seyn by mā  
 ny dayes: to hē p̄ wentē up to gi  
 die wh̄ h̄ym fro galile ito ierlm  
 wh̄ch ben t̄l now h̄is wh̄tueh̄s  
 to pe peple / & we sh̄e wen to zou  
 pe biheest p̄ was maid to om̄e  
 fad̄is / for god hap fulfillid p̄is  
 to her l̄ones. & azenreyside sh̄i  
 as in pe secūde salm it is wh̄tū  
 p̄ art my sone to day / I bigat p̄e  
 & he azenreyside h̄i fro deap̄: pat  
 he sh̄uld not turne azen into  
 corrupcion. seide p̄is / for j sh̄al  
 zyne to zou pe hooky trewe pigis

of d̄am̄p̄ / And p̄ fore & on anoyr  
 side he seyn p̄ sh̄alt not zyne p̄  
 hooky to ze corrupcion / but d̄am̄p̄  
 i his gen̄acioū. wh̄ch he hadde  
 mynistrde to pe w̄ille of god:  
 diede: & was leyd wh̄ his fad̄is.  
 & h̄y corrupcion / but he wh̄ch  
 god reyside fro deap̄: saiz not cor  
 rupcion / p̄fore b̄rypen be it kno  
 wh̄ to zou: p̄ by h̄i r̄em̄p̄sion of  
 syn̄es is teeld to zou. fro alle h̄y  
 nes. of wh̄ch ze m̄yze not be  
 iustified in pe laue of moyses /  
 i p̄is ech mā p̄ b̄leuey: is iustifi  
 ed / p̄fore se ze p̄ it come not to  
 zou p̄ is b̄fore seid in pe p̄fctis /  
 ze d̄isp̄leris se ze & wond̄e ze &  
 be ze d̄aterid ab̄ood: for j worche  
 a werk in zour dayes a werk in  
 zour dayes / a werk p̄ ze sh̄uld not  
 b̄leue: if ony mā sh̄al telle it to  
 zou / & wh̄ch pei zeden out: pei  
 preietē p̄ in pe sabat l̄ynḡe pei  
 sh̄uld speke to hē pes wordis / &  
 wh̄ch pe synagoge was lest.  
 many of ierlm & of comelgis  
 wh̄ sh̄y p̄ge god sub̄ede pouil  
 & barnabas / pat spaken & con̄ce  
 lid̄ hem: p̄ pei sh̄uld d̄ibelle in  
 pe grace of god & in pe sabot l̄y  
 nḡe. almeest al pe citee cam  
 to gidur: to heere pe word of god  
 & ierlm h̄zen pe peple: & weren  
 fillid wh̄ en̄ye: & azenreyside pes  
 pigis p̄ were seid of pouil. & bl̄af  
 sem̄p̄den / pāne pouil & barnabas  
 st̄ide fastly seide / to zou it bihof̄e  
 first to speke pe word of god / but  
 for ze putte it alwey. & hand̄ened  
 zou / v̄n̄wh̄orpi to euerlastige l̄yf.  
 lo we turne to hē p̄ me: for so pe  
 lord com̄and̄ite vs / j haue sett  
 p̄e in pe l̄yt to hepen mē: pat



you be into heelp to pe vtmede  
of erpe. & hepen me herde. & ioye  
den & glorified pe word of pe lord  
& bileuete as manye as were  
bifore ordeyned to euilastige luf  
& pe word of pe lord was solui  
bi al pe cūtes. but pe ieiwis sti  
rde religious ieiwen & onest.  
& pe woepiste me of pe citee. &  
stirde psecucion azens poule  
barnabas & dreyne he out of her  
lūtrens. & pei shoken alþer ito  
hem pe dust of her feet. & came  
to ioyne. & pe distiphs were  
fullid wip ioye i pe hooly gost.

**B**ut it bifel. ¶ *Em.*  
at ioyne. p̄ pei entri  
de to gidre. into pe synago  
ge of ieiwis & spaken. so p̄ ful gr  
et mltitute of ieiwis & grekis  
bileuete. but pe ieiwis pat were  
vnbilestful. reilide. psecucion &  
stirde to wrappe pe soules of he  
pen me azens pe brypen. but pe  
lord ȝaf soone pees. p̄ fore pei  
dwelhte moche tyme & dide t̄  
taly in pe lord. berige w̄tneſſig  
to pe word of his grace. ȝynge  
signes & ioudis to be maad bi  
pe hondis of he. but pe mltitu  
de of pe citee was departid. &  
sūme were wip pe ieiwis. & sū  
me wip pe apostlis. but wh̄ne  
per was maad an alaut of pe  
hepen me & pe ieiwis wip her  
p̄nces to tūmētē & to stōne  
he. pei vnderstode & fledde to gi  
dre to pe citees of lycanoye &  
lūttris & derben & ito al pe cūtes  
aboute. & pei prechide pere pe  
gospel. & al pe mltitute was  
moued to gidre i pe teching of  
he poule & barnabas dwelhten

at lūttris. & amā at lūttris was  
lyk in pe feet. & hadde sete crokid  
fro his modris wombe wh̄ne he  
ner hadde gon. p̄is herde poule  
spetige. & poule biheeld hi & ȝy  
p̄ he hadde fery p̄ he shulde be  
maad laif. & seide wip a greet  
vois. ryle you vp rist on p̄ feet.  
& he lypide & walkide. & pe peple  
wh̄ne pei hadden seyn pat p̄ poule  
dide. veride her vois i lycanon  
ge & seide. goddis maad lyk to me  
ben comū don to us. & pei clep  
de barnabas iuber. & poule mer  
cury. for he was ledere of pe word  
& pe p̄ceſt of iuber. p̄ was bifore  
pe citee. brouȝte bohis & trobne  
bifore pe zatis wip pehis. & wol  
de haue maad sacrifice. and wh̄ne  
pe apostlis barnabas & poule her  
den p̄is. pei to rente her cootis.  
& pei skipten out amog pe peple.  
& cryden & seide. me what don ȝe  
p̄is p̄is pig. & we ben dedly me  
lyk ȝon. & dide went to ȝon. p̄ he  
conuertid fro rese. veyn pigis.  
to pe lynnge god. p̄ made hene  
ne & erpe & pe see & alle pigis  
ben i he. wh̄ch i genaciōis pas  
sid. sufride alle folkis to go ito  
her. oþne weyes. & ȝit he leste  
not hi self. wipoute w̄tneſſig  
in isel doying. for he ȝaf reyns  
fro heuene & tymeȝ berige fin  
yt. & fulkshide ȝon. hertis wip  
mete & gladnesse. & pei seynge  
pes pigis. v̄neȝis swagide pe  
peple. p̄ pei offride not to he. but  
sū ieiwis came on fro antioche  
& ioyne & couceilede pe peple  
& stonȝede poule & drowen out of  
pe citee. & gesside p̄ he was ded  
but wh̄ne distiphs were comū

aboute hi. he roos & wente ito  
pe citee. and in pe day luyngē.  
he wente forw wip barnabas in  
to derben. & wh̄ne pei hadde pre  
chid to pe ilke citee & tanz ma  
ny. pei tūmēde azen to lūttris  
& ioyne & to antioche. confer  
myge pe soules of distiphs &  
monestige. p̄ pei phylde diel  
le in fery. & seide p̄ by many &  
bulaciōis. it bihoney us to en  
tre into pe kyngdom of heuene.  
& wh̄ne pei hadde ordeyned p̄  
tis to hem bi alle citees. & had  
de p̄ried wip fatigis. pei by  
taken hem to pe lord i wh̄m pei  
bileuete. and pei passide p̄ sidie.  
& came to pamtile. and pei spa  
ken pe word of pe lord in p̄ge.  
& camen don ito italie. & fro p̄  
ms pei wente by boot to antio  
che. fro wh̄ms pei were takū  
to pe grace of god into pe werk  
p̄ pei filled. & wh̄ne pei wereu  
comū & hadde gadrid pe church.  
pei telden how grete pigis god di  
de wip hem. & p̄ he hadde openid  
to hepen me pe doze of fery. & pei  
dielhte not a lytil tyme wip pe  
distiphs. ¶ *Em.*

**A**d sūme came don  
fro iudee. & tanz b̄  
pere. p̄ but ȝe be circūdid af  
pe laue of moyses. ȝe moyn not  
be maad laif. per fore wh̄ne p̄  
was maad not alital dullenwū  
to poule & barnabas azens he. pei  
ordeyneten p̄ poule & barnabas.  
& sūme ope of hem shulde go vp  
to pe apostlis & p̄ctis in ieru  
sale on p̄is questioū. & so pei we  
re led forw of pe church. & passi  
den bi feryte & samarie. & pei

teelden pe consilaciō of hepen  
me. & pei made greet ioye to al  
le pe brypen. & wh̄ne pei came  
to ierlin. pei were resseyued  
of pe church & of pe apostlis &  
of pe eldre me. & teelde how gre  
te pigis god dide wip he. but sū  
me of pe eresie of farisees pat  
bileuete. risen vp & seide. p̄ it  
bihoney he to be circūdid. & to  
comāde to kepe allo pe laue of  
moyses. & pe apostlis & eldre me  
came to gidre. to se of p̄is word.  
& wh̄ne p̄ was maad a greet se  
fig herof. per re roos & seide to  
hem brypen ȝe w̄ne. p̄ of elde day  
es in ȝon. god chees by my moyn  
hepen to hepe pe word of pe gos  
pel. & to bileue. & god p̄ enewe  
es hertis b̄ar w̄tneſſig. & ȝaf  
to he pe hooly gost. as allo to us.  
& no pig. dynerſide bi t̄bire us  
& hem. & denide pe hertis of he  
bi fery. now p̄me t̄shat tepten  
ȝe god. to p̄itte azol. on pe nec  
ke of pe distiphs. wh̄ch neȝr  
we neȝr oure fadris myȝte ber.  
but bi pe grace of our lord ih̄  
c̄st. we bileue to be laued. as al  
to pei. & al pe mltitute heeld pe  
es. & herden barnaban & poule.  
tellige how grete signes & wo  
dis god dide bi he in hepe me.  
& astir p̄ pei helden pees. jame  
anſweride & seide. brypen heere  
ȝe me. symonit telde how god  
visitide first to take of hepene  
me a peple to his name. & pe  
wordis of p̄ctis acorde to hy.  
as it is writū. astir p̄is i thal  
tūne azen. & bilde pe taberna  
cle of damp p̄ felde don. & i thal  
bilde azen pe cast don pigis of it.



And þi lhal reple it. þo þu me  
seke þe lord: & alle folkis on whi  
che my name is clepid to helpe.  
þe lord doyng þis þis seyn fro  
þe world þe werk of þe lord is  
knowen to þe lord for which þis  
þe me he þof hepen me ben co  
uertid to god to be not disclid  
but to write to he. þe abstei  
ne he fro defouling of manne  
tis. & fro fornicacioun. & straug  
lid þis & blood for moyses of  
elde tymes hap i alle citees. he  
þe preche hi in synagogis: wher  
by ech sabot he is red. þane it  
pleite to þe apostlis & to þe el  
dre me þis alle þe churche: to  
chese me of he. & sende to antio  
che þis þe barnabas. Judas  
þe was named barlabas. & silas  
þe firste me amog þis & wo  
ten bi þe hondis of he. apostlis  
þe eldre þis þe he þe ben at an  
tioche & sime & silas. þis þe of  
he þe me: greetige for we her  
den þe sime wente out fro us.  
þe troublede þis þis wordis & t  
nede vplodon þis þis to  
whiche me we comandide not  
it pleite to us gaderid ito con  
to chese me & sende to þis þis  
oure moost derer þis barna  
bas & þis me þe þe her þis  
ues: for þe name of our lord  
ihū cū. þe for we sente Judas  
& silas. & þe ihū telle þe same  
þis to þis by wordis for it is  
seyn to þe hooly goost & to us to  
putte to þis no þis more of char  
ge þe þe nedful þis: þe  
absteine þis fro þe offrid. þis  
þis of manne metis. & blood str  
ghid & fornicacioun fro whiche

þe kepige þis: ihū do wel. þe  
þe ihū þe for þe were let go &  
came down to antioche. & ihū  
þe miltute was gaderid: þe to  
þen þe epistle. whiche whiche  
þe hadde red: þe ioyede on þe  
confort. & Judas & silas. & þe  
for þe were þe pletis: confortid  
þe þe & cōfermyden þis þis  
many wordis but after þe  
hadden be þe a lhal while. þe  
were let go of þis þis þe  
to þem þe hadden sent hem but  
it was seyn to silas. to diselle  
þe. & Judas wente alone to  
ierlm. & þis þe barnabas  
te at antioche. techige & þe  
þe word of þe lord. þis þe ma  
nye but after sime dages: þis  
þe to barnabas. & we aþen  
þe. & whiche þis by alle citees  
whiche we han prechid þe word  
of þe lord: þe þe he & barna  
bas wolde take þis þe ihū. þe  
was named markus but þis  
þe ihū. þe þe departide fro  
he fro þe. & were not  
he into þe werk: ihū not be  
relepued. & dissencion was  
so þe departide at þis. &  
barnabas took mark & cam bi  
boot to cypre. and þis dreed  
silas & wente for þe þe  
en. & was batakū to þe grace of  
god. & he wente by sime & cilice.  
& cōfermyde þe churche: coman  
dige to kepe þe heortis of apos  
tis & eldre men. ¶ *¶*

**A**d he cam to derben & l  
tram. & to a duple was  
þe bi name thymothe  
þe lone of a Jewelle crist & of  
þe fadir hepen. & þis þe were

in ltris & coupe: þe dide good  
nellig to hi. & þis wolde þe þis  
ma ihū go for þis hi. & he  
took & circūcidide hi. for þe  
þe were in þe placis for alle wil  
te. þe þis fadir was hepen. ihū  
þe þis by citees: þe bitoke  
to hem to kepe þe techigis þe  
were demed of apostlis & eldre  
me. þe were at ierlm. & þe  
chis were cōfermyd in fey. & en  
creiden i noubre ech dage. & þe  
þis frige & þe cūtree of ga  
lathie. & were forbedū of þe hoo  
ly goost to speke þe word of god  
alie. & ihū þe camē into mysie.  
þe alane to go into bithynye.  
þe spirit of ihū oustide not  
hem but ihū þe hadde passid  
by mysie. þe camē don to troa  
de. & a bilion by myst was  
wid to þis but amā of macedo  
nye & thood. þe hi & seide go  
þis to macedonie & help us. &  
as he hadde seyn þe vislon. and  
we sougte to go for into macedo  
nye. & were mand cer teyn þe  
god hadde clepid vs to preche to  
he. and we zeden bi ship fro tro  
ade & camen to samatracia  
strent cours. & þe day linge to  
neapolis. & fro þis to filippis.  
þe þe firste part of macedonie.  
þe citee colouye. & were in þis  
tee sime dages. & spake to gidre  
& in þe day of sabotis. we witen  
for þis þe zate blydis þe  
flood wher þe ser seme to be.  
& we laten & spake to þis men  
camē to gidre. & a woman lidda  
by name a pparelle of þe citee of  
tiatrens. woulthpige god her  
de. whos herte þe lord openyde.

to þis tent to þe þis. & were  
seid of þis. & ihū she was hap  
tilid & þis hors: she preide & seide  
if þe han demyde þe I am feryful  
to þe lord: entre þe into my houe  
& diselle. & she cōfeynede us.  
& it was don ihū we zede to þe  
er. & a danyel þe hadde a spirit  
of dymynacioun mette us: whiche  
zaf greet wynging to þis lordis  
& dymynye. þis liddede þis & vs.  
& cryede & seide. þe me ben ser  
uantis of þe þis god. & tellen to  
þis þe were of helpe. & þis she  
dite in many dages. & þis liddede  
& turnede. & seide to þe spirit  
I comande þe i þe name of ihū  
cū. þe þe go out of þis. & he  
te out i þe same our. & þe lordis  
of þis syzen þe þe hope of her  
wynging. wente akepe. & þe  
tooken þis & silas & ledde into  
þe doom place to þe þis. & þe  
þis hem to þe manestratis.  
& seide. þe me distrublen our  
citee. for þe be Jewis. & ihū  
a custom whiche it is not leetful  
to us to resseyue ney to. liden  
we ben romayns. & þe peple &  
manestratis rimen azen hem.  
& ihū þe hadde to rent þe ca  
tis of he. þe comandide hem to  
be betū wir zerdis. & ihū þe  
hadde þis to hem many wordis.  
þe sente hem ito þis. & coman  
dide to þe keper. & he ihū  
kepe he diligently. and ihū  
he hadde take such a precept. he  
putte he ito þe yner þis. & strei  
nede þe feet of he in a tree. and  
at mydnyzt þis & silas woulth  
pede & heriede god. & þe þe were  
in kepung. herte he & lidenly a



greet erpe monyng was maid:  
so þe foudumentis of þe p[ro]u  
were moued: & anon alle þe do  
us were openyd: & þe boondis  
of alle were losid: & þe keper  
of þe p[ro]u was albakid. & so  
þe zatis of þe p[ro]u openyd: &  
wip a liberd drauū out he wole  
haue slakū h[is] self: & gesside þe  
þe mē þe were boundū hadden  
fled: but pouil criede wip a gre  
et/vois & lepte/do you no harm  
to þi h[il]f: for alle we ben heet/  
& he aride h[is]t & entride: & tre  
blide & fel dou to pouil & to silas  
at her feet: & he brouzte hem w  
oute forp: & seide/ lordis what bi  
houey me to do: þe m[an]d la  
af: & þe seide/ bileue pouil þe  
lord ihu: & you shalt be saaf &  
wip hous: & þe spaken to h[is] þe  
word of þe lord: wip alle þe we  
re in his hous: & he took h[is] m  
þe ilke our of þe nyzt: & wip  
thide her boundis: & he was hap  
tilid: & al his hous anon: & wip  
he hadde led h[is] into his hous: he  
settide to hem aboord: & he was  
glad wip al his hous: & bileuede  
to god: & wipne day was come:  
þe magistratis sente cathepol  
his & seide/ deliue[re] pouil po men/  
& þe kepe of þe p[ro]u telde þe  
wordis to pouil: þe m[an]estratis  
han sent þe be deliuerid/  
nons þfore go þe out: & go þe m  
pees: & pouil seide to h[is] þe sen  
ten us mē of rome ito p[ro]u þe  
were betū openy & ondapned:  
& now þnely þe bryngē us out:  
not so but come þe: h[is] self &  
deliue us out: & þe cathepol  
his teelde þe wordis to þe ma

stratis: & þe dreed: for þe her  
den þe were romayns: & þe ca  
mē & biledide h[is] & þe bryngē h[is]  
out: & þe seide/ þe shuld go out  
of þe citee: & þe seide out of þe  
p[ro]u: & entride to lidie: & wipne  
þe lizen bryngē: þe conuincid  
hem & zeden forp. **C. xxv.**  
**A**nd wipne þe hadde par  
tid by amfipolis & apolo  
nye: þe came to thesola  
nyk: wher was a synagoge of  
þe wis: & bi custom pouil entride to  
h[is]: & þe þe sabotis he dedarid  
to h[is] of scripturis: & openyd  
& thewde þe it bihoftē & it to h[is]  
fre: & ryle azen fro depe: & þe  
is ihu & it: who þe telle to you: &  
sūme of h[is] bileuede: & were  
joined to pouil & to silas: & agre  
et m[an]itude of h[is] mē wip  
pete god: & noble wipmen not a  
sewe/ but þe þe wis hadde eipe:  
& token of þe comy peple sūme  
þuel mē: & wipne þe hadde maid  
a ciupany þe monede þe citee/  
& þe came to jalons hous: & sou  
ten h[is] to bryge forp amog þe pe  
ple: & wipne þe fouiden h[is] not  
þe drowe jalon & sūme bryngē  
to þe p[ri]nces of þe citee: & a p[ri]nce  
þe seide it ben þe mone þe word:  
& hidur þe came: wipne jalon rel  
seynede: & þe seide alle doen azen þe  
maudemētis of þe empoin: & seide  
þe ihu is anoy kyng: & þe moue  
den þe peple & þe p[ri]nces of þe ci  
tee heerige þe pigis: & wipne  
satisfacion was takū of jalon:  
& of oþe þe leten pouil & silas go/  
and anon bi nyzt bryngē leeten  
silas go into beroan: & wipne þe  
came pidur þe entiden ito þe si

nagoge of þe þe wis: but þe seide  
ren þe wipner of h[is] þe ben at  
thesolonyk: wipne relseynede  
þe word wip al delit: eche day le  
kige scripturis. þe þe pigis had  
den h[is] so/ and many of hem bile  
uede: & of h[is] wipmen onest & mē  
not a sewe/ but wipne þe seide &  
tellalonyk hadde knowe þe alld at  
bero. þe word of god was p[re]chid  
of pouil: þe came pidur monyge  
& disturbige þe m[an]itude: & þe  
anon bryngē deliuede pouil: & þe  
shuld go to þe see: but silas & thi  
mothe diuerten þe: & þe þe ledden  
forp pouil: leide h[is] to atenyis/ and  
wipne þe hadde take a maudemēt  
of h[is] to silas: & to thymothe. þe  
ful lizingyng þe shuld come to  
h[is]: þe seide forp: & wipne pouil  
abood h[is] at atenes: his spirit w[as]  
moued i h[is]: for he saiz þe citee zo  
ū to ydolatrie: þfore he disputi  
de i þe synagoge wip þe þe wis &  
wip mē þe wipshypid god & in  
þe dom place bi alle dapes to hem  
þe herden: & sūme eperneis & stori  
sens & filofis disputid wip h[is]  
& sūme seide/ what wole þe seide  
re of wordis seide: & oþe seide/ he le  
mey to be a tellere of newe fendi:  
for he teelde to h[is] ihu & þe azenry  
sig: & þe token & leide h[is] to arco  
page & seide/ moitū we wite what  
is þe newe doctryu þe seide of  
þe: for þe bryngē in sūme newe  
pigis to our: ceris/ þfore we wole  
wite: what þe pigis wolen be/  
for alle mē of atenyis & comligis  
herbord zanen tent to noon opur  
pig: but eþ to seie eþ to hee sūm  
newe ymge: & pouil stood i þe myd  
del of areopage & seide/ mē of ate

nis by alle pigis: & se þe as weyne  
wipshyperis: for þe passide & so  
mawmetis: & found an aut i wip  
ch was wipū to þe vnkowū god/  
þe for wipch pig þe vnkowūge  
wipshyperis: þe pig: & thewe to þe  
god þe made þe word & alle pigis þe  
ben in it: þe for he is lord of hene  
ne & erpe. diuelly not i tēphs maid  
wip hōnd/ neþ is wipshyperid bi mā  
nes hoondis neþ h[is] nede of ony  
pig: for he zyneþ h[is] to alle mē: &  
bryngē & alle pigis: & made of con  
al þe kynde of mē to enhabite on al  
þe face of þe erpe. det m[an]yge ty  
mes ordeyned. & tēmes of þe dis  
ellig of h[is] to seke god/ if þe panen  
ture þe feelen h[is] eþ fūden: þe  
he be not fer fro ech of you/ for i h[is]  
we h[is]ne & mouen & ben/ as also h[is]  
me of you: poetis seide: & we ben  
also þe kynde of h[is]: þe fore s[ay] we  
ben of þe kynde of god: we shuld  
not deme þe godly pig is l[et] gold  
& siluer eþr stoon. eþr to grauis  
of craft of mā/ for god dispilip þe  
tymes of þe vnkowūge: & now  
theuwy to mē: þe alle eipibhere  
don penauce/ for þe h[is] h[is] ordey  
ned aday: in wipch he shal deme  
þe word i equity. i amā in wipch  
he ordeynede & zaf fery to alle mē:  
& reide h[is] fro depe: & wipne þe  
hadde herd þe azenryng of deed  
mē/ sūme stornede: & sūme seide/  
we shuld heer: þe eþ of þe pig:  
so pouil wente out of þe myddel of  
h[is]: but sūme drowe to h[is]: & bileue  
de: amog wipch denyl areopagite  
was & a wipman bi name damaris.  
**A**nd oþe mē wip h[is] **C. xxv.**  
fer þe pigis pouil zede out  
of atenes: & cam to azenryne



he found amā aquila by name of  
ponte by kynde. p late cam fro pta  
lye. & prillille his wyf. for p clau  
dus comandide alle ieris to de  
parte fro rome. & he cam to he  
& for he was of pe same craft. he  
dwellede w hem & wrouzte. & per  
werē of roop makeris craft. & he  
he disputide in pe synagoge by  
eth sabot puttige among pe na  
me of pe lord ihu. & he coucelide  
ieris & greekis. & whne silas &  
tymothe came fro macedoupe.  
poul zaf bishynelle to pe word. &  
writeth to pe ieris. p ihu is  
crist. but whne per asenseide &  
blaisempide. he thook alky his  
doyis & seide to hem. zom blood  
be on zom heed. j shal be dene  
fro heuys fory & shal go to hepe  
me. and he passide fro yenes. &  
entride into pe hous of a nist mā  
tite by name pat worlthypide god  
whos hous was joynd to pe sy  
nagoge. and crispe puce of pe sy  
nagoge. bileneide to pe lord wh  
al his hous. & manye of pe cozi  
thies herde & bileneide. & were ei  
tempd. & pe lord seide hi nyzt to po  
ul bi aduision. nple pou drede. but  
speke & be not stille. for j am w  
pee & no mā shal be pirtt to p  
to noye pee. for moche peple is  
to me i pis citee. & he dwellede  
pere azer & hye monepis techi  
ge a mog. he pe word of god. but  
whne galhon was pconhil of achane.  
ieris risen up whp oo wille azes  
poul. & leden hy to pe doom & sei  
de. azen pe laue. pis coucelip me  
to worlthype god. & whne poul  
bigan to oppne his moup. gal  
leon seide to pe ieris. if p wer

omy wickid pig of yuel trespass  
ze ieris. rith j shulde suffre  
zou. but if questious ben of pe  
word & of names of zom laue.  
bise zou silt. j wole not be domel  
mā of pes pigis. & he droof hem  
fro pe doom place. and alle toke  
softenes pnce of pe synagoge.  
& smote hi bifore pe doom place.  
& no pig of pes was to charge  
to galhon. & whne poul hadde a  
bidū many dayes. he seide far  
wel to brperē & by boot cam to  
sirie. and prillille & aquila came  
wy hi. whiche hadde clippid his  
heed in tencris. for he hadde anky  
& he ca to effecie & pere he leste  
hem. & he zede yn to pe synagoge.  
& disputide wy ieris. and whne  
per preiede p he shulde dwelle moze  
tyme. he consentide not. but he  
made farabel & seide. est. j shal  
turne agen to zom if god wole. &  
he wente fory fro effecie. & he ca  
don to cesarie. & he zede up & gr  
ette pe churche & cam don to an  
tioche. & whne he hadde dwelled  
pere sulbhat of tyme. he wente  
fory waltige by reike ynz pe  
citrech of galathie. & frugie. &  
cofermyde alle pe discipulis. but  
a ieris apollo bi name anis of  
ahlandre of kynde amā eloquet  
cam to effecie. & he was myzt m  
scripturis. pis mā was tanz pe  
weye of pe lord. & was feruent  
m spirit & spak. & tanzte diligit  
ly po pigis p were of ihu. & knew  
only pe baptym of jhu. & pis  
mā bigan to do trithly in pe syna  
goge. who whne pille & aquila  
herde. per tooken hi & moze diligit  
ly exhortede to hi pe weye of

pe lord. & whne he wolde go to a  
caye. brpen certide & wroten  
to pe discipulis. p per shulde resley  
ue hi. whiche whne he cam. zaf  
moche to hem p bileneide. for he  
greetly oucam ieris. & whne  
de openly by scripturis. & ihu is crist.  
ad it bifelle. **A** whne apollo was at co  
riche. p poul whne he had  
de go pe lyzet coctis he cam to  
effecie. & found sume of discipulis.  
& he seide to he. whne ze p bile  
nen han resleyued pe hooly gost.  
& per seide to hi. but ney we han  
herd. if pe hooly gost is. & he sei  
de p fore in what yis ben ze bap  
tild. & per seide. in pe baptym of  
jhu. and poul seide. jhu bap  
tise pe peple in baptym of pe  
nauice. & tanzte p per shulden  
bilene i hi. p was to conyge aff  
hi. p is in ihu. whne per herden  
pes pigis. per weren baptild in  
pe name of pe lord ihu. & whne  
poul hadde leid on hem his hondis.  
pe hooly gost cam in he. & per spa  
ken wy langagis & pfectede. and  
alle were al mett tibelue me. &  
he zede into pe synagoge & spak  
wy trist. pze monepis disputi  
ge. & tretige of pe kyngdom of god.  
but whne sume were hardid &  
bileneide not. & curside pe weye  
of pe lord. bifore pe mltitude. he  
zede asey fro he & departide pe  
discipulis. & disputide in pe stole of  
a myzt mā ech day. pis was don  
by tibezeeris. so alle p dwellede  
masie herde pe word of pe lord. ie  
wis & heven me. & god dile vtues  
not smale bi pe hond of poul. so  
pon ope me pe sudaries weren

born fro his bodie. and syneclie  
departide fro hem. & wickid spiri  
tis wenten out. but allo sume  
of pe ieris exortis zede aboute  
& alaxte to clepe pe name of pe lord  
ihu crist. on hem p hadde yuel spi  
ritis & seide. j coure zou bi ihu  
whom poul prechp. & pe were  
senene sonos of a ieris stene a pnce  
of prestis. p dide pis yis. but pe  
yuel spirit anliberide. & seide to  
he. j knowe ihu. & j knowe poul.  
but who ben ze. & pe mā in whiche  
was pe worste deuyl. lypide on he.  
& hadde victorie of hope & was strog  
agens he. p per nakid & wondid fled  
de asey fro pat hous. & pis ying  
was maid knowū to alle ieris. &  
to hepe me. pat dwellen at effecie.  
and drede fel don on he alle. & per  
magnyfiere pe name of pe lord  
ihu. & many me bileneide & came  
knowlechege. & tellige her deedis.  
and many of hem p sinbeden  
curious pigis. brouzte to gide  
bookis & breneide he bifore alle  
me. & whne pe plis of po were  
acontyd. per founden money of  
fyfety poulund pens. so strongly  
pe word of god weride & was con  
fermyd. and whne pes pigis were  
fillid. poul spoude m spirit. aff  
pat macedoupe was passid. & asey  
to go to ierlin & seide. for asey pat  
j shal be per. & bi honey me also  
to se rome. & he sente into mace  
doupe tibeze me p mny strid  
to hy tymothe & eraste. & he dwel  
lde for a tyme i alie. & agreeet tron  
blyug was maid in pat dase. of  
pe weye of pe lord. for amā deme  
trie by name a worcher. m siluer.  
makide siluerne housis to dyane



¶ Iaf to crafty me moche wynnynge  
which he depide to gidre he pat we  
ren luche man werke: & seide  
me ze witte: p of vis craft wynnynge  
is to us: & ze seen & heere  
pat vis poul conuile: & turney  
akey moche peple not oonly of  
effelie: but almeit of al aspe: & serp  
p rei ben not goddis p ben maid  
wip hondis: & not oonly vis part  
shal be in perel to us to come in  
to repreef: but also pe teple of  
pe greet dyan shal be acoutid to  
nougt: & he & pe manette of hir  
shal bigyne to be distried: who  
al aspe & pe world worthip  
whie pes pigis were herd: pei  
were fillid wip ure & cryde & sei  
de: greet is pe dyan of effecians:  
¶ pe citee was fillid wip cofuci  
on: & pei waden an asaut wip co  
wille into pe teatre & toke gay  
us & arstark me of macedonpe  
felawis of poul: & whie poul wolde  
hane entrid into pe peple pe disti  
phis luftrude not: & also sune of  
pe pices of alie p were his fren  
dis: sente to hi & preide pat he sh  
ulde not zyne hi self into pe tea  
tre: & ope men cryde ovr pig: for  
pe churche was confusid: & many  
witten not for what cause pei we  
re come to gidre: but of pe peple  
peidrowe akey oon ablaundre whi  
le ierwis pntide hi forp: & ablaundre  
aride wip his hond cience: & wolde  
zelde a resou to pe peple: and as  
pei lueken p he was a ierw: oo  
vois of alle me was maid cryn  
ge as by tibe yne ouis: greet  
dyan of effecians: & whie pe stri  
be hadde ceessid pe peple: he seide  
men of effecie what ma is he p

knowy not p pe citee of effecians  
is pe worthipet of greet dyan: &  
of pe child of iherusalem: pfore whie  
it may not be azenled to pes pi  
gis: it bihouey zou to be ceessid: &  
to do no pig: folly: for ze han hrouz  
pes me neyn sacrilegeris: neyn  
blasfemyge zour goddnesse: pif  
demetrie & pe werke me p be wip  
hi: han cause azenl ovr ma: p ben  
courtis of domes & iugis: hancle  
pei ech ovr: if ze seken out of  
oov ovr pig: it may be alpylid:  
pe lawful churche: for whie we be  
in perel to be repreeyd of vis  
dapes distencio: lye no ma is  
gilty of whom we moibn yelde re  
lou of vis reynung to gidre: & wha  
ne he hadde leid vis pig he leet pe  
peple go. ¶

¶ Ad after pe noile ceesside  
poul depide pe distuphis &  
monestide he: & seide farwel: & he  
wente forp to go into macedonpe:  
¶ whie he hadde walkid bi pe coo  
tis & hadde monestid hem bi many  
wordis: he cam to grece: wher  
whie he hadde be pre moneyis  
pe ierwis leyden aspires for hi p  
was to sayle into sirie: & he had  
de coucil to turne azen bi mace  
donpe: and solipater of purry ho  
zoence folowide hi of thesolonye  
tis asturak & secidus & gayus de  
bens & tymothe: & alians: titie  
& trofym: pes for pei wente bi  
foze: abooden us at troade: for we  
shypede astur pe dapes of perfloo  
nes fro filippis & came to he at  
troade in fyue dapes: wher we  
dwelken senene dapes: & in pe fir  
ste day of pe woke whie we ca  
me to hreke breed: poul distupide

wip he & shulde go forp in pe  
morwe: & he drouz along pe ser  
mon til into mydnyzt: & many  
laupis were in pe soler: wher  
we were gedrid to gidre: & azong  
man entrais bi name: hat on pe  
wyndonke: whane he was fallu  
into an heuy sleep: while poul dis  
pntide longe: al sleppinge he fel  
dowen fro pe yad stage: & he was  
take v p: & was brouzt ded to  
whom whane poul cam dou: he  
lay on hi & bichypide & seide: wile  
ze be troublid: for his soule is i hi:  
& he wente v p & brak breed & eet  
and spak ynow: vnto pe day: &  
so he wente forp: & pei brouzten  
pe child alyne: & pei were confor  
tid greetly: and we weten v p  
to a shyp: & shypede into ailon:  
to take poul fro penus: for so he  
hadde distupid to make nurey  
by lond: & whie he foond us in  
ailon: we taken hi & came to mu  
tilene: & fro penus we shypede  
in pe day sulbyge: & we camen  
azen chyn: and anov day we ha  
uenede at samu: & in pe day ligh  
ge we came to mylete: & poul p  
poside to shype on to effeli: lest  
oov taryng wer maid to hi in  
aspe: for he hyede: if it wer pos  
sible to hi: p he shulde be i pe day  
of pentecoste at ierlm: fro myle  
te he sente to effeli: & depide pe  
gretteste me of burpe of pe ch  
urche: & whie pei came to hi & we  
re to gidre: he seide to he: ze witte  
fro pe firste day in which i cam  
into aspe: how wip zou by ech  
tyne i was leryng to pe lord  
wip al mekenesse & myldenesse  
& teeris & teptacions p felden

to me: of alpyngis of ierwis: how  
i wyndrouz not of pfitable ym  
gis to zou: p i seide not to zou &  
taunte zou openly & bi houis: &  
i witnesside to ierwis & to hepen  
me penance into god: & serp i  
to ovr lord ihu: & it: and now lo  
i am boundu in spirit: & go into  
ierlm: & i knowe not what ym  
gis shule come to me in it: but  
p pe hooly goot bi alle citees: wit  
nessid to me: & serp: p boondis &  
tribulacions at ierlm abide me:  
but i drede no pig of pese: ne p  
i make my lyp p coulet: pa my  
silk: so p i ente my coult & pe  
my misterie of pe word: which  
i rellayuede of pe lord ihu: to wit  
nessle pe gofpel of pe grace of god:  
and now lo i woot p ze shulen  
no more se my face: alle ze bi wh  
ich i pallide pzechige pe figdom  
of god: wherfore i witnessle to zou  
pis day: pat i am dene of pe blo  
od of alle me: for i fley not away  
p i teelde not to zou al pe coucil  
of god: take ze tent to zou & to al  
pe flor in which pe hooly goot lyp  
lett zou bithaps to reule pe chur  
che of god: which he purchaside  
wip his blood: i woot p astur my  
depar tyng raneymyge wobies  
shullen entre ito zou: & spare not  
pe flor: & me lpekyge shewid  
pigis: shule ryle of zou silk: p  
pei lede away distuphis astur hem:  
for which pig wake ze holdige  
in myde: p bi pre zeer: nyzt & day  
i ceesside not wip teeris monel  
tize ech of zou: & now i bitake  
zou to god: & to pe word of his  
grace: p is myzt to edifie & zyne  
eritage in alle pat ben maid hoo



ly and of man / couente siluer  
 & gold eyn dop as you silf wite  
 for to po pigis / were nedeful to  
 me & to yele p ben wy me: pes  
 hondis mynstride / alle pes ym  
 gis / thewde to jon: for so it bi  
 honey me trauelge to resley  
 ne epe me / & to hane mynde of  
 pe word of pe lord ihu: for he sei  
 de / it is more blisful to 3yue pan  
 to resleyne / & whie he hadde leid  
 pes pigis: he knelede & he priede  
 wy alle hem / and greet wepig  
 of alle men was maid / & pei fel  
 den on pe necke of poul: & kille  
 de hi / and lozide moost in pe  
 word y he seið: for pei shulen  
 no more se his face / & pei lette  
 hy to pe shippe. *¶ 11*  
**A**nd whie it was don y  
 we shulde saile & weren  
 pallid ankei fro he: wy freize  
 cours we came to chon: & pe day  
 synge to rodus: & fro penys to  
 patiram: & fro penys to myza  
 and whane we fouden a shipp pal  
 lige ouer to ftenyce we weten  
 up into it: & sailede fory / and  
 whie we apperiden to cypre:  
 we lesten it at ye lestchale & lay  
 lede into firy & came to cyze  
 for per ye shipp shulde be vuch  
 argid / and whie we fouden disti  
 phis: we diuellið per senene day  
 es / whiche seiden bi spm it to po  
 ul: y he shulde not go up to ie  
 rusalem: and whie pe dayes we  
 re filld: we zede fory: & alle me  
 wy wyues & childe ledde fory  
 vs wyoute ye citee / & we kne  
 lede in pe lee bynke & we pzei  
 eden / and whie we hadden ma  
 ad far wel to gidre: wente up

into pe shipp / & pei turnde æt  
 to her onue placis: & whane  
 pe shipp sailge was filld fro  
 tre: we came don to colomay  
 da: & whie we hadde gret wel  
 pe bypen: we diuellið o day at  
 hem: & anop day we zeden fory:  
 & came to celarie / and we cure  
 den to pe hous of filip eungethe  
 y was oon of pe senene: & diuellið  
 at hi & to hi weren som donys  
 vngyns y profeciete: & whie we  
 diuellið yere by sūdayes: apio  
 fete agabus by name cam ouer  
 fro iudee / vis whie he cam to us:  
 took pe گردil of poul: & boond to  
 gidre his feet & hondis & seið: pe  
 hood goit sen pes pigis / yus ielbis  
 shulen bynde i ierlm ye mā whos  
 is vis گردil: & pei shulde bitake  
 into hevene mēms hondis / whiche  
 pig whie we herde: we pzeiden  
 & pei y were of pat place y he  
 shulden not go up to ierlm: yā  
 ne poul answereide: & seið: what  
 doen ye wepige & tmeutige myn  
 herte: for i am redy not only  
 to be boūdu: but also to die i ierlm  
 for ye name of pe lord ihu: & whā  
 ne we myzre not coucele hi: we  
 were stille & seiden / ye wille of pe  
 lord be don: & astur pes dayes we  
 were maid redy & wenten up to  
 ierlm: & sume of pe distiphs ca  
 me wy us fro celarie: & ledde  
 wy hem aman jason of cypre an  
 eld distiple at whom we shulden  
 be herbond: & whie we came to  
 ierlm: bypen resleyne / vs wil  
 fully: & in pe day synge poul en  
 tde wy us to james: & alle ye el  
 dre me were gedrid / whiche whā  
 ne he hadde grett: he telle bi alle

yngis: what god hadde don i here  
 me bi ye mynsterie of hi: & whā  
 ne pei herden: pei magnifide god  
 & seið to hi / byorn y seest hois  
 many poulandis ben i ierlm:  
 y han bilened to god: & alle be lo  
 neris of pe laue: & pei herde of  
 pee: y pon techit departyng fro mo  
 ples: of pilke ierlm y ben by hepe  
 me: pat sepen y pei onken not to  
 circūcise her lones: ney onken to  
 entre bi custom / y fore whāt is: it  
 bihouey y pe mltitude come to gi  
 dre / for pei shulen heer: y y art  
 come / y fore do you vis pig: pat  
 we sepen to pee / y ben to us fou  
 re me: pat hauen abou on hem  
 take y pes me: & halewe pee wy  
 hem / longe on he y pe shane her  
 heedis: & y alle me wite: y ye pig  
 y pei herden of pee be fals / but y  
 you walkist & y silf kepist ye  
 laue / but of yele y bileuede of  
 hepen me: we wite demyge: y  
 pei abstene hem fro pig offrid  
 to ydols & fro blood: & also fro strā  
 ghid pig: & fro fornicaciō / yāne  
 poul took ye me & into pe day  
 synge he was purified wy he:  
 & entride into pe tēple: & thew  
 de ye fillig of dayes of purifig:  
 til ye offrig: was offrid for ech  
 of he / and whie senene dayes we  
 ren cendid: ye ierlm y were of a  
 spe: whie pei fzen hi in pe tem  
 ple: stride al ye peple: & lepen  
 hondis on hi: & cride / me of nrl  
 helpe ze vs / vis is ye mā y azen  
 ye peple & ye laue & vis place te  
 chy euery wher alle me / more o  
 uer & hay led here me into pe tē  
 ple & hay desouhd vis hood pla  
 ce / for pei seien trosym of eke

in ye citee wy hi: whō pei gellide  
 y poul hadde brougt into ye tem  
 ple / and al ye citee was moued:  
 & arenyge to gidre of ye peple  
 was maid: & pei took poul & dro  
 wen hi out of ye tēple: & anoon  
 pe zatis were clodid: & whie pei  
 soute to sle hi: it was teeld to  
 ye tribune of ye ciupany of kni  
 tis: y al ierlm is cofoundid / whiche  
 anoon took knytis & centuriens:  
 & ran to he: & whie pei hadden seen  
 ye tribune & ye knytis: ye ceel  
 side to synge poul / yāne ye tēbune  
 cam & cange hi: & comāuide y  
 he wer boūdu wy alkei cheynes  
 & aride who he was: & what he  
 hadde don / but ope cride oyr vis  
 amōg ye peple: & whie he myzte  
 knowe no certeyn pig for ye noy  
 se: he comāuide hi to be led into  
 ye castels: & whie poul cam to  
 ye grees: it bifel y he was born  
 of knytis for strengye of ye peple  
 for ye mltitude of peple suede hi:  
 & cride take hi alkei: & whie po  
 ul bigan to be lad into ye castels:  
 he seið to ye tēbune / wher it is  
 leestful to me: to speke ony pig to  
 pee: & he seið: kauft you greek:  
 wher y art not ye egiptian: whiche  
 bfore pes dayes monedist a noy  
 se: & leddist out into desert: fou  
 poulend of me mēllaris: & poul  
 seið to hi / for i am a ierlm of charle  
 of cilce a citeleyn whiche cite is  
 not vnknoibū: & i pzeie y: suffi  
 me to speke to ye peple: & whie he  
 listride: poul stood i ye grees: & be  
 kende is ye hood to ye peple: & whie  
 a greet silence was maid: he spak in  
 ebrei: tige & seið: *¶ 11*  
**B**en & fadris: heer ze



What reison I zelde now to you /  
 Whie lme herde p in ebers tu  
 ge he spak to hem. per zane pe  
 moze silence / & he seide / I am  
 ama a jels bozn at tharse of ci  
 lize nozithid / & in vis ctee bly  
 dis pe feet of gamahel tauzt bi  
 pe treupe of sadus labe a long  
 et of pe labe. as alls ze alle ben  
 today / And I purshabed vis wen  
 til to pe deep. byndige & brake  
 ge into holdis me & wpmen / as  
 pe puce of pestis zeldy wtucl  
 sig to me. & alle pe gretteste of  
 birp of whom also I took pithis  
 to brpen. & wente to damask  
 to brige fro pems me boundu  
 to ierlm. & per shuld be peyned  
 & it was don whyle I zede & ney  
 ede to damask. at mydday lude  
 ly fro henene a greet plente of  
 lzt shoon aboute me / & I felle  
 dou to pe erpe. & herde abois fro  
 henene sepyge to me / saul saul  
 what purshabest p me. / it is  
 hard to pee to keke azens pe pc  
 ke / & antiberde / who art p lord  
 & he seide to me / I am ihu of na  
 zareth. who p purshabest / & per  
 yat were wy me. ezen but pe  
 lzt / but per herde not pe vois  
 of hi. p spak wy me & I seide  
 lord what shal I do / & pe lord sei  
 de to me / ryle pou & go to dama  
 sk. & per it shal be seid to pee  
 of alle pigis whiche it bihoney  
 pee to do. & whie I s; not for  
 pe clere of pat lzt. I was  
 led bi pe hood of felowis & I  
 cam to damask. & ama ananpe  
 p bi pe labe hadde wtucl  
 of alle jels dwellige i damask.  
 cam to me & stood up. & seide

to me / saul brop bihold / & I pe same  
 our biheeld ito hi / & he seide / god of de fa  
 ds hap bifore ordeyned p. p shuld be  
 we pe will of hi / & shuld be se p ryl  
 ma. & hee pe vois of his moup / for p  
 alt be his wtuclle to alle me of pe pigis.  
 p hast sep & herd / & now whar dwellest  
 ryle up & be baptid / & want he a w  
 pi synes by pe name of hym cle  
 pid to help / and it was don to  
 me as I turnede azen ito ierlm  
 & preide i pe temple. p / I was mad  
 raupthig of loule / & I s; hi lei  
 puge to me / hne pou & so our  
 te of ierlm. for per shule not nel  
 seyne p wtuclle of me / & I  
 seide lord per witen p / I was do  
 lige to gidre into ploy. & betige  
 bi synagogis. hem p bileneden  
 into pee / & whie pe blood of ste  
 uene p wtuclle was shed out.  
 I stood up & cōseutide & kepte  
 pe cloris of me p slouen hi / &  
 he seide to me / go pou for I shal  
 sende pee fer to naciōis / & per  
 herde hy til vis word. & per reile  
 de her vois & seiden / take anwey  
 fro erpe such aman man / for  
 it is not leestful. yat he hme  
 & whie per cride & fette abey  
 her cloris. & preke dnt into  
 pe er. pe tribune comandide hi  
 to be led into castels. & to be betis  
 wy stongis. & to be turmetid.  
 p he wite for what cause per  
 cride so to hi / and whie per had  
 den boundu hi wy cordis. pou  
 seide to a centurie stoungis up  
 to hi. wher it is leestful to you  
 to stoung a romey / & vndap  
 ned. & whie vis pig was herd.  
 pe centurie wente to pe tribune  
 & zelde to hi & seide / what art p

to toringe. for vis man is a ci  
 teleyu of rome / & pe tribune  
 cam up. & seide to hi / seie pou  
 to me wher you art a romay.  
 & he seide / Ihe / & pe tribune an  
 siberide / I wy moche synne gat  
 vis freedom / & pou seide / & I was  
 born a citeleyu of rome / p for  
 anoon per p shulden haue tur  
 metid hi. departid away fro hi  
 & pe tribune dreed. afur p he  
 wite p he was a citeleyu of ro  
 me. & for he hadde boundu hi / but  
 in pe day linyng. he wolde bi  
 te moze diligetly for what cause  
 he were aculid of pe ierlis. &  
 vnbond hi / & comandide prestis  
 & al pe coucil. to come to gidre.  
 and he brouzte for pou & sette  
 hi amog hem. // **C.** // **W.** //  
**A**d pou biheeld into pe  
 coucil. & seide / brpen. I  
 aby al good cōhence haue  
 tyued bi fore god. til into vis day  
 and auanpe puce of prestis. co  
 mandide to men p stoden up  
 hi p per shulden linyte his mo  
 up / yane pou seide to hi / p whi  
 tid wal god linyte pee / pou lutt  
 & demet me bi pe labe. & azens  
 pe labe pou comandist me to  
 be linytu / & per p stood up. seide  
 curst pou pe hzeste preest of god.  
 & pou seide / brper / I wite not.  
 p he is pnce of prestis / for it is  
 wztu / p shalt not curse pe p  
 ce of pe ple. but pou lyste p  
 co party was of saduces & peto  
 p of farilees. & he cryede i pe au  
 cel / brpen / I am a farile. pe so  
 me of farilees. I am demed of  
 pe hope & of azen p lig of deed  
 me / & whie he hadde seid vis pig.

dillencion was maid bitwre pe  
 farilees & pe saduces & pe mfr  
 tude was departid / for saduces  
 seien y no rylig azen of deed me  
 is. neyr angel neyr spirit. but  
 farilees knowleth eney p. &  
 a greet cry was maid. & synne  
 of farilees risen up. & fozten  
 sepyge / we fynden no pig of y  
 nel in vis ma. What if a spirit  
 eyr an angel spak to hi. & wha  
 ne greet dillencion was maid.  
 pe tribune dreed lest pou shul  
 de be to dralre of he / & he coman  
 dide knytis to go don. & to ta  
 ke hi fro pe myddel of he. & to le  
 de hi into castels. & in pe myzt li  
 puge. pe lord stood up to hym  
 & seide / be pou studefast / for as p  
 hast wtuclid of me i ierlm.  
 so it bihoney pee to wtuclle  
 allo at rome / & whie pe day was  
 come. synne of pe ierlis gadre  
 he. & made abois & seide / p per sh  
 ulde ney ete ne drynke. til per  
 slouen pou / and p were mo  
 pan fourty me p made vis labe  
 rying to gidre / & per wente to  
 pe pices of prestis & eldre me  
 & seide / wy deuocion we han a  
 vobid p we shule not taste o  
 ny pig. til we sleen pou / now  
 pfore make ze knowu to pe tri  
 bune wy pe coucil. p he brige  
 hi for to you as if ze shulden  
 knowe sū pig moze certeyh of  
 hi / & we ben redy to sle hi. by  
 fore p he come / & whie pe sone  
 of poulis eistr hadde herd pe  
 alpies. he cam & entride into pe  
 castels & teelde to pou / & pou  
 depide to hi con of pe centurys  
 & seide / seide vis zong man to pe



tribune: for he had an pig to the  
 use to hi and he took hi & ledde  
 to the tribune: & seide/ pouil þis  
 bounden piete me: to lede to pee  
 þis zong mā. þ hap summe ym  
 gis to speke to pee/ & þe tribune  
 took his hood: & wente wip hi  
 a fydul half: & aride hi/ what pig  
 is it þ þou hast to the use to me.  
 & he seide/ þe þe wis ben acordid  
 to þeie pee. þ to morwe þ þy  
 ge forþ pouil into þe coucil: as  
 if þe shulde enquer sū pig more  
 certenly of hy/ but bilene þou  
 not to he/ for mo þan fourty me  
 of he alþien hi: whiche han a  
 wordid þ þe shulde not ete neþ  
 drink: til þe sleen hi/ & now þe  
 ben redy abydyge þi biheeste/  
 þfore þe tribune lette þe zong  
 mā: & comāndide þ he shulde spe  
 ke to no man. þ he hadde mand  
 þes pigis knowen to hi/ he clepi  
 de to guidre tiber centuriens: &  
 he seide to he/ make ze redy tiber  
 hundid kyztis: þ þe go to cesa  
 rie: & hozl me seuenty & þer me  
 tiber hundid: fro þe prude our  
 of nyzt/ & make ze redy an hors  
 for pouil to ryde on to lede hi/ þat  
 to felle þe president: for þe tribu  
 ne dreedde lest þe þe wis wolden  
 take hi bi þe weye & sle hi: & af  
 terward he myzte be chalengid as  
 he hadde take money/ & woot hi  
 a pittle: conteþnyge þes pigis  
 claudius lissas to þe beste felx  
 president: heelp þis mā þ was  
 take of þe þe wis & bigan to be  
 slayn: þ cam upon he wip myn  
 cost & deliued hi fro he whue þ  
 knew þ he was a romayn: & þ wold  
 de write þe cause: whiche þe pnt

iden azens hi: & þ ledde hi to þe  
 conseil of hem/ & þ found þ he was  
 accusid of questionis of her labe/  
 but he hadde no cryme wozp þe  
 deþ eyr boondis: & whue it was  
 teeld me of þe alþies þ þe arny  
 den for hy: & sente hi to pee/ & þ  
 waruede also þe accusis: þat  
 þe seþe at pee/ fare wel/ and so  
 þe kyztis as þe were comān  
 did taken pouil: & ledde hi by nyzt  
 into antipatri den: & in þe day sup  
 ge whue þe hozl me were lest þ  
 shulden go wip hi: þe turnede  
 azen to þe castels/ & whue þe  
 men to cesarie: þe taken þe  
 pittle to þe president: & þe seide  
 also pouil before hi/ & whue he had  
 de rad & aride of what þe pnt  
 he was: & knew þ he was of ali  
 cie: & shal heer þe he seide/ þ  
 ne ym accusis comē: & he comā  
 did hi to be kept i þe moot halle  
 of eroude. ¶ **C** ¶ **¶**  
**A**fter þe fyne dayes: a  
 many pnt of prestis cam  
 don þe wip summe eldre me: & þ  
 culle a fair speker: whiche we  
 ten to þe president azens pouil/ &  
 whue pouil was lomeyd: terail  
 le bigan to accuse hi & seide/ wha  
 ne in moche pees we doen by  
 pee: & many pigis ben amēdid  
 by þi wylsom: cūmore & euery  
 wher þou best felx we han rel  
 dynd wip aldoþing of þankige/  
 but lett þ tarie þe lenger: þ  
 preþe þe shorthy: heere us for  
 þi mekenesse/ we han found þ  
 wickid mā þrige dissencion to  
 alle ierlis in al þe world: & au  
 tour of dissencion of þe seide of  
 nazarens: & he also enforlid to

deþoule þe temple/ whom also we  
 taken & wolden deme astir our  
 laibe/ but lissas þe tribune cam  
 wip greet strengþe aboug: & de  
 liued hi fro our hondis/ comā  
 did þis accusis: to come to þ  
 of whom þou demyge maist kno  
 we of alle þes pigis: of whiche we  
 accusen hi/ & þe wis putte to & lei  
 de: þ þes pigis hadden he so/ & þ  
 ul anliwerde: whue þe president  
 graunte him to seþe/ of many  
 zeers þ knowe þe þ þou art do  
 melman to þis folk: & shal do  
 þnolþ for me wip good resou/ for  
 þou maist knowe: for to me be  
 not more þan tiber dayes: þ  
 þen þ cam/ up to wozlþpe i ie  
 rlm/ & neþ in þe temple þe founde  
 me dispurtege wip our mā neþ  
 makige concourf of peple neþ  
 in synagogis neþ in citee neþ  
 þe mou þeie to þe of þe whi  
 che pigis þe now accusen me/  
 but þ knowleche to þe þis pig:  
 þ after þe seite whiche þe seþe  
 erehe: lo þ lerne to god þe fadir  
 & þ bilene to alle pigis þ be w  
 ti in þe laibe & þetis: & þ han  
 hope in god: whiche also þe he  
 ank abide þe azenrylig to co  
 myge of mit me & wickid i þis  
 pig/ & audie wip oute hit tþng:  
 to haue cōstience to god & to me  
 eūmore/ but after many zeers  
 þ cam to do almes dedis to my  
 folk & offrgis & anolþis: i whiche  
 þe founden me purried i þe tem  
 ple: not wip cupany neþ wip  
 nople: & þe camte me & crþeu  
 & seide/ take abey our enemy/ &  
 summe þe wis of alie whiche it  
 biþofte to be now þlent at þe.

& accuse if þe hadde ony pig a  
 zens me/ eyr þe le hem silt seie  
 if þe founden i me ony pig of  
 wickidnelle: siþen/ stonde in  
 þe coucil/ but couly of þis vois:  
 bi whiche þ crþede stondige anoz  
 he/ for of þe azenrylig of deed  
 me: þ am demyþ þis day of zoi/  
 soþely felx dilayede hem: and  
 knew moost certenly of þe  
 weþe & seide/ whue lissas þe tri  
 bune shal come don þ: & shal  
 heer zoi/ & he comāndide to a  
 centurien to keþe hi & þ he had  
 de reite: neþ to forþede ony mā  
 to mynystre of his onue pigis  
 to hi/ & after summe dayes: felx  
 cam wip drustille his wif þat  
 was a ierbelles: & cleþe pouil &  
 herde of hi þe fer þis i cit ihu/  
 & while he dispurtege of ryzel  
 nelle & chaitte & of dome to co  
 myge: felx was maad treblige  
 & anliwerde/ þ þe neþ not go:  
 but in tþme conueuable/ & shal  
 cleþe þe/ also he hope: þ mo  
 neþ shulde be zoi to hi of pouil/  
 for whiche pig he cleþe hy: &  
 spak wip hi/ & whue tiber ze  
 ris were fillid: felx took a  
 cessour porcus festus/ & felle  
 wold þe grace to þe wis: & leþe  
 pouil bounden. ¶ **C** ¶ **¶**  
**T**herfore whue festus ca  
 into þe pnt after þe  
 prude day: he wente up to ieru  
 salem fro cesarie: & þe princes  
 of prestis & þe wozpette of þe  
 þe wis wente to hy azens pouil:  
 & preiden hi & aride gre azens  
 hi/ þ he shulde comāndide hi to be  
 led to ierlm: & þe seide/ alþies  
 to sle þe in þe weþe/ but festus







se Ierwis token me. Whiche I was  
in pe temple to sle me / but I was  
holpū bi pe help of god īto pis  
day: & stonde witnesliche to les  
le & to more: & I seye no pig: ellis:  
van whiche pigis ye psetis &  
moyses spaken p̄ ihule come  
if crist is to suffre. if he is pe  
furste of azenyng of deed me.  
p̄ ihul theke liz to pe peple  
& to hepen me. Whiche he spak pes  
pigis. & zeldite resou: festus sei  
de whi greet voys / poult p̄ mad  
dist / many lettris turne pee to  
wodnesse / and poult seiðe / I mad  
de not poult beste festus: but I  
speke out pe wordis of treuþe  
& of sochpennelle / for also pe king  
to whom I speke stide fastly: wo  
ot of pes pigis / for I deme p̄ no  
pig of pe le is hid fro hi / for ney  
in a corner: was ouzt of pes pi  
gis don / bileneft poult agrip  
pa to psetis. / I woot p̄ poult  
uest / & agripa seiðe to poult / in  
hytū pig poult coucelist me to be  
maad a cristen man / & poult sei  
de / I desire amentis god bope  
in lital & in greet. not oonly pe.  
but alle pes p̄ heere today to  
be maad such as I am: out takū  
pes hoodis / and ye lig roos up.  
& ye p̄sident & beroupe: & pe  
p̄saten nyz to he / & whiche pei be  
ten ankei. pei spake to gide &  
seiðe / p̄ vis mā hay not don ouy  
pig wozpideep: ney bondis / & a  
grupa seiðe to festus / vis mā  
nyze be delymetid: if he hadde  
not appeld to pe emperour.  
**B**ut as it is / C. 1161.  
I demp d̄ hi to lthippe īto  
italpe: pei bnoten poult

whi opn leperis to a centurie  
by name julius of pe cūpany of  
knyztis of pe empour. & we we  
ten up into pe lthip of adymetis  
& bigunen to sayle: & were born  
about pe placis of asye. while  
aristark of macdonye testato  
nyceuce dwellede stille whi us /  
& in pe day lathige we came to si  
don / and julius tretide curteish  
poul: & suffred to go to frendis  
& do his nedis / & whiche we remoue  
den fro p̄mis: we vndir saylede  
to cyre: for p̄ whi d̄is wern con  
trarie / & we seiðe in pe see of  
silas & paulie: & came to lathis  
p̄ is lathie / and pei pe centurien  
fond a lthip of alisaundre seiðe  
ito ytalie: & putte us ouer ito  
it / & whiche in many dayes we sei  
leden slowly. & sone pe came azes  
gibdu: for pe whi d̄is lettide us:  
we seiðen to crete biydis lalo  
mona: & sone pe we seiðe biydis  
& came into a place p̄ is depid god  
hanene. to whi moche tyme we  
was nyz / & whiche moche tyme we  
pallid. & whiche seiðe p̄ane was  
not eikr. for pat fastig was p̄al  
lid: poult coufortid hem & seiðe to  
he / me / & seilpug bigynne to  
be whi whong & moche harin:  
not oonly of charge & of pe lthip:  
but also of oure lynes / but pe  
centurie bileneft more to pe go  
imour. & to pe lord of pe lthip: p̄a  
to pese pigis p̄ were leid of poult  
& whiche pe hanene was not able  
to dwelle in lthip: ful manye  
ozdespene coucel. to seiðe fro  
p̄mis / if on ouy mā pei nyz  
ten come to lthippe: to dwelle  
in lthip at pe hanene of cre

te whiche biholdy to affrik & to cho  
ru. & whiche pe soup bletis: pei gel  
siden hem to holte purpos / and  
whiche pei hadde remoued fro  
allon: pei seiðe to crete & not  
astir moche. pe whi d̄is tisony  
p̄ is depid nozpeet: was azes  
it / & whiche pe lthip was rany  
lthid. & nyzte not enforle azes  
pe whi d̄is. whiche pe lthip was  
zoum to pe blowigis of pe whi d̄is  
we wern born whi cours into  
an yle p̄ is depid canda: & sone  
pe we nyzte gete altil boot:  
& whiche vis was takū up pei vli  
den helpis: girdige to gide pe lthip  
& dzedden lef pei lthille falle in  
to sondi placis / & whiche pe vel  
sel was vndirlett: so pei were  
born / & for we were p̄zoben in  
strong tempest: i pe day lthip  
ge pei maaden castig out / & pe  
p̄zide day: whi her hondis pei cal  
tite ankei pe m̄trumetis of pe  
lthip / & whiche pe sūne ney pe  
sterris were seye by many day  
es. & tēpest: not altil neyede:  
not al pe hope of oure heelpre  
was don ankei / & whiche moche  
fastig hadde be: p̄ane poult do  
od in pe myddil of he & seiðe / a me  
it bihofte whiche ze herde me not  
to hane take ankei pe lthip fro  
crete: & gete vis whong & castig  
out / & nou / couceile zou to be of  
good confort / for loll of no p̄loo  
ne of zou lthil be out takū of  
pe lthip / for an angel of god. who  
I am & to whom I serue: stood  
nyz to me in vis nyzt & seiðe  
poul d̄ede pou not: it bihouey  
pee to stonde bifoze pe empour:  
& to god hay zom to pee: alle

p̄ be i pe lthip whi pee / for whiche  
pig ze me be ze of good confort:  
for I bilene to my god: p̄ so it is  
hal be as it is leid to me / & it bi  
houey us to come into sū yle:  
but astir ward p̄ in pe fourten  
pe day pe nyzt cam on vs seið  
ge in pe stony lee: aboute nyz  
nyzt pe lthip me supposide sū  
kintre to appere to hem / & pei cal  
ten don a p̄lo met: & fouden tibe  
ty palis of depnele / & astir al  
til pei were departid fro p̄mis  
& fouden fystene palis / & pei d̄ed  
de lest we lthille hane fallū in  
into ltharp placis: & fro pe laste  
party of pe lthip pei seiðe four  
ankres & d̄streden p̄ pe day hadde  
be come / & whiche pe lthip men  
souzte to fle fro pe lthip. whiche  
pei hadden sent a lital boot into  
pe see vndir colour as pei lthul  
ten bigyne to d̄reathe for pe  
ankres fro pe former part of  
pe lthip: poult seiðe to pe centuri  
en & to pe knyztis / but pes dwel  
len i pe lthip: ze morbn not be  
maad lath / p̄ane knyztis lathid  
ankei pe cordis of pe lital boot:  
& lathid it to falle ankei / & wha  
ne pe day was come. poult p̄ei  
ete alle me to take mete & seiðe  
pe fourtenpe day vis day ze a  
bite & dwellen fastige: & taken  
no pig / wher fore I p̄reie zou to  
take mete for zom heelpre: for  
of noon of zou pe heer of pe heer  
lthil perillhe / & whiche he hadde  
leid pes pigis: poult took breed  
& d̄ide p̄ankigis to god i pe s̄zt  
of alle me / & whiche he hadde bro  
kū: he bigam to ete / & alle were  
maad of betti confort: & pei too



ken mete / & we were alle men  
in pe ship: two hundred teneti &  
lire / & pei were fillid wip mete.  
& dithargide pe ship & castiden  
wheete into pe see / & wthane pe  
day was come: pei enenken no  
loud / & pei biheelde an hauene p  
hadde albatir banke: unto wth  
ch pei pouzten if pei myzte to  
brige wip pe ship / & wthane pei  
hadden take wip pe ankris: pei  
bitoken he to pe see. & slakiden  
to gidre pe wiputouris of gouern  
lis / & wip a litil seil lise wip: bi blo  
wyng of pe wynd pei wente to  
pe bank / & wthane we felde into a  
place of ganel gon alaboure. w  
pe see: pei hurthide pe ship / and  
wthane pe former part was fitchid  
it dwelde comouable. & pe laste  
part was brokē of strengpe of  
pe see / & couceil of pe kyngis was:  
to sle me p were in ward / lest  
onp shulde allape: wthane he  
hadde sylmyed out / but pe cetu  
rien wolde kepe poul: & forbed  
it to be don / & he comaundide he  
p myzte wthane: to go into pe  
see & stape & go out to pe lond / &  
pei baren sume ope on boordis /  
sume on po pigis p were of  
pe ship / & so it was don: p alle  
me allapide to pe lond. **Wm.**

**A**d wthane we hadde a sta  
pid: pane we knelke p  
pe fle was clepid mylre  
ne / & pe hecpen me diten to us not  
intel curtelie / & wthane a fper was  
kyndelid: pei refreulthiden us al  
le for pe reyn p cam f cold / but  
wthane poul hadde gederid  
a quantite of kettigis of vi  
nes & leide on pe fier: an

addir she cam forp fro pe heete &  
took hi bi pe hond / & wthane pe he  
pen me of pe ple ozen pe beest  
hangyge in his hond: pei leide  
to gidre / for pis was an amaqnel  
lere / & wthane he stapide fro pe  
see: goddis reiaunce smyke hi  
not to hyne ierpe / but he shool  
anwey pe beest into pe fier: &  
hadde noon harm / & pei geslode  
p he shulde be turned into shel  
lyng: & falle dou sudently / & pe  
but wthane pei abide longe & ope  
en p no pig of puel was don in  
hi: pei turneden he to gidre & lei  
den p he was god / & in po places  
weren maneris of pe puce of  
pe ple: piplus bi name: whiche  
rellepyede vs bi pre dapes beny  
guely & soond vs / & it bifel p pe  
fadir of piplus lay trauelid  
wip feueris and blopy flur / to  
whom poul entride: & wthane he  
hadde pried & leid his hondis on  
hi: he heelde hi / & wthane pis pig  
was don: alle p in pe ple hadden  
syntnessis: came & were heeld /  
whiche alid onowride us wip ma  
ny wozthipis: & putide what  
pigis were necessarie to us wtha  
ne we shippide / & after pre mo  
nepis we shippide in a ship of  
ahlandre: pat hadde wiptrid i  
pe ple: to which was an excellent  
signe of castor us / & wthane we ca  
men to siraculan: we dweliden  
per pre dapes / fro pems we sei  
lete aboute: & camen to regyumu  
& after o day while pe souy blew:  
i pe secunde day we came to pu  
teolos: wther wthane we founden  
brypen: we were preped to dw  
elle pei anentis hem: leuene da

es / & so we camen to rome / and  
fro pems wthane brypen hadden  
herd: pei came to us to pe chepi  
ge of appus: & to pe pre tannes /  
& wthane poul hadde seyn he: he  
dide pautigis to god & took: tr  
ist / & wthane we came to rome:  
it was luftrid to poul to dwelle  
bi hi gyl: wip a knyzt kepige  
hi / & after pe prude day he cle  
pide to gidre: pe wozpente of  
pe ieris: & wthane pei camen:  
he seide to he: brypen / dide no  
pig azens pe peple eyn custō  
of sadris: & i was boundu at ie  
rusalem & was bitalu into pe  
hondis of romays / & wthane pei  
hadde arid of me: wolden haue  
depyuerid me: for p no cause of  
depy was i me / but for ieris  
azenleyden: i was cotrepyed  
to appele to pe empour: not as  
hampge onp pig to acule i pre  
peple / pfore for pis cause i pried  
to se you & speke to you / for: for  
pe hope of nrael: i am gird abou  
te wip chayne / & pei seide to hi:  
nepir we han rellepyed letteris  
of pee fro judee: nep onp of bri  
pen conpyge shewide ef spak  
onp puel pig of pee / but we pried  
en to heer of pee: what pigis p  
fecht / for of pis secte it is kno  
wu to us: p eynwhe me azen  
seyn it / & wthane pei hadde ordey  
ned a day to hym: many men  
came to hi into pe yn / to which  
he expownde watnefige pe  
kygdom of god: & coucelide hem  
of ihu of pe lawe of moyses  
& profetis: fro pe moziue til  
to euentid / & sume bileueden  
to pes pigis: p were seid of

poul: sume bileueden not / &  
wthane pei were not consentige  
to gidre: pei departide: & poul sei  
de oo word / for pe hooky goost spak  
wel bi / stape pe profete to our  
fadiris: & seide / go you to pis pe  
ple: & sepe to hem / wip eere ze sh  
ulen heere: & ze shule not vn  
derstonde / & ze seynge shule se:  
& ze shule not biholde / for pe her  
te of pis peple is greetly fatid.  
& wip eeris pei herde hem nly: &  
pei doledyn to gidre her yzen:  
lest pauenture pei se wip yzen  
& wip eeris heef: & bi herte vn  
derstonde: & be couertid: & i hee  
le he / pfore be it knouyn to you:  
p pis heelp of of god: is sent  
to hepen me: & pei shule heef:  
& wthane he hadde seid pes pigi:  
jeris wente out fro hi: & had  
den moche questiou eyn mulig  
amog hem self / and he dwelide  
fulle twey zeer: in his hyzd pla  
ce: & he rellepyede: alle p entride  
to hi: & pried pe kygdom of god /  
& tanzte po pigis p ben of pe lord  
ihu crist: wip all trist wipoute  
forbedyng ame. **Here endip**  
**pe dedis of apostles: & bigynep**  
**apolog on cete fery. pat ben le**  
**neng i ordre p is. i. james. ij. of**  
**petr. iij. of john. & j. of jude. //**  
**ordre of pe leuene epist**  
**lis** whiche ben clepid cano  
nylid: is not so amog pe  
gretis: p fully langzen pe fery  
& seibe pe rixt ordre of pe epist  
lis. As it is foundu in latyn bokis.  
for: for as moche as petr is pe  
fiste in pe ordre of apostlis: his  
epistlis ben pe fiste of he in or  
dre / but as we longe lypen coier  
not



tiden þe enāgelists to þe luf of tr  
eipe: to þe han sett þes þin þe  
help of god in þer onwe ordze  
for þe firtte of hem is an epist  
le of James: tibo of petris: þre  
of jhones: & con of judee: þe wih  
che epistlis: al þei hadde be treuli  
turned of þe tūlacionis into  
latyn speche: as þei were maad  
of þe apostlis: þei shulde haue  
maad no doute to þe rederis:  
ne þe wariaunce of wordis shu  
ld not haue spūgned it sile: & a  
mely i þat place in þe firtte epist  
le of John: wher we reden of þe  
conhete of þe trinite: wher we  
fynde þe per þay be greet erro  
of vntrewe tūlacionis: fro þe  
treipe of þe seip: while þei sette  
in þer tūlacionis: onli þe name  
of þe vīgis: þis of watr: of bl  
od: & of spirit: & leend þe witnes  
lig of þe fadir: & of þe sone: & of  
þe spirit: in whiche witneslig:  
of our comyn bilene is moost it  
rengid: & it is þreued þe per is  
oon substantiū of godhete of þe  
fadir: & of þe sone: & of þe hooly  
spirit: But i oþe epistlis how  
moche our tūlacion dīuerly fo  
operis: I leue to þe pūdece of þe  
rederis: but þou goddis mayid  
Subachū: while þou enquerist bi  
sily of me þe treipe of aptine:  
þou puttest out my elde to be gna  
we of enyous mēis teip: whi  
che seyen þe I am a peizere of  
hooly scripturis: but I am such  
a werk drete not þe eipe of  
of my enemys: ne I shal not  
denpen to hem: þaxen þe treipe  
of hooly scripture: *Jerom i þe  
plog on þes pistlis: & James seip þe*

**J**ames se lē  
want of god: & of our  
lord ihu crist: to þe tū  
che ly nedis þe in  
latenig a brood: heelp: my bī  
veren deme ze al ioye: while ze fū  
len ito dīful tēptacionis: whi  
ge þe þe þreing of þou seip: whi  
chir pacience: & pacience hap a  
parfit werk: þe be þe parfit &  
hool: & faple in no vīg: & it ony  
of ion nedir wīldom: are þe of  
god: whiche jhney to alle me lat  
gely: & vþeipdip not: & it shal  
be þou to hī: but are þe wīfey:  
& doute no vīg: for þe þe dūer:  
is lē to aīuare of þe lee: whiche  
is moued & born aboute of tūp  
þe fōre gelle not þe ilke mā: þe  
shal take ony vīg of þe lord: a  
man double in soule: is vūstā  
ble in alle his wēpes: & a meke  
broyr: haue glorie in his enīgū  
lig: & arþche mā in his lowēlle  
for as þe flour of gras he shal  
palle þe sūne roos vþ wīfey:  
& dīede þe gras: & þe flour of it  
fel dū: & þe fūrnelle of his dī  
r perūthū: & so a rþche mā we  
leuip i his wēpes: bleid is þe mā  
þe sūfrip tēptacion: for whāne  
he shal be þreipd: he shal resley  
ne þe crowne of līf: whiche god  
bīhīte to me þe lōnen hī: no mā  
whāne he is tēptid sepe: þe is  
tēptid of god: for whi god is not  
a tēptere of pūele vīgis: for þe  
tēptip of no mā: but ech mā is tē  
tid drāwū & stīrd of his onwe  
couerting: astīrdward couerting  
whāne it hap conseynd: bīpū  
gip forr līue: but sūne whāne  
it is fillid: gendip deip: & fōre

my mooste dereloye bīpen: nyle  
ze erre: ech good zīte & ech parfit  
zīte is from aboue: & comey dūn  
fro þe fadir of līzīs: anentis w  
hom is noon onūthadonīp of re  
ward: for wīlful he bigat: vs  
bi þe word of treipe: þe we be a  
bigynnyng of his creatiure: wāte  
ze my bīpen moost lōned: be  
ech mā tūst to heere: but slōw  
to speke: & slōw to wīppe: for  
þe wīppe of mā: wōchir not  
þe rīstīfīesse of god: for whi  
ch vīg: catte ze anber al vūden  
nele & plente of malice: & in  
mīltenesse relleyne ze þe word  
þis plautid: & may saue þou  
soulis: but be ze doeris of þe w  
ord: & not heereris onli: dīlley  
mīge þou sīf: for if ony mā is an  
heerer of þe word: & not a doer:  
þis shal be līned to amā þat  
bīholdip þe chere of his bīrpe i  
a mīrour: for he bīheeld hī sīf  
& wēte anber: & anoon he fōzāt  
whiche he was: but he þat bīhol  
dip in þe laibe of parfit fīed:  
& dīlley in it: & is not maad: for  
zetful heerer: but a doer of w  
er: þis shal be bleid in his de  
de: & if ony mā gelly hī self to  
be religious: & refreyne not  
his tūge: but dīlleyne þis her  
te: þe religious of hī is veyn:  
deue religiōū & vūlūmed:  
anentis god & þe fadir: is þis  
to vīlīte fadirles & modurles  
chīldre: & wīdonis i her tūla  
cion: & to kepe hī sīf: vūde fou  
lid fro þis wōrd: *C. 11.*  
**M** bīpen nyle ze haue þe  
seip of our lord ihu crist  
of glorie i accepcion of pīlōnes:

for if aman þe hap a goldū rīg: &  
in a fair clopīg: comey i þou: cū  
panū & a poze mā entīr i a foul  
clōpīg: & if ze bīholde into hī þat  
is clōpid wīf deer clōpīg: & if  
ze sepe to hī līte þe her: wēl: but  
to þe poze mā ze sepen: stōnde þe  
pere eip līte vūdr þe stool of  
my feet: wher ze deme not ane  
tis þou sīf: & ben maad domel  
me of wīkīd pōzīs: heer ze  
my moost dereloye bīpen:  
wher god chees not poze men  
i þis wōrd: rþche in seip: & eī  
ris of þe kīgdom þe god bīhīte  
to me þe lōne hī: but ze han dīspī  
lid þe poze mā: wher rþche me  
oīlīen not þou bi pōwer: & þe  
drāben þou to domes: wher  
þe blāfeme not þe good name  
þis depid to help on þou: nepe  
les if ze pīfōr me þe kīgis la  
be: by dīrpturis: þe shal lo  
ne þe neze bore as þe sēf: ze  
doen wēl: but if ze take pīlō  
nes: ze wōrche sūne: & ben rep  
ued of þe laibe: as trefpālleris:  
& who eīe kepī al þe laibe: but  
offendip in oon: he is maad gīl  
tī of alle: for he þat seide þe shal  
do no lecherie: seide also þe sh  
alt not sle: & if þou dōst not  
lecherie: but þou sleest: þou  
art maad trefpāllour of fīed:  
for whi dōom wīpōnte mercy:  
is to hī þe dōip no mercy: but  
mercy aboue reīfī dom: my  
bīpere whā shal it pīfīte: if  
ony mā seie þe he hap seip: but  
he hap not þe wērtīs: wher  
seip shal mōwe saue hī: &  
if a broī eip līfīr be nakīd:  
& han nece of eche dāpes hī fōde

þe laibe: þe speke ze & pūdoze:  
as bigynnyng to be demīd by þe  
laibe of



And if any of you seye to he go  
in pees. be ze maid hoot & be ze fil  
lid. but if ze yne not to he po pi  
gis p' ben necessarie to body.  
What shal it p'fite. so also fery  
if it hap not werkis. is deed i  
it self. but su ma shal sepe p'  
haft fery. & i haue werkis. shu  
we p' to me in fery wyoute wer  
kis. & i shal shewe to pee my  
fery of werkis. p' bilerest pat  
o god is. p' doist wel & denelis  
bileru. & treblen. but wolt p'  
wite pon weyn ma. p' fery wy  
oute werkis is puel. wher  
Abrahm oure fadir was not  
iustified of werkis. offrige  
saac his son on ye aiter. per  
fore p' seest p' fery wyoute w  
his werkis. & his fery was fil  
lid of werkis. & pe scripture  
was filhd. serunge. Abrahm  
bileruete to god. & it was arettid  
to hi to ryzelwysnesse. & he was  
clepid pe friend of god. ze seen  
p' ama is iustified of werkis. &  
not of fery only in lyk maner.  
& wher also raib pe hooze was  
not iustified of werkis. & res  
seyuete pe wellangeris. & sen  
te hem out bi anop weye.  
for as pe body wyoute spyt  
is deed. so also fery wyoute wer  
kis is deed. **James**

**M**any maistris. wite  
p' ze take moze dom. for alle  
we offende in many p'gis. if  
any ma offedy not in word. pis  
is a part for ma. for also he may  
lete aboute al pe body wy abn  
dil. for if we putten byndis i  
to hofis monpis. for to cōfente

to us. & we lade aboute al pe bo  
dy of he. And lo shupis whine pei  
ben grete. & bendyng of stronge  
wyndis. 3it pei ben born aboute  
of alhtel gounail. wher pe  
meing of pe goimour wole so  
also pe tuge is but a litil mēbe.  
& rethp grete p'gis lo hofis lital  
fyer breney a ful greet wode.  
& oure tuge is fier. pe vnyfite  
of wickidnesse pe tuge is ordy  
ned i our mēbis whidj de fouly  
al pe body. & it is enflammed of  
helle. & enflamney pe whel of  
our byre. And al pe kynde of be  
estis & of foulis & of serpentis  
& of ope is chaatid & po be maid  
tame of māys kynde. but no mā  
may chaatid pe tuge. for it is an  
vnyfite puel & ful of deedly ve  
ny in it we bleissen god pe fadir.  
& it we cursen mē. p' ben maid  
to pe lyknesse of god. of pe same  
mour passip forp blestip. & our  
fig. my byperē it bihouey not  
p' pes p'gis be don so wher a wel  
le of pe same hole bringy forp  
te & salt watir. my bypen wher  
p' a fyge tre may make gra  
pis. cyr a vyne figis. so wep  
salt watir may make swete  
watir. who is wyis & tanz a  
mong you. shu we he of good  
luyng his working in mylanes  
se of his wyldom. p' if ze han but  
tir enye & stryngis ben i your  
hertis. nyle ze hane glorie & be  
lyeris azens pe treupe. for pis  
wyldom is not fro abone comy  
ge don. but ereth & beestip & fend  
ly. for wher is endye & stry. pe  
is vnyfitefastnesse. & al shu wold  
werk. but wyldom p' is fro abo

ne. first it is chaat. afterward p'fible.  
mylde. able to be couctid. consenti  
ge to goode p'gis. ful of mercy. &  
of goode fruytis. demyge wyon  
te feryng. & pe fruytis of ryzelw  
nesse is loun in pees. to me pat  
maken pees. **James**

**M**erof ben batels & dēstis  
a mog you. wher not of  
your conetiles. p' fite in your  
mēbis. ze conette & ze han not  
ze sleen & ze han enye. & ze mou  
not gete. ze chide & make batel.  
& ze han not for ze aren not. ze  
aren puele. as ze shewen open  
ly i your conetilis. auowtrieris  
wite not ze p' pe frenthip of pis  
wold is enemy to god. p' fore who  
enere wole be friend of pis wold.  
is maad pe enemy of god. wher  
ze gellen p' pe lptur. seip deynh  
pe spyt pat dwellyn in you to  
neytry to enye. but he zyney  
pe moze grace. for whidj p'ng  
he seip god wyfandry proude  
mē. but to meke he zyney grace  
p' fore be ze luyet to god. but wher  
de pe deuel. & he shal fle fro you.  
neze ze to god. & he shal neze to  
you. ze synneris deule ze pe hondis.  
& ze double in soule p'ng ze pe her  
tis be ze wreathis & wyle ze your  
luyng be turned into wepyng.  
& ioye into loun of herte. be ze  
mekid in ye sirt of pe lord. & he  
shal enhance you. my bypen  
nyle ze bachyte ech opir. he pat  
bachytir his brop. cyr p' demey  
his brop. bachytir pe lante. &  
demey pe lante. & if pon demest  
pe lante. p' art not a dore of pe  
lante. but a domesma. but con  
is maker of pe lante & fuge. p'

may leese & deliyer. & who art you  
p' demest in nezeboze. lo now ze  
p' seyen. to day ey to morwe we  
shule go into yilke citee. & pe we  
shule dwelle azeer. & we shule  
make marchandise. & we shu  
len make wynging. whidj we  
not what is to you i pe moze  
for what is your lyf. as smoke  
apperige at a lital. & afterward  
it shal be wastid. p' fore p' ze seie  
if pe lord wole. & if we lyuen.  
we shulen do pis p'ng cyr pat  
p'ng. & now ze maken fulout ioye  
in your p'ndis. eir such ioyng is  
wickid. perfore it is lyne to hy  
p' kan do good. & dop not. **James**

**D**ry now ze riche men.  
wepy ze zellige in your  
wreathidnesse. p' shule  
come to you. your richellis ben  
rotu. & your clopis be etu of  
moustis. your gold & siluer hap  
rustid. & pe rust of he shal be to  
you into wytnessip. & shal ete  
your fleishis as fier. ze ha tre  
sourid to you wyappe i pe laste  
dayes. lo pe hyre of your werk  
mē. p' repiden your feeldis. whi  
ch is fraudid of you. cryep. & pe  
cry of he hap entrid. into pe ee  
ris of pe lord of oostis. ze han ete  
on pe erpe. & in your lecheries  
ze han nozithid your hertis in  
pe day of slepyng. ze byoute &  
slowen pe nylt mā. & he azen  
stod not you. p' fore byperē be  
ze patient til to pe comyng of pe  
lord. lo an erpe tiler. abidry pre  
cious fruyt of pe erpe. paciet  
ly suffrige til he relleyue tide  
ful & late ful fruyt. & be ze paci  
ent. & cōferme ze your hertis.



for pe comyng of pe lord shal neze  
bryden nyle ze be sozful ech to  
oyn: p ze be not demyd lo pe  
ge stonnyng nylz bifoze pe zate  
Waperen take ze ensauple of  
uel goyng out & of long abidyng  
& tranel & of patience: pe pte  
tis p spaken to zoun i pe name  
of pe lord lo we blessen he pat  
suffride ze herten pe suffryng  
epn patience of iob: and ze sy  
zen pe ende of pe lord: for pe lord  
is merciful & doyng mercy bi  
foze alle pigis my bryden nyle  
ze libere: ney bi heuene nepur  
by erpe: ney bi what eu oyr  
ooyt but be zoun word zhe zhe  
nay nay: p ze falle not vndir  
dom: & if oyr of zoun is sozeisful:  
preie ze wip paciēt soule: & seie  
he a psalm if oyr of zoun is lyk:  
leete he yn pētis of pe churche  
& preie pei for hi: & anoynte w  
oyle in pe name of pe lord: & pe  
preier of seip shal saue pe lyk  
ma: & pe lord shal make hi lyk  
& if he be yn synes: pei shule  
be forzoun to hi pfoze knowle  
che ze ech to oyr zoun synes:  
& preie ze ech for oyr: p ze be  
saue for pe comyngiel preier  
of a mist mā: is moche wozy  
he was a deedly man lyk us: &  
i preier he preide p it shule  
not reyne on pe erpe: & it reyn  
nede not pe zeeris & hie mo  
nepis: & est loone he preide: &  
heuene zaf reyn & pe erpe zaf  
his fruyt And bryden if oyr of  
zoun erry fro trewe: & oyr co  
uertty hi: he oyr to wite p  
he p maky a syner to be tur  
ned fro pe error of his weye:

shal saue pe soule of hi fro deap.  
& fenery pe mltitute of synes.  
*Here endy pe pistle of james: &  
begyny pe firste pistle of pete*  
**P**etre apostle  
of ihu crist. to pe cho  
li me to pe comelyng  
of staterig abroad: of  
poynte of galathe: of capadolie of  
alie & bitynye: bi pe bifoze knowyng  
of god pe fadir: i hale wyng of spi  
rit: bi obedience & spregyng of  
pe blood of ihu crist: grace & pety  
be mltiplyed to zoun blesid be god  
& pe fadir of our lord ihu crist.  
Which by his grete mercy bigat  
vs azen ito hyngge hope by pe we  
rylig of ihu crist fro deap into eri  
tage vncorruptible: & vnde foulid  
& pat shal not fade p is kept in  
heuene for zoun p in pe ven of god  
ben kept bi pe seip: into heelpen  
is redy to be shewid i pe laste ty  
me i which ze shule make ioye:  
poyt it bihouey nois altyl to be  
soz i dyners tēptacion: p pe  
wyng of zoun seip be moche more  
precious pan gold: p is prenyd  
by fyer: & be foundū into heuyng  
& glorie & honour: i pe reuelaci  
on of ihu crist: whom whie ze  
han not seyn: ze loue ito whom  
allo nois ze not leynge: bileue  
but ze pat bileuen shule haue  
ioye & gladnesse p may not be  
teeld out: & ze shule be glorified  
& haue pe ende of zoun seip: pe  
heelpen of zoun seip: pe heelpen of  
zoun souls of which heelpen pte  
tis souzē & enlerchid: p pte  
of pe grace to comyng i zoun & lous  
te which eu what man tyme pe  
spirit of crist signyfyde i he: & bi

foze teelde po passionis p ben in crist.  
& pe latter glories to whiche it w  
shewid: for not to he lile. but to  
zoun pei mynstryde po pigns pat  
now ben teeld to zoun bi he p prech  
den to zoun bi pe hooly gost sent fro  
heuene ito whom angels desyre  
to biholden for which pig be ze gi  
rd pe leendis of zoun soule: soze  
p fyt: & hope ze into pe ilke grace  
p is profid to zoun bi pe shewyng  
of ihu crist as lous of obedyeuce:  
not maad lyk to pe former desy  
ris of zoun vnkunyngeulle: but  
lyk hi pat hay clepid zoun hooly:  
p alio ze silf be hooly i al lyng  
for it is wirtu ze schule be hooly:  
for i am hooly: & if ze mwardly clepe  
hi fadir: which demey wipoute  
aacepcion of psones by pe werk  
of ech mā: lyne ze m dize i pe ty  
me of zoun pilgrymage: witege  
p not bi corruptible gold epi  
siluer: ze benhouz azen of zoun  
deyn lyng of fadris tradicion:  
but bi pe precious blood as of pe  
lomb vnde foulid & vnsottid crist  
ihu p was knowū bifoze pe ma  
kyng of pe word: but he is shew  
id in pe laste tymes for zoun  
p by hi ben seipful in god: p rei  
side hy fro deap: & zaf to hi euer  
lastige glorie: p zoun seip & ho  
pe were in god: & make ze chait  
zoun souls i obedience of cha  
rite: in loue of bryghod: of sy  
ple herte loue ze to gidre more  
blyss: & be ze born azen: not of  
corruptible seed bi pe word of  
hyngge god & dwellege into w  
outen ende for ech fleishly is hep:  
& al pe glorie of it is as flour of  
hep: pe hep dize up: & lns flos  
de don but pe word of pe lord dwelhy

Wounē & i pte pe word: p is pchid  
Herfore *To zoun* *1 of pete*  
**T**putte ze away al malice  
& al gyle & seynigis & e  
vies & alle bachtyngis as now  
born zonge children: resonable:  
wipoute gyle: couerte ze mylk:  
p m it ze were into heelpen: if  
nepeles ze han taitid p pe lord  
is libere: & neze ze to hi p is aly  
nyng stoon & repnyd of me: but  
chosū of god: & honoryd & ze lile  
as quike stoonys be ze aboue bil  
did into spūal housis & an hooly  
preesthod to offere spūal sacrifici  
his aaceptable to god by ihu crist  
for which pig pe apture seip  
lo i shal sette in syon pe hyste  
corner stoon chosū & precious  
& he p shal bileue in hi: shal  
not be confoundid pfoze to zoun  
p bileue but to me p bileue  
not: pe stoon whom pe biler  
reprentē: pis is maad into pe  
heed of pe corner: & pe stoon of  
hyrtig & stoon of stauozē: to he  
p offende to pe word: ney bile  
ue it in which pei ben sett but  
ze ben a chosū kyn: a kyndly  
preesthod: hooly folk: a peple of  
purchasyng: p ze telle pe ver  
tues of hi p clepide zoun fro  
derfnessis into his wondrous  
lyst: which eu tyme were  
not a peple of god: but now  
ze ben pe peple of god which  
hadde not mercy: but now ze  
han mercy moost dere i biled  
zoun as comelyngis & pilgrymes  
to absteyne zoun fro fleishly de  
siris pat fytten azen pe soule  
& haue ze zoun conuersacion good  
among hepeue me pat i pig p



pei bachte of zoi as of mpsdoer?  
pei biholden zoi of good werkis  
7 gloriſie god i pe day of visita  
cion be ze enget to ech creatu  
r for god epi to pe fig as to  
hi p is hyere in stat / ey to du  
tis as to pulke p ben sent of  
hi to pe verance of mpsdoe  
ris 7 to pe preliſ of good me  
for so is pe wille of god: p ze do  
wel 7 make pe vnknyngeſſe  
of vnpridet me to be doub as  
fre me 7 not as haunge hyng  
but as pe seruantis of god  
honoure ze alle me lone ze byper  
hood drede ze god honoure ze pe  
kyng / seruantis be ze hugetis  
mal drede to lordis not only to  
goode 7 to mpsdo but also to tri  
uantis for pis is grace. if for co  
stience of god ony ma suſtry  
heynelles 7 suſtry vnſtly for  
what grace is it: if ze synen 7  
ben buſtard 7 suſten but if  
ze doen wel 7 suſten paciently  
pis is grace anentis god for to  
pis pig ze ben clepid for also et  
suſtite for us 7 leſe enſauple  
to zoi. p ze folwe pe ſteppis of  
hi which dide not lyne: ney gyle  
was foundu in his mouy 7 whne  
he was curſid. he curſide not / wha  
ne he suſtite: he manalyde not  
but he bitook hi ſulſ to hi p deny  
de hym vnſtly 7 he hi ſulſ bar  
oure synes i his body on a tree  
p we be deed to synes 7 lyue to  
rythwylleſſe. by whos wan wo  
de ze ben heehid for ze were as  
ſheep errige: but ze ben now  
tied to pe ſhepard 7 bulthop  
of zoi ſoulis. **C. m.**  
Allo wyman be pei huget  
to her hoſebondis p if ony

man bilene not to pe word: by pe  
comſacion of wyman. pei be ſe  
wōmyn wyman word. 7 biholden  
ze indrede zoiure hoſy comſacion  
of whiche p be not wyman for  
curious ournyg of heer. epi  
doynge aboute of gold. epi ournyg  
of cloys: but pulke pat is pe  
hid man of herte i vnconſap  
on 7 of mpsdo ſpirit. whiche is  
riche in pe ſit of god for ſo ſu  
tyme hoſy wyman hopige in  
god ourneden hem ſulſ: 7 weren  
ſugget to her ony ne hoſebondis as  
ſare obeide to abraham: 7 de  
de hi lord of whom ze ben dony  
wel doynge: 7 dredege ony per  
bacion also me diſelle to gode 7  
bi knynge zoiure ze honour to pe  
mans freete as to pe more ſelle  
7 as to euene curis of grace 7 of  
lyf: p zoi preteris be not lettid  
7 in ſey al of oon wille. in pier  
be ze ech suſtite wy op. louers  
of byphed. incuſil. mpsdo meke  
not zeldige yuel for yuel. ney  
curſig for curſig: but azenwa  
rd bleſſige for in pis pig ze ben  
clepid pat ze welde bleſſig bi eri  
tage for he p wole lone lyf 7  
good dayes: contrayne his tige  
fro yuel 7 hile lypis p pei ſpeke  
not gyle 7 boiſe he fro yuel 7  
do good: ſeke he pees 7 parſyſ  
sue it for pe yzen of pe lord ben  
on miſt me: 7 his eeris on pe pi  
eris of hē but pe cheet of pe  
lord is on me p doen yuels 7 wh  
is it p ſthal amopezoi: if ze be ſuere  
7 loneris of goodneſſe but also  
if ze suſtten ony pig for riſtbul  
neſſe: ze ben bleſid but drede ze  
not pe drede of hē: p ze be not  
diſtribid but halye ze pe lord

et in zoiure hertis. 7 eimore be  
ze redi to ech ma axynge zoi re  
ſou of p ſey 7 hope pat is i zoi  
but wy mpsdoſſe 7 drede: ha  
nyge good conſtience p in pat  
pig p pei bachten of zoi: pei  
ben coſoundid. whiche chalengen  
ſally zoiure good comſacion  
i et for it is bett: pat ze do  
wel 7 suſtite if pe wille of god  
wole. van doynge yuele for al  
ſo et conys drede for ony ly  
nes. he miſt for vnſt. p he ſh  
uile offere to god vs mand deed  
in fleuth but mand quyk i ſpirit  
for whiche pig he can i ſpirit 7  
also to hē p were cloſid to gode  
7 pſon: p chide whiche were ſu  
tyme vnbeleſſid whne pei abi  
diden pe patience of god i pe dayes  
of noe whne pe ſhip was mid:  
in whiche a fewe p is to ſeie epte  
ſoulis were mand ſaf bi watir  
7 ſo baptym of lyf fourme ma  
kyng ſaf not pe puttyng awei  
of pe filps of fleuth: but pe ar  
yng of a good conſtience i god  
bi p azenwylig of oon lord iſu  
et p is in pe rythals of god. 7  
ſuoleryp depe: p we ſhulden be  
mand eris of euſtalyge lyf / he  
zed into henene: 7 angels 7 po  
weris 7 vtues be mand ſugget  
tis to hym. **C. m.**  
**T**herfore for et suſtite  
in fleuth: be ze also an  
med bi pe ſanne penkyg for he  
p suſtite in fleuth: ceſſide fo  
synes p pat is leſt nois i ſlei  
ah: lyne not no to pe deſiris of  
me but to pe wille of god for  
pe tyme p is paſſid is p now to  
pe wille of hepe me to be een

did: whiche walkide in leatheris.  
7 ludis. i moche drynkig of wy.  
i vnmeſurable etyngis 7 dryk  
gis 7 vnleſſid wozthypig of  
manymetis in whiche now pei  
ben aſtonped i whiche pig pei  
wondre for ze reneu not to gi  
dre into pe ſame coſuſion of le  
cherie 7 blaſſeme 7 pei ſhulen  
zoiure reſou to hē: p is redy to de  
me pe quyk 7 pe drede for wh  
for pis pig it is prechid also to  
deed men: p pei be dempd by me  
in fleuth 7 p pei lyne bi god in  
ſpirit for pe ende of alle pigis  
ſthal nerze p fore be ze prudent:  
7 wake ze in preteris bi fore alle  
pigis haue ze charite ech to op  
m zoi ſulſ. algatis laſtige: for  
charite keuerp pe mſtude of  
synes holde ze oſpitakite to gi  
dre wyman grucchyng ech ma  
as he hap reſeigned grace. my  
nytrige it into ech op: as goo  
de diſpenderis of pe manyfold  
grace of god if ony ma ſpeky.  
ſpeke he as pe wordis of god  
if ony ma mynſtryp. p god be  
honourid in alle pigis by iſu  
crist oon lord to whos glorie  
7 lordſhip ito wordis of wordis  
anne. **¶** For oft dere bynen nyle ze  
go i pilgimage i feruour p is mid  
to zoi to teptacion: as if ony  
neue pig biſalle to zoi but co  
mpne ze wy pe paſſions of et  
7 haue ze roye: p also ze be glad  
7 haue ze roye i pe reuelacion  
of his glorie if ze ben diſpild  
for pe name of et: ze ſhulen  
be bleſid for pat p is of pe ho  
nour 7 of pe glorie of pe ver  
tu of god. 7 pe ſpirit p is his:

as of pe vtn whiche  
god minſtryp.



thai sette on zou but no mā of  
zon suffre as a mā sleer. eþ a  
peef. eþ curser. eþ a defiler. of  
ope mems goodis. but if a chte  
mā. thame he not. but glorie  
he god in his name. for tyme  
is þe doom bigyne at goddis ho.  
if it bigyne first at vs. whē  
ende thal be of hem þe bileue  
not to þe gospel. if a nist mā  
þene thal be saued. wher thū  
len þe. bfeirful mā. þe tynner  
appere. þfore þe þe suffer bi  
þe wille of god. bitaken her sou  
his i good dedis. to þe feirful  
maker of nouzt. ¶  
¶ Erfore I an euene eldre  
mā. I a witness of chris  
passions. which also am a co  
mynner of þe glorie. þe thal be  
thelid it tyme to comyge. bile  
che þe þe eldre me þe ben amog  
zon. fede þe þe floe of god. þe is a  
mong zou. þe þe nepe þe not as  
countreyned but wilful bi god  
not for loue of foul wyngyng.  
but wilful. neþ as haunge lord  
thū in þe clergie. but þat þe be  
maud ensauple of þe floe of wil  
le of soule. and whie þe pnce of  
thepherdis thal appere. þe thū  
len velleue þe cronue of glori  
e. þe map neie vade. ¶  
¶ ge me þe þe liget to eldre me.  
I alle thelike þe to gidre meke  
nelle. for þe lord wyndon þe  
de me. but þe þe grace to me  
þe me. þe þe þe me. vn  
dir þe myzt hond of god. þe þe  
se zou in þe tyme of visitaciō.  
caste þe al zou. bilynelle into hi.  
for to hym is cure of zou. be þe  
soþe. I wake þe. for zoure adu

larie þe denel as a roþge hōn  
goy aboute. sechge whō he thal  
denour. whō arent on þe tye  
ge in þe seip. whige þe þe same  
passiō is maud to pilke bryphod  
of zou þe in þe world. god of  
al grace. þe depide zou into his  
ulastige glorie. zou sufferge a þe  
til he thal parfōme. thal cōfer  
me. thal make sad. to þe þe glorie  
I lordship ito worldis of worldis  
amē. ¶  
¶ siluan feirful bryphod  
to zou as I deme. I wyoot thō  
bylechge. I bilynelle. þe þe is  
þe very grace of god. I whiche  
stonden. þe churche þe is geled  
in babiloyne. I markus my loue.  
greety zou wel. greette þe wel.  
gidre in hooly cos. grace be to zou  
alle þe ben i chte amē. ¶  
¶ I here endy  
re fiste pille of petre. I hugy  
uep þe seque. ¶  
¶ I mouit petre seruant  
I apostle of ihu. chte  
to hem þe han take  
us þe euene feir. þe righly  
se of our god. I saupour ihu. chte  
grace. I pees be fillid to zou. bi  
þe knowyng. of our lord ihu. chte  
hous alle pigis of his godlich  
tu. þe ben to lye. I pte ben zou  
to us by þe knowyng. of his  
clepide us fro his owne glorie  
I vertu. bi whōm þe zaf to us  
moost pzeious bilyelle. þe  
þe þe pigis. þe thūlen be maud  
felous of goddis kynde. I fle  
þe corrupciō of þe conetile  
þe in þe world. I brynge þe in  
al bilyelle. I mynyste. I zou  
re feir. I bryng. I in fūyng  
abstinence. I abstinence pze  
ce. I patience pte. in pte loue

of bryphed. I in loue of bryphod  
charite. for if þe be wry zou. I  
ouercome. þe thūle not make  
zou. neþ wrypoute frist  
þe knowyng. of our lord ihu.  
crist. but to whōm þe ben not  
redy. þe is blynd. I gropy. I  
his hond. I forzet þe purgynge  
of his elde trespas. wherfore  
bryphed be þe more bly. þe by go  
de werke. þe make zou. clepge  
I chesynge. certeyn. for þe doynge  
þe pigis. thūlen not do lyne  
ony tyme. for þe þe entryng. in  
to enlastige kyngdom of our lord  
I saupour. ihu. crist. thal be  
mynyste. to zou. pte nonu.  
for whiche pig. I thal bryng. to  
moneste. zou. chte. of þe þe  
gis. I wole. þe be bryng. I  
cōfermyd. in þe present tremp.  
forþore. I deme. nistly. as longe  
as I am. in þe tabernacle. to rei  
se zou. in monest. I am. certey  
þe þe puttyng. a wey. of my taber  
nacle. is swyft. bi þe þe lord  
ihū. chte. hay. thelid. to me. but  
I thal. þe bilyelle. I ofte. affe  
my. þe þe haue. myle. of þe þe  
gis. for þe not. luyng. vnyple  
talis. han. maud. knowu. to zou. þe  
vertu. I þe bryng. knowyng. of  
our lord ihū. but þe. we. we. ind  
bholderis. of his. gretnesse. for  
þe took. of god. þe. fadr. honou.  
I glorie. by. such. man. vois. I  
du. dou. to. hy. fro. grete. glorie.  
þe is. my. loued. lone. I whōm. I  
hane. plesid. to. me. hee. þe. hi. I  
we. herde. þe. vois. bryng. fro. he  
nene. whie. we. we. wry. hi  
I þe. hooly. hil. I we. han. a. sadder.  
word. of. pte. to. whiche. þe. þe

nyge tent don. Iel. as to alane  
ne. þe. þe. lyt. in. a. derk. place.  
til. þe. day. bigyne. to. zue. lyt.  
I þe. day. herre. luyng. I zou.  
herre. I first. vnderstonde. þe. þe  
pig. I ech. profecie. of. scripture.  
is. not. maud. by. þe. nter. pte.  
on. for. pte. was. not. bryng.  
ony. tyme. by. māys. wille. but  
þe. hooly. me. of. god. ihū. chte. wry. þe  
hooly. goost. apaken. ¶  
¶ I also. false. pte. were  
I in. þe. peple. as. in. zou. thū  
len. be. maud. lyer. is. I  
thūlen. bryng. yn. sech. of. perdi  
ciō. I þe. tenyen. vly. lord. pat  
bryng. he. I bryng. on. he. bly.  
hast. perdiō. I many. thūle  
lie. her. lecherie. by. whiche. þe  
we. of. tremp. thal. be. blaunet.  
I þe. thūlen. make. marchandie.  
of. zou. conetile. by. seyned. wor  
dis. to. whiche. doon. nist. alyle  
ago. ceelly. not. I þe. pte. of  
þe. napp. not. for. if. god. sparide  
not. alyle. luyng. but. bryng.  
hem. to. be. turme. tid. I to. be. drahū.  
dowū. wry. bryng. of. helle. into. hel  
le. to. be. kept. into. dom. I sparide  
not. þe. fiste. world. but. þe. noe  
þe. eiz. þe. mā. þe. bryng. goer. of  
righly. bly. I bryng. yn. þe. gr  
et. flood. to. þe. world. of. vnyple  
me. I he. draf. into. poude. þe. chte.  
of. me. of. s. I of. me. of. gōmō.  
I dāp. tur. wry. wry. dōu.  
I putte. he. þe. ensauple. of. he. þe  
we. to. doynge. yue. I delyner  
ete. þe. nist. loth. oppre. lid. of. þe. w  
ong. I of. þe. lecherous. conetile  
ciō. of. curtid. me. for. in. hzt. I hee  
rig. he. was. nist. I dely. amog  
hem. I fro. day. into. day. turme. tid



Whiche wiche is a nist soule  
for pe lord kan deluere p toul  
me fro teumpaciou. & kepe wh  
kid me into pe day of doom to  
be turnetid / but more he pat  
walken astir pe fleuth in con  
tice of vnde nelle. & dispilen  
lordshipig. & ben boold pletige  
hem self. & dreiden not to lryn  
ge yn lertis blassemyge. Whe  
re angels whne pei be more i  
strengre & vti. berē not pat  
was pe exettable dom azens  
hem / but pes ben as virelona  
ble beestis kyndely into takyng  
into deap. blassemyge in pes  
pigris p pei knowen not. & dhu  
len perulhe in her corrupciou.  
F reueyne pe lyxe of our vitye  
nelle / and pei gessen delices of de  
foulyng. & of weime. to be lytys  
of day. flowyng in her feetis  
Whidelicis doyuge lecherie wh  
zon. & han pzen ful of auowte &  
conceillige trespas / dilleynge  
vnstid fast. Souls. & han pe her  
te exetald to conetysle pe lones  
of curlyng. & forsaken pe ryt  
wey. & erride synge pe weye  
of balam of boloz / which loude  
pe lyxe of wickidnesse / but he had  
de repyng of his woodnesse.  
A doub beest vndir zok pat spak  
whp vois of mā pat forbeed pe  
vnyldom of pe psete. Pes be  
wellis wipoute watir. & mystis  
dymy whu lig wpydis. to  
whiche pe pcke myt of dertuel  
his is refered. & pei spoken i pxi  
de of vanyte. & dillepueu in dely  
ris of lecherie. hem p itapen a  
lyt. Whiche lyuen in errour &  
biheren freedom to hem. Whie

pe ben seruatis of corrupciou. for  
of whom ony man is ouercomi.  
of hi also he is seruait / for it me  
forsaken pe vnde nelle. of pe wo  
ld. bi pe knowyng of oure lord.  
sanpoun ihu crist. & est soone ben  
delapid in pese & ben ouercomi.  
pe lattere pigis ben maid to hem  
wozle pan pe forme / for it was  
bette to he to not knowe pe weie  
of ryt wysnesse. pan to turne  
azen astir pe knowyng. fro pat hoo  
ly mandemēt p was brakiu to  
hem / for pilke / & p pzoibe bifet  
de to hem. pe hoūd turnede azen  
to his castyng. And a lorde is wh  
dhu in walyng in femme.  
**I**ze moost dertweyge  
bryen / wite to zon vis  
lectur epistle. in which  
I thre zon clere soule by moner  
tyng to guidie. y ze be myd ful  
of po wordis p / bifore sente of  
pe hooly psetis. & of pe maide  
metris of pe hooly apollis of pe  
lord & sanpoun / first wite ze vis  
pung. & in pe laste dayes dillepue  
ris dhu len come midillet. goyn  
ge astir her onwe conetigis. &  
yuge wher is pe biheete of pe  
comyng of hi / for liren pe fadur  
dielen. alle pigis lasten fro pe  
bigyng of creatur / but it is lrd  
fro hem willige vis pig. p heue  
nes were bifore. & pe erpe of  
watir. was stondege by watir  
bi goddis word. bi which p ilke  
word clensid pāne bi watir by  
watir. pulhide / but pe heuenes  
p nou ben. & pe erpe ben kept  
by pe same word & ben referid  
to fier into pe day of dome & per  
diciou of wiche me / but ze mo

ost tere vis o ping be not hid to  
pat o day anentis god. is as a pou  
lend zeiris. & a poulend zeiris be  
as oday / pe lord carrey not his by  
heest as sume gessen. but he dom  
patiently for zon. & wole not p ony  
me pulhe. but p alle turne azen  
to penance / for pe day of pe lord  
shal come as a peef. in which  
heuenes wh greet bure dhu len  
palle. & clementis dhu len be dillol  
ued biheete. & pe erpe & alle pe ver  
tis pat ben in it. dhu len be hent  
pfore whāne alle pes pigis dhu  
len be dillolued whāt mān men  
bihoney it zon to be in hooly  
lynyngas & ptees abidige & lryng  
into pe comyng of pe day of oure  
lord ihu crist. bi whō heuenes hre  
nyge dhu len be dillolued & clemē  
tis dhu len faple by bryng of fier.  
also we abide by hile biheetis ne  
we heuenes & newe erpe. in whi  
che ryt wysnesse dibelly for whi  
ch y ze moost dert. abidige pes  
pigris be ze bifore. to be found to  
hi in pees / vnspottid. & deme ze  
long abidyrng of oure lord ihu  
crist. zour heelp / as also oure  
moost dert hoper. pouil wroot  
to zon. by wylsom zon to hy / as  
and in alle epistlis he speky in he  
of pes pigis / in which be ben sume  
harte pigis to vndir stonde. whi  
che vnlypse & vnstable me dep  
nen as also pei doen ope scriptu  
ris to her onwe perdicou. pfore  
ze bryen bifore wityge kepe  
zon self lest ze be dillepued by  
errour of vnlypse me & falle awei  
fro zour sadnesse / but were ze i  
pe grace & pe knowyng of oure  
lord ihu crist. zour sanpoun / to hy

be gloze now & into pe day of  
euerlastyngnesse. ame. **Here en  
dyt pe secunde pistle of petre.  
& bigynney pe thirde pistle of john.**  
**I**ze ping. & I  
was fro pe bigynnyng  
which we herde wh  
ich we syzen w our  
hen. which we biheete & our ho  
dis touchten of pe word of liff.  
and pe liff is stherid & we lryng  
& we vtruelien. & tellen to zon  
pe euilastige liff. p was anetis  
pe fadir & apperide to us / pfore  
we tellen to zon pat pig pat we  
syzen & herde. pat also we hane  
felounthipe wry us. & our felous  
dhu be wry pe fadir & wry his so  
ne ihu crist. & we wryte vis ping  
to zon. y ze hane ioye. & pat zour  
ioye be ful. & vis is pe tellig pat  
we herden of hy & telle to zon.  
p god is lrt. & per be uodert nel  
his in hym. if we lryen p we han  
felounthipe wry hi. & we wandre  
in dert nelle. we ien & doen not  
treupe. but if we walke in  
lyt. as also he is in lyt. we han  
felounthipe to guidie. & pe blood  
of ihu crist his sone. clensid us  
fro al syne. if we lryen p we  
han no syne. we dillepue us  
self. & treupe is not i us. if we  
knowleche our synes. he is fery  
ful & mist. p he forpue to us our  
synes. & clensid us fro al wickid  
nesse. & if we lryen p we han not  
syned. we maken hy a lyet. &  
his word is not in us. **¶ I lryde lones. I wryte to  
zon pes pigis. y ze lryne  
not. but if ony mā lry  
ney. we han an aduocat aneu**







preue ze spiritis if yei ben of  
god. for many false pferis: we  
ten out into pe world/ in pis pig  
pe spirit of god is knowen/ ech  
spirit p knowlechy p ihu crist  
hay come in fleuth: is of god/ &  
ech spirit p lordoy ihu: is not  
of god/ & pis is ancris: of who  
ze herid p he comep/ & rist noib  
he is in pe world/ ze lytle sonas  
ben of god. & ze han ouercomi  
hi/ for he p is in jou is more: pa  
he pat is in pe world/ yei ben of  
pe world: p fore yei speke of pe  
world. & pe world heerit he/ we  
ben of god/ he pat knowit god:  
heerit us/ he p is not of god: hee  
rip not us/ in pis pig. we kno  
wen pe spirit of treupe: & pe  
spirit of errour. For oost der  
brypen lone ze to gode: for cha  
rite is of god/ & ech p louep hi  
brop: is born of god. & knowit  
god/ he pat louep not: knowit  
not god. for god is charite/ i  
pis pig pe charite of god ap  
peride in us. for god sente his  
oon bigetii lone into pe world:  
p we lyue by hi/ in pis pig is  
charite: not as we hadde lo  
ued god: but for he first loue  
de us. & sente his lone forz pue  
nelle for ouir synel/ ze moost  
der bryper: if god louede us:  
we given to lone ech opir/ no  
ma say: eue god/ if we loue  
to gode: god dwellyt i us. &  
pe charite of hi is parfyt in  
us/ i pis pig we knowen. p  
we dwellen in hi & he in us:  
for of his spirit he zaf to us  
& we syuen & witneile: p pe  
fadir sente his lone sauynour

of pe world/ who eni knowle  
chy p ihu is pe lone of god: god  
dwellyt in hi & he in god/ & we ha  
han knowen: & bileuen to pe cha  
rite p god hay in us/ god is cha  
rite/ & he pat dwellyt in charite:  
dwellyt in god & god in hi/ in pis  
pig is pe parfyt charite of god  
wip/ us: p we haue trust in pe dny  
of dom/ for as he is: also we ben  
in pis world/ drete if not in charite:  
but parfyt charite puttir out  
drete/ for drete hay peyne/ but  
he p dreyd: is not parfyt in cha  
rite/ p fore lone we god: for he  
louede us bifoze/ if ony ma leep  
p lone god. & haue his bopir:  
he is a lyer/ for he pat louep  
not his bropir: which he leep:  
hois may he lone god/ who he  
leep not: & we han pis comaun  
demet of god: p he p louep god  
lone alid his bropir.

**E**ch ma p bileuey p ihu is  
crist: is born of god/ & ech  
man p louep hi pat gendite: lo  
nep hi pat is born of hi/ in pis pig  
we knowen. p we loue pe childre  
of god: we haue we lone god. &  
don his maundemets/ for pis is  
pe charite of god: p we kepe  
hile maundemets/ & his maun  
demets ben not heuy/ for al pig  
p is born of god: oir comep pe wo  
ld/ and pis is pe victorie p oir  
comep pe world: oir leep/ and  
who is he p ouercomep pe world:  
but he p bileuey p ihu is pe lone  
of god/ pis is ihu crist p camli  
wattir & blood: & pe spirit is he  
pat witneiley. p crist is treupe:  
for ze ben p ihu & witneiley in  
heueue/ pe fadir pe lone & pe hoo

not in watr only: but i watr & blood

ly god: & res pze ben oon/ and pze  
ben p synen witneiley merpe/  
pe spirit: watir & blood: & res pze  
ben oon/ if we ressepye pe witneile  
sig of me: pe witneiley of god  
is more: for pis is pe witneiley  
of god: p is more: for he witneile  
side of his lone/ he pat bileuey i  
pe lone of god: hay pe witneiley  
of god in hi/ he p bileuey to pe  
lone: makir hi a lyer/ for he bile  
uey not in pe witneiley p god  
witneiley of his lone/ & pis is pe wit  
neiley: for god zaf to zonen lasti  
ge lyf. & pis lyf is i his lone/ he  
p hay pe lone of god: hay also lyf/  
he p hay not pe lone of god: hay  
not lyf. & write to zonen pes pig  
gis: p ze write p ze han eulastige  
lyf/ which bileuen i pe name of  
goddis lone/ & pis is pe trust/ wh  
ich we han to god. p what euer  
pig we aren afir his wille he  
shal heere us/ and we witen p  
he heerit us: what eu pig we  
aren/ we wite p we han pe ar  
yngis: which we aren of hy/  
he p boot pat his brop synep.  
a syne not to deap: aye. he &  
lyf shal be zouni to hy. p synep  
not to deap/ per is a syne to deap:  
not for it/ seie p ony ma pzeie/  
ech wickidnesse is syne: & p syne to  
deap/ we witen pat ech man p is  
born of god: synep not/ but pe  
genacioun of god keep hi: & re  
wickid touchir hi not/ we wite  
p we ben of god: & al pe world is  
lett in synel/ & we wite p pe lone  
of god cam in fleuth: & zaf to us  
wattir: p we knowe verris god. &  
be i pe lone of hy/ pis is/ & ze  
god: & euerlastige lyf/ my lytle

sones kepe ze zoun fro maunmetis//  
**H**ere endir pe furste pistle of iohn:  
& bigynep pe secide. **in.**  
The eldre man to pe C. p.  
choli lady & to her  
children: which he  
lone in treupe/ & not i aloone: but  
also alle me p knowe treupe/ for  
pe treupe p dwellyt in jou: & wip  
zoun shal be wipointe eude/ & ge  
be wip zoun in p pces of god pe  
fadir. & of ihu crist pe lone of pe  
fadir in treupe & charite. & wip  
ede ful myche for i fond of ri lo  
nes goynge i treupe: as we res  
sepyede maundemet of pe fadir/ &  
now i pzeie pze lady: not as i  
tyge a newe maundemet to pze:  
but pat p we hadde fro pe bigynig  
p we lone ech opir/ & pis is cha  
rite: p we wake afir his maun  
demetis/ for pis is pe comaun  
demet: p as ze herden at pe bigy  
nyg walke ze in hi/ for many bil  
sepyer is wente out into pe world:  
which knowleche not p ihu crist  
hay come in fleuth/ pis is a dissey  
uere & ancris/ & ze zoun silt: lea  
ze leelen pe pigis p ze han wrygt:  
p ze ressepye ful meede/ wip tige  
p ech ma p goy bifoze. & dwellyt  
not in pe techig of crist: hay not  
god/ he p dwellyt i pe techig: hay  
bope pe lone & pe fadir/ if ony ma  
comep to zoun: & bryngir not pis  
techig: nyle ze ressepye hi into  
hous. neyir lepe to hi hey/ for he  
pat leip to hi heil: comynep wip  
his synel workis/ lo i bifoze sende  
to zoun: p be not cofoundid i pe day  
of our lord ihu crist/ i haue mo pi  
gis to write to zoun. & i wolde  
not by parchemyn & enke/ for i



hope þæt þæt al come to þou. & speke  
mouy to mouy. þæt þou ioye be ful  
þe loue of richolū sūtur greeten  
þee wel þe grace of god be wiþ þæt  
amen. **¶** *Here endyþe secūde  
pistle of iohā. & bigynneþ þe pūde  
pistle of iohā.*  
**¶** *¶* **A**ldre mā to. *¶* **¶**  
gāyus moost der bro  
þer. Whō þæt loue i treu  
þe moost der broþ of al  
le pigis i make pzeier. þæt  
þou entre i fare wele fulþ.  
as þi loue doþ weleful. i  
ioyede grethly for þyren came  
& baren witneslig to þi treuþe.  
as þou balke i treuþe. i hane  
not more grace of þes pigis. þā  
þæt heet my lones balke i treu  
þe moost der broþ þou donst ferþ  
fulþ. What en þou worchit i þi  
þereu and þi into pilgrims. Whi  
che zeldit witneslig to þi chari  
te i þe lizt of þe churche. Whiche  
þou ledit forþ. & donst wel worþi  
ly to god for þi witen forþ for  
his name. & tooken no pig of þe  
þen me. þæt þou be ouen to resley  
ne liche. þæt þe be eue ne worche  
ris of treuþe. i hadde wite þæt  
auētū to þe churche. but þis di  
otrepes þæt loney to þe pmaie  
i þe resleyner not us for þis  
pig if i alhal come. i alhal mo  
nethe his werkis whiche he do  
þ chidige azens us. i þæt wele  
wordis. & as if þes pigis enst  
len not to þi. ne þe resleyner  
þyren & forbedy þe þæt resleyne.  
& þæt þou out of þe churche. mo  
ost der broþ nyle þou linke þi  
nel pig. but þat þi is good pig.  
he þæt donst wel. is of god. he þat  
donst yuel. seep not god. witnes

lig is zoldū to demerpe of alle  
me. & of treuþe it self. but also  
þe heren witneslig. & þæt þou  
þæt witneslig is treuþe. i hadde  
de many pigis to wite to þe.  
but i wolde not wite to þe. þæt  
enke & þe. for i hope toone to  
se þe. & we shule speke mouy  
to mouy. þes be to þe. frendis  
greete þe wel. greete þæt wel fre  
dis bi name. *¶* **¶** *Here endyþe  
pistle of iohā. & bigynneþ þe  
pistle of iohā.*  
**¶** *¶* **A**ldre mā to. *¶* **¶**  
gāyus moost der bro  
þer. Whō þæt loue i treu  
þe moost der broþ of al  
le pigis i make pzeier. þæt  
þou entre i fare wele fulþ.  
as þi loue doþ weleful. i  
ioyede grethly for þyren came  
& baren witneslig to þi treuþe.  
as þou balke i treuþe. i hane  
not more grace of þes pigis. þā  
þæt heet my lones balke i treu  
þe moost der broþ þou donst ferþ  
fulþ. What en þou worchit i þi  
þereu and þi into pilgrims. Whi  
che zeldit witneslig to þi chari  
te i þe lizt of þe churche. Whiche  
þou ledit forþ. & donst wel worþi  
ly to god for þi witen forþ for  
his name. & tooken no pig of þe  
þen me. þæt þou be ouen to resley  
ne liche. þæt þe be eue ne worche  
ris of treuþe. i hadde wite þæt  
auētū to þe churche. but þis di  
otrepes þæt loney to þe pmaie  
i þe resleyner not us for þis  
pig if i alhal come. i alhal mo  
nethe his werkis whiche he do  
þ chidige azens us. i þæt wele  
wordis. & as if þes pigis enst  
len not to þi. ne þe resleyner  
þyren & forbedy þe þæt resleyne.  
& þæt þou out of þe churche. mo  
ost der broþ nyle þou linke þi  
nel pig. but þat þi is good pig.  
he þæt donst wel. is of god. he þat  
donst yuel. seep not god. witnes

i lyk man also reþe þæt de foule þe  
flesch. & dispisen lordshipp. & þæt  
feme mageste. Whiche myghel ar  
chaigel disputide wiþ þe de uel  
& strouf of moyses bodi. he was  
not hardy to byngge in doom of  
blasfemy. but seide. þe lord coma  
ndite to þe. but þes me blasfe  
me. What en pigis þe knowen  
not. for what en pigis þe knowe  
lyndely as doūbe beestis. i reþe  
þe be corrupt. *¶* **¶** *¶*  
**¶** *¶* **A**ldre mā to. *¶* **¶**  
gāyus moost der bro  
þer. Whō þæt loue i treu  
þe moost der broþ of al  
le pigis i make pzeier. þæt  
þou entre i fare wele fulþ.  
as þi loue doþ weleful. i  
ioyede grethly for þyren came  
& baren witneslig to þi treuþe.  
as þou balke i treuþe. i hane  
not more grace of þes pigis. þā  
þæt heet my lones balke i treu  
þe moost der broþ þou donst ferþ  
fulþ. What en þou worchit i þi  
þereu and þi into pilgrims. Whi  
che zeldit witneslig to þi chari  
te i þe lizt of þe churche. Whiche  
þou ledit forþ. & donst wel worþi  
ly to god for þi witen forþ for  
his name. & tooken no pig of þe  
þen me. þæt þou be ouen to resley  
ne liche. þæt þe be eue ne worche  
ris of treuþe. i hadde wite þæt  
auētū to þe churche. but þis di  
otrepes þæt loney to þe pmaie  
i þe resleyner not us for þis  
pig if i alhal come. i alhal mo  
nethe his werkis whiche he do  
þ chidige azens us. i þæt wele  
wordis. & as if þes pigis enst  
len not to þi. ne þe resleyner  
þyren & forbedy þe þæt resleyne.  
& þæt þou out of þe churche. mo  
ost der broþ nyle þou linke þi  
nel pig. but þat þi is good pig.  
he þæt donst wel. is of god. he þat  
donst yuel. seep not god. witnes

Whiche seiden to þou. þæt in þe laste  
tymes þæt shulen come gylours.  
wandrige astir her oune desy  
ris. not in pnce. þe se be whiche  
departe hem self. beestly men  
not hantse spirit. but þe mooste  
der byren. aboue bilde þou self.  
on þoure moost hooly fery. & þe  
þe in þe hooly gost. & þe þe  
i þe loue of god. & abye þe þe  
of oure lord ihu crist. ito hif  
enlastige. & reþe þe þe men  
pat þe deuyd. but saue þe hem.  
& take þe hem fro þe fyer. & do þe  
mercy to oþe me in þe drede of  
god. & hate þe also pilke defouled  
coote. whiche is fleschly. but to  
hi þis moztly. to kepe þou þou  
te syne. & to ordeyne bifore þe  
lizt of his glorie. þou. wilemyd  
i fulout ioye. in þe comyng of ou  
re lord ihu crist. to god aloone ou  
saiour bi ihu crist. oure lord. be  
glorie & magnifyyng empire  
& potter bifore alle wordis & work  
& into alle wordis of wordis ame. *¶*  
*¶* **¶** *Here endyþe pūde  
pistle of iohā. & bigynneþ þe  
pistle of iohā.*  
**¶** *¶* **A**ldre mā to. *¶* **¶**  
gāyus moost der bro  
þer. Whō þæt loue i treu  
þe moost der broþ of al  
le pigis i make pzeier. þæt  
þou entre i fare wele fulþ.  
as þi loue doþ weleful. i  
ioyede grethly for þyren came  
& baren witneslig to þi treuþe.  
as þou balke i treuþe. i hane  
not more grace of þes pigis. þā  
þæt heet my lones balke i treu  
þe moost der broþ þou donst ferþ  
fulþ. What en þou worchit i þi  
þereu and þi into pilgrims. Whi  
che zeldit witneslig to þi chari  
te i þe lizt of þe churche. Whiche  
þou ledit forþ. & donst wel worþi  
ly to god for þi witen forþ for  
his name. & tooken no pig of þe  
þen me. þæt þou be ouen to resley  
ne liche. þæt þe be eue ne worche  
ris of treuþe. i hadde wite þæt  
auētū to þe churche. but þis di  
otrepes þæt loney to þe pmaie  
i þe resleyner not us for þis  
pig if i alhal come. i alhal mo  
nethe his werkis whiche he do  
þ chidige azens us. i þæt wele  
wordis. & as if þes pigis enst  
len not to þi. ne þe resleyner  
þyren & forbedy þe þæt resleyne.  
& þæt þou out of þe churche. mo  
ost der broþ nyle þou linke þi  
nel pig. but þat þi is good pig.  
he þæt donst wel. is of god. he þat  
donst yuel. seep not god. witnes



þi was foundid of þe apostles on  
crist þe soun/ disposid þi þe so  
ne þe hooly gost to shew þe  
þe me dæde hem þe lasse/ & al þe  
trinite shewide it cit in his ma  
hod: & cit to john by an angel.  
& john to hooly churche. of which  
revelacioun john made þis book/  
wherfore þis book is seid apoca  
lips: þis is to seye revelacioun/ for  
het it is conteyned þat god shew  
ide to john: & ioun to hooly chur  
che/ how grete þis hooly chur  
che sufferid in þe firste tyme: &  
now sufferid & shal suffer in þe  
laste tymes of auct/ whiche tri  
bulacioun shal be so greet: þat it  
mowe be. þei þe chosun. be mo  
ved/ and which meedis the shal  
al resurrey for þe tribulacioun.  
now is tyme to come. þe meedis  
þat be bihoote maken þe glad/  
whom þe tribulacioun þat ben  
teild makid afere þe þe þe bo  
ok amog oþere scripturis of þe  
newe testamēt. is depid bi þe  
name of pfeie/ & it is more ex  
cellent þan pfeie/ for as þe ne  
we testamēt is worpied þa þe  
olde: & þe gospel þa þe lawe/ so þis  
pfeie passid þe pfeies of þe  
olde testamēt. for it shewid þe  
cracmentis þe þe now apart þe ful  
fillid of cit & of hooly churche/ or  
ellis for to oþe is oon man pfeie  
cie: but to þis is þe man pfeie  
zoue to gidre/ þis is of þat þis  
passid: & of þat þis is present: &  
of þat þis is to come/ & to cōfer  
me þe auctorite of it. þe comey  
þe auctorite of hi þe sendid. & of  
hi þe berp: & of hi þe resurrey/  
he þat sendid is þe finte: he þe

berp þe angel. he þe resurrey ioun  
but whiche þe þis be shewid  
to john i vision: & þe þe þe þe  
dis of vision. it is to seye/ vnder  
which þe þe þe be conteyned for  
an vision is bodily: as whiche the  
seen oon þe þe bodily þe þe  
an is spiritual or imaginative.  
as whiche the seen sleepid or wa  
fige. we bihold þe ymagis of þe  
þe by which the oon oon þe þe  
myfied/ as farao sleepid oon þe  
ris of coon: & moyses wafige þe  
þe by which the oon oon þe  
of vnderstondig. as whiche þe  
revelacioun of þe hooly gost: þe  
vnderstondig of þe oon. & the oon  
uen þe trewe of myfied/ as  
john sanz þe þe þe þe conteyn  
ned in þis book for not oon þe  
þe in spirit þe figuris: but also  
he vnderstod in þe oon. þe þe  
þe were signified bi þe john þe  
þe wroot in þe yle of pathmos:  
whiche he was exild of domician  
þe moost wicked pnce/ & a cause  
cōpellid bi to write/ for while he  
was holdid in outlawe of domi  
cian in þe yle of pathmos: i þe  
churche þe he hadde goimed þe  
were þe þe many vices & di  
uerse erefies/ for þe were eime  
eretis þe þe þe senden: þe crist  
was not tofore marie/ for as mo  
che as he was in tyme boon of  
him: whiche eretis john in þe  
bigynnyng of hi gospel. vnder  
ynnep & sen in þe bigynnyng was  
þe sone. & in þis book whiche he  
sen/ i am alpha & oo. þis is þe bi  
gynnyng & þe ende/ eime also sen  
den þe hooly churche shulde ende  
tofore þe ende of þe world for

charge of tribulacioun/ & þe shul  
de not vnderfonge for her tra  
uyl: enlastige meede/ þe fore  
willige to distre þe errours  
of þe se: wherby þe crist was bi  
gynnyng & ende wherfore i saie  
sen tofore me was no god four  
med: & after me þe shal not be/ &  
þe hooly churche þe þe exercise of  
tribulacioun: shal not be endid/  
but shal pofeten: & for þe res  
urrey an enlastige meede/ john  
writid to þe seuen churche of asie:  
& to her seuen bihopis of þe forlind  
þis ensonyng & techige bi þe al  
þe genial hooly churche/ so þe nat  
of john i þe is þe is: specially of þe  
churche of asie. & also of al hooly chur  
che whiche shal suffer i þe þe  
sent tyme & whiche shal vnder  
fonge i tyme to come/ & his entet  
is to shew to pacience. whiche is to be  
kept/ for þe trauel is short: & þe  
meede greet/ þe man of his tretyng  
is lich: first he sette bi þe a prolog  
& a saluacioun whiche he makid þe hee  
retis benygne. & takid þe testemēt: &  
whiche he hap lett it tofore. he comey  
to þe tellig/ but tofore his tellig he  
shewid: þe cit is eue woute bigynnyng  
& woutende/ & herfige hi þe þe  
i am alpha & oo. bigynnyng & ende/ al þe  
ard he comey to hi tellig: & departid  
it into seuen visionis/ & whiche þe be  
edid: þe book is edid/ he lettid tofore þe  
plog & sen: þe apocalips of ihu cit vnder  
stode þe þe is as it is i oon. þe vision  
of i saie & also þe pablis of salomon.  
**Item this plog on þis apocalips**  
**sen al þis C. p.**  
**A**pocalips of ihu cit. wh  
ich god ȝaf to hi to ma  
ke opyn to his seruati

tis: whiche þis it bihouey to be  
maad soone/ & signifiede sendige  
bi his angel to his seruati john/  
whiche bar witnessig to þe word  
of god: & witnessig of ihu cit in  
þe þis whiche ener þis he saie/  
bleid is he þe redid & he þe heerid  
þe wordis of þe pfeie: & þe þe þe  
þis þe ben witten/ for þe tyme  
is nyz/ john to seuen churche þe  
ben in alie: grace & pces to ȝou/  
of hi þe is. & þat was. & þe is to comy  
ge/ & of þe seuen spiritis: þe be  
in þe list of his trone & of ihu cit.  
þe is a fery ful witness: þe fere bi  
getid of deed men. & þe of egis  
of þe erpe/ whiche louede us & wa  
shide us fro our synes i his blood:  
& made us a kyngdom & pteis to  
god & to his fader/ to hi be glozie  
& empire: unto worldis of worl  
dis amē. **A**lo he comey wry clous  
dis. & ech þe shal be hi. & þe þe  
pactid hi/ & alle þe þe meedis of  
þe erpe: shulde biþe þe hem sile  
on hi. ȝhe amē. **A** i am alpha & oo.  
þe bigynnyng & þe ende sen þe lord  
god. þe is & þe was. & þe is to comy  
ge almyty. **A** john ȝoum bȝopur  
& partener i tribulacioun & kyngdo  
& pacience i cit ihu. was in an yle  
þe is depid pathmos: for þe word  
of god. & for þe witnessig of ihu.  
i was in spirit in þe lordis day &  
i herde biþynde me a greet vois  
as of a tripe senyng to me. write  
þou in a book þat þe þe þe senet.  
& seide to þe seuen churche þe þe  
mahe. to eelis to smyrna to  
pgam. & to diatrya. & to sardis.  
& to philadelfia. & to laodicia/ and  
i turnede þe/ & shulde se þe vois  
spak sen me/ & i chede & i saie



seuene candilstickis of gold. & in  
ye myddel of ye seuene candilstick  
his golden: con lyk to ye lone of  
ma clopid wip along: garuemet  
& gird at ye teetis wip a golden  
girdil: And ye heed of hi & his hee  
ris. Were whut as whut wolfe.  
& as snout: & ye pzen of hi as flam  
me of fyer: & his feet lyk to la  
toun as in a brennyng chymenei  
& ye vois of hi: as ye vois of  
many watris: & he hadde in his  
rythond seuene steris: & a  
kiserd wharpon euery side we  
te out of his moun: & his face:  
as ye liue thynne in his vtu  
& whane he hadde seyn hi: he fel  
de dou at his feet as deed: & he  
puttide his rythond on me: &  
seide: wile p drede: I am ye fur  
ste & ye laste: & I am alyue & I  
was deed: & lo I am lympe into  
worldis of worldis: & I haue pe  
keyes of deop & of helle: p fore  
wite you whiche pigis p haue  
seyn: & whiche ben: & whiche it  
bihouep to be don after pes pigis  
ye sacramet of ye seuene ster  
ris. Whiche you opeest in my ry  
thond: & ye seuene goldū candil  
stickis: ye seuene steris: be an  
gels of ye seuene churchis: & ye  
seuene candilstickis: ben se  
uene churchis. **¶** **¶**

**A**nd to ye angel of ye  
church of efesus: wri  
te pou pes pigis seyn he p holdy  
ye seuene steris in his rythod:  
whiche walky in ye myddel of ye  
seuene goldū candilstickis: I wo  
ot pi werkis & tynel: & pi paci  
ence: & p pou want not suffre  
ynel me: & pou haue alayd he p

seyn pat pe ben aposthis & ben  
not: & pou haue soude he heris  
& p haue patience: & p haue suffrid  
for my name: & failedest not: but  
I haue azens pee afeue pigis:  
& pou haue lest pi furthecharite:  
p fore be pou myddel ful fro whē  
pou haue falle: & do penance: & do  
pe furthe werkis: & errellis: & co  
me to pee soone: & I shal moue  
pi candilsticke fro his place:  
but pou do penance: but p haue  
pis good pig: p pou haue lest ye de  
dis of nycholaytis ye whiche al  
so I hate: he p haue eerns heere he.  
Whar ye spytit seyn to ye churchis  
to hy p on come: I shal zyne to  
ete of ye tre of lyf: p is in ye pa  
radys of my god. **¶** And to ye an  
gel of ye church of Smyrna wri  
te pou pes pigis seyn ye furthe  
ye laste: p was deed & lympe: I  
woot pi tribulacion: & pi pouert:  
but pou art ryche: & pou art bla  
ssmed of he pat seyn p ben  
iuris & ben not: but ben ye o  
nagoge of sathanas: drede pou  
no pig of pes pigis whiche pou  
shalt suffre: lo ye deuel shal se  
de liue of zyn into pshū: p ze  
be teptid: & ze shule haue tribu  
lacion: ten dayes: be pou fersid  
to pe deop: & I shal zyne to pee a  
croune of lyf: he p haue eerns  
heer he: whar ye spytit seyn to  
ye churchis: he p on come: shal  
not be hurt of ye secūde deop. **¶** And  
to ye angel of ye church of per  
gam: wite pou pes pigis seyn  
he pat haue ye siberd sharp on  
ech syde: I woot wher pou dwel  
lit: wher ye seete of sathanas  
is: & pou holdist my name & deyn

edist not my fery: & in yodanes  
was antias my feryful watnes  
se p was claynat zyn: wher sa  
thanas dwelshy: but I haue azen  
pee a feue pigis: for pou haue per  
me holdige ye techis of balaun  
whiche tynge balat: for to seude  
Alaudre bifoze ye lones of uael:  
to ete of sacrifices of idolis: &  
to do fornicacion: so also pou haue  
me holdige ye techis of nychola  
tis: also do pou penance: if ouy  
pig lesse: I shal come soone to p:  
& I shal fytte wip he: wip ye  
siberd of my moun: he p haue ee  
ris heere he: whar ye spytit seyn  
to ye churchis: to hy p on come.  
I shal zyne angel mete hyd: & I  
shal zyne to hym a whut stoone:  
in ye stoone a newe name witi  
whiche no mā knowy: but he p  
tak. **¶** And to ye angel of ye church  
of tyatira: wite p pes pig  
gis seyn ye lone of god: p haue pze  
as flamme of fyer: & hile feet  
lyk latou: I knowe pi werkis: &  
fery & charite: & pi seruple & pi  
patience: & pi laste werkis mo  
pan ye former: but I haue a  
zens pee a feue pigis: for pou  
suffrist ye wōmā jelabel whiche  
seyn p she is a profetesse: to te  
che & disseyne my seruantis: to  
do lecherie: & to ete of pigis of  
fryd to idolis: & I zat to hyr tyme  
p she shule do penance: & she  
wolde not do penance of her for  
nicacion: & lo I seude hyr into  
abed: & pei p doen lecherie w  
hyr: shulen be in moost tribula  
cion: but pei do penance of  
her werkis: & I shal sle her so  
nes into deop: & alle churchis sh

ule wite: p I am serchige rey  
nes & heris: & I shal zyne to  
ech man of zyn after his werkis:  
& I seie to zyn & to opere p ben  
at tynge: who eue han pis te  
chig: & p ferye not ye hymesse  
of sathanas: how pei seyn: I sh  
al not seude on zyn anoyr char  
ge: nepeles holde ze pat p ze ha:  
til I come: & to hy p shal oucome.  
& pat shal kepe til into ye ende  
my werkis: I shal zyne werkis:  
I shal zyne pouer on folkis: & he  
shal goune hem in an yru zerd:  
& pei shulen be brokū to gidre:  
as a vessel of a potter: as also  
I rellequede of my fadyr: & I sh  
al zyne to hy a moze ster: he  
p haue eerns heer he: whar ye spyt  
it seyn to ye churchis. **¶** **¶**

**A**nd to ye angel of ye church  
of sardis: wite p  
pes pigis seyn he p haue  
ye seuene spiritis of god: & ye  
seuene steris: I woot pi werkis:  
for pou haue a name p pou lyued:  
& pou art deed: be p wakige: and  
coferme p ope pigis p were to  
dyinge: for I fynde not pi werkis  
fille bifoze my god: p fore haue  
pou in myde how pou rellequede  
dest & herdest: & kepe & do penan  
ce: p fore if p wake not: I shal  
come as a myt peef to peef pou  
shalt not wite in whar our: I sh  
al come to pee: but pou haue a fe  
ue names in sardis: whiche han  
not de founid her clopis: & pei shu  
len walke wip me in white clopis:  
for pei ben wozy: he p on come: &  
shal be clopid pus wip white do  
pis: & I shal not do away his na  
me fro ye book of lyf: & I shal



knowleche his name bifore my  
fadir. & bifore hile angels. he  
hap eeris heer. he. what re spi  
rit seip to pe churchis. And to  
pe angel of pe church of silabel  
sie. Wryte pou pes pigis seip re  
hoolp & trewe. p hap pe keye of  
damp. which openy. & no man  
closp. he closp. & no ma oppney  
I woot pi werkis. & lo I zaif bifore  
pee a doze opened. which no ma  
may close. for pou hast a litil ver  
tu. & hast kept my word. & deny  
est not my name. lo I shal yme  
to pee of pe synagoge of sathana.  
which seien p pei ben ieris & be  
not. but lye. lo I shal make hem.  
p pei come & worshippe bifore pi  
feet. & pei shil wite. p I loude  
ree. for pou kepst pe word of my  
paciencie. & I shal kepe pee fro  
pe oin of tēptaciō. p is to comp  
ge into al pe world to tēpte me  
p dwellen in erpe. lo I come soone  
holde p pat p you hast. p no ma  
take pi crowne. & hi p shal ou  
come. I shal make a pilier i pe  
tēple of my god. & he shal no mo  
re go out. & I shal wryte on hyin  
pe name of my god. & pe name of  
pe citee of my god. of pe newe ie  
rū. p comey dou fro heuene of  
my god. & my newe name. he  
p hap eeris heer. he. what re spi  
rit seip to churchis. And to pe  
angel of pe church of laodice.  
Wryte p pe se pigis seip amē. pe  
seipful watnesse & trewe. which  
is bigynnyng of goddis creatur.  
I woot pi werkis. for nep pou  
art coold nep p art hoot. I wolde  
p pou were coold ep hoot. but  
for pou art lewe. & nep coold ne

pe hoot. I shal bigyne to caste  
pee out of my moir. for p seist  
p I am ryche & ful of goodis. & I  
haue nede of no pig. & pou woot  
not p pou art anzeche. & wret  
che ful & poze & blynd & nakid. I con  
cele pee to spe of me hend gold &  
pried. p pou be maid ryche. &  
be clopid wip white clopis. p re  
cofusiō of pi nakidnesse be not  
seene. & anoynte pyn pzen wip  
acollerie. p pou se. I repreue &  
chastile. whom I loue. p pfoze  
take p goode me. & do penance.  
lo I soude at pe doze. & knoe  
if ony ma heerip my vois. & ope  
ney pe zate to me. I shal entre  
to hi. & he wip me. I shal yme to  
hi. I shal oncome. to litte wip me  
i my trone. as allo I oncam. &  
sat wip my fadir. in his trone.  
he p hap eeris heer. he. what re  
spirit seip to churchis. **iii.**

**A**dore was opened i he  
uene. & pe firste vois p  
herde. was as of a tripe spe  
rige wip me. & seide. lye pou  
wip hidin. & I shal shewe to pee.  
which pigis it bihonye to be don  
soone after pes pigis. and I was  
in spirit. & lo a seete was sent in  
heuene. & upon pe seete oon sit  
rige. & he p sat. was lyk pe sit  
of astoon. jaspis & to sardyn. & a  
reynborse was in ciūpas of pe  
seete. lyk pe sit of linaragdyn.  
& in pe ciūpas of pe seete. were  
xiii. finale seetis. & aboue pe  
trones four. & twenty eldre me  
littege. hild aboute wip white  
clopis. & in pe heedis of hem gol  
di crownes. & lewis & wices.

pūdynges came out of pe tro  
ne. & seuene laūpis byēngge bi  
foze pe trone. which ben pe se  
uene spiritis of god. & bifore pe  
seete as a see of glas lyk a cristall  
And i pe myddil of pe seete & in  
pe ciūpas of pe seete. four beer  
tis ful of pzen bifore & byhyde.  
& pe firste beer lyk a lion. & pe  
secunde beer lyk a calf. & pe yad  
de beer. hamge a face as of a  
ma. & pe fourte beer lyk an e  
gle sleynge. and pe four beer  
tis haden euy of hem lise wip  
gis & alabonte. & wip yne pei  
werē ful of pzen. & pei hadden  
not reste. day & nyzt seynge.  
hooly hooli hooli. ye lord god al  
myty. p was & y is. & p is to  
compyge. & whne pe four beer  
tis zane glorie & honour & bles  
sig. to hi p sat on pe trone. p  
hyuep ito worldis of worldis.  
pe four & twenty eldre me fel  
den dou bifore hi p sat on pe  
trone. & worshippe hi p hyuep  
ito worldis. & pei cadden her crow  
nes bifore pe trone. & seide. pou  
lord oure god art worpi to take  
glorie & honour & vtu. for pou  
madist of nouzt alle pigis. & for  
pi wille po werē. & be maid of nouzt.

**A**nd I say in pe ryz. **iii.**  
hond of pe littere ou pe  
trone. a book wrytū wip  
yne & wipointe. & seelid wip se  
uene seelis. & I say a strong an  
gel. p chige wip a greet vois.  
who is worpi to opyne pe book.  
& to vndo pe seelis of it. & noo i  
heuene nep terpe nep. vdr erpe miste  
opyne pe book. nep bihold it.  
& I wepte moche. for noo was

founde worpi to opyne pe book  
nep to se it. & oon of pe eldre me  
seide to me. wepe pou not. lo a  
lyon of pe lynage of juda. ye  
roote of dany. hap ouercomū  
to opyne pe book. & to vndoū pe  
seuene seelis of it. and I say.  
& lo in pe myddil of pe trone. &  
of pe four beer tis. & in pe myd  
dil of pe eldre me a lomb stou  
dige as slayn. & hadde seuene  
hornes & seuene pzen. which  
ben seuene spiritis of god. sent  
into al pe erpe. and he cam &  
took of pe rythond of pe sette.  
i pe trone. pe book. & whne he  
hadde openy pe book. pe four  
beer tis & pe four & twenty eldre  
me. felden dou bifore pe lomb. &  
hadde ech of he harpis. & goldū  
violis. ful of odours. which be  
pe preieris of seyntis. & pei sy  
gen a newe song. & seide. lord  
oure god pou art worpi to take  
pe book. & to opyne pe seelis of  
it. for pou were slayn. & azen  
bouztit us to god in pi blood.  
of ech lynage & tige & peple  
& naciō. & madist us a kyngdom  
& prestis to our god. & we shi  
len regne ou erpe. & I say. & her  
de pe vois of many angels al  
aboute pe trone. & of pe beer tis.  
& of pe eldre me. & pe noubre of  
he was pousendis of pousendis.  
seynge wip a greet vois. pe  
lomb p was slayn is worpi to  
take vtu. & godhede & wysdom  
& strengpe & honour & glorie  
& blessig. & ech creature p is  
in heuene. & p is on erpe & vnd  
erpe. & pe see. & which pigis be  
in it. & herde alle seynge to hy







castide into erpe / & pndis & voic  
ces & lenigis were maid: & a gre  
et erpe monyng / & pe seuene an  
gelis / & hadden seuene triupis.  
maiden hem redy / & pei shulde  
triupen / & pe firt angel triup  
de: & hail was maid / & fier meyd  
to gide in blood: & it was sent  
into erpe / & pe prude part of  
pe erpe was brent. & pe prude  
part of trees was brent: & al  
pe grene gras was haem. And  
pe secunde angel triupide: & as  
a greet hil bynyge byp fier: was  
cast into pe see: & pe prude part  
of pe see was mad blood: & pe pr  
de part of creatur was deed. & p  
hadden lynes in pe see: & pe pr  
de part of shippis pulthide. & p  
pe prude angel triupide: & a gre  
et sterre bynyge as ahtil brod  
felde fro heuene: & it felde into pe  
prude part of flodis: & into pe  
wellis of wattris: & pe name of  
pe sterre is seid wermod: & pe pr  
ude part of wattris was maid  
into wermod: & many me were  
deed of pe wattris: for po were  
maid buttr. And pe fourpe  
angel triupide: & pe prude pt  
of pe lme was smyt: & pe pr  
de part of pe moone: & pe prude  
part of steris / so p pe prude pt  
of he was deklid: & pe prude  
part of pe day shynede not / al  
so of pe nyzt. And / I say / & herde  
pe vois of an egle flepyge bi pe  
myddil of heuene: & lepyge was greet  
vois / wo wo wo to me / & diuelli in  
erpe / of pe ope voices of pe angels:

**A**nd shulde triupe alle / **C. 11.**  
And pe fyfpe angel triup  
de: & / I say / & a sterre hadde

falle don fro heuene into erpe: &  
pe feye of pe pitt of derknesse was  
zoum to it: & it openede pe pitt of  
depnesse: & a smoke of pe pitt st  
ede up: as pe smoke of a greet  
furneis: & pe lme was deklid: & pe  
eyr of pe smoke of pe pitt / & locu  
tis wente out of pe smoke of pe  
pitt into erpe: & power was zoum  
to hem: as storpions of pe erpe  
han power: & it was comaudid  
to hem: / & pei shulde not herte pe  
gras of pe erpe: neyr ony gre  
ne pyg: neyr ony tree: but onesh  
men: / & han not pe signe of god  
in her foxhedis: & it was zoum to  
hem: / & pei shulde not sle he: but  
/ & pei shulden beturmetid fyne  
moneris: & pe turmetig of hem  
as pe turmetig of a storpion: &  
whie he smytip am / & in po de  
es me shulen seke deap: & pei sh  
ulen not fynde it: & pei shulen  
desyre to dye: & deap shal fle fro  
hem: & pe lme of locutis: &  
lyt hois maid redy into bareil  
on pe heedis of hem as crowes  
lyt gold: & pe facis of he as pe fa  
cis of me: & pei hadden heeris as  
heeris of wyemen: & pe teep of  
hem were as teep of hois: & pei  
hadden haburionis: as / & habur  
ionis: & pe voices of her lshynge:  
as pe vois of charis of many  
hois renyge into bareil: & pei had  
den taylis lyt storpions: & p  
eis were in pe taylis of he: & pe  
myzt of he was to noye men  
fyne moneris: & pei hadden on he  
akng pe angel of depnesse: to  
whom pe name bi etrew. is la  
badon: but bi greet apolloh: &  
bi latyn he hap a name extm

nas p is distric: / **C. 12.** Wo is pal  
sid: & lo zit come tibeys woos / **C. 12.**  
tir pes pigis also pe sterte angel  
triupide / and / I herde a vois fro  
fourre corneris of pe goldn auter:  
p is bifore pe zhen of god: & septe  
to pe lste angel / & hadde a tri  
pe / & onbynde pou font angels:  
/ & ben bounden in pe greet flood  
eufrates: & pe font angels were  
vuboudu: / & whiche weren redy in  
to our / & day / & moneris / & zeer to  
slee pe prude part of me: & pe  
noubre of pe oost of hois was  
twenty pouland lipis ten pou  
and / I herde pe noubre of he / & lo  
/ I say / hois in vilion: & pei pat  
saaten on he: hadden furp haburionis  
of iacyn: & of bymston: & pe  
heedis of pe hois were as hee  
dis of hois: & fier: & smoke: &  
bymston comep forp of pe mo  
up of he: of pea pie plagis: pe  
prude part of me was slayn: of  
pe fier: & of pe smoke: & of pe fmo  
he / & of pe bymston / & came out  
of pe moup of he: for pe power  
of pe hois is in pe moup of he:  
in pe taylis of he: for pe taylis  
of hem ben lyt to serpentis: ha  
nyge heedis: & in he pep noyen  
/ & petopn me / & were not slay  
in pes plagis: neyr diden penaui  
ce of pe werteis of her hondis: / &  
pei wozshynide not deuclis: & op  
mylacris of gold: & of siluer: & of  
bras: & of stoon: & of tree: / & whiche  
neyr mon se: neyr heet: neyr wan  
dre: & didn not penaunce of her  
malleygis: neyr of her wiahet  
tis: neyr of her fornyraciou: neyr  
of her pestis: were slayn: / **C. 12.**  
And / I say / amop / **C. 12.**

**A**nd / I say / amop / **C. 12.**

Strong angel comyge don fro  
heuene cloyd byp a cloyde: &  
pe repynboye on his heed: & pe  
face of hi was as pe sune: &  
pe feet of hy as a piler of fy  
er: & he hadde in his hond ahtil  
book openyd: & he sette his ryz  
foot on pe see: & pe lest foot on  
pe erpe: & he criete byp a gre  
et vois: as a pou whie he ro  
rip: & whie he hadde cried: pe  
seuene pndis spaken her voices:  
/ & whie pe seuene pndis hadde  
spoke her voices: / I was to wh  
tuge: & / I herde a voyce fro heu  
ne: sepyge / make p whar pi  
gis pe seuene pndis spaken:  
/ & nyle p whar he: & pe angel  
whio / I say / stondige aboue pe  
see: & aboue pe erpe: lifte up his  
hond to heuene: & swoor bi hy p  
lyuep to wozldis of wozldis:  
pat made of nouzt heuene: & po  
pugis whiche be in it: & pe erpe:  
/ & po pugis / & ben in it: & pe see:  
/ & po pugis pat ben in it: / & tyme  
shal no more be: but in pe dages of pe vois  
of pe seuene angel. whie he  
shal bigyne to triupe: pe mystie  
of god shal be endid: as he ptechi  
de by his seruantis pteas: & / I her  
de a vois fro heuene: eteloune  
spekyge byp me: sepyge / go pou  
/ & take pe book p is openyd fro pe  
hoond of pe angel / & stondy abo  
ue pe see: & on pe lond: / & / I wente  
to pe angel: & seide to hi: / & he sh  
ulde zyne me pe book: & he seide  
to me: take pe book: & deuour it:  
/ & it shal make pi rombe to be  
buttr: but in pi moup it shal be  
sikete as hony: & / I took pe book  
of pe angels hond: & deuouride



it: & it was in my mouy as liue  
te hony: & whne I hadde deuourid  
it: my wombe was bittur: & he  
seide to me: it bihouep yee ete so  
ne to profecie to heepen me: &  
to pepis & langagis & many thingis.  
**A**nd a reed lyke a **C.** **H.**  
zerd was zouni to me: &  
it was seid to me: ryle þe  
meete þe temple of god & þe auter:  
& me þe wouthipen it: but caste  
þe out þe forzerd þe is wyoute þe  
temple & mete not it: for it is zo  
mi to hepen me: & þe iuhule de  
foule þe hooly citee: bi fourty  
monethis & tibeys: & iuhale 37  
ne to my tibeys witneslig: & þe  
iuhulen pfecte apouland dayes  
also hūdrud & sixty: & iuhulen be  
clopid wyf sakis: & se þe tibeys  
ne oþwes: & tibeys candelsticks:  
& þe stonde in þe siz of þe lord  
of þe erpe: & it ony mā wole a  
noye þe: fier iuhale go out of þe  
mouy of þe & iuhale deuour her  
enemies: & if ony wole hurt þe:  
þus it bihouep hym to be slayn  
þes han power to close heuene:  
þe it reyne not in þe dayes of þe  
pfecte: & þe han power on wate  
to turne hem into blood: & to smy  
te þe erpe wyf enery plage:  
& as ofte as þe wole: & whne  
þe iuhulen ende her witneslig:  
þe beett þe stizep vp fro depuel  
se: iuhale make batel agens hem:  
& iuhale oucome hem: & iuhale sle  
hem: & þe bodies of hem iuhale  
ligge in þe strectis of þe greet  
citee þe is clepid goostly sodom  
& egypt: wher þe lord of þe was  
crucified: & sume of lynagis &  
of pepis & of langagis & of þe

rene me: iuhale se þe bodies of  
þe by þe dayes & an half: & þe  
iuhulen not suffre þe bodies of  
þe: to be put in biriels: & me en  
habnige þe erpe iuhulen haue  
iope on þe: & þe iuhale make my  
rie: & iuhulen seide iustis to gode:  
for þes tibeys pfectes turnetide  
hem þe dwellen on þe erpe: & afte  
þe dayes & an half: þe spirit of  
lyf of god entride into hem: &  
þe stood on her feet: & greet  
diede felde on þe þe sezen hem:  
& þe herde a greet vois fro heuene:  
seynge to þe: come vp hider:  
& þe stede into heuene in a clou  
de: & þe enemies of þe hize þe  
in pat our a greet erpe moung  
was maid: & þe tempe part of  
þe citee felde don: & þe names  
of me leuene pouland weren  
slayn in þe erpe moung: & þe  
topir weren sent into diete: & a  
uen glorie to god of heuene: & þe  
seynge wo is gon: & lo þe prude  
wo iuhale come sone: & þe seynge  
angel criþide: & greet vois  
weren maid in heuene & seide: þe  
re wime of þis world is maid our  
lord and of crist his sone: & þe iuhale  
al regne into wordis of wordis  
amen: & þe four: & euentidre  
me þe sate in her seetis in þe siz  
of þe lord: felden on her faces:  
& iuhale hipe god & seide: we don  
pactis to þe lord god almyghty:  
whiche art: & whiche were: & whiche  
ich art to comynge: whiche haue  
takn þe greet veru: & haue  
regned: & folke ben wrope: & þe  
wrape cam: & tyme of dede me  
to be demed: & to zelle meete to  
þe seruantis & pfectis & halowis

& dredige þe name to finale & to  
greete: & to distre hem þe coru  
piden þe erpe **C.** **H.**  
**A**nd þe temple of god ihe  
uene was openid: & þe  
arke of his testamēt was seyn  
in his temple: & lettis weren maid:  
& voices & pūdris & erpe moung  
& greet hail: & a greet signe appe  
ride in heuene: a wōmā clopid  
wyf þe līme: & þe moone vndir  
hir feet: & in þe heed of hir a cro  
wne of tibelst sterris: & she had  
de in wombe: & she crye in tra  
uelige of childe: & is turnetide:  
þe she ber childe: & anoy signe was  
seyn in heuene: & lo a greet reed  
dragū þe hadde leuene heedis &  
ten hoznes: & in þe heedis of hi  
leuene diademes: & þe tail of  
hi dzouze þe prude part of ster  
ris of heuene: & sente þe into þe  
erpe: & þe dragon stood before þe  
wōmā: & was to berige childe:  
þe whne she hadde born childe: þe  
iuhale deuour hir sone: & she  
bar a knaue childe: þe was to  
reulige alle folkis in an frū ze  
rde: & þe sone was ranystid  
to god: & to his trone: & þe wō  
mā fleiz into wildir nelle: wher  
she har a place maid redy of god:  
þe seide þe þe: A poulynd day  
es also hūdrud & sixty: & a gre  
et batel was maid in heuene:  
& myzel & hile angels fouzte w  
þe dragon: & þe dragon fante  
& hile angels: & þe hadde not  
myzt: ne þe place of þe was  
foudu more in heuene: & þe  
dragon was cast don: þe greet  
olde serpent: þe is clepid þe denel  
& sathanas þe dileyney al þe

world: þe was cast don into þe  
erpe: & hile angels weren sent wyf  
hi: & þe herde a greet vois in heuene:  
seynge: now is maid heelp & d  
tu & kyngdom of our god: & þe po  
wer of his cit: for þe aculer of  
our bypen is cast don: whiche  
aculide þe before þe siz of our  
god: day & nyzt: & þe oīcam hi  
for þe blood of þe loub: & for þe  
word of his witneslig: & þe lo  
mete not her lynes til to deap:  
þe fore ze heuenes be ze glad: &  
ze þe dwellen in þe: wo to þe erpe  
& to þe lee: for þe send is come  
don to zou: & har greet wrape:  
whiche þe har tytil tyme: &  
afte þe dragon 83 þe was  
cast don to erpe: þe purfike  
de þe wōmā þe bar þe knaue  
childe: & tibeys wengis of a gre  
et egle weren zouni to þe wōmā:  
þe she iuhale fle into desert  
into hir place: wher she is fed:  
bi tyme & tymes & half tyme:  
fro þe face of þe serpent: & þe ser  
pent sente out of his mouy afte  
þe wōmā: wate as a flood: &  
þe iuhale make hir to be drayn  
of þe flood: & þe erpe helpide þe  
wōmā: & þe erpe openide his  
mouy: & soop vp þe flood þe  
dragon sente of his mouy:  
& þe dragon was wrope agens  
þe wōmā: & þe wente to ma  
ke batel wyf of þe of hir seed: &  
þe þe maīdmetis of god:  
& þe han þe witneslig of ihu crist:  
& þe stood on þe grauēl of þe lee:  
**A**nd I saiz a be **C.** **H.**  
est stizunge vp of þe lee:  
hanige se uene heedis:  
& ten hoznes: & on his hoznes ten







of god & his puge re long of mo  
vles pe seruait of god. & pe lo  
ng of re loins & seide grete &  
wondur ful ben piberkis. lord  
god almyty: piberkis ben ma  
t trewe lord kyng of wordis/ lo  
rd who thal not drede pee: & ma  
gnyfie pi name: for you aloo  
ne art merciful for alle folkis  
thulen come & wortshipe i pi  
syt: for pi domes ben oppyne  
**A**nd after pes vgis i say: &  
to pe temple of pe tabernacle of  
vntuellig: was openyd i heue  
ne: & seuene angels haunge  
seuene plagis: wente out of  
pe temple: & were clouid wip a  
aoun clene & whyt: & were bi  
fore gird wip goldn girdils a  
boute pe brestis: & oon of pe fou  
re beestis: zat to pe seuene an  
gels: seuene goldn violis ful  
of pe wrape of god. & tynep  
into wordis of wordis: & pe  
temple was ful of smoke of pe  
mageste of god: & of pe vtu of  
hi: & no man myzte entre into pe  
temple: til pe seuene plagis of  
seuene angels were endid.  
**A**nd i herde: **C. xvij.**  
a greet vois fro heue  
ne: seynge to pe seuene  
angels go ze & thede out pe se  
uene violis of goddis wrape:  
into pe erpe: & pe firste angel  
wente & thede out his viol into  
pe erpe: & alwoude feers & wort  
was maid on alle y hadde pe ca  
rect of pe beest: & on he y wortsh  
pide pe beest: & his ymage. **A**nd  
pe secunde angel thede out his  
viol into pe sea: & pe blood was  
mead as of a deed yig: & ech ma

lynge: was deed in re see. **A**nd  
pe thridde angel thede out his vi  
ol on pe floodis: & on pe wellis of  
watis: & seide: nist art you loz.  
y art & y wer hooly: y deuist pes  
ringis: for pei thede out pe blood  
of halewis & pferis: & you hast so  
mi to hem blood to drynke: for pei  
ben wozpi: & i herde anoy seynge  
the lord god almyty: trewe & iust  
ben pi domes. **A**nd pe fourthe an  
gel thede out his viol into pe fi  
re: & it was zoni to hy to turne  
te me wip heete & fier: & me the  
liden wip greet heete: & blasfemy  
den pe name of god hanunge po  
wer on pes plagis: nep pei dide  
penance: pat pi thulde zyne glo  
rie to hi. **A**nd pe fyfthe angel  
thehe his viol: on pe seete of  
pe beest: & his kyngdom was ma  
derk: & pei eeten to gidre her ri  
gis for lozise: & pei blasfemyde  
god of heuene for lozise of her  
wordis: & pei dide not penance  
of her werkis. **A**nd pe sixte  
angel thede out his viol: & p  
ilke greet flood eugetes: & drie  
de pe watur of it: & wepe wer  
maid redy to kigis fro pe lime  
rilyg: & i say: pe vndene lpi  
ritis bi pe maner of froggis  
go out of pe moyn of pe dragon:  
& of pe moyn of pe beest: & of pe  
moyn of pe fals ptece: for pei be  
spiris of deuils: makige sig  
nes: & pei goon for to kigis of  
al erpe: to gadre hem to al ba  
tel to pe greet day of almyty god:  
lo i come as a nyzt reef: blestid  
is he p wakip & kepyn his cloys:  
p he wandre not nakid: & pat  
pei be not pe fals hede of hi: & he

thal gadre he into a place: y is  
clepid in ezeis her magedon. **A**nd  
pe seuene angel thede out his  
viol into pe er: & a greet vois  
wente out of heuene fro pe tro  
ne: & seide: it is don: & letygis we  
re mead & voices & pndis: & a  
greet erpe moynge was maid:  
which man neie was fyre me  
weren on erpe: such erpe moynge  
so greet: etee was maid into pe  
parties: & pe citees of hepeneme  
felden dou: & greet babylon cam  
into mynde bifore god: to zyne  
to it pe cuppe of indignaciou of  
his wrape: & ech yle fley away:  
& hillis ben not found: & greet  
hal as a talent: cam dou fro he  
uene into me: & me blasfemy  
de god for pe plage of hal: for  
it was maid ful greet.  
**A**nd oon of pe **C. xviii.**  
seuene angels cam: pat  
hadde seuene violis: & spak wip  
me & seide: come you: i thal the  
we to pee re dagnaciou of pe  
greet hooze: y sittip on many  
watis: wip which: kyngis of er  
pe diden fornyaciou: & pei pat  
diuullen in pe erpe be maid dū  
kū of pe wyn of hir lecherie:  
& he took me into desert in spi  
rit: & i say a womā sittige on  
a reed beest ful of names of blasse  
mye: hanunge seuene heedis  
& ten hornes: & pe womā was  
cround wip spin & reed: & on  
gild wip gold: & pteciou aoun  
& peerhis: hanunge a goldn cup  
pe in hir hond ful of abhomy  
naciou: & vndenesse of her  
fornyaciou: & a name wirtū  
in pe forheed of hir mysterie:

babylon pe greet modur of for  
nyaciou: & of abhomynaciou  
of erpe: & i say a womā drinke  
of pe blood of seyntis: & of pe  
blood of martiris of ihu: & whne  
i say hir: i wondre wip gre  
et wondre: & pe angel seide to  
me: why wondrest you: i thal seie  
to pee re sacramet of pe womā:  
& of pe beest: y berry hir: y hay  
seuene heedis & ten hornes: pe  
beest which you syest: was &  
is not: & the thal fyre fro dep  
nelle: & the thal go into pulch  
yng: & me diuellige in erpe  
thulen wondre: whos names  
ben not wirtū in pe book of lpi:  
fro pe makynge of pe word/ se  
ynge pe beest y was: & is not:  
& pis is is pe witt: who y hay wyl  
dom: pe seuene heedis be seuene  
hillis: on which pe womā sit  
ty: & kigis seuene ben fyne han  
feld dou: oon is: & anoyr comey  
not zit: & whne he thal come:  
it bihouep hi to diuulle althort  
ryme: & pe beest y was & is not:  
& she is pe erpe: & is of pe se  
uene: & thal go into perulthig:  
& pe ten hornes: which pei haue  
seyn: ben ten kigis: y zit han  
not take kyngdom: but pei thū  
len take pouer as kigis: oon  
our after pe beest: yete han a  
conceit: & thūle brake her ver  
tu & pouer to pe beest: yes thū  
len fyte wip pe lomb: & pe lomb  
thal on come he: for he is lord  
of lordis: & kyng of kigis: & pei y  
ben wip hi: ben clepid chofū & fe  
yful: & he seide to me: pe watis  
whiche you haue seyn: where  
pe hooze sittip: ben peplus & fol



his & langagis / & pe ten hornes  
 yf you haue seyn in pe best: pes  
 thulen make hir desolat & nakid  
 & thulen ete pe flesch of hir  
 & thule brene to gidre hir wyf  
 fier: for god zaf into pe hertis  
 of hem: yf pei do yf pat is pleisur  
 to hi / yf pei zyne her kyngdom to  
 pe best: til pe wordis of god be  
 endid / & pe woman whom you  
 haue seyn: is pe greet citee pat  
 haue kyngdom on erdis of pe erpe.  
**A**nd after pes **¶ C. viii.**  
 visis / 83 anoth angel  
 comyge don fro heuene  
 hauege greet pouer: & pe erpe  
 was ligned of his glorie: & he  
 criete wyf strong: vois: & leide  
 greet babuloyu feld don feld don:  
 & is maid pe habitacion of deu  
 lis: & pe keepyng of ech vncle  
 ne foul: & haterful for alle folkis  
 drunken of pe wyppre of fornic  
 cion of hir: & kigis of pe erpe &  
 marchantis of pe erpe: dide for  
 mycacion wyf hir: & pei be maid  
 riche of pe vertu of delicias of  
 hir: & herde anoth vois of heu  
 ne: leyge / my peple go ze out  
 of it: & be ze not parceneris of  
 pe trespassis of it: & ze thule  
 not resseyue of pe wordis of  
 it: for pe synes of it came til  
 to heuene: & pe lord hadde myde  
 of pe wickednesse of hir: zelde ze  
 to it: as she zeldide to you: & dou  
 ble ze double pigis. after her wer  
 tis / in pe dymke yf she medide  
 to you: meynge ze double to hir  
 as moche as she glorified hir  
 self: & was in delicias: so moche  
 turnet zyne to hir & wepyng /

for in hir herte she seyn / I sette a  
 queene & I am not a widowe: &  
 I shal not be wepyng: & yf fore  
 mo day hir wordis thule come.  
 deep & moynys & hys: & she sh  
 al be brent in fyre: for god is str  
 ong: yf thal deme hir: & pe kigis  
 of pe erpe thulen by wepe & bi  
 weyle hem self on hir. whiche bi  
 den fornicacion wyf hir: & hys  
 den in delices: whiche pei thule  
 be pe smoke of pe breyng of  
 it: stondige fer for drede of pe  
 turnetis of it: & leyge wo  
 wo: yf ke greet citee babuloyu.  
 & yf ke strong citee: for in con  
 our ydoom comey / & marchan  
 tis of pe erpe thulen wepe on  
 it: & moine: for no ma shal bre  
 more pe marchandise of hem /  
 pe marchandies of gold & of sil  
 ner & of precious stoon: & of pe  
 erl & of bies & of purp & of silk.  
 & cortyn / & ech tre thym: & alle  
 vessels of yner: & alle vessels of  
 precious stoon: & of bras & of ir  
 & of marbul / & canel & amony  
 & of swete smellige pigis &  
 opynemētis & encense & of wy  
 & of oyle & of flour & of wheete  
 & of werk bectis & of sheep  
 & of horsis & of car tis & of ser  
 uantis & of lyues of men: &  
 ym applis of pe desir of yf luf  
 & benediccion fro pe: & alle fette  
 pigis & ful dere pitheden fro  
 pee: & marchandis of pes pigis  
 thulen no more synde vo pigis /  
 pei pat ben maid ryche of it:  
 thulen stonde fer for drede of  
 mentis of it. wepyng & mo  
 nyge & leyng / wo wo yf ke  
 greet citee pat was clouid w

into  
place

bys & spur & reed starlet: & was  
 ouer gold wyf gold & precious sto  
 on & margaritis: for in con our  
 so many richellis benedictite /  
 & ech goi nouer & alle yf saulen by  
 ship: & marchandis & rat word  
 in pe see: stonde fer & cride / seyn  
 ge re place of pe breyng of it:  
 leyng / what is lyk pis greet  
 citee: & pei caste poudur on her  
 heedis: & criete wepyge & mo  
 nyng & seyge / wo wo yf ke  
 greet citee in which alle yf han  
 thippis in pe see ben maid ry  
 che of pyles of it: for in con our  
 it is desolat / heuene & hoos apol  
 tis & phetis: make ze ful out  
 roye on it: for god haue demyd you  
 re dom of it: and o strong angel  
 took yf a stoon as a greet myl  
 ne stoon: & kette into pe see: & lei  
 de / yf bue yf ke greet citee  
 babuloyu shal be sent: & now it  
 shal no more be foundu / & pe vo  
 ys of harpis: & of me of musyk:  
 & leyng / wyf pype & tripe:  
 shal no more be foundu in it: &  
 pe vois of mylne stoon shal no  
 more be herd in pee: & pe lyt  
 of lanterne shal no more thi  
 ne to pee: & pe vois of pe hole  
 boude & of pe wyf shal no mo  
 ze ze be herd in pee: for yf mar  
 chandis weren pias of pe erpe  
 for in yf uachcraftis: alle folkis  
 erride: & pe blood of profetis &  
 leyntis is foundu in it: & of alle  
 men yf ben slayn in erpe. **¶ C. ix.**

**A**fter pes visis / herde as  
 a greet vois of many tri  
 pis in heuene: leyge alle  
 lya / herige & glorie & vertu is  
 herd in it: & ech crafti ma & ech  
 craft: shal no more be

to our god: for trewe & iust ben  
 pe domes of hi: which demyd of  
 pe greet hoore pat desolide pe  
 erpe in hir lecherie: & vengide  
 pe blood of his seruantis: of pe  
 hoondis of hir: & est pei leide al  
 lchupa & pe smoke of it stye  
 bp: into pe wordis of wordis /  
 & pe soure & treuty senyors:  
 & soure bectis felden don: & wo  
 thypide god sittige on pe trone.  
 & leide amē. alleluya: & a vois we  
 re out of pe trone: & leide alle pe  
 seruantis of our god sepe ze he  
 ryngis to our god: & ze yf dreden  
 god: smale & grete: & herde a  
 vois of a greet tripe: as pe vois  
 of many watris: & as pe vois  
 of grete pndis leyng alleluya:  
 for our lord god almyty haue res  
 ned / joye we & make we myrre:  
 & zyne glorie to hi: for pe weddi  
 gis of pe lomb came: & pe wyf  
 of hi made redy hir self: & it is  
 zoun to hir: pat she kener hir  
 wyf whyt bullyn thynge / for  
 whi bullyn is iustifyingis of  
 leyntis: & he leide to me / wyte you  
 blelid ben pei yf benclid to pe  
 soper of weddigis of pe lomb:  
 & he leide to me / pes wordis of  
 god ben trewe: & feld don bi  
 fore his feet: to worthipe hym /  
 & he leide to me / se you yf you do  
 not / I am a seruant wyf pee &  
 of yf byperē: hauege pe iustnel  
 sig of ihu: worthipe you god:  
 for pe iustnesse of ihu: is spurt  
 of pfectie / and I say: heuene ope  
 nyd: & lo a whyt hors: & he yf sat  
 on hi was clouid fer ful & lortat:  
 & wyf iustnesse he demey &







Wip me hadde a goldn mesur of  
a rehed: & he schuld mete pe  
citee & pe zatis of it & pe wal  
& pe citee was sett in a squar  
and pe longye of it is so moche.  
as moche as is pe brede: & he  
p'mant pe citee wip pe rehed  
in fur longis tibelue ponysdis  
& pe hyze & pe leugye & brede  
of it: ben euene: & he mant pe  
wallis of it of an hundrid & fou  
re & forty cubitis: bi mekine  
of ma p'is of an angel and pe  
bildig of pe wal p'of was of  
pe stoon: jaspis: & pe citee it self  
was clene gold lyk clene glas  
& pe fundemetis of pe wal of pe  
citee: weren ourned wip al pre  
cious stoon: pe furste fundemet  
jaspis: pe secunde: saphyris: pe  
mynde calledonyris: pe fourpe:  
smaragdus: pe fynepe: lardo  
ny: pe sixte: sardius: pe seue  
pe: crisolite: pe eytpe: berillus:  
pe nynepe: topis: pe tēpe: an  
lopassis: pe enleupe: jacynt:  
pe tēlpe: amatis: And tibel  
ne zatis ben tibelue margari  
tis: by ech: & ech zate was of ech  
margarite. **A**nd pe stretis of  
pe cite were clene gold: as of  
glas ful thynge: & / sayz no  
reple it: for pe lord god almy  
ty & pe lomb: is temple of it  
& pe citee has no nede of sunne  
ney moone: & pei thynne in it  
for pe clere of god it hal lye  
ne it: & pe lomb is pe lantern  
of it: and folkis thulen walle  
in lzt of it: & pe kigis of erpe:  
thule bryge her glorie & hono  
into it: & pe zatis of it thulen

not be closid bi day: & nyzt it hal  
not be pere: & pei thule bryge  
pe glorie & honour of folkis ito  
it: ney ony ma to foulid it doyn  
ge abhominacion & leching: it  
hal entre into it: but pei pat be  
writu: in pe booke of lzt: & of pe  
lomb: **A**nd he thynke to me  
a flood of quipe watir  
thynge as cristal: comye so  
of pe seete of god & of pe lomb  
in pe myddil of pe street of it:  
on ech side of pe flood: pe tree  
of lzt bryngye fory tibelue fr  
uytis: zeldige his fruyt by ech  
monepe: & pe leuys of pe tree:  
ben to theve of folkis: & ech cur  
sid pig thal no moze be: but pe  
sectis of god & of pe lomb thule  
be in it: & pe seruantis of hi: th  
ulen serue to hi: & pei thule se  
his face & his name in her forhe  
dis: & nyzt it hal no moze be: & pei  
thulen not hane nede to pe lzt  
of lantern: ney to lzt of sunne  
for pe lord god it hal lye ne: & pei  
thulen regue into wordis of wor  
dis: & he seide to me: pes wordis  
ben most seipful & trewe: & pe lord  
god of spiris of p'etis: sente his  
angel: to thewe his seruantis:  
what pigis it bilouey to be don  
soone: and lo: come swyftly: bles  
sid is he: & kep pe wordis of pro  
fecie of pis booke: & / am iohu: y  
herde & eyz pes pigis: and after  
ward p' hadde herd & seyn: / fel  
de don: to wozithpe bifoze pe feet  
of pe angel: & thewde to me pes  
pigis: & he seide to me: se pou pat  
p'do not: for / am seruaut is p'ee

& of p' bryeren p'etis: & of hem y  
lepen pe wordis of p'fecie of pis  
booke: wozithpe y god: and he sei  
de to me: signe ep: secle pou not  
pe wordis of p'fecie of pis booke:  
for pe tyme is nyzt: he pat noyep:  
noye he zit: and he p' is in filpis:  
were foul zit: & a mit ma: be ul  
tified zit: & pe hooly be hale wid  
zit: lo: / come soone: & ny meede  
wip me: to zelle to ech man ast  
his werkis: / am alpha & oo: pe  
furste & pe laste: bryngye & ece  
blethid be pei p' wanten her sto  
ohis: & pe poiver of hem be i pe  
tree of lzt: & ent: bi pe zatis in  
to pe citee: for wipoute fory: hou  
dis & witchis & vichast me & ma  
quelleris: & seruyge to idols: &  
ech y louey & makey lechig: / the  
sente ny angel to witnesse to:  
pes pigis in churchis: / am pe roo  
te & lzt of damp: & pe thynge  
moziwe steri: & pe spirit & pe spou  
sele: sepen: come pou: and he pat  
heerip: seye come pou: & he pat  
p'urthip come: & he pat wole: take  
he frechly pe watir of lzt: & / wit  
nesse to ech ma: heerige pe wordis  
of p'fecie of pis booke: if ony ma  
thal putte to pes pigis: god it h  
al putte on hy: pe verantis wri  
tu in pis booke: & if ony ma do a  
isey of pe wordis of pe booke of p'  
profecie: god it hal take a wey pe  
part of hi fro pe booke of lzt: & fro  
pe hooly citee: & fro pes pigis p'be  
writu in pis booke: he seip p' berip wat  
nellig of pes pigis: the ane: / co  
me soone amē: come p' lord ihu: pe  
gite of our lord ihu cit: be wip you  
alle amē. **W**er edip apocalips  
of iohu: pe ende of pe newe testamēt.



**H**er bigynnyng a rule par tellu in whiche chapuris of pe bible ze moou. **ende**  
**ende** pe leuous pntis & goqels par ven rad by al pe zeer in holy church.  
**First tuesday in romayus** **fuy. d.** And we knowen **ende** Cloyd in pe lord ihu cr/  
**aduent** **mathew xxi.** **a.** Whane ihs cam uiz **ende** ofanna in hys yungis/  
**wednesday** **james .v.** **b.** Be ze patient til **ende** you i pe uame of vspad/  
**thursday** **mark .i.** **a.** pe bigynnyng of **ende** you in pe holi goost/  
**friday** **flaye ii.** **a.** heetir me ze par **ende** of generaciouns/  
**g. iii.** **a.** In po dayes ioun **ende** her symes/  
**1. saturday in** **romis xvi.** **b.** ffor what eue yi **ende** of pe holi goost/  
**aduent** **luk xxi.** **c.** Tokenes schule le **ende** schulen uot palle/  
**wednesday** **sadure viii.** **b.** I am turned a zeu **ende** and i rztibeitnele/  
**ay. xi.** **c.** Truly i sey to you **ende** of lring heere he/  
**friday** **flaye xii.** **d.** Upon yi wallis ie **ende** and not forsaken/  
**joon i.** **b.** Ioun terir wimenig. **ende** he bay teeld out/  
**1. saturday** **i. corintis iii.** **a.** So a man gentle us **ende** ech man of god/  
**in aduent** **ay. xi.** **b.** Whane ioun i toud. **ende** yi weye vifore pe/  
**ymbr wed** **flaye ii.** **a.** And per schal be i **ende** pe lord oure god/  
**nesday** **flaye vii.** **c.** pe lord spak to ady. **ende** and chere good/  
**luk i.** **d.** pe angel gabriel. **ende** aftir yi word/  
**friday** **flaye xi.** **a.** And per schal go **ende** of hie regnes/  
**luk pe first** **c.** And marie wos. **ende** myn heelp/  
**satur** **flay flaye xix.** **f.** pei schulen aye. **ende** pe lord oure god/  
**day** **ii. lec flaye xxi.** **a.** Glace schal delect **ende** oure lord almyti/  
**iii. lec flaye xxi.** **c.** Upon an hys hyl **ende** sey oure lord/  
**iiii. lec flaye xxi.** **a.** pe se yungis sey. **ende** i pe lord schap hi/  
**v. l. daniel vi.** **g.** fforfoye an angel. **ende** in to worldis/  
**pisal ii. daniel. ii.** **a.** we preien zon. **ende** i rztuyng of his conyng/  
**god. luk ii.** **a.** In pe fifteneze. **ende** heelp of god/  
**Hour of wam.** **flayel ii.** **b.** Joie ze in pe lord. **ende** in trust iesu/  
**joon i.** **c.** Whane iebis sen. **ende** was baptisunge/  
**wednesday** **ioel ii.** **g.** Joie ze sones of **ende** dibelle in syon/  
**luk. vii.** **c.** And vis word were **ende** is more pau he/  
**friday** **sach. ii.** **f.** Doytir of syon. **ende** pe lord almyti/  
**ay. vii.** **c.** Se ze & de war. **ende** seye to no man/  
**1. saturday** **flaye xii.** **a.** ffor syon i schal not. **ende** to pe lord in pee/  
**even** **romis. i.** **a.** Dont pe seruaut. **ende** of ihu crist/  
**ay. i.** **d.** Whane marie pe. **ende** fro her symes/



the say to  
fue  
Alone  
fil of

the say to  
fue  
Alone  
fil of



**A**nd **scribo** **merday** **luk. xviij.** **f.** Ihesus took hys **ceute** heringe to god  
**joel. ij.** **d.** Be ze confid to **ceute** pe lord almyghty  
**aj. vj.** **d.** Whane ze fasten **ceute** viii herte is  
**purday** **flap. xviij.** **a.** In po daies likened **ceute** schal defende it  
**matheu. viij.** **b.** And whane ze had **ceute** fro yat hour  
**friday** **flap. lviij.** **a.** One ne ceute pon **ceute** pe lord pi god  
**aj. v. & vj.** **g.** ze han herd yat it **ceute** schal qrite to yee  
**Saturday** **flap. lviij.** **d.** If pon schalt take **ceute** pe lord quik  
**mark. vj.** **h.** And whane it was **ceute** weti maid stuf  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** We hringge moner **ceute** alle piugis  
**aj. xij.** **a.** Ihe was led of a **ceute** seruaten to him  
**moneday** **zechiel. xviij.** **c.** To i my schal. **ceute** hem in doom  
**aj. xviij.** **c.** Whane man? soue **ceute** euilastinge list  
**flap. lv.** **c.** Schip pe lord whir **ceute** i secute it  
**aj. xviij.** **c.** Whane he was en **ceute** kington of god  
**Wednesday** **Exodi. xviij.** **e.** Stri up to me in **ceute** and fourti iustis  
**aj. xviij.** **b.** Helpe cam in to **ceute** of god i ozeb  
**aj. xviij.** **f.** pe scribis & pe far **ceute** listir and modir  
**purday** **zechiel. xviij.** **a.** And pe word of pe **ceute** seip pe lord god  
**joon. viij.** **f.** Ihe seide to pe ieris **ceute** wordis of god  
**friday** **zechiel. xviij.** **d.** pe soule yat schal **ceute** schal not dye  
**joon. v.** **a.** per was a feelde d. **ceute** made hym hool  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** Bilorde lord fro pi **ceute** he lay spoken  
**aj. xviij.** **e.** If fordope ze liepen **ceute** spoken to you  
**Saturday** **aj. xviij.** **a.** pe pitis inaden **ceute** in yuel tyme  
**aj. xviij.** **a.** Ihaue mi of us **ceute** pi meruels  
**flap. lviij.** **g.** fordope an angel **ceute** in to worldis  
**aj. xviij.** **c.** Breyen we pten **ceute** lord ihu crist  
**purday** **aj. xviij.** **a.** Ihe took petir & **ceute** azen fro deip  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** we ptenen you & **ceute** in to holynesse  
**aj. xviij.** **d.** Ihe zede out from **ceute** helid fro p<sup>r</sup> hour  
**moneday** **flap. lviij.** **d.** Dure lord god p<sup>r</sup> **ceute** on pi peple  
**joon. viij.** **d.** To i go & ze schul **ceute** plesyngge to him  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** pe word of pe lord **ceute** hond of helpe  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Ihe quik to pe pe **ceute** be enhaumid  
**flap. lviij.** **e.** Lord kyng almy **ceute** me plesyngge yee  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** Ihe wente up to **ceute** for manye

**purday** **zechiel. xviij.** **b.** Cursid be pe man **ceute** hys syndpugis  
**joon. v.** **g.** I may no ying d **ceute** to my wordis  
**friday** **zechiel. xviij.** **b.** Joseph seide to hys **ceute** to his fadir  
**aj. xviij.** **g.** per was an hult **ceute** hym as apfete  
**Saturday** **zechiel. xviij.** **b.** Reteta seide to h **ceute** be pi blessing  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** Al man hadde tber **ceute** and is founden  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Be ze soleuers of **ceute** and tripe  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** Ihu was casting **ceute** and hepen it  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Ramnan pnce of **ceute** god of israel  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** pe faristes seide **ceute** myddil of he  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Al woman of pe **ceute** pe remenaunt  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** If pi broy symer **ceute** seuenstis seuenstis  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** Honoure pi fadir **ceute** of my name  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Scribis & faristes **ceute** defouly a man  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** pe word p<sup>r</sup> is mid **ceute** in to pe world  
**flap. lviij.** **e.** Worthe ze not me **ceute** neile punte  
**flap. lviij.** **b.** pe children of isit **ceute** halewid i hem  
**flap. lviij.** **b.** Ihe cam in to a g **ceute** saued of pe world  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Al man was i tab **ceute** in yat day  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Ihe wente in to **ceute** you syne moze  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** It is writu p<sup>r</sup> abra **ceute** maid us fre  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Ihu wente on pe **ceute** in to pe world  
**flap. lviij.** **e.** pane camen tibo **ceute** to to doom  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** pe pulk of ieris **ceute** what was i man  
**flap. lviij.** **b.** pe lord fordope quik **ceute** azen his puple  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** Whane pe myddil **ceute** bileuaten i him  
**flap. lviij.** **e.** I schal halewe my **ceute** to you in god  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** Be ze waschen & **ceute** ze schulen ete  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** Ihe pallege lay a **ceute** and worshippe hi  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** Al woman of suma **ceute** in to galgala  
**flap. lviij.** **d.** my fadir worship **ceute** azensting of dom  
**flap. lviij.** **e.** pe soue of an hult **ceute** pi mony is soy  
**flap. lviij.** **a.** per was a syk m **ceute** bileuaten i hym  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** In plesant tyme **ceute** forzete yee  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** I am pe list of **ceute** cam not it  
**flap. lviij.** **c.** Crist beinge a b **ceute** euilastige entage  
**flap. lviij.** **b.** Who of you schul **ceute** of pe temple



**Monday** Jonas. iii. a. pe word of pe lord **ende** and dide not /  
**Tuesday** Ioon. vii. f. pe prius & pe fan **ende** schulden take /  
**Wednesday** Daniel. xii. c. zene to us daniel **ende** lake of spous /  
**Thursday** Ioon. vii. a. the wallide in to ga **ende** of pe iouis /  
**Friday** Ioon. x. c. pe lord Qali to m **ende** lauis hepe ze /  
**Saturday** Ioon. x. e. ffeetis of halestis **ende** i in pe fadur /  
**Sunday** Daniel. iii. h. Daniel piete pe **ende** wūdnele of eris /  
**Monday** Ioon. vii. g. perfor of pat cūa **ende** in to his hous /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. d. Ioid alle pat fars **ende** to trete hem /  
**Wednesday** Ioon. x. g. perfor pe bichapis **ende** hile disciplis /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. e. pe wūdnele men of **ende** in wūdnele /  
**Friday** Ioon. vi. k. Gudi truli i sey to **ende** con of pe tibeine /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. a. pe sones forsope **ende** appente i a cloute /  
**Sunday** Ioon. xiv. c. Dimphe puple p **ende** wente aftir hi /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. b. ffele ze pis ping **ende** of god pe fadir /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. a. ze witen pat aft **ende** & conteynen tweye day /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. d. Lord god apene to **ende** he on his god /  
**Thursday** Ioon. xiv. a. Ihu cam bifore vi **ende** bileuete in ihu /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. e. pou lord forsope **ende** thewid my cause /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. a. Dask & pe ffele **ende** and comeynen ii. chap. /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. e. Sey ze to pe toure **ende** zolden to us /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. a. Wlio leuete to **ende** for trespassours /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. a. pe haliday of per **ende** & comeynen almoost ii. c. /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. c. Wthane ze comen **ende** wip pis world /  
**Thursday** Ioon. xiv. a. Bifore pe ffele **ende** to zoi. so to ze /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. a. In ler tribulaciō **ende** & not sacrifice /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. a. pe lord forsope **ende** fory of pe lord /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. a. he wente out is **ende** & conteynen ii. chap. /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. a. In pe fiste god **ende** hadde fustillid /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. e. And now pe mo **ende** to pe lord & fete /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. a. And sevene wōm **ende** and fro reyn /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. f. Moyses wrot a **ende** vnto pe eente /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. a. ff ze han rin to **ende** wip hi in glorie /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. a. In pe euentid of pe **ende** bifore leid to zoi /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. c. Cleste ze out pe **ende** and of trupe /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. a. Marye maudelem **ende** he leide to zoi /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. y. ze witen pe word **ende** by his name /

**Monday** Ier. xvi. c. To tibeine of he **ende** brekige of breod /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. f. Wipen & sones **ende** azeireide ihu /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. c. Petir ay. & an **ende** be toen asey /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. a. Ihe crifone ihe **ende** azein fro deef /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. e. pe angel of pe **ende** cam to cesarye /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. c. Marye stood ar pe **ende** fete to me /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. f. Crist conys diete **ende** wylk of god /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. e. Suleuene displa **ende** of pe world /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. a. Dinte ze asey al **ende** ze han merly /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. a. In o day of pe wo **ende** azein fro deef /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. b. Al ping pt is tui **ende** of god in hym /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. d. Wthane it was e **ende** list in his name /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. c. It mist is wechid **ende** man in his ord /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. d. Ihe was eely pe **ende** teelen to oye /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. e. Obeze ze to zour **ende** of worldis and /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. b. Marye mantelet **ende** in to pis day /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. f. Crist sustite for **ende** of oure soulis /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. c. I am a good lye **ende** and o sheephate /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. e. Winge pat not **ende** wip outhen eente /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. a. In o day of pe wo **ende** pat p was toen /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. d. It porm pe gilt of **ende** crist oure lord /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. d. pe disciplis of iō **ende** toye ben kept /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. d. I wifche zoi as **ende** to turrentis /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. d. A lital & pane ze **ende** f zoi zoe ioye /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. e. my lml sones i **ende** lrt schyne now /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. f. A questiou was **ende** dwellyn in hym /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. b. ffor alle ze beu pe **ende** edifie ze ehy opur /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. y. I lrt tam in to **ende** so i lrtke /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. d. Ich good zift & **ende** saue zoute sonis /  
**Tuesday** Ier. xvi. b. I go to hi pat seu **ende** telle to zoi /  
**Wednesday** Ier. xvi. a. Ryle ze hane pe **ende** reisy doom /  
**Thursday** Ier. xvi. c. Holy fadir kept **ende** hem fro puel /  
**Friday** Ier. xvi. f. ze seen pat ama **ende** werkis is deed /  
**Saturday** Ier. xvi. f. Lital sones i a **ende** sue afturward /  
**Sunday** Ier. xvi. f. Be ze doers of pe **ende** fro pis world /  
**Monday** Ier. xvi. f. Gudi truli i sey **ende** out fro god /



**Excellion** James. v. f. knowlede ze ech **ceude** multitude of synes/  
**moneday** Luk. x. b. who of you schal **ceude** pat azeu hym/  
**Ascension** Act. iij. f. Of ye multitude **ceude** was need to ech.  
**Ascension** Iohn. xviij. a. Whane he hadde **ceude** come to pee/  
**Ascension** Act. i. a. Troofle first I made **ceude** in to heuene/  
**Ascension** Act. xvi. f. Whane ye euleuene **ceude** signes tolesinge  
**Sonday** i. pet. iij. c. Be ze prudent **ceude** crist omre lord/  
**Ascension** Iohn. xv. b. Whane pe confesso **ceude** I wolde to you/  
**Ascension** i. pet. i. d. pat also ze list be **ceude** wy outen **ceude**/  
**Ascension** Luk. xxiij. ij. I schal sente pe bi **ceude** + blessinge god/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. a. God tephre alpa **ceude** dwelte pere/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. f. moyses wrote a so **ceude** fulfillde it/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. a. And seueue **ceude** and hydyng/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. a. Beere pon ist pe **ceude** lynes w men/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. a. It dwel whane ap **ceude** knatom of god/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. c. It ze loner me: ke **ceude** to him in silt/  
**Ascension** Act. ij. a. Whane pe dayes **ceude** pingis of god/  
**Ascension** Iohn. xxiij. d. If ony man loner **ceude** to me so I to/  
**Ascension** Act. x. g. Petir opene his **ceude** ye lord ihu crist/  
**Ascension** Iohn. iij. d. God loner so pe **ceude** doen in god/  
**Ascension** Act. viij. c. Whane pe apstlis **ceude** pe holi goot/  
**Ascension** Iohn. x. a. Truli I sey to you **ceude** plenteuonclly/  
**Ascension** Sapiens. i. a. Ione ze nrtibisne **ceude** hay of vois/  
**Ascension** Act. ij. f. Petre stood wy **ceude** schal be last/  
**Ascension** Iohn. vi. i. No man may come **ceude** of ye world/  
**Ascension** Act. viij. b. Filip cam down **ceude** in pat cyree/  
**Ascension** Luk. ix. a. Twelue apstlis **ceude** enerywhere/  
**Ascension** Act. ij. e. Men of ist heere **ceude** wy vi fare/  
**Ascension** Luk. v. e. It was doen of d. **ceude** pingis to day/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. a. I schal heerde out **ceude** schal be last/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. c. ye lord spak to m **ceude** lord almyht/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. f. moyses seide to pe **ceude** zonen to pee/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. c. ye lord spak to m **ceude** to me a peple/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. k. ye angel of pe k. **ceude** i to pe worldis/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. i. Al pe cytee cam **ceude** i pe holi goot/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. f. Iht nos up fro **ceude** hystom of god/  
**Ascension** i. ier. xli. a. I say + lo a toze **ceude** of worldis/

**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. per was a man of **ceude** eulastinge list/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. For I haue taken **ceude** blood of ye lord/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. l. my fleisch is vili **ceude** wy outen **ceude**/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. c. God is charyte **ceude** also his broyr/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. per was a nche **ceude** bileue to hym/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. we not synge in **ceude** zoure herris/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. c. Ale ze deeme y **ceude** of heuenes/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. Ale ze wondre **ceude** werk + trupe/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. A man made a g **ceude** taste my coper/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. perfore I sepe + **ceude** of trupe/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. f. And whane he **ceude** yese pingis/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. Be ze mekid vnd **ceude** make sad/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. Dupplicans + syn **ceude** dinge penance/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. f. ye lord helpite me **ceude** of worldis amen/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. ze von consentige **ceude** in to helle/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. I deeme pat pe **ceude** of onre bodi/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. h. ze ze iustful as **ceude** broyeris ze/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. b. In vis ping **ceude** as he walkite/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. c. Hise discipulis an **ceude** fro pat hour/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. c. In fey alle of oo **ceude** in zoure herris/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. Whane pe puple **ceude** sueten hym/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. I dwelte firste of **ceude** and in trupe/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. b. It was doen **ceude** obeyen to hym/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. b. Whiche eni we **ceude** crist omre lord/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. But zoure iustful **ceude** ofte pi zift/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. I wrote not to **ceude** eulastinge list/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. Whane iht was **ceude** anentis god/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. e. I sepe pat ping y **ceude** ihu omre lord/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. Whane myche p **ceude** he leste hem/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. Rom no pig of **ceude** list and pees/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. Iht wente bi cor **ceude** cōtempnyd inoat/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. Bynen we ben der **ceude** to gide wy cit/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. d. Be ze war of fal **ceude** of heuenes/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. b. God comendy his **ceude** lord ihu crist/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. g. maistr we sauen **ceude** not quenched/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. b. pat we be not **ceude** moil suffre/  
**Sonday** i. ier. xli. a. per was a nche **ceude** tabernaculis/



**Wednesday** Rom. vi. d. Witen ze not þe **ende** of ruffulnesse/  
**Sunday** Luk. xvi. c. þe pat is trewe. **ende** abhynnon biþe god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. xii. a. ze witen þe iſhu **ende** as he wole/  
**Sunday** Luk. xii. g. þe ſai þe cytee **ende** day in þe temple/  
**Sunday** i. cor. xv. a. þot eþ fleiſch is **ende** þe ſpual/  
**Sunday** Luk. xxi. b. þake ze heade to **ende** manys ſone/  
**Sunday** i. cor. xv. c. þyſerem i make **ende** voide i me/  
**Sunday** Luk. xvi. a. he ſeide alſo to **ende** be enhaunſed/  
**Sunday** i. cor. vi. f. witen ze not þat **ende** i þoure bodi/  
**Sunday** Luk. xvi. g. he ſeide alſo to **ende** þinge to hi/  
**Sunday** i. cor. iii. b. we han ſich criſt **ende** in glozþe/  
**Sunday** i. cor. vi. f. þiſt zete our fro **ende** men ſpeke/  
**Sunday** i. cor. iii. c. we þrechen not **ende** oure lodies/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. e. þane iſt bigan **ende** þan to þou/  
**Sunday** Galat. iii. d. þiſceſtis weten **ende** þat bileuen/  
**Sunday** Luk. x. f. þleſid be þe ge **ende** liſt maner/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. þyſerem be ze myn **ende** han bileued/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. þe fanctes weten **ende** in his name/  
**Sunday** Gal. v. d. walke ze i ſpirit **ende** i conuertiſis/  
**Sunday** Luk. xvi. d. þiſt wente in to **ende** maad þee ſaue/  
**Sunday** i. cor. vi. f. ſiþe ze here zoli **ende** drete of god/  
**Sunday** Luk. xii. d. Don of þe peple **ende** god feodiþ he/  
**Sunday** Gal. v. d. iſt we ſyuen bi ſp **ende** of þe fey/  
**Sunday** i. cor. vi. f. No man mai ſer **ende** criſt to þou/  
**Sunday** i. cor. i. c. we witen þat þe **ende** in criſt iſu/  
**Sunday** Luk. x. a. iſt was coen iſon **ende** þeſe þingis/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. e. i are þe taile **ende** of woldis/  
**Sunday** Luk. vi. b. þiſt wente in to a **ende** his priple/  
**Sunday** Colof. ii. c. Se ze þat no man **ende** alle gittis/  
**Sunday** i. cor. vi. f. and þei camen to **ende** to no man/  
**Sunday** i. cor. iii. a. i bouiden for þe **ende** in us alle/  
**Sunday** Luk. xii. a. whane he hadde **ende** ſchal be hyed/  
**Sunday** Amos. ii. c. to dayes comen **ende** lord þi god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. vi. a. all þe peple gade **ende** zoe ſtrengþe/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. Don of þe tþipþ **ende** i faſþing/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. b. iſt be þou coner **ende** walke i hem/  
**Sunday** Luk. vi. f. Don of þe fanctes **ende** þou in þeeſ/

**Sunday** i. cor. x. e. þe lord god quik to **ende** halp dayes/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. þe lord god quik to **ende** lord þoure god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. lord oure god fey **ende** f'wile dayes/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. e. þe word of þe lord **ende** lord of woldis/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. k. þe angel of þe lord **ende** i to woldis/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. a. þe tabernacle was **ende** redempcion/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. b. Aman hadde a fige **ende** coen of hþm/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. i to þaukingis to **ende** lord iſu criſt/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. ffrankes heeringe **ende** aþe hþm more/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. i biſche þou bi þe **ende** þou alle men/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. þe kigdom of þene **ende** of þe world/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. Se ze remilid i þe **ende** to þe uedy/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. a. þiſt wente up i to **ende** þiſet to he/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. g. þyſerem ſtonde ze **ende** þiſence of cr/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. g. þyſerem came to **ende** of þeris leere he/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. Se ze: how warty **ende** drete of criſt/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. a. þiſt anſwerde i qut **ende** ſeue choſen/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. a. Ze confortid i ge **ende** in alle þingis/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. he ſeide to hi þe **ende** reſume of god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. Se ze confortid i þe **ende** þe word of god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. alitil kþng was **ende** at his hous/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. ze loued þyſen of **ende** þe lord iſu/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. iſt was coen i a uo **ende** to of iſu/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. b. Onſtþinge þiſ ill **ende** þyſing of god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. þe kþngdom of þe **ende** þoure heiris/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. we witen þe what **ende** of iſu criſt/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. e. þyſt iſet to þou **ende** þoure ſynnes/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. þyſen be ze myſt **ende** ſoget to hþm/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. þane fanctes zede **ende** þen of god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. d. iſt þou þe gult of **ende** criſt oure lord/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. iſhane þei came **ende** and for me/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. þerfore we ſiþe **ende** of ſynnes/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. whilis þe iſt quik **ende** damedel toſ/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. c. i nyle þat ze be in **ende** glozþe of god/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. f. Aman hadde tibo **ende** bileuede to hi/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. b. to dayes comen **ende** oure lord/  
**Sunday** i. cor. x. b. whane iſu hadde **ende** i to þe world/



Commauon in	Luk. xij.	a.	Whiche turnede azen	ceude.	pat pereschaunce
Soudai i vris	Luk. vi.	b.	Whiche yf comey to	ceude	was ino greet
Vtas day	Joan. x.	c.	But ye feestis of	ceude.	i in pe fadir
In reuouilunge	Luk. vi.	d.	It is not a good	ceude	maad greet
Epistil to alle	2tho. xxi.	e.	I yow sai pe holy	ceude.	alle yigis uelue
Here ceuden pe comynyals + fenals :			+ bigynen pe comenacionis i pis word		
Comenacion of oure lady aduent	Isaye. viij.		+ Luk. i.		as on pe ynce
Wednesday i aduent			also fro cōmaste to candilmasse		Dyte y. + luk
y. as on crist masse uszr at pe senide masse //					
<b>A</b> ld in el. E. t. xxiij.			fro pe bigynnyng	ceude	myn wybolding
in tyme joon xij.		e.	Whidris pe crosse	ceude	i to his modir
Comenacion of oure lady in alle			ix tymes		epistil. E. t. xxi.
xxij. and pe gospel of luk. xij.			as on pe assumption euen		
Comenacion of pe tyme	ii. cor. xij.	g.	pe gte of oure	ceude	whi oure lord
of pe tyme	Romis. xij.	g.	al pe hizuette of	ceude	i to worldis
of pe holy	Joan. xv.	g.	Whane pe cōfarto	ceude	tolde to zou
gode	Actus viij.	c.	Whane pe apostlis	ceude	pe holy goot
of pe gode	Joan. xij.	d.	If ony man louey	ceude	to me so i do
of pe gode	Philp. ij.	c.	He mekete hi luf	ceude	of god pe fadir
of angels	2tho. xij.	d.	Whi wente up to ie	ceude	azen to luf
for byereu	Joan. v.	a.	He seide to me	ceude	worshippe i god
huds + for is	Isaye. xij.	a.	After pese yigis i	ceude	he was holden
ms wli	2tho. xij.	i.	In pat day zift ch	ceude	lord almyti
fro pe fies	ii. mach. i.		Whi lufyng azen	ceude	al hir lufloze
fro clai medu	Joan. xv.	g.	pe pntis maten f	ceude	in hnel tyme
fro reyn	2tho. xij.		Lo pe hour comey	ceude	pe world
in tyme of in	2tho. xij.		Rise up to gidere	ceude	lord my god
tels	Luk. viij.	e.	And it was doen i	ceude	obeyen to hym
fro hi luf	Jer. xij.		Wher wrounge a	ceude	pese yingis
fro pestilene	2tho. xij.	g.	Wile ze be blyf.	ceude	mit to zou
of bestis	2tho. xij.		Lord kyng almy	ceude	p. lunge pce
fro werse	Romis. viij.	e.	Grull i sepe to zou	ceude	zou zoure synes
	Joan. xv.	f.	I delhte to gidere	ceude	and oure lord
	Jer. xij.	t.	If ze diuelien i me	ceude	doen to zou
	2tho. xij.		If oure wikkidnes	ceude	forzalie pou us
	2tho. xij.	c.	Are ze + it shal be	ceude	pat azen hym
	2tho. xij.		pe lord god of heue	ceude	bifore pee

ringe men	an 7.	b.	So ze 7 pche ze.	ceude	to pikke cytee/
7 pilgrims	i. cox vi.	f.	Witen ze not pat	ceude	in zoure body/
ffor weddis	at 7.	b.	ffrancess catmen	ceude	hay 10yned/
	7 tell us.	f.	We wolen not p	ceud	in pefe wordis/
	ii. mach. xii.		Spekyng to gude	ceude	fo synges.
	Apoc. xii.	e.	I herde a vois fro	ceude	fuen hem/
	i. cox xv.	f.	It crist is pchid.	ceude	in his ordie/
Sunday 7 noday	John xi.	f.	Martha sende to i.	ceude	to vis world/
ffor requiem	John vi.	ii.	All ping pat ve fad	ceude	in pe laste day/
Tuesday	John v.	f.	Truli truli I sey	ceude	azetisig of com/
Wednesday	John v.	e.	ffor as ve fadir si	ceude	in to list/
Thursday	John vi.	a.	I am breed of list	ceude	in pe laste day/
Friday	John vi.	f.	Truli truli I seye	ceude	in pe laste day
Saturday	James v.	f.	It ony of you is.	ceude	ze be saued/
ffor like	Luk. iii.	f.	Ihc roos up fro	ceude	7 helide hem/
	Rom. v.	b.	God comendip his	ceude	ye list of hym/
ffor synes	Luk. v.	f.	Ihc wentte ont 7	ceude	to penance/
Here ceudip pe tempel: and bigynney pe prophe sanctoy					
Prime an	Eccl. xii.		ye blessing of ye	ceude	noyme of glorie/
Deven enen	John i.	e.	John stood 7 tisey	ceude	on man's sone/
S. eludrew	Rom. x.	d.	Bi herte me bilee	ceude	of ye world/
ay	at. iii.	e.	Ihc walkide bi dor	ceude	lieden hym/
S. Andrew	Eccl. xii.		o ye greet prest	ceude	finel of swetneste/
	at. xv.	d.	As aman p goer	ceude	ioie of pi loud/
bras of s an	Rom. x.	d.	By herte me bilee	ceude	of ye world/
oren	at. i.	c.	Alfir pat icou wa	ceude	lieden hym/
Corpaon of	Eccl. xii.	a.	I as a vyne fruy	ceude	emlastinge lyf/
oure lady	at. i.		ye book of ye gra	ceude	is clepid crist/
Vigil	Eccl. xii.		ye blessing of ye	ceude	noyme of glorie/
	John xv.		I am a vy vyne	ceude	be doen to you/
Thomas apud	Eccl. ii.		How ze ben not gif	ceude	pe holy gost/
	John xv.	e.	Thomas doon of	ceude	han bileeued/
Conuacion of	Mat. ix.	a.	Saul zit a blower	ceude	pat is crist/
seint poul	at. x.	g.	Petr auswende 7	ceude	enclastinge lyf/
Andil	Mat. iii.	b.	Io I sende myn an	ceude	pe lord alwyht/
marcay	Luk. ii.	e.	And alfir pat ye.	ceude	pi peple israel/
Per ubauer	i. Pet. i.	a.	Petr apostil of ihu	ceude	of ihu crist/



**Goget of petur** a. xvij. c. **thc** cam i to pe **ceude** also i heuenes  
**S. mathi apol** a. xvij. d. **petur** was up in **ceude** i apolus /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **i** knowleche to pe **ceude** iij charge ltr /  
**ou of de ladi** luk i. d. **pe** lord spak to a **ceude** tisele grad /  
**S. George** james i. a. **briveru** deame ze **ceude** p' louen hi /  
**mark euag** i. xvij. b. **i** am a vi v'ne **ceude** doen to you /  
**filip r'and** i. xvij. c. **do** ech of us g'te **ceude** pleute of ca /  
**holy rode day** i. xvij. d. **i** am a vi v'ne **ceude** doen to you /  
**S. barnabe apol** i. xvij. e. **right**ise me s'lyu **ceude** of hem is /  
**quidow euen** i. xvij. f. **be** not 3oe herte **ceude** do vis v'ne /  
**fordow day** i. xvij. g. **i** tute on you in **ceude** i to pe w'q'ld /  
**ve euen of** i. xvij. a. **per** was a man **ceude** eilastige luf /  
**prur r'and** i. xvij. b. **how** ze ben not **ceude** g'w holy goost /  
**pe day of** i. xvij. c. **vis** is iij comat **ceude** zeue to you /  
**prur r'and** i. xvij. d. **doen** is pe w'rd. **ceude** and planite /  
**sonemoran** i. xvij. e. **per** was a p't r'and. **ceude** to pe lord /  
**on of s'p'm** i. xvij. f. **pe** lord seip yefe **ceude** chosm yee /  
**of s'p'm** i. xvij. g. **pe** tyme of berug **ceude** of his peple /  
**S. marce** i. xvij. a. **petur** r'and i ben **ceude** bifelde to him /  
**mandeleyn** i. xvij. b. **thi** seip to symon **ceude** gl'orise god /  
**uas of cap** i. xvij. c. **dwote** pe k'ngs **ceude** peple of ier'is /  
**tut** i. xvij. d. **thi** cam i to pe p' **ceude** also i heuenes /  
**uas of pet** i. xvij. e. **brisen** i make **ceude** gl'orise god /  
**r'and** i. xvij. f. **petur** ansuende **ceude** eilastige luf /  
**vi. l'perat** i. xvij. g. **ech** bishop taken **ceude** of melchisedech /  
**S. james apol** i. xvij. a. **dwoti** man wete **ceude** up to ierlin /  
**on of s'p'm** i. xvij. b. **who** schal fynde **ceude** in ye j'at'is /  
**of s'p'm** i. xvij. c. **don** of pe f'ance **ceude** go you i pres /  
**S. marce** i. xvij. d. **pe** lord seip yefe **ceude** chosm yee /  
**mandeleyn** i. xvij. e. **zache** seide to **ceude** among men /  
**uas of cap** i. xvij. f. **yefe** ben men of **ceude** pressyng of h' /  
**tut** i. xvij. g. **thi** conpelle ye **ceude** goddis sone /  
**uas of pet** i. xvij. a. **haue** ze iijpude **ceude** l'ner of seip /  
**r'and** i. xvij. b. **it** while he spak **ceude** s'atir i modir /  
**vi. l'perat** i. xvij. c. **how** ze ben not **ceude** ye holy goost /  
**S. james apol** i. xvij. d. **p'ane** ye modir **ceude** of iij fadir /

**James day** a. xvij. d. **i** am to pe hous. **ceude** of pe p'ison /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **thc** cam into pe p' **ceude** also in heuenes /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. f. **fro** ye bigynnyng **ceude** w'p'holding /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. g. **it** was doen when **ceude** and kepen it /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. a. **in** alle yingis i f' **ceude** of cuelle /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. b. **he** entide i to a **ceude** asey fro hir /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. c. **i** schal knowleche **ceude** iudgynge yee /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. d. **if** ony man wole **ceude** i his kyngdom /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **he** par soluy scarse **ceude** 3oe r'it'ib'esse /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. f. **but** a corn of w'he **ceude** w'orshipen /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. g. **the** p' soluy scarse **ceude** iudgynge /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. a. **the** par loney fad' **ceude** not lese his meede /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. b. **do**it out ze dwote **ceude** of g'p'is /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. c. **the** entide i to **ceude** asey fro hir /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. d. **blestid** is ye ma **ceude** to g'lyte /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **i** am a vi v'ne **ceude** doen to you /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. f. **how** ze ben not **ceude** holy goost /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. g. **stryf** was iud. **ceude** of israel /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. a. **pe** adidng **ceude** be eul'ged /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. b. **dwote** seute. **ceude** in abriel /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. c. **fro** ye bigynnyng **ceude** w'p'holding /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. d. **it** was doen. **ceude** + kepen it /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **i** as a v'ne **ceude** eilastige luf /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. f. **pe** trok of pe genia **ceude** cleud crist /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. g. **i** tute on you. **ceude** you i crist /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. a. **how** is ye doom. **ceude** children of l'z /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. b. **how** fair is d' **ceude** i ref'rel'ing /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. c. **it** was doen when **ceude** + kepen it /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. d. **gl'if**ul ye man. **ceude** g'lyte weren /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **thc** weute out. **ceude** to penance /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. f. **pe** l'k'neste of se **ceude** l'eft schynnyng /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. g. **whane** iijc p'ish **ceude** but synful me /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. a. **the** signefiate **ceude** in his blood /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. b. **disciplis** camen **ceude** in heuenes /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. c. **ag'reet** batel was **ceude** dwelten i he /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. d. **disciplis** camen **ceude** in heuenes /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **pe** l'k'neste of se **ceude** schynnyng /

**Annunciat** a. xvij. d. **and** thyle poul **ceude** aseyngite was /  
**Annunciat** a. xvij. e. **and** thc cam don **ceude** mothe in heuen /







**confessours** Sap. x.°    pe lord lade pe **ceude** cūlatige cleernes/  
 Luk. xix.°    v.    A wopri man wen **ceude** up to ierlū/  
 Sap. viii.°    wisdom oñcomey **ceude** werlus of hi/  
 q. x.°    a.    pe kyngdm of to **ceude** ne pe hour/  
 ij cor. x.°    g.    the pat gloney in **ceude** byu to cut/  
 Jer. i.°    b.    daen is pe word **ceude** + plawte/  
**virgyu nor** Luk. i.°    a.    per was a ppet **ceude** to pe lord/  
**martir**    Ga. ii.°    q. lord god pou **ceude** of pe lord/  
 q. xii.°    h.    pe kyngdō lyk to **ceude** vīgis + colde/  
 St. ioh. vi.°    f.    pe ohe weiz maid **ceude** offryce hi silt/  
 Luk. xxi.°    f.    Se zoe leendis god **ceude** schal come/  
**Confessour**    Ga. xlvij.°    pe lord har zoue **ceude** be blestid/  
**+ doctor**    q. v.°    v.    ze deu salt of pe **ceude** is i henenes/  
 Sap. x.°    pe lord lade pe ngt **ceude** dereueld/  
 q. xii.°    f.    Se ze walle ze + **ceude** wake ze/  
 Ga. xxi.°    pe iustise man **ceude** i to genaciō/  
**for an abbot**    Luk. xxi.°    f.    so man tendy a **ceude** lyt to pre/

Theere ceendy pe table upon pe table upon pe tempal and upon pe  
 propie scoz. and upon pe comoun scoz of pūlis + gozels of pe  
 newe lawe pat ben red in pe churche poun pe zeer: wip pe wrauous  
 of hē where pei schulen be founden i pe zeer/



from ye myddys of September unto ye myddys of December is oppyn tyme of plantyng and yet from ye  
myddys of January unto ye myddys of March is tyme if gode to chese whan ye wone is wryte  
or 40 dayes elde wofol plene lince 1000 1000 1000 1000 1000 dayes after ye comynge  
it is if gode to graffe in or in dayes before ye change  
it for plantyng of al man thynge ye day of ye change ye secunde and ye in ben  
ye best dayes

Putte a stobbe of wold in ye erth in a longe rutte lyke a fardel and lette hit growe pan a bone in  
make hole endeloge in whas dyffere put smale hole of a milbery tree once in thys of weggys at  
plantyng ende to stonde in the in ye dyffere in so hole of a milbery tree once in thys of weggys at  
And noon ower tree shal peryshe yat is plantid in this hole After ye first yerd or ye secunde yerd salbe  
alvys ye brammis with a sharpe sawe and transplante him in apte place  
make a bare place ye quarte of a fynyng brede in a fard bolle of appelerce or pearce elage hit and  
hit fast with mosse as ye doo in graffing and so lette it growe al ye yerd and yerd wol ryse a greet  
And ye nepe yerd ye may unbynde it and set it wher ye wyl And thus may ye have a gardyn in  
tyme of goetnesse of a gode stasse  
Take longe rodys dyffere and sette him in a mydd grounde in a mydd grounde by elvene the 11. seg  
many dayes and than a none vpon apphelmasse flevre ye grounde and pnt ye wylle downe in  
ye erth and so lette him growe and in evy fore whan seson cometh sette a graffe and so let it w  
il ye nepe yerd than solve of evy knotte and in tyme of seson sette him and within 3. or 4. y  
ye may have a fynyng gardyne without cost that wol be ye secunde or ye in yerd fynyng  
Slyfing also of trees sette in tyme of yerd wol be fone but it wol be longe or they be greet  
Take ye harde peppys of rosis yat ben ripe and solve him in ye erth in ffevel or in marche and  
whan yey spryngge solve him wel with water and after a yerd complete y mayse fustilante by  
olve a bone ye rosis ye space of an hand brede or 11. and wofte her syngys with warme lye  
so mayse y have rosis tyned  
Synde Onyon sece or leke sece in a softe linnen clothe were him wel and pntte in ye erth mo  
in fynyng depe so shal they wofe greet  
Graffe on an holme tree a graffe of an Oke and it shal be grene wofte and samer





Wycliffite Manuscript. The New Testament. England, 1400–1450.  
BRIDWELL LIBRARY

Octavo